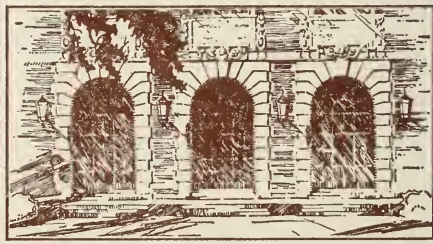




LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS
AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN

821
C39Yc
v.2





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015



58
72
209

THE

Peetworth MS

OF

Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



PART I.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCLXVIII.

c

Publications
First Series, VI. 12, 19, 38, 42

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS. 54, 68

821
C39Ye
v.2

TO THE MEMORY

OF

The late Lady Leonfield

THIS PRINT

OF THE MANUSCRIPT SHE VALUED

IS, BY THE WISH OF LORD LEONFIELD,

DEDICATED.

Christmas, 1868.

GROUP A. FRAGMENT I.

§ 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE.

PETWORTH MS.

WHan that Aprille with his shoures soote [leaf 1]
The droughit' of marche hath perced to þe roote
And bathes euery veyne in swich licoure
Of which vertue engendrid is þe flour 4
Whan zephirus ek' with his swete brethi
Inspired hath in euery holt and hethi
The tendre croppis *and* þe yonge sonne
Hath in the ram his halfe cours yronne 8

And smale foules make melodye
That slepen al nyght with open eyghē
So prikeþ hem nature in here corages
Than longen folk' to gon on pilgrimages 12
And palmers for to seke straunge strondes
To ferne halowes couthe in sondry londes
And specially fram euery shires ende
Of engelond to Caunterbury they wende 16
The holy blisseful martir' for to seke
That' hem hath holpen when that' þey were seke
Byfille þat' in that' seson on aday
In southwerk' atte Tabbard as I lay 20
Redy to wende on my pilgrimage
To Cantirbury with ful devout' corage
At nyht' was come in to þat' hostellerye
Wel nyne and twenty on a companye 24
Of sondry folk' by auenture yfalle
In felaschipe *and* pilgrymes were þey alle
That' toward Cantirbery wolde ryde

The Chambres and stables weren wyde	28
And wel weren esed ^t atte beste	
And schortly whan the sonne was to reste	
So hadde I spoken with hem euerychon	
That I was of here felaschipe anon	32
And made forward erly for to ryse	
To take oure wey there as I you deuysen	
But natheles whil I haue tyme and space	
Or þat ^t I ferther in this tale pace	36
Me thynkeþ it ^t accordant ^t to reson	
To telle yow al the Condicion	
Of ^t ech of ^t hem so as it ^t semed me	[leaf 1, back]
And whiche they were. <i>and</i> of what ^t degre	40
And eke in what ^t array þat ^t they were Inne	
And at ^t a knygh ^t þan I wol first ^t bigynne	
A knygh ^t þer was <i>and</i> þat ^t a worthy man	
That fro þe tyme þat he ferst ^t bigan	44
To riden out. he louede Chyualrye	
Trouthe <i>and</i> honour fredom and curtesye	
ful worthy was he in his lordis werre	
And therto hadde he ryden no man ferre	48
As wel in Cristendom as in hethenesse	
And euere honoured for his worthynesse	
¶ At Alisaundre he was whan it [was] wonne	
ful ofte tyme he hadde the bord bigonne	52
Aboven alle naciouns in Pruce	
In lettowe had he reysed and in Ruce	
No cristene man so ofte of ^t his degre	
In Gernade at the sege ek ^t hadde he be	56
Of Algezire and riden in belmarye	
At Lyeis was he and at Satalye	
When they were wonne <i>and</i> in the grete see	
At many a noble armeye had he be	60
At mortel batailles had he ben fyftene	
And fouhten for oure fait ^t h at tramessene	
In lystes thryes. and ay slayne his foo	

This ilke worthy knyght had ben also	64
Somtyme with the lord of Palatye	
Ayeyn an othir hethen in Turkye	
And euere more he hadde a souereyne pry	
And though þat he was worthy he was wys	68
And of his port as meke as is a mayde	
He neuer yet no velonye ne sayde	
In al his lyf vnto no manere wight	
He was a verrey parfit gentil knyght	72
ffor to tellen yow of his array	
His hors weren gode. but he was not gay	
Of fustyon he werede a gepoñ	
Al bismotered with his habirgeon	76
ffor he was late ycome from his viage	[leaf 2]
And wente for to don his pilgrymage	
W ith hym þer was his sone a yong squyere	
A louyere and a lusty bachelere	80
With lockes crulle as they were leyd in presse	
Of twenty yere of age he was I gesse	
Of his stature he was of euene lengthe	
And wondirly delyuere and gret of strengthe	84
And he hadde be somtyme in chyuachye	
In fflaundes in Artoys and in Pikardye	
And born him wel as of so litil space	
In hope to stonde in his lady grace	88
Embroyded was he as it were a mede	
Aff ful of fresshe floures white and rede	
Syngynge he was. or floytynge al the day	
He was also fressh as ys þe moneth of may	92
Short was his gowne with sleues longe and wyde	
Wel koude he sitte on an hors and faire ryde	
He koude songes make. and wel endite	
Iuste and eke daunce and wel portrey and write.	96
So hote he louede. that by nygter tale	
He slepte namore than doth a nyghtyngale	
Corteyns he was lowely and servisable	

And karf biforn his fadir at the table	100
ANothir yeman hadde he <i>and</i> seruañtes na mo	
At that tyme. for hym lyst ryde so	
And he was clad in coote <i>and</i> hood of grene	
A sheef of pocok arewes bryght and kene	104
Vndir his belt he bar full thriftily	
Wel couthe he dresse his takel yemanly	
Hise arewes drouped noght with feperes lowe	
And in his hond he bar a myghty bowe	108
A not hed hadde he with a broun visage	
Of wode craft wel couthe he al the vsage	
Vppon his arme he bar a gay bracer	
And by his side a swerd and a bokeler	112
And on that oþir syde a gay daggere	
Harneysed wel <i>and</i> sharp as poynt of spere	
A Cristoffre on his brest of seluer shene	[leaf 2, back]
An horn he bar the bawdrik was of grene	116
A foster was he sotly as I gesse	
Ther was a nonne also a prioresse	
That of hir smylunge was ful symple <i>and</i> coy	
Hire grettest ooth was but by sey[n]te loy	120
And she was clepid ma dame Englentyne	
fful wel she song the seruyse divyne	
Entuned in hire nose ful semyly	
And frenshe she spak ful faire and fetysly	124
Aftir the skole of Stratford atte bowe	
ffor frensch of Parys was to hire vnknowe	
At mete wel I-taught was sche with alle	
She leet no morsel from hir lippes falle	128
Ne wete hire fyngres in hire sause depe	
Wel couthe she carye a morsel <i>and</i> wel kepe	
That no drope ne fille vppon hire breste	
In curtesye was set ful mochel hire leste	132
Hire ouer lippe wiped she so clene	
That in hir cuppe ther was no ferthing sene	
Of grece whan she dronken hadde hire draughte	

fful semyly aftir hir mete she raughte	136
And sikerly sc̄he was of gret ^t disporte	
And ful plesaunt and amable of porte	
And peynede hire to counterfete chere	
Of court ^t . and to ben estatliche of ^t manere	140
And to be holden digne of ^t reuerence	
But for to speken of ^t hir Conciense	
She was so charitable and so pitous	
She wolde wepe yif ^t that ^t she sau ^h a mous	144
Kaugh[t] in a trappe yif ^t it were ded or bledde	
Of ^t smale houndes had she that ^t she fedde	
With rostid flesh or mylk ^t or wastelbrede	
But ^t sore wepte she yf oon of ^t hem were dede	148
Or yf ^t men smoot y ^t with a yerde smerte	
And al was conscience <i>and</i> tendre herte	
fful semeliche hire wypil pynchid was	
Hir nose was streight ^t . hire eyghen grey as glas	152
Hire mouth ful smal <i>and</i> therto softe and rede	[leaf 3]
But sekerly she hadde a fair forhede	
It was almost a spanne brood I trowe	
ffor hardely she was nou ^h t vndirgrowe	156
fful fetys was hir cloke as I was waar	
Of smal coral aboute hir arme she baar	
A paire of bedys gaudid al with grene	
And ther on hyng ^t a broche of gold ful shene	160
On which þer was first ^t writen a crowned A	
And aftir amor vincit ^t omnia	
An othir Nonne with hire hadde she	
That was hire chapeleyn. <i>and</i> prestes thre	164
A monk ^t þer was a fair for the maistrye	
An out ^t ridere that ^t loued venerye	
A manly man to ben an Abbot able	
fful many a deynte hors hadde he in stable	168
And whanne he rood. men myhte his bryditt here	
Gynglynge in a whistelynge wynd as clere	
And eke as loude as dooth þe chapel belle	

Ther as this lord was keper of the selle	172
The reule of seynt ^t Maure or of saint Benet ^t	
Bi cause þat yt was olde <i>and</i> somdel streit	
This ylke monke leet olde þynges pace	
And heeld aftir the newe world the space	176
He yaf ^t nouht ^t of ^t the text ^t a pulled hen	
That ^t seith that ^t hunters be nouht ^t holy men	
Ne that a monke whan he is recheles	
Is likened till a fische þat ^t is watirles	180
This is to seye a monke out ^t of ^t his cloistre	
But thilke text ^t held he nouht ^t worth an oystre	
And I seyde his opynion ^d was good	
What shulde he studie. and make hymself ^t wood	184
Vpon a book ^t alwey in cloistre to poure	
Or swynke with his hondis and laboure	
As Austyn bit. hou shal the world be serued	
Lat Austyn haue his swynk ^t to him reserued	188
Therefore he was a pricasour aright ^t	
Grehoundes he hadde / as swift ^t as foule in flight ^t	
Of ^t prikyng ^e <i>and</i> of ^t huntyng ^e for the hare	[leaf 3, back]
Was al his lust ^t for no cost wole he spare	192
I seigh hise sleues I-purified at ^t the hond ^t	
With grys <i>and</i> that ^t the fynest ^t of a lond ^t	
And for to festne his hood vndir the Chynne	
He hadde of ^t gold ^t wrought ^t a ful curious pyrne	196
A loue knotte in the gretter ende þer was	
His hed was ballyd that ^t shon as ony glas	
And eke his face. as he hadde ben anynt ^t	
He was a lord ^t ful fat ^t and in good ^t poynt ^t	200
Hise eighen stepe and rollyng ^e in his hede	
That stemed ^e as a fourneys of a lede	
Hise botes souple his hors in grete estate	
Now certeynly he was a fair prelate	204
He nas nat pale as a forpynd ^t goost ^t	
A fat swan louede he best ^t of any roost ^t	
His palfray was [as] broun ^d as ys a berye	

A	ffrere ther was a wa[n]toun <i>e</i> <i>and</i> [a] merye	208
	A lymytour a ful solempne man	
	In alle the ordres foure is noon that can	
	So mochel of daliañce <i>and</i> fair langage	
	He hadde made ful many a Mariage	212
	Of yonge wommen at his owne cost	
	Vn to his ordre he was a noble post	
	fful wel biloued <i>and</i> famulier was he	
	With frankeleynes oueral in his contre	216
	And with worthy wommen of the toun	
	ffor he hadde power of confessioun	
	As seide hym self more than a Curat	
	ffor [of] his ordre he was lycenciat	220
	fful swetely herede he confession	
	And plesaunt was his absolucion	
	He was an esy man to yeue penañce	
	Ther as he wiste to han a good pitañce	224
	ffor wnto a pore ordre for to yeue	
	Is signe that a man ys wel yshreve	
	ffor yf he yaf he dorste make avaunt	
	He wiste þat a man was repentaunt	228
	ffor many a man is so hard of his herte	[leaf 4]
	He may noght wepe al þouh him sore smerte	
	Ther fore in stede of wepyng <i>e</i> and preieres	
	Men mote yeue seluer / to the pore freres	232
	His tipet was ay fassed ful of knyfes	
	And pynnes for to yeue faire wyfes	
	And certeynly he hadde a mery note	
	Wel coude he syngen and playen on a roote	236
	Of yeddynges he bar vtirly the pryce	
	His necke white was as the flour delyce	
	Therto he was strong as a champioun	
	He knew the tauernes wel in every toun	240
	And eueriche Osteller and tapestere	
	Bet than a lazer or a beggere	
	ffor vnto swich a worthy man as he	

Acordith nouhit as by his faculte	244
To haue with swich seke lazers aqueyntaunce	
It is nouhit honest / it may nouhit auañce	
ffor to delen with swich poraille	
But al with riche and sillers of vitaille	248
And oueral ther as profite sholde aryse	
Curtays he was and lowely of seruyse	
Ther nas no man nowher so vertuous	
He was the beste beggere in his hous	252
[.	
. <i>no gap in the MS.</i>]	
ffor þouh a widewe hadde nouhit a sho	
So plesaunt was his Inprincipio	
Yet wolde he haue a ferthyng ^t or he wente	
His purchace was wel bettere þan his rente	256
And rage he couthe as it were riht ^t a whelp	
In louedaies ther coude he mochil helpe	
ffor ther he was not liche a cloistrere	
With a thredbare cope as a pore scolere	260
But he was lyke a maistir or a pope	
Of double worstede was his semy cope	
That rounded as a belle out of the presse	
Somwhat he lipsede for his wantonesse	264
To make his englyssh swete vpon his tonge	
And in his harpynge whan þat he had songe	
Hise eyghen twynede in his hede aright ^t	[leaf 4, back]
As doon the sterres in a frosty nyht	268
This worthy lymytour was clepid hubert	
A Marchant was ther with a longe berd ^t	
In motle and heyh on horse he satte	
Vpon his heued a flaundrisshe beuer hatte	272
Hise botis clapsid faire and fetisly	
His resouzs he spak ^t ful solempnely	
Shewynge alwey the eneres of his wynnynge	
He wolde the see were kept for any thyng	276
Bitwixe Middelburgh and Orewelle	

Wel coude he in eschange sheldes selle	
This worthy man ful wel his witte bisette	
Ther wiste no wight that he was in dette	280
So estatly was he of his gouernañce	
With his bargaynes <i>and with</i> his cheuyssañce	
fforsothe he was a worthy man with alle	
But sothely to seyne I not how men hym calle	284
A Clerk per was of Oxenforde also	
That vnto logyk hadde longe I-go	
As lene was his hors as ys a rake	
And he was not right fat I wndirtake	288
But lokede holewh and p̄erto soburly	
fful thredbare was his ouerest Courtepy	
ffor he hadde yit geten him no benefice	
Ne was so wordly [for] to haue office	292
ffor hym was leuere haue at his bed hede	
Twenty bokes clad in blak or rede	
Of Aristotle and his philosophie	
Then robes riche or fithel or gay sautrye	296
But al be that he was a filosofre	
Yet hadde he but litel gold in cofre	
But al that he myhte of his frendes hente	
On bokes and on lernynge he it spente	300
And besily gan for tho soules preye	
Of hem that yaf hym wharwith to skole-aye	
Of studie took he moost cure <i>and</i> most hede	
Naught a word spak he / more than was nede /	304
And that was seid in forme and reuerence	[leaf 5]
And short and quyk and ful [of] hey sentence	
Sownynge in moral vertue was his speche	
And gladly wolde he lerne <i>and</i> gladly teche	308
A sergañt of the lawe / war <i>and</i> wys	
That often hadde ben atte parvys	
That was also ful riche of excellence	
Discret he was and of gret reuerence	312
He semed swich hise wordis wern so wise	

Iustice he was ful often in assise	
By patent <i>and</i> by pleyn <i>commyssioun</i>	
ffor his science. and for his high renoun	316
Of fees and robes hadde he many on	
So gret a purchassour was nowher non	
Al was fee symple to him in effecte	
His purchassyng myht nouhit ben infecte	320
Nowher so besy a man as he ther nas	
And yet he semed bisiere than he was	
In termes hadde he caas <i>and</i> domes alle	
That from the tyme of kyng ^t william were falle	324
Therto he cowde endite and make a thyng ^t	
Ther couthe no wight ^t pynche at ^t his writyng ^t	
And euery statute couthe he pleyne by roote	
He rood but homely in a medle coote	328
Gert ^t with a sent ^t of selk ^t wip ^t barres smale	
Of his array telle I no lenger tale	
A ffrankeleyn was in his <i>compaignye</i>	
Whit ^t was his berd ^t as is the daieseye	332
Of his complexioun ⁿ he was sangwyne	
Wel louede he by the morewe a soppe in wyne	
To lyuen in delite euere was his wone	
ffor he was Epiournes owne sone	336
That helde opynyon ⁿ þat pleyne delite	
Was verrey felicite parfite	
An houshaldere and that ^t a greet ^t was he	
Seint Iulyan he was in his contre	340
His bred his ale was alleweys aftir oon	
A bettir envyned man / was nowher noon /	
With oute bakemete was neuere his hous	[leaf 5, back]
Of fische and fleisshe <i>and</i> þat so plenteuous	344
It snewe in his hous of ^t mete and drynke	
Of alle deyntethes that ^t men couthe thinke	
Aftir the sondry sesons of the yere	
So changed he his mete and his sopere	348
fful many a fat ^t partrich hadde he in Mewe	

And many a breme *and* many a luce in stewe
 Wo was his cook^t but^t [if] his sauce were
 Poynant^t and sharpe and redy al his gere 352
 His table dormant in his halle al way
 Stood redy couered al the longe day
 At session^s ther was he lord and sire
 fful often tyme he was knyght^t of the shire 356
 An anelas and a gypsere al of^t silke
 Heng^t at his girdel white as morne mylke
 A sherreff^t had he ben / *and* a comptour
 Was nowher swich a worthy vauasour 360
AN habirdasshere and a Carpenter
 A Webbe. a Diere and a Tapecece
 And they were clothid alle in oo lyuere
 Of^t a solempne and a greet^t fraternyte 364
 fful fressh and newe here gere apiked was
 Here knyfes nere chap[ed] nouht^t with bras
 But al with syluer wrought ful clene *and* wel
 Here gerdelles and her pouches euery del 368
 Wel semed ech of^t hem a fair burgeys
 To sitten in a yeldhalle on a deys
 Eueriche for the wisdom that^t he can
 Was shaply for to bene an Aldirman 372
 For cateff hadde they I-nouh^t and Rente
 And eke her wifes wolde it^t wel assente
 And elles certeyn[ly] they were to blame
 It^t is ful fair to be clepid Madame 376
 And gon to vigilies al be fore
 And haue a mantel rialliche I-bore
A Cook^t they hadde / with hem for the nones
 To boille the chikenes with þe maribones 380
 And poudre Marchaⁿt^t tart^t of Gallyngale [leaf 6]
 Wel kowde he knowe a drauht of london^e ale
 He Couthe roste *and* sethe *and* broyle *and* frye
 Maken Mortrews and wel bake a pye 384
 But gret ha[r]m was it^t / as it thouhte me

That on his shene a normal hadde he For blankt manger that made he with the beste	
A Shipman was ther / wonyngt fer bi weste For ouht I woot he was of Dertemouthe	388
He rood vppon a Rouncey as he couthe In a gowne of ffaldyngt to the kne A daggar hangynge in a lace hadde he	392
Aboute his necke vndir his arme douz The hote somer hadde made his hiew al broun And Certeynly he was a good felawe fful many a drauht of wyn hadde he drawe	396
ffrom burdeux wardt while the chapmen slepe Of nyce conscience tookt he no kepe Yif thatt he fauht / and hadde the heihere hondt By watir he sente hem home to euery londt	400
But of his craft / to rikene wel his tydes His stremes and his daunger <i>him</i> bisydes His herberuñ. his moone <i>and</i> his lodmanage Ther nos noon such from hulle to Cartage	404
Hardy he was / and wys to vndirtake With many a tempest had his berd be shake He knew alle the hauenes as they were ffro gutlond to the cape de fynystere	408
And euery cryke in bretaygne <i>and</i> in Spayne His barge y-clepid was the maudeleyne W ith us ther was a doctour of ffisikt In al this worldt ne was ther none hym likt	412
To speke of fisike and of surgerye ffor he was grounded in astronomye He kepte his pacientt a ful greett del In houres by his magikt naturel	416
Wel couthe he fortune the assendentt Of his ymages for his pacientt He knew the cause of euery maladye	[leaf 6, back]
Were itt of hoott or coldt or moystt or drye And wher engendred and [of] what humour	420

He was a verrey parfit' practisour
 The cause I-knowe and of his harm the roote
 Anoon he yaf the sike man his boote 424
 fful redy hadde he hise apotecaries
 To sende hem drugges / and his letuaries
 ffor ech of hem made othir for to wyne
 Her frendshipe nas nat newe to bigynne 428
 Wel knew he the olde Escalapius
 And diascoride and ek' Rufus
 Old ypocras Hayly and Galien
 Serapion Rasis and Auysen 432
 Aueroys Damascien and constantyne
 Bernard and Gatisden *and* Gilbertyne
 Of his diete mesurable was he
 ffor it was of no superfluyte 436
 Bot of gret' norshinge and digestable
 His studie was but' litel on the bible
 In sangweyn and in perce he clad was al
 Lyned with Taffata and with sendal 440
 And yet he was but esy of' dispense
 He kepte that' he wan in pestilence
 ffor gold in Phisik' is a cordeal
 Therefore he louede gold' in special 444
A Good wiff' ther was of besides bathe
 But she was somdel def' and *pat* was scathe
 Of cloth makyng sche hadde such an haunt
 She passid hem of ypres and of Gaunt 448
 In alle the parisch wif' ne was ther noon
 That to the offrynge toforn hir shulde goon
 And yf ther dide / certeyn wroth was she
 That she was out of al[le] charite 452
 Hir couerchefes ful fyne were of ground'
 I durste swere they weyeden ten pound'
 That on a Sondag weren vpon hire hede
 Hir hosen weren of fyne scarlet' rede 456
 fful streight I-tied / and shoes ful moist' *and* newe [leaf 7]

Bold was hir face and faire / *and* red of hiewe
 She was a worthi womman al hir lyue
 Housbondes atte chirche dore she hadde fyue 460
 With outen othir companie in youthe
 But ther of^t nedith nouht^t to speke as nouthe
 And thries hadde she bene at Ierusalem
 She had[de] passed many a strange strem 464
 At Rome sche had ben / *and* at boloyne
 In Galice at saint Iame *and* at Coloigne
 She koude moche on wandrynge bi the weye
 Gat tothid was she sothely for to seie 468
 Vp on an Amblere esily she satte
 I-wympled wel and on hir heed an hatte
 As brood as is a bokellere or a targe
 A fot^t mantel abouten hire hipes large 472
 And on hire feet^t a paire of^t spores sharpe
 In felaschipe wel couthe sche law^he *and* carpe
 Of remedies of loue she kneu^h parchaunce
 ffor she couthe of^t that art the daunce 476
A Good man was there of religioun
 And was a pore persoun of a toun
 But riche he was of^t holy thouht^t *and* werk^t
 He was also a lerned man *and* a clerk^t 480
 That Cristes gospel treuly wolde preche
 His parisschens deuoutly wolde he teche
 Benyngne he was and wondir diligent^t
 And in aduersite / ful pacient^t 484
 And swich he was [i]preued ofte sithes
 fful looth were him to cursen for his tythes
 But rather wolde he yeuen out^t of doute
 Vnto his poure parisschens aboute 488
 Of his offrynge and of his substaⁿce
 He couthe in litil thing^t han suffisaⁿce
 Wide was hise parisshe *and* houses fer asondir
 But he ne lafte nouthir for rayne ne for thundir 492
 In sikenesse nor in meschief to visite

The ferrest in his parisch myche and lite
 Vp on his fete / and in his hond a staff[]] [leaf 7, back]
 This noble ensample to his shepe he yaf^t 496
 That^t ferst^t he wroughte. and afirward^t þat he tauñte
 Out^t of the gospel he þo wordes cauñte
 And this figure he addede ek^t therto
 That^t yf gold ruste / what^t shal Iren do 500
 For if^t a prest^t be foul on whom we triste
 No wondir is a lewed man to ruste
 And shame it is yf^t a prest take kepe
 A shiten sheperde and a clene shepe 504
 Wel ouhte a preest ensample for to yeue
 By his clenness hou that^t his sheepe shulde lyue
 He set^t nauñt his benefice to hire
 And leet^t his sheep acombred in the myre 508
 And ran to london vn to seint Poules
 To seke hym a chañterye for soules
 Or with a bretherhede to bene with holde
 But^t duelte at^t home / and kepte wel his folde 512
 So that^t the wolf ne made it^t not^t myscharye
 He was a shepperde and not^t a mercenarie
 And thouñ he holy were and vertuous
 He was nouñt^t to synful men dispitous 516
 Ne oñ his speche daungerous ne digne
 But in his techynge discret^t and benygne
 To drawen folk^t to heuene by fairnesse
 By good ensample / this was his bisynesse 520
 But^t it^t were eny person^t obstynate
 What^t so he were of^t heigh^t or low^t estate
 Hym wolde he snebbe sharply for the nones
 A better prest I trowe þat nowher noon es 524
 He waitede afir no pompe and reuerence
 Ne maked hym a spiced conscience
 But cristes lore / and hise apostles tuelue
 He tauhte / but ferst he folewed in hymselfe 528
 With hym ther was a plouñman / was his broþir

That hadde I-lad of dong ful many a fothir
 And a trewe swynkere *and* a good was he
 Lyvyng in pees / and parfit charite 532
 God loued he best with al his hole herte [leaf 8]
 At alle tymes thouh he gamed or smerte
 And than his neyghbure riht as hymselue
 He wolde thresshe and therto dike *and* delue 536
 For cristes sake / for euery pouere wight
 With oute hire / yif hit lay in his myght
 Hise tythis payed he ful faire and wel
 Bothen of his propre swynke and his catel 540
 In a tabbard he rood vp on a mere
 Ther was also a Reve and a Mellere
 A somenour and a Pardoner also
 A Maunciple and my self ther nar na mo 544
 The mellere was a strong carle for the nones
 Tfful bigge he was / of brawne and ek of bones
 That proued wel / for oueral thare he cam
 Atte wrastelyng / he wolde haue a-wey the ram 548
 He was short shuldred a thicke knarre
 Ther was no dore that he ne wolde heue of barre
 Or breke it at a rennyng with his heed
 His berd as any sowe or fox was reed 552
 And therto brood as pouh it were a spade
 Vp on the cop right of his nose he hade
 A werte and peron stood a tuft of heres
 Rede as the brysteles of a sowes eres 556
 His nose prilles blake were and wyde
 A swerd and a bokelere bar he be his side
 His mouthe as greet was as a greet fourneys
 He was a iangelere and a goliardeys 560
 And that was moost of synne *and* of harlotryes
 Wel couthe he stele corn / and tolle thryes
 And yit he hadde a thombe of gold parde
 A white cote and a blewe hood wered he 564
 A bagge-pipe wel couthe he blowe *and* sowne

And þerwith al he brouht' us out' of towne	
A Gentil mañiple was þer o[f] a temple	
Of' which a catour myghte take ensample	568
ffor to ben wise in biynge of vitaille	
ffor whepir þat he payed / or toke by taille	
Algate he waitede so in his achate	[leaf 8, back]
That he was ay befor and in good estate	572
Now is not' þat' of god a ful fair grace	
That such a lewed mannes wit shal pace	
The wysdom of an hepe of lerned men	
Of maystres hadde he mo þan thries ten	576
That were of lawe expert' an Curious	
Of wich ther was a doseyn in that' hous	
Worthy to bene stywardes of Rente <i>and</i> lond'	
Of any lord that is in Ingelond'	580
To make hym lyue by his propre good'	
In honour detteles but' if that' he were wood	
Or lyue als skarsly as hym lyst desire	
And able for to helpen al a shire	584
In any cas that myhte falle or happe	
And yit this Maunciple sette ther althir cappe	
T he Reue was a scelendre colerik' man	
His berd was shaue / as nyhe as cuer he can	588
His heer was by hise eres ful rounde yshorne	
His toppe was docked like a prest byforne	
fful longe were his legges and ful lene	
I-like a staf' / ther was no calf' ysene	592
Wel couthe he kepe a Garner or a bynne	
Ther was none auditour couthe on hym wyne	
Wel wiste he / by the drought <i>and</i> by the reyne	
The yeldynge of' his seed / and of' his greyne	596
Hise lordes sheepe / hise neete / hise dayerie	
His swyne / his hors / his stoor / <i>and</i> his pultrye	
Was hoolly in this reues gouernynge	
And by his covenant' / yaf' the rekenynge	600
Syn that his lord was twenty yeer of age	

Ther couthe no man brynge hym in a-rerage
 Ther nas baylyf^t ne herde nor othir hyne
 That he ne knew his sleighte *and* his covyne 604
 They were a-drad of hym / as of the deth
 His wonynge was ful faire vpon an heth
 With grene trees / shadewed was his place
 He couthe better than his lord purchace 608
 fful riche he was astored pryuely [leaf 9]
 His lorde he coupe wel plese *and* sub[t]ily
 To zeue and lene him of his owne goode
 To haue a þonke and yit^t a cote and hode 612
 In zoupe he had lered a good mistere
 He was a wel good wriȝt^t a Carpentere
 This Reue satte vpon a wel good stot^t
 That^t was al pomel grey *and* highte scot^t 616
 A longe Surcote of Peers vppon he hadde
 And by his side he bare a rusty blade
 Of Northfolk was þis Reue of which I telle
 Besides a toune men clepen it^t Baldewelle 620
 Tukked he was as is a frere aboute
 And euere he rode þe hynderest^t of our route
A Somnour was ther wiȝ vs in that place
 That^t had a fury cherubynes face 624
 ffor Sauseflewme he was wiȝ eyen narowe
 Als hote he was and leccherous as a sparowe
 With scalled browes. blak^t and pilled beerde
 Of his visage children weren a-ferde 628
 Ther nas quyke siluer^t litarge or bremstoñ
 Boras orsure no oyle of tartre nõõn
 Ne oynement^t þat^t wold[e] clense *and* byte
 That him myght^t helpe of his whelkes white 632
 Ne of [the] knobbes sitting^t in his chekes
 Wel loued he garlike. oynyoñs *and* eke lekes
 And for to drink strong^t wyne rede as blode
 Than wolde he speke and cry as he were wode. 636
 And whan [that] he wel dronken had þe wyne

Than wolde he speke no worde but latyne
 A fewe teermes had he two or thre
 That he had lerned out of som decree 640
 No wonder is he herd to al þe day
 And eke 3e knowen it wel how þat a Iay
 Can clepe watt as wel as can þe pope
 But who so couþe in oper þing hym grope 644
 Than had he spent al his Philosophie [leaf 9, back]
 Ay questio quid iuris wold he crye
 He was a gentile harlot and a kinde
 A better felawe schul[de] men not fynde 648
 He wolde suffre for a quarte of wyne
 A good felawe to haue his concubyne
 A twelue month and excuse him ate fulle
 fful priuely eke a ffynche couþe he pulle 652
 And if he fonde owhere a good felawe
 He wolde techen hym to han noon awe
 In such caas of þe archedekens curs
 But if [a] mannys soule were in his purs 656
 ffor in his purs he shuld[e] punished be
 Purs is þe erchedekenes Helle seide he
 But wel I wote he lyed rizt in dede
 Of cursing ouzt eche gilty man to drede 660
 ffor curs wil slee rizt as assoyling saueth
 And also war hym of a significauith
 In daunger had he at his owne gyse
 The yonge Geerles of þe diocise 664
 And knewe her counsaile and what was al her rede
 A Gallonde had he sette vpon his hede
 As grete as it were for an ale stake
 A Bokelere had he made hym of a Cake 668
With hym þer rode a gentile Pardoner
 Of rounyuale his frende and his comper
 That streght was comen from þe courte of Rome
 fful lowde songe he come hider loue come 672
 This somnour bare to hym a stif burdoñ

Was neuere trumpe of half so gret' a souñ
 This *Pardon*er had heer as 3elowe as wexe
 But smoth' it' henge. as doþ a strike of flexe 676
 By ounces henge his lockes þat' he had
 And þerwip he his shulders ouersprad
 But' thyn it lay by culpons oon and oñ
 But' hode for Iolite wered he noon 680
 ffor it' was trussed vp in his walette [leaf 10]
 Hym þouzt' he rode al of þe newe gette
 Discheuele sauf his cap he rode al bare
 Suche glaryng' eyen had he as an hare 684
 A vernycle had he sewed vpon his cappe
 His walet' [lay] biforn him in his lappe
 Bret ful of *pardoñ* commen from Rome al hote
 A voyce he had as smal as a[ny] goote 688
 No beerde ne had he. ne neuere shuld haue
 As smoth' it' was as it' were late shaue
 I trowe he were a gelding' or a mare
 But' of his craft' from Barwik' into ware 692
 Ne was þer suche a noþer *pardonere*
 ffor in his male he had a pilowbere
 Which þat he seide was oure lady vaile
 He seide he had a gobet' of þe saile 696
 That' seynt' Peter had whan þat he went'
 Vpon þe see to Ihesu crist hym hent'
 He had a croys of laton ful of stones
 And in a glas he had[de] pigges bones 700
 But' wip þise relikes whan þat' he fonde
 A poor[e] person dwellyng' vpon londe
 Vpon a day he gate hym more moneye
 þan þe the persone gate in Monþes tweye 704
 And þus wip feyned flateryng' and Iapes
 He made þe Person' and þe puple his apes
 But' trew[e]ly to tellen at' þe laste
 He was in chirche a noble ecclesiaste 708
 Wel coupe he rede a lessoñ or a storye

But alþerbest he songt an offertorie
 ffor wel he wist whan þat songe was songe
 He moste preche and wel afile his tonge 712
 To wynne siluer as he [right] wel cowde
 Therefore he songe so merily *and* lowde
Now have I tollt þou soþly in a clause
 The astaat. þe aray. þe nombre *and* eke þe cause 716
 Why þat assembled was þis companye [leaf 10, back]
 In Suthwerk at þis gentil hostrye
 That hight þe Tabard faste by þe belle
 But nowe is tyme to þou forto telle 720
 Howe þat we beren vs þat ilke nyght
 Whan [we] were in þat Hostrie a-light
 And after wil I tellen of our viage
 And al þe remenaunt of our Pilgrymage 724
 But furst I prey þou of þoure curtesie
 That ȝe ne rette it not my vilanye
 þoo þat I pleyntly speke in þis matere
 To telle þou her wordes *and* her chere 728
 Ne þouȝe he speke her wordes *propely*
 ffor þis ȝe knowen as wel as I
 Who so shal telle a tale after a man
 He mote reherce as nyghe as euer he can 732
 Eueriche word if it be in his charge
 Al speke he neuere so rudely and large
 Or ellis he mote telle his tale vntrewe
 Or feyne þinggis or fynde wordes newe 736
 He may not spare al þough he were his broþer
 He mot also wel say. oo word as another
 Crist spak him self ful brode in holy writte
 And wel ȝe wote no vilanye is itte 740
 Eke Plato seiþ who so can hym rede
 The wordes mote be cosyn to þe dede
 Also I prey þou [to] forȝeue it me
 Al haue I not sette folk in her degre 744
 Here in þis tale as þat thei shulde stonde

My witte is short' 3e may wel vnderstonde
Grete chere made oure hooste vs euerchoñ
 And to þe soper sette he vs anoñ 748
 He serued vs with vitailles at þe best'
 Stronge was þe wyne and wel [to] drink' vs lest'
 A semely man our hooste was wip' all
 ffor to [han] bene a marshal in an hañt 752
 A large man he was with yen stepe [leaf 111]
 A fairer Burges is [ther] none in chepe
 Bold of his speche. and wise *and* wel ytauzt
 And of manhode hym lacked[e] right' naught' 756
 Eke þerto he was right' a mery man
 And after soper pleyen he bygan
 And spak of myrthñ amonge oþer þinges
 Whan that' we had[de] made our rekenyngges 760
 And seide þus. now lordingges trewly
 3e bene to me welcome ri3t' hertely
 ffor be my trouþe if þat' I shal not lye
 I seegh' not' þis 3ere so mery a companye 764
 At' ones in þis harborowe as is nowe
 ffayne wold I do 3ou merthe wist' I howe
 And of a merþe I am right' now by-þought'
 To doñ 3ou ease and it shal coste nouzt 768
3e gone to canterbery god 3ou spede
 þe blisful martir'. quite 3ou 3our' mede
 And wel I wote. as 3e goon by þe way
 3e shapen 3ou to talen and to pley 772
 ffor trewly conforte ne myrthe is nōn
 To riden by þe wey dombe as a stone
 And þerfor wil I. make 3ou disporte
 As I seide erste and don 3ou som conforte 776
 And if 3ou likeþ alle by oon assente
 [Now] fforto stonden at my Iuggemente
 And forto worchen as I shal 3ou seie
 To morowe whan 3e riden by þe weie 780
 Now be my faders soule þat' is dede

But 3e be mery. I wil 3eue 3ou my hede Holde vp 3oure hondes wiþ out' more speche Our counsaile was not longe for to seche	784
Vs þou3t' it was not / worþe to make to wis And graunted hym wiþ oute more avis And bad him seie his veredit as him lest' Lordingges quod he nowe herkenep for þe best'	788
But' take it' not' I prei 3ou in disdeyne This is þe point' to speke short' and pleyne That' eche of 3ou to shorte wiþ our waye In þis viage shal telle tailles twaye	792
To Caunterbery ward' I mene it so And homwardes he shal telle oþere twoo Of auentures þat' han whilom bifalle And which of 3ou þat' bereþ hym best' of alle	796
þat' is to sey þat' telleþ in þis cas Tales of best' sentence and most' solas shal haue a sopere at' our alder cost' Her in þis place sitting' by þis post'	800
Whan þat' we comen ageyn from Canterburye And forto make 3ou þe more merye I wil my seluen goodly wiþ 3ou ride Right' at myne owne cost' and be 3our' gide	804
And who so wil my Iugement' wiþseye Shal pay al þat' we spenden by þe weye And if 3e vouche sauf þat' it' be so Telle me anoon wiþ outen wordes moo	808
And I will erly shape me þefore þis þinge was graunted and our oþes swore Wiþ ful glad hert' and preien hym also þat' he wolde vouchesauf so to do	812
And þat' he wolde be our governour' And of our tales Iugge and roportour' And sette a sopere at' a certeyn price And we wold rewled bene at his deuce	816
In heghe and lough and þus by on assent'	

We bene accorded to þe Iuggement
 And þer vpon þe wyne was fette anon
 We dronken and to reste wente echoñ 820
 Wiþ oute eny lenger tariynge
 On morowe whan þe day [bi]gan to sprynge
 Vp roos oure hooste and was oure alder' Cok
 And gadered vs to gidere in a flok. 824
 And forþ we riden a litel more þan paas [leaf 12]
 Vnto þe watering' of Seynt' Thomas
 And þer our hooste gan his hors areste
 And seide lordes harkenep if yow leste 828
 3e wote 3oure forward and I it 3ou record
 If euensonge and morowsonge accord
 Lat' see nowe who. shal telle þe first' tale
 As euer mote I drinke wyne or ale 832
 Who so be rebett to my Iuggement
 Shal paye for al þat' by þe way is spent'
 Now drawep Cut' er þat' we ferþer twynne
 Which þat' hap þe shortest shal bygynne 836
 ¶ Sir' knyght' quod he my maister and my lorde
 Now drowep Cutte for þat' is myn accorde
 Commeth nere quod he my lady prioresse
 And 3e sir Clerk lat' be 3oure shamfastnesse 840
 Ne stodieth nou3t' lay honde to euery man
 Anoñ to drawe every wight' bygan
 And shortely forto tellen as it' was
 Were it' be auenture or sort' or cas 844
 The soþe is þis þe Cut' fille to þe kny3t'
 Of which full glad and bliþe was euery wi3t'
 And tellen he most his tale as it' was resoñ
 By forward and by compo[si]cion 848
 As 3e han herde what' needet' wordes moo
 And whan þis good man seegh þat' it' was soo
 As he þat' wise was and obedient
 To kepen his forward by his fre assent' 852
 He seide siþen I shal bygynne þe game

What welcome be þe Cutte a goddis name
 Now lat vs ride *and* harkenep what I saye
 And wiþ þat word we riden forþ our waye 856
 And [he] byganne wiþ riȝt a mery chere
 His tale anoñ and seide as ȝe may here

¶ **I**am que domos patrias scithice post aspera gentis:
 Prelia laurigero &c. Thus endeþ þe Prologe of þis
 Boke.

¶ ffabula militis. Here bygynneþ the knyghtes tale.

Whilom was / as olde stories tellen vs	[leaf 12, back]
A worþi duk' hight' theseus	860
Of Athenes he was lord <i>and</i> <i>gouvernour</i>	
And in his tyme suche a Conquerour'	
That gretter was [ther] noon vnder þe sunne	
fful many a riche contre had he wonne	864
What' wiþ his wisdom and his chyualrye	
He conquered al þe regne of femynye	
That' whilom was ycleped Sithia	
And wedded[e] þe quene ypolita	868
And brouzt' her home wiþ hym to his cuntre	
Whith moeh glorie and gret' solempnite	
And eke her 3enge suster Emelie	
And þus with victorie and with melodye	872
Lat I þis noble Duke to Athenes ride	
And al his hooste in armes hym beside	
And certes if it' nere to longe to here	
I wold' haue tolde fully þe manere	876
Howe woznen was þe Reaume of ffemyny	
By Theseus and by his Chialrye	
And of þe grete bataille for þe nones	
Bytwyxen Athenes and amazones	880
And howe asseged was ypolita	
The faire ladye qune of Scithia	
And of þe feest' þat' was at her weddinge	
And of þe tempest' at her home <i>commynge</i>	884
But' al þat' þing' I mot' as nowe forbere	
I haue god wote a large feelde to ere	
And weike bene þe oxen in my plough	
The remenaunte of þe tale is long ynogh	888
I wil not' letten eke noon of þis route	

Lat' euery felawe telle his tale aboute
 And lat se nowe who shal þe soper wynne
 And þer I lafte: I wil aȝein bygynne [A break in the MS. with]
 Incipit narracio plena Militis.
This Duk of whom I make mençioun [leaf 13]
 Whan he was comen almost to þe toun
 In al his wele and his most Pride
 He was war as he cast' his eyen atside 896
 Where þat' þer kneled in þe highe waye
 A companye of ladys twey and tweye
 Eche after oþer clad in cloþes blake
 But' suche a crye and such a woo þei make 900
 That' in þis worlde [n]is creature luyng
 That' herde suche a-noþer wamentinge
 And of þis crie þei nolde neuere stynte
 Til þei þe Reynes of his bridel hente 904
 What' folk bene ȝe þat' at myn home commyng
 Pertourben so my feest[e] wiþ cryng
 Quod Theseus haue ȝe so grete envie
 Of myn honour þat þus compleyn and crye 908
 Or who haþ ȝou mysdone or offended
 Telleþ me if it' may be amendet'
 And whi þat' ȝe bene cloped þus in blak
 The eldest lady of hem al[le] spak 912
 Whan she had swowned wiþ a dedly chere
 þat' it' was rauthe forto sene and here
 She seide lord' to whom fortune haþ ȝeuen
 Victorie and as a conquerour to lyuen 916
 Nat' greueþ vs ȝoure glory and ȝour honour
 But' we biseke mercy and socour
 Haue mercy on our woo and our distresse
 Some drope of Pite þorgh þi gentelnesse 920
 Vpon vs wrecched wommen lat' nowe falle
 ffor certes lord' þer is noon of vs alle
 That' she ne haþ bene a doches or a quene
 Nowe bene we Catyues as it' is wel sene 924
 Thonked be fortune and her fals[e] qwhele

þat noon estate ensureþ forto bene wele Now certes lord to abide 3our presence Here in þis temple of þe goddes clemence	928
We han be wayting ^t al þis fourt[e]ny3t ^t Helpe[þ] vs lord siþ it ^t is in þi myght	[leaf 13, back]
I wrecche which þat ^t wepe <i>and</i> weile þus Whilom was wif to king ^t Cappaneus	932
That ^t starfe at ^t Thebes cursed be þat day And alle we þat ^t bene in þis araye And maken al þis lamentacioun	
We losten alle our husbondes at ^t þat town	936
While þat þe assege þer aboute lay And 3it ^t nowe þe olde Creon weillaway That ^t lord is nowe of Thebes Cite	
ffulfilled of yre and of iniquite	940
He for despite and for his tyrannye To doon þe dede bodys vilenye Of al our lordes which þat bene sclawe	
Hap al þe bodies on an hepe ydrawe	944
And wol not ^t suffre hem by noñ assent ^t Neiþere to bene yburied neiþer brent ^t But ^t makeþ houndes ete hem in despit ^t And wiþ þat ^t word ^t <i>wit</i> houten more respit ^t	948
þei fillen a Gruf ^t and criden pitously Haue on vs wrecched women som mercy And lat ^t oure sorowe synken in þi hert ^t	
¶ This gentel duke doune from his courser ^t stert ^t	952
Wip herte pitous whan he herde hem speke Him þou3te þat ^t his hert ^t wold ^t alto-breke Whan he seegh ^h hem so pitous <i>and</i> so mate	
þat whilom were[n] of so grete astate	956
And in his armes he hem alle vp hente And hem confortep in ful good entente And swore his oþe as he was trewe kny3t ^t He wolde done so ferforþly his my3t ^t	960
Vppon the Tirant Creon hem to wreke	

þat alle þe puple of Grece shuld speke
 How Creon was of Theseus yserued
 As he þat had his deþ ful wel deserued 964
 And right' anon withouten more abode [leaf 14]
 His baner' he displeied and forþ rode
 To Thebes ward' and al his hooste beside
 No ner Athenes wold' he goo ne ride 968
 Ne take his case fulli half a day
 But' onward' on his way þat' nyzt' he lay
 And sent anoon ypolita the quene
 And Emelye hir' yonge sustre Shene 972
 Vnto þe toune of Athenes to dwelle
 And forþe he ritte þer is no more to telle
 The rede statue of Mars wiþ spere *and* targe
 So shyneþ in his white baner large 976
 þat alle the feeldes glyteren vp *and* down
 And by his baner born is hys pynyoun
 Of gold ful riche in which þer was ybete
 þe Mynataur' which þat he wan in Crete 980
 Thus rizt' þis duk. thus rizt' þis conquerour'
 And in his ooste of Chyualrye þe flour'
 Til þat' he come to Thebes and alight'
 ffaire in a felde þer as he þouzt' to fize 984
 But' shortely forto speken of þis þing'
 With Creon whiche þat was of Thebes king'
 He faught' and selowgh him manly as a knyght
 In pleyn bataille and put' þe folk' to flight' 988
 And by assent' he wan the Cite after'
 And rent' adoun boþ walle spare and rafter'
 And to þe ladies he restored ageyn
 þe bones of her frendes þat' were seleyn 992
 To done obsequies as was þe gyse
 But' it' were al to longe forto devise
 The grete clamour and þe wamentynge
 þat' þe ladies made at þe brennyng 996
 Of þe bodies and þe grete honour'

That theseus þe noble conquerour'
 Doþ to þe bodies whan þei ffrom hym went'
 But shortely to telle is myn entent' 1000
 Whan þat þis worþi Duke þis theseus [leaf 14, back]
 Haþ Creon slayn and wonne Thebes þus
 Stille in þat felde he toke al nyȝt his rest'
 And did wiþ al þe contre as hym lest' 1004
 To Ransake in þe caas of þe bodies dede
 Hem for to stripe of harneyes and of wede
 The pilours dyden bysynesse *and* Cure
 Aftere þe bataille and þe discomfiture 1008
 And so bifelle þat in þe caas þei founde
 þorgh girt wiþ many a greuouus bloody wounde
 Two yonge knyghtes ligging' by and by
 Bothen in armes same wrouȝt ful richelie 1012
 Of whiche two Arcita hight' that' oon
 And þat' opere knyȝt' hight' Palamon
 Not' fully quyk ne fully dede þei were
 But by her cote armours *and* by her gere 1016
 The herowdes knewe hem self in special
 As þei þat' were[n] of þe blood Riaht
 Of Thebes. and of sustren two yborn
 Out of þe caas þe Pilours han hem torn 1020
 And han hem caried soft' vnto þe tent'
 Of Theseus and he ful sone hem sent'
 To Athenes to dwellen in Prisoñ
 Perpetuelly hem nolde he not' raunsoñ 1024
 And whan this worþi Duke haþ þus ydoñ
 He toke his ooste and home he ritte anōn
 Wiþ laurere crowned as a conquerour'
 And þer he lyueþ in Ioie and in honour' 1028
 Terme of his lif. what' nedep' wordes moo
 And in a toure in anguissh̄ *and* in woo
 Dwellen þis Palamon and eke arcite
 ffor euermore þer may no gold' hem quyte 1032
 This passeþ yere by yere *and* day by day

Till it' fille onys in a morowe of May	
That Emely þat' fairer was to sene	
Than is þe lyle vpon his stalke grene	1036
And fressher þan þe may wip floures newe	[leaf 15]
ffor wip þe roos colour strof hir hwe	
I not' which was þe fairer of hem twoo	
Er it' were day as was her wone to doo	1040
She was a-risen and al a redy dight	
ffor May wil haue no scloggardy on nyȝt'	
The seson pricketh euery gentile hert'	
And makeþ hit' out' of his slepe to stert'	1044
And sithen arise and doo May obseruaunce	
This makeþ Emely to haue remembraunce	
To doñ honour to May and forto rise	
Yclopēd was she fressh forto devise	1048
¶ Her ȝelowe heer was breided in a tresse	
Behynde her bak. a ȝeerde longe y gesse	
And in þe gardyne at' sonne vprist'	
She walkeþ vp and down and as her list'	1052
She gadereþ floures <i>partie white and rede</i>	
To make a subtile garlonde for her hede	
And as an aungel heuenly she songe	
The grete toure þat was so þikke <i>and stronge</i>	1056
Which of þe castel was þe chief dongeon	
There as þe knyghtes weren in prison	
Of which I tolke ȝowe and telle shaft	
Was euene Ioynant' to þe gardyn walf	1060
Ther as þis Emely had her pleyng'	
Briȝt' was þe sonne and cleer in þat mornyng'	
And palamon þis woful prisonere	
As was his worne by lieue of his Gaillere	1064
Was rysen and romed in a chamber on high	
In which he al þe noble Cite segħ	
And eke þe gardyne ful of braunches grene	
Ther as þe fressh emelye þe shene	1068
Was in her walk and romed vp <i>and down</i>	

This soriful prisoner þis Palamoun
 Gop in þe Chambre romyng to and froo
 And to him self compleynnyng of his woo 1072
 That' he was born ful ofte seide allas [leaf 15, back]
 And so byfelle by auenture or caas
 That þorowe a wyndowe þikke of mony a barre
 Of yren grete and square as eny sparre 1076
 He cast' his eyen vpon Emelia
 A[nd] þerwiþ al he bleynte and cried A
 As þouze he stongen were vnto þe hert'
 And wiþ þat crie Arcyte anon vp stert' 1080
 And seide Cosyn myne what' eileþ þe
 That' art' so pale and dedly on to see
 Whi cridest' þowe who haþ þe doñ offence
 ffor goddis loue. take al in pacience 1084
 Our' prisoñ for it̄ may noon othere be
 ffortune hath zeue vs þis aduersite
 Som wikke aspecte or disposicion̄
 Of Saturne by som constellacion̄ 1088
 Haþ zeuen by þis al þouze he had hit' sworn
 So stode þe heuene whan þat' we were born
 We mote endure it þis is short' and playn
 This Palamon answerð and seide agayñ 1092
 Cosyn forsop of þis opynyōn
 Thow hast' a veyn ymagynacion̄
 This prison caused me not' [for] to crie
 But I was hirt riȝt' nowe þorgh̄ out' myn ye 1096
 Into myn hert' þat' wil my bane be
 The fairnesse of þat' lady þat' I see
 ȝonde in þe gardyne romyng' to and fro
 Is cause of al my cryng and my woo / 1100
 I not' where she be womman or goddesse
 But Venus is it soply as I gesse
 And þerwiþal on knees down he fille
 And seide Venus if it be þi wille 1104
 ȝowe in þis gardyne þus to transfigure

Bifore me soriful wrecched creature
 Out of þis Prison helpe þat we mowe scape
 And if so be my destany be shape 1108
 By eterne worde to dyen in prison [leaf 16]
 Of oure lynage haue som compassion
 That is so lowe ybrouzt by tyrannye
 And wiþ þat word arcite gan asprie 1112
 Where as þis lady romed to and froo
 And wiþ þat sizt her bewte hurte hym soo
 þat if þat Palamon was wounded sore
 Arcite is hurte as moche as he or more 1116
 And wiþ a sighe he seide pitously
 þe fresshe bewte sleep me sodeynly
 Of hur þat romep in zonder place
 And but if I hauē her mercy and her grace 1120
 þat I may seen hir atte leeste way
 I ne am but dede þer nys no more to say
 This Palamon whan he þise wordes herde
 Dispitously he loked and answerde 1124
 Wheder seist þou þis in earnest or in pleye
 Nay quod Arcite in earnest be my feye
 God helpe me so me lest ful euel play
 This Palamon gan knytte his browes tway 1128
 It were to the quod he no gret honour
 ffor to be fals ne for to be traitour
 To me þat am þi Cosyn and þi broþer
 Isworne ful depe and eche of vs to oþer 1132
 That neuere for to dyen in þe peyn
 Til þat þe deþe departe shal vs tweyn
 Neþer in loue to hynder oþer
 Ne in noon oþer caas my lief broþer 1136
 But þat þou shuldest trewly ferþermore
 In euery caas and I shal forther þe þore
 þis was þine othe and myn also certeyn
 I wote rizt wele þow darst it not wiþseyñ 1140
 Thus art þow of my counsel out of doute

And nowe þou woldest falsly ben aboute
 To loue my lady whom I loue *and* serue
 And euer shal to þat myn herte sterue 1144
 Now certes fals Arcite þow shalt not so [leaf 16, back]
 I loued her first and tolde þe my woo
 As to my counsaile and my broþer sworn
 To forþere me as I haue tolde biforn 1148
 ffor which þow art ybounden as a knyght
 To helpe me if it lay in þi myght
 Or ellis art þou fals I dar wel sayn
 This arcite ful prudently spak agayn 1152
 Thow shalt *quod* he be rapier fals þan I
 But þou art fals I telle þe witterly
 ffor *paramour* I loued her first þan þou
 What wilt þow seyn. þou wist it not ȝit nowe 1156
 Whedere she be a womman or goddes
 Thyne is affeccion of holynes
 And myne is loue as to a creature
 ffor which I tolde þe myn auenture 1160
 As to my cosyn and to my broþere sworn
 I pose þat þou louedest hur' biforn
 Woost þow not wel þe olde clerkes sawe
 þat who shal ȝeue a louer eny lawe ¶ *Quis legem dat amantibus*
 Loue is a gretter lawe by my pan
 þan may be ȝeue to eny erþely man
 And þerfor positif lawe and swich decree
 Is broke al day for loue in eche degre 1168
 A man mote nedes loue mawgre his hede
 He may not fleen it: þouȝe he shuld be dede
 Al be she mayde or widowe or ellis wif
 And eke it is not likly al þi liff 1172
 To stonden in her grace no more shal I
 ffor wel þou woost þi self[e] *verely*
 þat þou and I bene dampned to prison
 Perpetuelly vs geyneth no raunson 1176
 We stryuen as [did] houndes for þe boon

þei foughten alday and 3it^r her parte was non
 þere come a kite while þat þei were so wroth^h
 þat bare away þe boon bitwene hem both 1180
 Ak þerfore at þe kingges courte my brother^r [leaf 17]
 Eche man for him self þer is noon oþer^r
 Loue if þe list. for I loue and ay shal
 And sople leue broþer þis is aft 1184
 Here in þis prison mote we endure
 And euerich of vs take his auenture
 Grete was þe strif and longe bytwix hem tweye
 If þat^r I had leisere for to seye 1188
 But to þis effect I[t] hapned on a day
 To tellen yowe as sople as I may
 A worpi duc^r þat^r hight^r Perotheus
 þat^r felawe was vnto duc Theseus 1192
 Sip þilk day þat^r þei weren children lite
 Was commen to Athenes his felawe to visite
 And forto pley as he was wont^r to doo
 ffor in þis worlde he loued no man soo 1196
 And he loued him also tenderly ageyn
 So wel þei loued as olde bokes seyn /
 That^r whan þat oon was dede sople to telle
 His felowe went^r and souzt him down in helle 1200
 But of þat storie list^r me not^r to write
 Duc^r Perotheus loued wel arcite
 And had him knowe at Thebes yere by yere
 And fynaly at þe request^r and preiere 1204
 Of Perotheus wiþ out^r ony raunsoñ
 Duc^r theseus him lete out^r of Prisoñ
 firely to goon wher þat^r him list oueral
 In suche a gise as I you telle shaft 1208
 This was þe forward^r pleyntly for to endite
 Bitwene Theseus and hym iercite
 That^r if so were þat^r arcite were founde
 Euer in his lif be day or nyzt or stounde 1212
 In eny cuntre of this theseus

And he were kaught^t it was acorded þus
 That^t wip a swerde he shuld lese his hede
 þer nas non oþer remedye ne rede 1216
 But takeþ his leue and homward^t he hym spedde [leaf 17, back]
 Lat^t hym be war his nek lith to wedde
 How grete a sorowe suffreþ nowe arcite
 The detñ he feleþ þorgh his herte smyte 1220
 He wepeþ *and* weileþ and crieþ pitously
 To sleen hym self he waiteth priuely
 He saide Allas þat day þat I was born
 Now is my prison wors than [was] beforñ 1224
 Nowe is me shape eternaly to dwelle
 Nouzt^t in purgotorye. but^t in helle
 Allas þat^t euere I knewe Perotheus
 ffor ellis had I ydwelled with theseus 1228
 Yfetered in his prison euermoo
 Than had I bene in blisse and not^t in woo
 Only þe sight^t of her^t whom þat I serue
 Thoow þat I neuere hir^t grace may deserue 1232
 Wold haue ysuffised right ynowe for me
 Oo dere Cosyn Palamon quod he
 Thine is þe victorie of þis auenture
 fful blisfully in prison myzt^t þou dure 1236
 In prison certes nay but *paradis*
 Wel hatñ fortune turned þe the dys
 þat hast þe sight^t of hur^t and I þe absence
 ffor possible is siþ þou hast her presence 1240
 And art^t a knyght an worþi and an able
 That by som caas siþ fortune is chaugeable
 Thowe maiste to þi desire somtyme atteyñ
 But^t I þat^t am exiled and bareyñ 1244
 Of al[le] grace and in so gret^t despeir^t
 That þer nys erþe water^t fuyr^t ne eire
 Ne creature þat^t of hem maked is
 þat^t may me helpe or done *comfort* in þis 1248
 Wel ouzte I sterue in wanhope and distresse

ffare wele my lif ^t my lust and my gladnesse	
Allas whi pleyen men so in comune	
Of <i>purueaunce</i> of god and of fortune	1252
That ^t <i>zeueþ</i> hem ful oft ^t in mony a gyse	[leaf 18]
Wel bet[ter] þan þei can hem self devise	
Som man desireþ forto haue richesse	
That ^t cause is of his mordere and gret ^t siknesse	1256
And som man wolde out ^t of his prisoñ fayñ	
That ^t in his hous is of his mayne selayñ	
Infinite harmes bene in þis matiere	
We wote not what ^t þinge þat we preien here	1260
We faren as he þat ^t dronken is as mous	
A dronken man wote wele he haþ an hous	
But he ne woote which þe riȝt way is þidere	
And to a dronken man þe way is sclydere	1264
And certes in þis world ^t so faren wee	
We sechen fast ^t aftere felicite	
But ^t we goon wronge ful oft ^t trewly	
Thus may we seie alle and nameliç I	1268
That wende and had a grete opynyõ	
That if I myȝte skapen from <i>prisoñ</i>	
þan had I be in Ioie and <i>parfite</i> hele	
þer nowe I am exiled fro my wele	1272
Sip þat I may not ^t seen ȝou Emelye	
I am but dede þer nys no remedye	
Vppon þat oþer side Palamon	
Whan þat he wist ^t þat ^t arcite was agoñ	1276
Swiç sorowe he makeþ þat þe grete tour	
Resounþ of his ȝellinge <i>and</i> clamour	
The pure fettres of his shynes grete	
Were of his bitter salte teeres wete	1280
Allas quod he Arcita cosyn myne	
Of al our strif god wote þe fruyte is þine	
Thow walkest now in Thebes at þi large	
And of my woo. þou ȝeuest litel charge	1284
Thow maist sip þou hast wisdom <i>and</i> manhede	

Assemble alle þe folk of our kinrede	
And make a werre so sharpe on þis Cite	
þat by som auenture or som trete	1288
Thow maist' haue hir' to lady and to wiff'	[leaf 18, back]
ffor whom þat I most nedes lese my liff	
ffor as by way of possibilite	
Sip þou art' at' þi large of prison free	1292
And art a lorde grete is þine auountage	
More þan is myne þat sterue here in a kage	
ffor I mote wepe and weile while þat I lyue	
Wip al þe woo þat' prison may me zeue	1296
And eke wip peyn þat' loue me zeueþ alsoo	
þat' doubleþ al my torment' and my woo	
þer wip þe fire of gelesie vpsterte	
Wip in his brest' and hente hym by þe herte	1300
So woodly þat' he like was to biholde	
The box-tre or þe asshen dede and colde	
That' seide he .o. cruel goddes þat' gouerne	
This world' wip byndinge of 3oure worde eterne	1304
And writen in þe table of Athamaunt'	
3oure parlement' and 3oure eterne graunt'	
What' is mankinde more vnto 3ou holde	
þan is the shepe þat' roukeþ in þe folde	1308
ffor slayn is man riȝt' as an oper beest'	
And dwelleþ eke in prison and in arest'	
And hap siknesse and grete aduersite	
And oft' tymes giltlees parde	1312
What' gouernaunce is in þis prescience	
That' giltlees tormentēþ Innocence	
And encreseþ þis al my penaunce	
þat man is bounden to his obseruaunce	1316
ffor goddes sake to letten of his wille	
Ther as a beest may al his list fulfille	
And whan a beest' is dede he hath no peyn	
But' aftere his det̄h man mote wepe and pleynd	1320
Thogh in þis world' he haue care and woo	

Wiþ outen doute it may stonden soo
 The answeere of þis lete I to dyuynes
 But wel I wote þat in þis world gret pyne es 1324
 ¶ Allas I se a serpent or a theef [leaf 19]
 þat mony an trewe man haþ done meschief
 Goon at his large and where hym list may turne
 But I mote bene in prison þorgh Saturne 1328
 And eke þorgh Iuno Ialous and eke wode
 þat haþ destroyed wel nygh al þe blode
 Of Thebes wiþ his waaste walles wide
 And Venus sleep me on þat oper side 1332
 ffor Ialousy and fere of him Arcite
 Now wil I stinte of Palamon a lite
 And lat hym in his prison stille dwelle
 And of Arcite forþ I wil 3owe telle 1336
 The somer passeþ and þe nyȝtes longe
 Encresceþ double wise. þe peynes stronge
 Bopen of þe louer and of þe prisoner
 I not whiche haþ þe woofuller myster 1340
 ffor shortely for to seyn of þis Palamõn
 Perpetuelly is dampned to prison
 In cheynes and [in] fettres to þe dede
 And Arcite is exiled vp[on] is hede 1344
 ffor euermore as out of þat cuntre
 Ne neuere ne shal his lady see
 ¶ 3ow louyers aske I now þis questiõn
 Who haþ þe wors Arcite or Palamõn 1348
 That oon may se his lady day by day
 But in Prison mot he dwelle alway
 That oper wher hym list may ride and goo
 But seen his lady shal he neuer moo 1352
 Now devyneþ as 3ou list þat 3e can
 ffor I wil telle forþ as I byganne

- ¶ Whan þat Arcite to Thebes commen was
 fful often a daie he swelt^t and seide alas 1356
 ffor seen his lady shal he neuere moo
 And shortely to concluden all his woo
 So mykel sorowe had neuere creature
 þat is or shal while þat^t þe world^ð may dure 1360
 ¶ His slepe his mete. his drink is hym byraft^t [leaf 19, back]
 þat^t lene he wexeþ and drye as is a shaft^t
 His eyen holowe and grisly to biholde
 His hwe falowe *and* pale as asshen colde 1364
 And solitarie he was and euer allone
 And waillinge al þe nyzt^t making his mone
 And if he herde songe or instrument
 Than wolde he wepe he myzt^t not^t stent^t 1368
 So feble eke were his spirites / and he lowe
 And chaunged so þat^t no man can knowe
 His speche neiþer his voys þouze men it herde
 And in his gere for al þe worlde he ferde 1372
 Not^t comly liche to louers maladye
 Of heres but^t rather like manye
 Engendred of humour malancelike
 Byforn his celle fantastike 1376
 And shortely turned was al vp and down
 Both habite and disposicioun
 Of him þis wooful louer^t Daine¹ Arcite [1^t or Dame]
 What^t shuld^t I alday of his woo endite 1380
 Whan he endured had a zere or two
 This cruel torment *and* þis peyn *and* woo
 At Thebes in his courte as I seide
 Vpon a nyght^t in slepe as he hym leide 1384
 Hym þouzt^t howe þat the wenged god Mercurye
 Biforn him stode and bad hym to be merye
 His slepy yeerde in honde he bare vprizt^t
 An hatte he wered vpon his heres brizt^t 1388

Araied was þis god as he toke kepe
 As he was whan þat Argus toke his slepe
 And seide him þus to Athenes shalt þou wende
 Ther is þe shapen of þi woo an ende 1392
 And wiþ þat worde Arcite woke *and stert*
 Nowe trewly howe sore þat euer me smert
 Quod he to Athenes nowe wil I fare
 Ne for þe drede of deþe shal I not spare 1396
 To see my lady þat I loue and serue [leaf 20]
 In her presence I ne recche þough I sterue
 And wiþ þat word he kaught a grete myroure
 And seegh þat chaunged was al his colour 1400
 And seegh his visage al in anoþer kinde
 And right anon it ranne him in his mynde
 That sipen his face was so disfigured
 Of malady þe which he had endured 1404
 He myghte wel if þat he bare hym lowe
 Lyue in Athenes euermore vnknowe
 And seen his lady wel nye day be day
 And right anon he chaunged his aray 1408
 And clad him as a poor labore[er]
 And [al] alon sauf oonly a sqwiere
 That knewe his priuete *and* al his caas
 Whiche was disguised poorly as he waas 1412
 To Athenes is he gon þe nexte way
 And to þe courte he went vpon a day
 And at þe gate he profered his seruyse
 To drugge and drawe what so men wil deuise 1416
 And shortely of þis mater forto seyñ
 He felle in office wiþ a chamberleyñ
 The whiche þat was dwelling wiþ Emelye
 ffor he was wise and sone couþe aspye 1420
 Of euery seruante which þat serueþ here
 Wel couþe he hewen wode and water bere
 ffor he was yonge and myghty for þe nonys
 And þerto he was stronge and bigge of bonys 1424

To done þat eny wizt̄ him can deuise
 A 3eer or two he was in þis seruyse
 Page in þe Chambre of Emely þe bri3t
 And Philostrate he seide þat he hizt̄ 1428
 But̄ half so wel biloued a man as he
 Ne was þer neuer in courte of his degre
 He was [so] gentil of Condicioun
 þat þorowe out al þe court̄ was his renoun 1432
 Thei seide þat̄ it̄ was a charite [leaf 20, back]
 That̄ thesue wolde enhaunce his degre
 And putten hym in worshipful seruyse
 þer as he myght̄ his vertue exercise 1436
 And þus wiþ in a while his name is spronge
 Bothen of his dedes and of his good tonge
 That̄ Theseus haþ taken hym so nere
 þat of his chambere he made hym a squyere 1440
 And 3aue him gold̄ to meyntene his degre
 And eke men brou3t̄ hym out̄ of his cuntre
 ffro 3ere to 3ere ful priuely his rente
 But̄ honestly and sleizly he it̄ spente 1444
 That̄ no man wondred. how þat̄ he it̄ hadde
 And thre 3ere in þis wise his lif he ladde
 And bare hym so in pees and eke in werre
 þer is no man þat̄ Theseus hath̄ derre 1448
 And in þis blisse lete I nowe Arcite
 And speke I wil of Palamon a lite
 ¶ In derknesse in horrible and strongt̄ prison̄
 This vij. 3ere hath̄ sitten Palamon 1452
 ffor-pyned what̄ for woo *and* for distresse
 Who felet̄h double soor and hevynesse
 But̄ Palamon þat̄ loue destreyneþ so
 That̄ wode out̄ of his wit̄ he goþ for woo 1456
 And eke þerto he is a *prisonere*
 Perpetuelly not̄ oonly for a 3ere
 Who cowde ryme in englissh̄ *proprely*
 His martierdome for soþ it̄ am not̄ I 1460

Therfor I passe as listly as I may	
¶ It felle þat in þe vij. 3ere of May	
The .iiij. nyght as olde bokes seyn	
þat al þis story telleþ more pleyñ	1464
Were it by auenture or be destynye	
As whan a þing is shape it shal be	
That sone aftere the mydnyzt Palamoñ	
By helpinge of a frende brak prison	1468
And fleep þe Cite fast as he may goo /	[leaf 21]
ffor he had 3eue his gaylere drink so	
Of a Clerrey made of a certeyn wyne	
Wip vercotiks and opy of Thebes fyne	1472
þat al þat nyzt þough þat men wold hym snake	
þe Gailler slepte and myzte not awake	
¶ And þus he fleep as fast as euer he may	
þe nyzt was short and fast[e] by þe day	1476
þat nedes cost he most him self hiden	
And til a groue faste ther besiden	
Wip dredful foote þan stalkeþ Palamoñ	
ffor shortely þis was his opynyon	1480
That in þat groue he wolde hym hide alday	
And in þe nyght þan wolde he take his way	
To Thebes ward his frendes forto prey	
On theseus to helpe hym to werrey	1484
A[nd] shortely eiper he wold lese his lifft	
Or wynnen Emely to his louely wiff	
This is þeffeste and his entente pleyñ	
¶ Nowe wil I turne vnto Arcite ageyn	1488
That litel wist howe negh þat was his care	
Til þat fortune had kauzt hym in his snare	
The bysy larke massagere of day	
Salueþ in her songe þe morowe gray	1492
And ffiry Phebus riseþ vp so brizt	
þat al þe Orient laugheth of his sizt	
And wip his stremes drieþ in þe greues /	
The siluer dropes honging in þe leues	1496

¶ And Arcita þat in þe courte Royall
 With Theseus his squyer' pryncipall
 Is risen and lokeþ on þe mery day
 And forto doñ his obseruance to Maij 1500
 Remembring' þe point' of his desire
 He on his coursere sterting' as þe fire
 Is riden into þe feeldes him to pley
 Out' of þe courte were it' a myle or twey 1504
 And to þe Groue of which þat I zou tolde [leaf 21, back]
 By auenture his way by-gon to holde
 And maken hym a garlond' of þe greues
 Were it' of wodbynde or hawthorn leues 1508
 And loude he songe azeinst þe sonne shene
 May wiþ all þi floures and þi grene
 Welcome be þowe faire fresshe May
 I hope þat I somme grene gete may 1512
 And from his courser wiþ a lusty herte
 Into þe Groue ful hastely he sterte
 And in a path he romeþ vp *and* down
 þer as by auenture of þis Palamoun 1516
 Was in a busshe þat no man myzt' hym see
 ffor soor afferd' of his deþ was he
 ¶ No þinge ne knewe he þat' it was Arcyte
 God wote he wold' haue trowed it ful lite 1520
 But' soþ is seide goon sithen mony zeres
 That' feelde hath yen *and* þe wode hap eeres
 It' is ful faire a man to bere hym euene
 ffor alday meten men at' vnsef' steuene 1524
 fful litel wote Arcite of his felawe
 þat' was so nygh to harken of his sawe
 ffor in þe busshe he sitteþ now ful stille
 Whan þat' Arcite had romed al his fille 1528
 And songen at' the roundel lustely
 Into a stody he felle sodeynly
 As don þise louers in her queynt[e] geres
 Now in þe crophe now down in þe breres 1532

Now vp nowe doune as Boket in a welle
 Riȝt as þe friday soþly forto telle
 Now it shyneþ nowe it reyneþ faste
 Riȝt so gan gery Venus euer caste 1536
 The hertes of her folk riȝt as hir' day
 Is Gerful . riȝt' so chaungeþ she aray
 Selde is þe friday al þe weke ylike
 ¶ Whan þat Arcite nad ysonge he gan to sike 1540
 And sette hym doune with oute[n] eny more [leaf 22]
 Allas quod he þat' day þat' I was bore
 Howe longe Iuno þorgh̄ þi cruelte
 Wiltow werryen Thebes þe Citee 1544
 Allas ybrought' is to confusioñ
 The blood Roial of Cadme and Amphion
 Of Cadmus whiche þat' was þe first man
 That Thebes bilt . or first' þe toune bygan 1548
 And of þe Cite first' was corowned kinge
 Of his lynage am I and of his of-springe
 By verrey lyne as of þe stok Roialt
 And nowe I am so Catif and so thral 1552
 That' he þat' is my mortal enemye
 I serue him as his sqwier poorlye
 And ȝit doþ me Iuno wel more shame
 ffor I dar not' be-knowe myn owne name 1556
 But þer [as] I was wonte to hiȝt' Arcite
 Now hight' I Philostrate not' worþe a myte
 ¶ Allas þou felle Mars allas þou Iuno
 Thus haþ ȝoure Ire our lynage alfordo 1560
 Sauf oonly me *and* wrecched Palamoñ
 That Theseus martereþ in prison
 And ouer al þis to sleen me vtterly
 Loue haþ faire his darte so brennyngly 1564
 Istiked þorgh̄ my trewe careful herte
 That shapen was my deþ arst þan my sherte
 ȝe sleen me wiþ ȝoure yen Emelye
 ȝe ben þe cause wherfore þat' I dye 1568

Of al the remenant^t of myn oþer care
 Ne sette I nouz^t the mountance of a tare
 So þat I cowde do ouz^t to þour plesaunce
 And wiþ þat worð he felle down in a traunce 1572
 A longe tyme and afterwarð he vp stert
 þis Palamon þat þouz^t þat þorgh [his] herte
 He felte a colde swerde sodeinly glide
 ffor Ire he qwoke no lenger wold he bide [leaf 22, back. MS. re-
 peats 'He felt a swerde
 sodeinly Glide']
 ¶ And whan þat he had herde Arcites tale
 As he were wode wiþ face dede *and* pale
 He stert hym vp out^t of the buskes thikke
 And seide Arcite fals traitour quykke 1580
 Now art þou hent þat louest my lady soo
 ffor whom þat I haue al þis peyn *and* woo
 And art my blood and to my counsel sworne
 As I ful oft have tolde þe here to forⁿ 1584
 And hast by-iaped here Duke Theseus
 And falsly chaunged hast þi name þus
 I wil be dede or ellis þou shalt dye
 Thowe shalt not loue my lady Emely 1588
 But I wil loue hir oonly and no moo
 ffor I am Palamon þi mortel ffoo
 And þouze þat I no wepen haue in þis place
 But out^t of prison am I-stert^t by grace 1592
 I drede nouz^t but eiþer þou shalt dye
 Or þou ne shalt not loue Emelye
 Chese which þou wilt^t or þou shalt not asterte
 ¶ This Arcite wiþ ful dispitous herte 1596
 Whan he hym knewe and had his tale herd^t
 As feers as a lyon pulled out^t a swerd^t
 And seide þus by god þat sitteþ aboue
 Ne it were þat þou art seke and wode for loue 1600
 And eke þat þou no wepen hast in þis place
 Thow shuldest neuere out^t of þis groue pace
 þat þou ne shuldest dyen of myn honde
 ffor I defie þe swerte and þe bonde 1604

Which þat þou seist I haue made to þe
 What verrey fool þenk wel þat loue is free
 And I wil loue hir mawgre al þi myzt
 But for as moche as þou art a worþi knyzt 1608
 And willest to darreyn hir by bataille
 Haue here my trouþe to morwe I nyl not faille
 Wiþ outen witting of eny opere wight [leaf 23]
 That here I wil be founden as a knyght 1612
 And bringen harneis rizt ynough for þe
 And chese þe best and leue þe worst for me
 And mete and drink þis nyghte wil I bringe
 Ynough for þe and cloþes for þi beddyunge 1616
 And if so be þat þou my lady wynne
 And sclee me in þis wode þer I am Inne
 Thow maist wel haue þi lady as for me
 This Palamon answerd I graunte it þe 1620
 And þus þei bene departed til a morowe
 Whan eche of hem had leide his feiþ to borowe
 ¶ O cupide out of al charite
 O regne þat wold no felawe haue wiþ þe 1624
 fful soþ is seide þat loue ne lordship
 Wil not his þonkes haue no felawship
 We fynde þat of Arcite and Palamoun
 Arcite is riden anoñ into the toun 1628
 And on þe morowe er it were day lizt
 fful priuely two harneys haþ he dizt
 Both suffisaunt and mete to darreyñ
 The bataille in þe feelde bytwix hem tweyn 1632
 And on his hors allone as he was born
 He carieþ al his harneys hym biforn
 And in þe Groue at tyme and place ysette
 This Arcite and þis Palamon ben mette 1636
 To chaungen gan þe colour in her face
 Right as þe hunters in [the] reyne of trace
 That stondeþ atte gap[pe] wiþ a spere
 Whan hunted is þe lyon or þe here 1640

And hereþ him come russhing^t in þe Greues
 And brekeþ both [the] bowes and þe leues
 And þenkeþ here *commeth* my mortal enemye
 Wiþ oute faile he mote be dede or I 1644
 ffor eiper I moot^t scleen him atte gappe
 Or he moot selee me if þat^t me myshappe
 So feerden [thei] in chaungyng^t of here hwe [leaf 23, back]
 As fer as euerich of hem oþer knewe 1648
 Ther nas no good day ne no saluynge
 But streiþ^t wiþ oute worde or rehersinge
 Euerich of hem helpeþ forto arme oþer^t
 As frendly as he were his owne broþer^t 1652
 And after þat^t with sharpe speres stronge
 They foynen eche at^t oþer wonder longe
 Thow myztest^t wene þat^t þis Palamon
 In his fightinge were a wood lyoñ 1656
 And as [a] cruel tigre was Arcite
 As wilde boores gon þei to-gider^t smyte
 That^t frothen white as fome for yre woode
 Vp to þe Ankle fought^t þei in her bloode 1660
 And in þis wise I lete hem fighting^t dwelle
 And forþ I wil of Theseus zou telle
 ¶ The destanye minister^t generall^t
 That^t executep in þe world ouer all^t 1664
 The purueaunce þat god haþ say bifore
 So stronge it^t is þat^t þei þe world had it swore
 þe contrarie of a þinge be ye or nay
 3it^t som tyme it shal falle on a day 1668
 That^t falleþ nouþ^t eft wiþ in a þousand yere
 ffor certeynly our appetites here
 Be it^t of werre or pees. or hate or loue
 Al is þis rewled by þe sight aboue 1672
 This mene I nowe by myghty Theseus
 That^t forto hunte is so desirous
 And namely atte grete hert^t in Maij
 That^t in his bed þer daweþ hym no day 1676

That he nys cladde and redy forto ride
 Wiþ hunte and horn and houndes hym biside
 ffor in his hunting hap he swiçh delite
 That it is al his ioye and appetite 1680
 To bene hym self þe grete hertes bane
 ffor after Mars he serueþ nowe Dyane
 Cleer was þe day as I haue told er þis / [leaf 24]
 And Theseus wiþ al[le] Ioie and blis 1684
 Wiþ his ypolita þe faire quene
 And Emely[e] cloþed al in grene
 On huntinge bene þei riden rially
 And to þe Groue þat stode ful fast by 1688
 In which þer was an herte as men hym tolde
 But Theseus þe streighte way hap holde
 And to þe launde he rideþ hym ful rizt
 ffor þider was þe hert wonte to haue his flizt 1692
 And ouer a broke and so forþ on his way
 This duke wil haue a cours at hym or tway
 Wiþ houndes swiçh as þat him list comaunde
 And whan þis duke was come vnto þe launde 1696
 Vnder þe sonne he loked anon
 He was ware of Arcite and Palamoñ
 That fouzten brems as it were boles two
 The brizte swerdes wenten to and fro 1700
 So hidously þat wiþ þe leest[e] stroke
 It semeþ þat it wold fellen an oke
 But what þei were no þing he ne wote
 This duke his courser wiþ his spores smoot 1704
 And at a stert he was atwixe hem twoo
 A pulled out a swerde and cried hoo
 No more vp peyn of lesing of your hede
 By myghty mars he shal anon be dede 1708
 That smyteþ eny stroke þat I may sene
 But telleþ me what myster men 3e bene
 That ben so hardy forto fizten here
 Wiþ oute Iugge. or oþer officere 1712

¶ As it were in litel liste ryaffy
 This Palamon answerde hastily
 And seide Sir' what' nedep' wordes moo
 We han þe deþe deserued boþ twoo 1716
 Two woful wrecched be we two catyfes
 þat bene encombred of oure owne lifes
 And as þow art' a riztful lorde and Iuge [leaf 24, back]
 Ne zeue vs neiþer mercy ne refuge 1720
 But' sele me furst' for seinte Iarite
 But' slee my felowe eke as wel as me
 Or slee hym [first] for þoughþ þo[u] knowest lite
 This is þi mortal ffoo þis is arcite 1724
 That' from þi londe is bashed on his hede
 ffor whiche he haþ deserued to be dede
 ffor þis is he þat' come vnto þi gate
 And saide þat' he hight' Philostrate 1728
 Thus haþ he Iaped þe ful mony a zere
 And þou hast' made him þi chief squyere
 And þis is he þat' loueþ Emelye
 ffor siþ þat' day is commen þat' I shal dye 1732
 I make pleynly my confession
 That' I am þilk[e] wooful Palamon
 That' haþ þi prison broken wikkedly
 I am þi mortal foo and it' am I 1736
 That' loueþ so hote Emely þe brizt'
 That' I wil dye present' in her sizt'
 Wherfore I axe deþ and my Iwes
 But' sele my felawe in þe same wise 1740
 ffor boþe we han deserued forto be sclayn
 This worþi duke answerd anon agayn
 And saide þis is a short' conclusioñ
 3oure owne mouþe be 3oure confessioñ 1744
 Haþ dampned þer 3ou and I wil it' recorde
 Hit nedep' not' to pyne 3ou wiþ acorde
 He shul be dede by myzty mars þe rede
 The quene anon for verrey wommanhede 1748

Gan [for] to wepe and so seide Emelye
 And al þe ladis in þe companye
 Grete pite was it^t as it þou3t^t hem alle
 That^t euere such a chaunce shuld byfalle 1752
 ffor gentil men þei were of grete astate
 And no þinge but^t for loue was þis debate
 And seegh her bloody woundes wide and sore [leaf 25]
 And alle criden boþ[e] lasse and more 1756
 Haue mercy vpon vs wommen alle
 And on her bare knees down þei falle
 And wold han kissed his fete þer he stoode
 Til at þe last^t a-sclaked was his moode 1760
 ffor pite renneþ sone in gentile herte
 And þoughe he first^t for ire quoke *and* sterte
 He haþ considered shortly in a clause
 The trespass of hem both[e] and þe cause 1764
 And al þou3e his Ire her gilt^t accused
 3it^t in his reson he hem both excused
 And þus he þou3te wel þat^t euery man
 Wol helpe him self in loue if þat^t he can 1768
 And eke delyuere him self out^t of prison
 And eke him self had compassion
 Of wommen for þei wepen euere in oon
 And in his gentile hert^t he þou3t^t anōn 1772
 And soft^t vnto him self he seide fye
 Vpon a lord þat^t wil haue no mercy
 But^t be a lyon boþe in word^t and dede
 To hem þat^t bene in repentaunce *and* drede 1776
 As wel as to a prowde dispitous man
 That wil mey[n]tene þat^t he first bygan
 That^t lord haþ litel in discreccion
 That^t in such caas can no diuision 1780
 But weieþ pride and humblenesse after^t oon
 And shortely whan his Ire was þus agon
 He gan to loken vp wiþ eyen light^t
 And spake þise same wordes al on hight^t 1784

- The god of love. o Benedicite
 How myghty and howe grete a lord is he
 Azeinst his myght' þer 3eyneþ noñ obstacles
 He may be cleped a god for his myracles 1788
 ffor he can maken at is owne gyse
 Of euerich hert' as þat' hym list' devise
 Lo here þis arcite and þis Palamon [leaf 25, back]
 That quietly were out' of prison goñ 1792
 And myght' haue lyued in thebes Rially
 And weten I am her mortal enemye
 And þat' her deþ is in [my] myght' also /
 And 3it' hap loue mawgre her eyen two 1796
 [I-]Brouzt' him hidere boþ[e] forto dye
 Now lokeþ is not' þis a grete folye
 Who may be a fool but' if he loue
 Biholde for goddes loue þat' sitteþ aboue 1800
 See howe þei blede bene þei not' wel araied
 Thus hap her lorde þe god of loue hem paied
 Her wages and her fees for her seruise
 And 3it' þei wenene for to bene ful wise 1804
 That' seruen loue for ouzt' þat' may bifalle
 But' 3it' is þis þe beste game of alle
 That' she for whom þei haue þis Iolite
 Can hem as moche thonke as me 1808
 Shee wote no more of al þis hote fare
 By god þan wote an Cuckowe or an hare
 But' al most' be assaied hote and cold
 A man mote be a fool or 3onge or old 1812
 I wote it' by my self for yore agone
 ffor in my tyme a seruauante was I oone
 And þerfor sith I knowe of loues peyne
 And wote howe sore it can a man distreyne 1816
 As he þat' hap oft bene cauzt' in his laas
 I 3ou for3iue al holy þis trespaas /
 Atte request' of þe quene þat' kneleþ here
 And eke of Emelye my suster' dere 1820

And 3e shul boþe vnto me swere That neuermore 3e shul my cuntre dere Ne make werre vpon me nyȝt ne day But bene my frendes in al þat 3e may	1824
I nowe forȝeue þis trespase euery deff And þei hym swore his axing ^t fair ^t and weff And him of lordship and of mercye preide	[leaf 26] 1828
And so hem graunteþ grace and þus he seide To speke of Rial lynage and ricches Thoo þat she were a quene or a princesse Eche of 3ou boþe is worþi doutelees To wedden whan tyme is but napelees	1832
I speke as for my suster ^r Emelye ffor whom 3e haue þis strif and Ielosie 3e wote 3oure self ze may not wedden two At ones þouȝe 3e fizten euermoo	1836
þat oon of 3ou be he loþ or lief He mot go pipen in an yve lief This is to say she may not nowe haue both Ne be 3e neuere so Ielous and so wroth	1840
And forþi þer nowe put in þis degre That eche of 3ou shal haue his destane As him is shape and harkenep in what wise Lo here 3oure ende and þat I shal devise	1844
¶ My wille is þis for plat ^t conclusiõ Wip oute[n] eny replicaciõ 3if þat 3ou likeþ take it for þe best That euery of 3ou shal go wher hym lest	1848
ffirely wip outen raunson [or] daungere At þis day fifty wekes fer ne nere Euerich of 3ou shal bryng ^t an .C. knyȝtes Armed for listes vp al rightes	1852
Al redy to darreyn hir ^r by batayle And þis bihote I 3ou wip outen faile Vpon my troupe and as I am a knyȝt þat wheder of 3ou boþ[e] þat hap myȝt	1856

- This is to seyn þat whedere he or þowe
 May wiþ his hundred as I haue spoke of nowe
 Slee his contrary or out of lystes drive
 Than shal I zeue hym Emely to wyve 1860
 To whom þat fortune hap zeue so faire a grace
 The listes shal I do maken in þis place
 And god so wisly on my soule rwe [leaf 26, back]
 As I shal euene Iuge be and trwe 1864
 3e shal non opere ende wiþ me make
 þat oon of 3ou shal be dede or take
 And if yow þenke þis is wel yseide
 Sey 3oure avice and holde 3ou wel apaide 1868
 This is 3oure ende and 3our conclusiõ
 Who lokeþ lightly now but Palamon
 Swo springeth vp for Ioie but Arcite
 Who coude telle or who coude it endite 1872
 The Ioie þat is made in þat place
 Whan Theseus hap doñ so faire a grace
 But doune on knees went euery manere wiþt
 And thonked hym wiþ al her hert and myzt 1876
 And namely þise Thybeanes mony sith
 And þus wiþ hope and herte bliþ
 Thei take her leue and homward gan þei ride
 Tho Thebes-ward wiþ olde walles wide 1880
 [.

 no gap in the MS.]
 ¶ I trowe men wolde deme it negligence
 If I forzete to telle þe dispence
 Of Theseus þat goþ so bisily
 To maken vp þe listes rially 1884
 That suche a noble theatre as it was
 I dar wel seyn in þis world ther nas
 The circuyte a myle was aboute
 Walled wiþ stone and dicched al wiþ oute 1888
 Rounde was þe shappe in manere of a compas /

ful of degrees þe heght of sixty paas	
That whan a man was sette on oon degre	
He letted not his felawe forto see	1892
Estward þer stode a gate of Marbel white	
Westward right such a noþer in þe opposite	
And shortely to conclude such a place	
Was non in erþe as in so litel space	1896
ffor in þe londe þer nas no crafty man	
That Geometrye or arsmetrike can	
Ne purtraieur ne keruer of ymages	[leaf 27]
That Theseus ne 3aue him mete <i>and</i> wages	1900
The theater to make and to devise	
And forto doon his rizt and his sacrificise	
He Estward hap [up]on þe gate aboue	
In worship of wenus goddes of loue	1904
Done maken an awtere and an oratorie	
And on þe westward side in memorie	
Of Mars he hap maked rizt such anoþere	
þat cost largely of gold a ffoþere	1908
And norþward in a tourett on þe wall	
Of Alabaster white and rede Corafl	
An oratorie riche forto see	
In worship of Diane of chaastite	1912
Hap Theseus done wrouzt in noble wise	
But zit had I forgete forto devise	
That noble kervingges <i>and</i> þe pourtratures	
þe shappe þe countenance and þe figures	1916
þat weren in þe oratories thre	
ffirst in þe temple of Venus maist þou see	
Wrouzt on þe walle ful pitous to biholde	
þe broken slepes and þe sighes colde	1920
þe sacred teeres and þe waymentynge	
þe firy strokes of þe desiringe	
þat loues seruautes in þis lif enduren	
þe Oþes þat her conautes assuren	1924
Plesaunce and hope. desire fool-hardynesse	

Beaute and þouȝt. bawdry richesse	
Charmes and force. lesingges and flaterye	
Dispence bysynesse and Ielowsie	1928
þat wered of ȝolowe goldes a garlonde	
And a Cukkowe sitting on her honde	
ffeestes instrumentes Carolles daunces	
Iuste and array and al þe circumstaunces	1932
Of loue whiche I rekened <i>and</i> reken shaft	
By ordere were peynted on þe walf	
And mo þan I con [make] of mencion	[leaf 27, back]
ffor soply al þe mōnt of Citharōn	1936
Ther Venus haþ her <i>pr</i> incipal dwellinge	
Was shewed in þe walle in purtraiynge	
Wip al þe Gardeyne and þe lustynesse	
Not was forȝeten þe porter ydelnesse	1940
Ne narcisus þe faire of yore agone	
Ne ȝit þe foly of king salamon	
Ne ȝit þe grete strengthe of hercules	
þe enchaumentz of Medea and certes	1944
Ne of Turnus wip þe hardy fires corage	
þe riche Cresus catif in seruage	
Thus may ȝe sene þat wisdom ne richesse	
Bewte ne sleighte. strengthe hardynesse	1948
Ne may with Venus holde chaumpartie	
ffor as her list þe world þan may she gie	
¶ Loo alle þise folk so caught were in her las	
To þei for woo ful often seide alas	1952
Suffiseþ here oon ensample or two	
And þoughe þer coude rekne a thousand moo	
The statue of Venus glorious to see	
Was naked fletinge in þe large see	1956
And from þe nauel down al keuered was	
Wip wawes grene and briȝt as eny glas	
A Citole in hire riȝte hond had she	
And on her hede ful semely to see	1960
A Rose garlonde fresshe an wel smellinge	

Aboue her hede her dowues flateringe
 Byfore hir' stode hir' sone Cupido
 Vpon his shuldurs wenges had he two 1964
 And blynde he was as it' is ofte sene
 A bowe he bare and arowes briȝt' *and* kene
 ¶ Whi shuld' I not eke as wel telle ȝou alle
 The pourtrature þat' was vpon þe walle 1968
 Wiȝ in þe temple of myȝty mars þe rede
 Al peynted was þe walle in lengthe *and* brede
 Like to þe Estres of þe grisly place [leaf 28]
 þe hight' þe gr[e]te temple of Mars in trace 1972
 In þilk[e] colde frosty Regyōn
 Ther as Mars haȝ his souereyn' manciōn
 ¶ ffirst' on þe walle was peynted a foreste
 In which þer wonneȝ neiȝer man ne beste 1976
 Wiȝ knotty knarry bareyn trees olde
 Of stubbes sharpe and hidous to biholde
 In which þer was a rombled and a swoghe
 As þough a storme shuld breke euery bouȝe 1980
 And downward / from an hille vnder a bent'
 There stode þe temple of Mars Armypotent'
 Wrought' of al of burnyd steel of which þe entent'
 Was longe and streit' *and* goostly forto sent' 1984
 And þer out' came a rage in such a wise
 þat' it' made al þe gates forto rise
 Til norþeron liȝt' in at þe doores shoōn
 ffor wyndowe on þe wall þan was þer nōn 1988
 þorowe whiche men myȝt eny light' discernen
 þe door was al of Athamant' eterne
 Yclenched ouertwert' and endelonge
 Wiȝ Iren towe forto make it' stronge 1992
 Euery piler þe temple to sustene
 Was tonne grete of yren briȝt' *and* shene
 Ther seghe I furst' þe [derk] ymagynyng'
 Of felowny and al þe compassing' 1996
 The cruel Ire rede as eny gleede

þe Pikpurs and eke þe pale drede	
þe smyler wiþ þe knyf vnder þe cloke	
þe shippen brennyng' wiþ þe blak[e] smoke	2000
þe treson of þe morþering' in þe bedde	
þe open werre wiþ woundes al by-bledde	
Conteekte wiþ bloody knyff <i>and</i> sharpe manace	
Al ful of chirkinge was þat' sory place	2004
þe sleer of him self 3it' segh I þere	
His herte-bloode hap bapēd al his here	
The nayle ydryuen in þe shode a ny3t'	[leaf 28, back]
Wiþ colde deþe wiþ mouþe gaping' vp rizt'	2008
Amyddes of þe temple satte a meschaunce	
Wiþ discomfort' and sori countenaunce	
3it' saughe I woodnesse laughing' in his rage	
Armed compleint' outhees and fires corage	2012
þe Careyn in þe bussñ wiþ þrote ycorve	
A thousand sclayne and not' of qualme ystorue	
This tyraunt' wiþ þe pray by force yrafte	
þe toune destroyed þer nas no þing' ylafte	2016
3it' seghe I Brent' þe shippes Hoppesteres	
The hunte strāngled wiþ þe wilde beres	
The sowe fretinge þe childe rizt' in þe cradett	
The Coke yscalded for al his longe ladett	2020
Nou3t was forgeten by þe infortune of Marte	
The Carter ouer-riden wiþ þe Carte	
Vndere þe whele ful lowe he lay adoun	
þere were also of Martes dyuysioun	2024
þe Barboure þe bochere and þe Smyth	
þat' forgeþ sharpe swerdes on þe stith	
And al aboue depeynted in a toure	
Saughe I conquest' sittinge in grete honour	2028
Wiþ þe sharpe swerde ouer his hede	
Hanginge by a sotle twyned þrede	
Depeinted was þe the sclauughter' of Iuliu	
Of grete Nero and of Anthoneus	2032
Al be þat' þilke tyme þei were vnborñ	

3it was her deþ depeinted þer bifor̄
 By manasing^t of Mars ri3^t by figure
 so was it^t shewed in þe purtrature 2036
 As is depeinted in þe certres aboute
 Who shal be ded or slayne for loue
 Suffiseþ oon ensample in stories olde
 I may not^t rekne hem al[le] þou3e I wolde 2040
 þe statue of mars vpon a carte stode
 Armed and loked grymme as he were wode
 And ouer his hode þer shyneþ two figures [leaf 29]
 Of sterres þat^t bene cleped in figures 2044
 That^t oon Puella that^t oþer rubeus
 This god of armes was araied þus
 A wolf þer stode to forn him at^t his fete
 Wiþ eyen rede and of a man he ete 2048
 Wiþ sotel pensel was depeynted þis storie
 In recordinge of Mars and [of] his glorie
 ¶ Nowe to þe temple of Dyane þe chaste
 As shortely as I can I wil me haste 2052
 To telle 3ou al the descripcioun
 Depeynted was þe walle vp *and* down
 Of huntinge and of shamfast chastite
 þer saughe I how wooful calistope 2056
 Whan þat^t Dyane agreued was [with] here
 Was turned from a womman to a bere
 And after was she made þe lode-sterre
 Thus was she peynted I can say 3ou no ferre 2060
 Her sone is eke a sterre as 3e may see
 þer saughe I dane turned to a tree
 I mene not^t þe goddes Dyane
 But^t Penneus doughter which þat^t hi3te dane 2064
 þer saugh I Attheon an hert^t ymaked
 ffor vengeance þat^t he segħ diane al naked
 I saugh þat^t how his houndes haue hym caughte
 And frenen him for þei knewe hym nau3te 2068
 3it^t ypeynted was a litel ferþermore

Howe Atthelaunt' hunted þe wilde bore And maleagre and mony oþer moo/ for whiche diane wrouzt' hym care and woo	2072
Ther seghe I many anoþer worþi story Whiche men list' not' to drowe to memory This goddes vpon an hert' ful wel she sette Wiþ smale houndes al about' her fete	2076
And vnderneþe her fete she had a mone Wexing' it' was and shal wany sone In gaudy grene her statue cloþes was	[leaf 29, back]
Wiþ bowe in honde and arowes in a cas Her eyen kestē she ful lowe a doune Ther Pluto haþ his derke regioun A woman trauailing' was hir' biforn	2080
But' for her child was so longe vnborñ fful pitously lucyna can she calle And seide helpe for þou maist' best' of alle Wel coude he peynte lyvely þat' it wrouzt'	2084
Wiþ mony a floreyne he þe coloures bouzt' ¶ Now bene þise listes made and theseus That' at his grete cost' araied þus þe temple and þe theatre euery dele	2088
Whan it' was done him liked wonder' wele But' stint' I wil of Theseus a lite And speke of Palamon and [of] arcite The [day] approcheþ of her retournynge þat' eueriche shuld an C. knyghtes bringe	2092
The bataille to darrey as I you tolde And to Athenes her couenaunte forto holde Haþ euery of hem brouzt' an .C. knyghtes Wel armed for þe werre at' al[le] rightes	2096
And sikerly þer trowed many a man That' neuere siþ þat' þe world bygan That' forto speke of knyghthode of her honde As fer as god haþ maked see or londe	2100
Nas of so fewe so noble a companye	2104

ffor euery wight þat loued chivalrye	
And wold his þonkes haue a passaunte name	
Hap preide þat he myght be of þat game	2108
And wel was him þat þerto chosen was	
ffor if þer felle to morow such a caas	
þe knowen wel þat euery lusty knyzt	
þat loueþ paramours and hap [his] myzt	2112
Were it in engelonde or ellis where	
þei wolden fayne wilnen to be þere	
To fight for a lady O benedicite	[leaf 30]
It were a lusty sighte forto se	2116
And right so feerden þei wiþ Palamoñ	
Wiþ hym þei wenten knyghtes mony oñ	
Som wol be armed in an haberiõn	
And a brest plate and a litel gippõn	2120
And some wil haue a peire plates large	
And some wil haue a Spruse plate sheeld or targe	
Somme wil [be] armed on his legges wefste	
And haue an axe and some a mace of stele	2124
þer nas no newe gyse þat it nas olde	
Armed were þei as I haue 3ou tolde	
Euerich after his opynyõn	
Ther maist þou see commyngt with Palamon	2128
Ligurge hym self þe grete kingt of trace	
Blak was his visage and manly was his face	
þe Cercles of þe eyen in his hede	
þei glowden bitwix 3elowe and rede	2132
And liche a lyon loked he aboute	
With kempte heeres on his browes stoute	
His lymes grete his brawnes stronge	
His sholdres brode his arnes rounde and longe	2136
And as þe Gyse was in his cuntre	
fful heghe vpon a chare of gold stode he	
Wiþ .iiij. white boles in þe trais	
In stede of cote armuræ and his harnais	2140
Wiþ nailles 3elowe and brizt as eny goldt	

He had a berres skyn coleblake for olde
 His longe heer was kempte behinde his bak
 As eny rauens feþere it' shoon for blak 2144
 A wreþe of gold. arme briȝt' of huge wiȝt'
 Vpon his hede sette ful of stonys briȝt'
 Of fyne Rubies and of dyamauntz
 About' his chare þer went' white alauntz 2148
 xx^{ti} and moo as grete as ony ster'
 To huntun at þe lyon or þe deer'
 And folowed hym wiþ mosel fast' ybounde [leaf 30, back]
 Colers of golde and torrettes philed rounde 2152
 An C. lordes had he in his route
 Armed ful wel wiþ hertes steerne and stoute
 ¶ With Arcite in stories as men fynde
 The grete Emetreus þe king' of ynde 2156
 Vpon a stede bay trapped in stele
 Couered wiþ a cloþe of gold diapred wele
 Come ridinȝ liche þe god of armed Mars
 His cote armure was a cloþe of tars 2160
 Couched wiþ peerles . white. rounde *and* grete
 His sadel was of brent gold' newe ybete
 A mantel vpon his shulder hongynge
 Bretful of rubies rede as fire spar[c]linge 2164
 His Crispe here liche rynges was yronne
 And þat' was ȝelowe and gliterinȝ as þe sonne
 His nose was heghe his eyen briȝt' citryn
 His lippes rounde his colour was Sangwyn 2168
 A fewe frakens in his face spreyn't
 Bitwix ȝelowe and somdele blak' ymeynt'
 And as a lyon he is eyen caste
 Of xxv^{ti} ȝere his age y caste 2172
 His beard was wel bygonne forto springe
 His vois was as a trompet' þondringe
 Vpon his hede he wered a laurer grene
 A garlond fresshe and lusty forto sene 2176
 Vpon his honde he bare for his delite

An Egle tame as eny lylye white
 An .C. lordes had he wiþ hym þere
 Al armed sauf her hedes in al her gere 2180
 fful richely in al[le] maner þingges
 ffor trusteþ wel þat dukes Erles kyngges
 Were gadered in þis noble companye
 ffor loue and for encrees of chyualrye 2184
 About þis knyzt þer ranne on euery part
 fful mony a tame lyon and leopart
 And in þis wise þise lordes al and some [leaf 31]
 Bene on þe sonday to þe Cite come 2188
 Aboute prime and in þe toun alight
 This Theseus þis duke þis worþi knyzt
 Whan he had brouzt hem into his Cite
 And Inned hem [ech] after her degre 2192
 He feesteth hem and doþ so gret labour
 To esen hem and done hem al honoure
 That 3it men wenen þat no mannys witte
 Of noon astate ne cowde amenden it 2196
 The mynstralsy þe servise at þe feest
 The grete 3iftes to þe most and leest
 The riche aray of Theseus palays
 Ne who sat first and laste vpon þe dees 2200
 What ladies fairest bene or best daunsinge
 Or whiche of hem can beste daunce or singe
 Ne who most felingly spekeþ of loue
 What hawkes sitten or perche aboue 2204
 What houndes ligen on þe floor a-doun
 Of al this nowe I make no meneyoun
 But al þe effecte þat þenkeþ me þe best
 Nowe commeþ þe poynt herkneþ if 3ou lest 2208
 ¶ The sonday nyght er day gan to springe
 Whan Palamon þe larke herd singe
 Al þouze it ner not day by howres two
 3it songe þe larke and Palamon rizt þoo 2212
 Wiþ holy hert and wiþ an highe corage

He roos vp to we[n]den on his pilgrymage
 Vnto þe blisful Cithera benygne
 I mene Venus honorable and digne 2216
 And in her houre he walkeþ forþ apaas
 Vnto þe listes þer þe tempel was
 And doune he kneleþ and wiþ humble chere
 And herte sore he seide as 3e shal here 2220
 ¶ ffairest. o faire . o. lady myne Venus
 Douztere to Ioue and spouse to Vleanus
 Thow glader of þe mounte of Citheroun [leaf 31, back,
 ffor þilk[e] loue þou haddest to a-down 2224
 Hauē pite on my bitter teeres smerte
 And take myn humble preier at þine herte
 Alas I ne haue no langage to telle
 þe effecte ne þe tourment of myn helle 2228
 Myne herte may myn armes not be-wreye
 I am so confused þat I can not seye
 But mercy lady brizt þat woost wele
 My þouzt and seest what harmes I fele 2232
 Considere al þis and rwe vpon my sore
 As wisly as I shal for euermore
 Hensforþ my myzt þi trewe seruaunte be
 And hole werre alwaie wiþ chaastite 2236
 That make I myne avowe so as 3e may helpe
 I kepe not of armes for to 3elpe
 Ne I ne axe not to morowe to haue victorie
 Ne renoun in þis caas ne veynglorie 2240
 Of price of armes blowen vp and down
 But I wold haue fully possessioun
 Of Emelye and dye in her seruise
 ffynde þou þe manere howe *and* in what wise 2244
 I recche not but it may better be
 To haue victorie of hem or þei of me
 So that I haue my lemman in myn armes
 ffor þouze so be þat mars is god of armes 2248
 3oure vertue is so grete in heuene aboue

þat' if þe lest I shal wel haue my loue
 Thy tempel shal I worship euermoo
 And on þine awtere wher I ride or goo 2252
 I wil doon sacrificise and fires bete
 And 3if 3e wil not' so my lady swete
 þan prey I 3ou to morowe wiþ a spere
 þat' Arcita me þorghe þe herte bere 2256
 Then rekke I not' whan I haue lost' my lif
 þou3e Arcita wyne her to his wiff
 This is þe effecte and eende of my priere [leaf 32]
 3eue me my lady þou blisful lady dere 2260
 ¶ Whan þe orison was dōn of Palamōn
 His sacrificise he did and þat' a-nōn
 fful pitously wiþ al[le] circumstaunces
 Al telle I not' as nowe his obseruaunces 2264
 But' atte laste þe statue of Venus shoke
 And made a signe wherby þat' he toke
 þat' his preier accepted was þat' day
 ffor þou3e þe signe shewed a delay 2268
 3it wist' he wele þat' graunted was his bone
 And wiþ glad hert' he went' awaie ful sone
 ¶ þe iij. houre in-equal þat' Palamōn
 Byganne to venus temple forto goñ 2272
 Vp roos þe sonne and vp roos Emelye
 And to þe temple of Dyane gan she hie
 Hir maidens þat' she þider wiþ hir ladde
 fful redily wiþ hem þe fire þei hadde 2276
 þe encense þe cloþes and þe remenaunte all
 þat to þe sacrificise longen shaft
 þe hornes ful of meth̄ as was þe gise
 þer lacked nou3t' to don her sacrificise 2280
 Smoking' þe temple ful of cloþes faire
 This Emelie wiþ herte debonaire
 Hir' lady wasse wiþ water of a welle
 But howe she did hir ri3t' I dar not' telle 2284
 But' it' be eny þing' in generall

And ȝit it were a game to here it all
 To him þat meneþ wel it were no charge
 But it is good a man be at his large 2288
 Hir brigt heres were kempte vntressed all
 A corone of a grene oke seriall
 Vpon her hede was sette ful faire and mete
 Two fires on þe awter gan she bete 2292
 And did her þingges as men may biholde
 In stace of Thebes and þise bokes olde
 Whan kindeled was þe fire wiþ pitous chere [leaf 32, back]
 Vnto Diane she spake as ȝe may here 2296
 ¶ O chaaste goddes of þe wodes grene
 To whom boþ heuene and erþe and see is sene
 Quene of [the] regne of Polute derk and lowe
 Goddes of maydenes þat myn hert hast knowe 2300
 fful mony a ȝere and woost what I desire
 As kepe me from þi vengeance and þine Ire
 That attheon abouȝte cruelly
 Chaast goddes wel woost þou that I 2304
 Desire to be a maiden al my liff
 Ne neuere wil I be [no] loue ne wiff
 I am þou woost ȝit of þi companye
 A maide and loue huntyng and venerye 2308
 And for to walke in þe wodes wilde
 And not to be a wiff and be wiþ childe
 Nat wil I knowe company of man
 Now helpe me lady siþ ȝe may and can 2312
 ffor þoo þre formes þat þou hast in þe
 And Palamon þat hap such loue to me
 And eke Arcite þat loueþ me so sore
 This grace I prei þe wiþ out more 2316
 And sende loue and pees ytwyx hem twoo
 And fro me turne away her hertes so
 That al her hote loue and her desire
 And al her bysy torment and her fire 2320
 Be queynt or turned in an opere place

And if so be þou wilt do me no grace
 Or if it be my destany be shaped soo
 That I shal nedes haue oon of hem two 2324
 As sende me him þat most desireþ me
 Biholde goddesse of clene chaastite
 The bitter teeres þat on my chekes falle
 Siþ þou art maide and keper of vs alle 2328
 My maydenhode þou kepe *and* wel conserue
 And while I lif a maiden I wil þe serue
 þe fires brenne vpon þe Auter' clere [leaf 33] 2332
 While Emely was þus in his preiere
 But sodeynly she seghe a þinge queynt
 ffor right' anoon oon of þe fires queynt
 And quicked ageyn and after þat anōn
 That' oþer fire was queynt *and* al agōn 2336
 And as it' queint' it made a qwistelinge
 As done þise wete brondes in her brennyng
 ¶ And at' þe brondes eende out' ranne anōn
 As it' were blody dropes mony ōn 2340
 ffor which so sore a-gaste was Emelie
 þat she was wel nyghe madde *and* gan to crye
 ffor she ne wiste what' it' signified
 But' only for þe fire þus she criede 2344
 And wepte þat it' was pite for to here
 And þer wip al Diane gan to apere
 Wip bowe on hond' right' as an hunteresse
 And seide douztere stint' of þine heuynesse 2348
 And monge the goddes high it is affermed
 And by eterne worde writt' *and* confermed
 þow shalt be wedded vnto oon of þoo
 þat' han for þe so moche care *and* woo 2352
 But vnto which of hem I may not' telle
 ffare wele I may no lenger dwelle
 þe fire whiche þat' on myn awter' brenne
 Shal þe declaren er þat þou go henne 2356
 Thine aventure of loue as in þis caas

And *with* þat' worde þe Arowes in þe caas
 Of þe goddes clateren fast and ringe
 And forþ she went' and made a vanysshinge 2360
 ffor whiche þis Emely a-stonyed was
 And seide what' mounteth þis alas
 I put' me in þi protectiōn
 Diane *and* in þi disposiciōn 2364
 And home she goþ þe neste way
 This is þe effecte þer is no more to say
 þe nexte houre of Mars folowing' þis [leaf 33, back]
 Arcite vnto þe temple ywalked is 2368
 Of feers mars to done his sacrificise
 Wiþ al þe myghtes of his peynemes wise
 Wiþ pitous hert' and heghe deuociōn
 Rizt' þus to Mars he seide his Orisoñ 2372
 ¶ O stronge god þat' in the regnes colde
 Of taars honoured art and lord yholde
 And hast' in euery regne *and* euery londe
 Of armes al þe bridel in þine honde 2376
 And hem fortunest' as þe list devise
 Accepte of me my pitous sacrificise
 If so be my þouzte may deserue
 And þat' my myght' be worþi forto serue 2380
 Thi godhede þat' I may be oon of þine
 þan preie I þe to rwe vpon my pyne
 ffor þilk peyn and þat' hote fire
 In which þou brentest' whilom for desyre 2384
 Whan þou vsedist' the beaute
 Of faire yonge fresshe venus free
 And haddest' hure in armes at' þi wille
 Aft' þoughe þe onys on a tyme mysfelle 2388
 Whan vleanus had kauzt' þe in his laas
 And foonde þe ligging' be his wif alaaas
 ffor thilk[e] sorowe þat' was in þine herte
 Haue rauthe as wel vpon my peynes smerte 2392
 I am 3onge and vnkonyng' as þou wooste

And as I trowe wiþ loue offended moste
 þat euere was eny lyues creature
 ffor she þat doþ me al this woo endure 2396
 Ne rechep neuere wher I sinke of flete [MS. " flete of sinke]
 And wel I wote ere she me mercy hete
 I mote wiþ strengthe wynne her in þis place
 And wel I wote wiþ outhelpe or grace 2400
 Of þe ne may my strengthe not auaile
 Than helpe me lord to morowe in my bataile
 ffor þilk[e] fire þat whilom brente þe [leaf 34]
 As wel as þat fire now brennep me 2404
 And do þat I to morowe haue victorie
 Myne be þe travaile and þine be þe glorie
 þi souereyn temple wil I most honouren
 Of eny place and alway most labouren 2408
 In þi plesaunce and in þi craftes stronge
 And in þi temple I wil my baner honge
 And all þe armes in my companye
 And euermore vnto þe day I dye 2412
 Eterne fire I wil byfore þe fynde
 And eke to þis awowe I wil me bynde
 My lorde my here þat hongep lowe a dow[n]e
 þat neuere 3it ne felt offencioun 2416
 Of rasoure ne of shere I wil þe 3eue
 And bene þi trewe seruauante while I lyue
 Now lord haue rouþe vpon my sorowes sore
 3if me þe victorie I axe þe no more 2420
 The preier stint of Arcita þe stronge
 The Ryngges on þe tempel door 3it honge
 And eke the door[e]s clateren ful fast
 Of whiche Arcita somewhat hym a-gast 2424
 The fires brennen vpon þe auter bri3t
 That it gan al the temple for to light
 And swete smelle anoon þe grounde vp 3af
 And Arcita anoñ his honde vp haf 2428
 And more ensense vnto þe fire he cast

Wiþ oþer riȝtes moo and atte last
 The statue of Mars bygan his hauberk ryng
 And wiþ þat soun he herde a *murmuryng* 2432
 fful lowe and dym þat seide þus victorie
 ffor whiċh he ȝaue to mars honour *and* glorie
 An þus wiþ Ioie and hope wel to fare
 Arcita is [y]brouȝt of Moche care 2436
 As fayn as foule is of þe briȝte sonne
 And riȝt anon such strif is bygonne
 ffor þilk[e] *grauntyng* in þe heuene aboue [leaf 34, back]
 By-twix venus þe goddess of loue 2440
 And Mars þe steerne god armypotent
 þat Iubiter was bysy it to stent
 Til at þe [last] Pale Saturnus þe colde
 þat knewe so mony of auentures olde 2444
 ffonde in his bolde *experience* and & ¹ art [1 so]
 þat he ful sone haþ plesed every part
 And soþ is seide elde haþ grete *auauntage*
 And elde is boþ[e] *wisdom*e and vsage 2448
 Men may þe olde *attenne* but not atrede
 Saturne anōn to stinten strif and drede
 Al be it þat it is aȝeinst his kinde
 Of al his strif he can *remedye* fynde 2452
 My dere doughter Venus quod saturne
 My cours þat haþ so wide forto *turne*
 Haþ more powere þan wote eny man
 Myne is þe *drenchinge* in þe see so wan 2456
 Myne is þe prison in þe derke cote
 Myn is þe *strangling*e and þe hanging by þe þrote
 þe *murmur* and þe *chirles* rebellinge
 þe Gonyng and the priuey *empoysenyng*e 2460
 I do *vengeaunce* and pleyn *correctiōn*
 While I dwelle in þe signe of the lyōn
 Myne is þe Ruyne of [t]he heghe halles
 þe fallinge of þe toures and of þe walles 2464
 Vpon þe mynour or vpon þe carpentere

I slowgh Sampson shaking þe pilere
 And myn[e] be þe maladies colde
 The derk tresounes and þe castes olde 2468
 My lokinge is þe fader of Pestilence
 Nowe wepe no more I shal do my diligence
 That Palamon þat is þine owne knyzt
 Shal haue his lady as þou hast [him] hizt 2472
 Thouze Mars shal helpe his knyzt zit napelees
 Bytwix zou tweyne þer mot be somtyme pees
 Al be ze not of oon complexiõn [leaf 35]
 That causeþ al day such dyuysioñ 2476
 I am þine eile redy at þi wille
 Wepe no more I wil þi lust fulfille
 Now wil I stinten of þise goddes aboute
 Of Mars and of venus goddes of loue 2480
 And pleynty I wil telle zou as I can
 þe grete effecte for which þat I biganne
 [.

 *no gap in the MS.*]
 Grete was þe feest in Athenes þat day
 And eke þat lusty seson in [that] may 2484
 Made euery wight to be in suche plesaunce
 And al þat day Iusten þei and daunce
 And spenden it in Venus high seruyse
 But by þe cause þat þei shulden rise 2488
 Erly forto seen þe grete fight
 Vnto her reste went þei atte nyght
 And on þe morowe whan day gan to springe
 Of hors and harnays noyse and clateringe 2492
 þer was in hostelrye aboute
 And to þe palaies rode þer mony a route
 Of lordes vpon stedes and palfreis
 þer maist þou see dyuising of harneis 2496
 So vncoupe and so riche and wrouzt so well
 Of Goldsmythrie of browding and of steeff

The sheeldes briȝte teesteers and trappures	
Gold-hewen helmes hauberkes <i>and</i> cote armures	2500
Lordys in parementis on her coursers	
Knyghtes of retenue and eke swiers	
Nailinge þe speres and helmes bokelinge	
Sigyng ^t of sheeldes wiȝ layvers lasinge	2504
Ther as nede is þei were no þing ^t ydeff	
þe ffomyngē steedes on þe golden bridest	
Snavyng ^t and fast ^t þe armurers also	
Wiȝ file and hamure ridyng ^t to and froo	2508
ȝemen on foote and comons many oñ	
Wiȝ shorte stauēs þikke as þei may goñ	
Pipes trompettes nakerns and clariouns	[leaf 35, back]
þat ^t in þe bataille blewen bloody sownes	2512
þe paleis ful of puple vp <i>and</i> down	
Here þre þer ten holdinge her questioun	
Dyuunyng ^t of þise thibeanes knyȝtes twoo	
Some seide þus. some seide it ^t shal be so	2516
Somme helde wiȝ him wiȝ þe blake berde	
Somme wiȝ þe balled some with þe þikke hered	
Some seide he loked grymme <i>and</i> he wold ^t fight ^t	
He haȝ a sparȝe of xx ^{ti} pounce wight ^t	2520
þus was þe halle ful of dyuunyngē	
Longe aftere þe sonne gan to springe	
þe grete Theseus of his slepe gan wake	
Wiȝ mynstralcie and nois þat ^t þei make	2524
Heelde ȝit ^t þe chambre of his palais riche	
Til þat ^t þe thebeane knyghtes boȝ yliche	
Honoured weren into þe place fette	
Duke Theseus is at ^t þe wyndowe sette	2528
Araide riȝt ^t as he were a god in trone	
The puple presed þidere-ward ^t ful sone	
Him forto seen and done him high reuerence	
And eke to harken his heest ^t and his sentence	2532
An herowde on a scaffold ^t made an oo /	
Til al þe noise of þe puple was doo	

And whan he see þe puple of noise al stille
 Thus shewed he þe myzty dukes wille 2536
 þe lord hap of his heghe discreciōn
 Considered þat it were destrucciōn
 To gentel blood to feghten in þis gise
 Of mortall bataile now in þis emprise 2540
 Wherefore to shapen þat þei shal not die
 He wille his firste purpoos modifie
 No man þerfor vp peyne of losse of liff
 No maner shotte. ne pollax ne short knyff 2544
 Into þe listes sende or þidere bringe
 Ne shorter swerd forto stoke wiþ poynt bitinge
 No man ne drawe ne bere it be his side [leaf 36]
 Ne no man shal vnto his felawe ride 2548
 But oon cours wiþ a sharpe grounden spere
 ffoyn if hym list on foote hym self to were
 And he þat is at meschief shal be take
 And not sclayn but be brouzt to a stake 2552
 þat shal be ordeyned on eiper side
 But þidere he shal be foorce and þer abide
 And if so falle þe Chevetayn be take
 On eiper side or ellis sclayn his make 2556
 No lenger shal þe tornamente laste
 God spede 3ou goo and leye on faste
 Wiþ swerdes and longe maces fizeþ 3our fille
 Go nowe 3oure way þis is þe lordes wille 2560
 The vois of puple touched heuene
 So loude cried þei wiþ mery steuene
 God saue suche a lord þat is so good
 He wilneþ no distructiōn of blood 2564
 Vp goþ þe trompes and þe melody
 And to þe listes ritt þe company
 By ordinaunce þorghē out þe cite large
 Honged wiþ cloþes of gold and not wiþ sarge 2568
 fful like a lorde þis noble duc gan ride
 These two Thebeanes on eiper syde

And aftere rode þe quene *and* Emelye
 And after þat a nother companye 2572
 Of oon and oþer after her degre
 And þus þei passen þorgh̃ out þe Cite
 And to the listes come þei be tyme
 It nas not of þe day ȝit fully pryme 2576
 Whan sette was Theseus ful riche *and* hie
 Ypolita þe quene and Emely
 And oþer ladies in degrees aboute
 Vnto þe setes preesen al þe route 2580
 And westward þorgh̃ þe gates vnder mart /
 Arcite and eke þe hundred of his part
 With̃ banere rede is entred riȝt anōn [leaf 36, back]
 And in þat self[e] moment Palamōn 2584
 Is vnder venus estward in þat place
 With baner' white and hardy chere *and* face
 And in al þe world to seken vp and down
 So euene wiþ out variacioun 2588
 þer nere suche company[es] tweye
 ffor þer nas noon so wise þat coude seie
 That eny had of oþer auantage
 Of worthynesse ne of estate ne age 2592
 So euen were þei chosen forto gesse
 And in to ringges faire þei hem dresse
 Whan þat her names redde were euerchoñ
 þat in her nombre gile were þer nōn 2596
 Tho were þe gates shette and cried was loude
 Do now ȝoure deuoire yonge knyȝtes proude
 The herawdes left her prikking vp and down
 Now ryngen trompes loude and claryoun 2600
 þer is no more to seyn [but] est' and west'
 In goon þe sharpe speres ful sadly into þarest'
 In goþ þe sharpe spere into þe side
 þere seen men who can iuste *and* who can ride 2604
 þere shyueren shaftes vppon sheeldes þikke
 He fileth þorgh̃ þe herte spone þe prikke

Vp springen speres xx ^{ti} fote on hight	
Out goon þe swerdes as þe siluer' white	2608
þe helmes þei to-hewen and to-shrode	
Out bresteþ þe blode wíth sterne stremes rede	
Wíþ myȝty maces þe bones þei to-brest'	
And þorgh þe thikkest' of þe throng' gan threst'	2612
þere stomblen stedes stronge and doun goñ alle	
He rolleþ vnder fote as doþ a balle	
He foyneþ on his foote wíþ his tronchoun	
And he hym hurteþ wíþ his hors a-down	2616
He þorgh þe body is born <i>and</i> siþ is take	
Maugre his hede and brouȝt' vnto þe stake	
As forward' was [riȝt] þer he most' abide	[leaf 37]
Anoþer lad is on þat' oþere side	2620
And somtyme doþ hem theseus forto rest'	
Hem to refresshe and drink[e] ȝif hem lest'	
fful off[te] a day han þise thybeanes two	
To-gidere mette and wrouȝt' eche oþer woo	2624
Vnhorsed haþ eche oþere of hem twey	
þer was no tigre in vale of Galgopleye	
Whan hir' whelpe is stole whan it' is lite	
So cruel on þe hunte as is Arcite	2628
ffor Ielous hert' vpon þis Palamoñ	
Ne in Belmerie þer is so felle a lion	
þat' hunted is or for his hunger wode	
Ne of his pray desireþ so þe bloode	2632
As Palamon to sclec his foo Arcite	
þe Ielous strokes on her helmes bite	
Out renneþ blood of boþ her sides rede	
Somtyme an ende þer is on euery dede	2636
ffor or þe sonne vnto þe reste went'	
þe Stronge king' Emetrius gan hent'	
This Palamon as he fauȝt' wíþ Arcite	
And made his swerde depe in his flesshe bite	2640
And by [the] force of xx ^{ti} is he take	
Vnȝolden and drowen to þe stake	

And in þe Rescove of þis Palamoñ
 The stronge king^t ligurge is born down 2644
 And kinge Emetrius for al his grete strength
 Is born out^t of his sadel his swerdes length
 So hit^t hym Palamon er he were take
 But^t al for nouzt^t he was brouzt^t to þe stake 2648
 His hardy hert^e may hym helpe nouzt^t
 He mote abide whan þat^t he is ykauzt^t
 By force and eke by composiciōn
 Who soroweþ now but^t woful Palamon 2652
 They mote no more go ageyn to fize
 And whan þat^t he had sene þat^t size
 He cried Hoo no more for it^t is doñ [leaf 37, back]
 Ne noon shal lenger to his felawe goñ 2656
 I wil be trewe Iuge and not^t partie
 Arcite of Thebes shal haue Emelye
 That^t by his fortune haþ hir^t faire women
 Anon þer is a vois of puple by-gonne 2660
 ffor Ioie of þis so loude and high wip-alle
 It semed þat^t þe listes shulden falle
 What^t can nowe faire Venus do aboue
 What^t seiþ she now what^t doþ þis quene of loue 2664
 But wepeþ so for wanting^t of her wille
 Til þat^t her teeres in þe listes fille
 She seide I am ashamed doutelees
 Saturnus seide doughter^t hold^t þi pees 2668
 Mars haþ his wil his knyght^t haþ al his bone
 And by myne hede þou shalt^t be esed sone
 The trompours wip þe loude mynstralsie
 The harawdes þat^t ful loude zelle *and* crye 2672
 Bene in her wele for Ioie of daun areyte
 But^t harkenep me and stinte vois a lite
 Swiche a myracle þer bifelle anōn
 This ferce Arcite haþ of his helme ydoñ 2676
 And on a courcere forto shew his face
 He prikkeþ endelonge þe large place

Lokingt vpward^t vnto Emelye
 And she azein him cast^t a frendly ye 2680
 ffor wommen as to speken in comune
 Thei folowen al þe fauour of fortune
 And was al his [in] chere as in his herte
 Out^t of þe grounde a fyre Infernal sterte 2684
 ffrom Pluto sent^t. at þe request^t of Saturne
 ffor which his hors for fere gan to turne
 And lepe a-side and foundred as he lepe
 And or þat^t Arcyte may taken kepe 2688
 He pight^t him on þe pomel of his heued
 þat in þe place he laie as he were dede
 His brest^t to-broste wiþ his sadel bowe [leaf 38]
 As blak he lay as eny cole or crowe 2692
 So was þe blood yronne in his face
 Anon he was [y]brouzt^t out^t of þe place
 Wiþ herte sore vnto Theseus palays
 þo was he coruen out^t of his harnays 2696
 And in a bedde ybrouzt^t ful faire *and* blyue
 ffor he was zit^t in memorie *and* on lyue
 And alway crying^t after emelie
 Duke Theseus wiþ al his companye 2700
 Is *commen* home to Athenes Cite
 With alle blisse and grete solempnite
 Al be it^t þat^t þis auenture is falle
 He wolde not^t discomforte[n] hem alle 2704
 Men seide eke þat^t Arcide shuld not^t dye
 He shal be heled of his maladye
 And of anoþer þinge þei were as fayne
 þat^t of hem alle þer nas no man slayne 2708
 Al were þei sore ybete and namely oñ
 þat^t wiþ a spere was þrelled þe brest boñ
 Two oþer woundes and two broken armes
 Somme had salue and some had charmes 2712
 ffermacies of erbes and eke saue
 þei dronken for þei wold^t her lyues haue

ffor which þis noble duke as he wel can Confortep and honourep euery man	2716
And made Reuel al þe longe nyȝt Vnto þe straunge lordes as it was riȝt Ne þere was holde no discomforture [.]	2720
. <i>no gap in the MS.</i>	
ffor fallinge is by an aventure Ne to be lad by force vnto a stake Vnȝolden and wiȝ xx ^{ti} knyȝtes take	2724
A persone alon wiȝ oute moo And haried forȝ by arme fote <i>and</i> too And eke his stede dryven forȝ <i>with</i> staues With fote men boȝ ȝemen <i>and</i> [eke] knaues	2728
It was aretted him no vilanye	[leaf 88, back]
þer may no man clepe[n] it ^t cowardye ffor whiche a-non duke Theseus lete crye To stynten al rancour and [al] envie	2732
Gree þei as wel of on side as of oþer And eiþer side ylike as oþeres broþer And ȝaf hem ȝiftes after her degre And fulli heelde a feeste daies þree	2736
And conueyed þe kingges worȝely Out ^t of his toune a Iourne largely And home went ^t euery man þe riȝt[e] way þer was no more but ^t fare wel & haue good day	2740
¶ Of þis bataille I wil no more endite But ^t speke of Palamon <i>and</i> of Arcyte Swelleȝ þe brest ^t of Arcyte and þe sore Encreseȝ at ^t his herte more <i>and</i> more	2744
The clotered blood for eny leche craft ^t Corrumpeȝ and is in his body laft ^t þat ^t neiþer veyn[e] blood ne ventowsinge Ne drinke of herbes may be [him] helpinge	2748
By vertue expulsif or anymaſt ^t ffro þilk[e] vertu cleped naturaſt ^t	

Ne may þe venyme voide ne expelle
 The pipes of his longges gan to swell 2752
 And euery lacert' in his hert' adoun
 Is shent' wiþ venyme *and* corrupcioun
 Hym Geyneþ neiþer forto gete his lif
 Vompte vpward' ne downward' laxatif 2756
 Al is to-brosten thilk[e] regiõn
 Nature hap no *dominaciõn*
 And certainly þer nature wil not' wirche
 ffarewel Phisik go bere þe man to chirche 2760
 This is aht and some þat' Arcita most' die
 ffor which he sendeþ after Emelie
 And Palamon his cosyne dere
 þan seide he þus as 3e shal after here 2764
 Not' may my woful spirite in myn hert'
 [leaf 39]
 Declare a poynt' of my sorowes smert'
 To 3ou my lady þat' I loue moste
 But' I biqueth þe seruise of my gooste 2768
 To 3ou abouen euery creature
 Siþ þat' my lif[e] may no lenger dure
 Allas þe woo allas þe peynes stronge
 þat' I for 3ou haue suffred and so longe 2772
 Alas þe deþe alas myn Emelie
 Alas departinge of our companye
 Alas my hertes quene alas my lief wif
 Myn hertes lady endere of my lif 2776
 What' is þe world' what' axen men to haue
 Now wiþ his loue nowe in his cold[e] graue
 Allone wiþ oute[n] eny companye
 ffare wel my foo fare wel myn Emely 2780
 And softe take me in 3oure [armes] twey
 ffor loue of god herkeneþ what' I seie
 I haue here wiþ my Cosyn Palamon
 Had strif and rancoure mony day agoñ 2784
 ffor loue of 3ou and for my Ielousie
 And Iubiter so wis my soule gye

To speken of a seruaunt proprely	
Wiþ circumstaunces al trewly	2788
þat' is to seyn trouþh. honure <i>and</i> kny3thede	
Wisdom humblesse estat <i>and</i> high kynrede	
ffredom and al þat' longeþ to þat' art	
So Iubiter haue on my soule part'	2792
As in þis worlde ri3t' now know I none	
So worþi to be biloued as Palamon	
þat' serueþ zou and wil do. al his liff	
And if þat' ze shal euer bene a wif`	2796
ffor3ete not' Palamon þe gentile man	
And wiþ þat' worde his speche faile bygan	
ffor from his fete vnto þe hert' was come	
þe colde of deþ þat' had him ouercome	2800
And 3it' more ouer for in his armes twoo	[leaf 39, back]
þe v[i]tal strengþh is lost' and al ago	
Only þe intellecte wiþ oute more	
þat' dwelled in his herte sik <i>and</i> sore	2804
Gan failen whan þe herte felte detþ	
Dusken his eyen two <i>and</i> faileþ breþe	
But' on his lady 3it' cast he his ye	
His laste word was mercy Emelye	2808
His spirit' chaunged hens and went[e] þere	
As I cam neuere I can not' telle where	
Therfor I stint' I am no dyvynystre	
Of soules fynde I not' in þis registre	2812
Ne me ne list' þilk opynyons to telle	
Of hem þouze þat' þei writen wher þei dwelle	
Arcite is colde þat' mars his soule gye	
Now wil I speken forþ of emely	2816
Shrite Emely an halowen Palamon	
And Theseus his suster' toke anōn	
Swownyng' and bar hir' fro his cours away	
What' helpeþ it' vs to tarien forþ þe day	2820
To tellen howe she wepte boþ euen <i>and</i> morowe	
ffor in suche caas wommen han suche sorowe	

Whan þat her husbondes bene fro hem a-goo
 [That] ffor þe more parte þei sorowen soo 2824
 Or ellis fallen in such Maladie
 þat at þe laste certeynly þei die
 Infinite harmes bene *and* eke þe teeres
 Of olde folk and folk of tendere 3eres 2823
 In aȝ þe toun for det̃h of þis Thebean
 ffor him þer wepen boþ[e] child̃ *and* man
 So grete weping̃ was þer [non] certayñ
 Whan Ector was [y]brouȝt̃ *and* fressh̃ ysclayñ 2832
 To Troy allas þe pite þat was þere
 Cracching̃ of chekes renting̃ eke of here
 Whi woldest̃ þou be dede þise wommen criē
 And haddest̃ gold̃ ynoghe and emelye 2836
 No man myght̃ glade Theseus [leaf 40]
 Sauyng̃ his olde fadere Egeus
 That̃ knewe þis worldes *transmutacioun*
 As he had sene it̃ vp and doūn 2840
 Ioie after woo and woo aftere gladnesse
 And sheweþ hem ensample and liknesse
 Rizt̃ as þer dyed neuer man quod he
 þat he ne lyued in erþe in som degre 2844
 Rizt̃ so ther lyued neuere man he seide
 In al þis world̃ þat̃ somtyme he ne deyed
 þis world̃ is nouȝt̃ but̃ a þorgh̃t̃ fare ful of woo
 And we bene pilgrymes passing̃ to and froo 2848
 Deþ is an ende of euery worldly sore
 And ouer al þis ȝit seide he mychel more
 To þis effecte ful wisely to enhortē
 þe puple þat̃ þei . hem shul recomforte 2852
 Duke Theseus wiþ al his bisy Cure
 Tastē nowē where þat̃ þe sepulture
 Of good Arcite may best̃ ymaked be
 And eke most̃ honorable of degre 2856
 And atte last̃ he toke conclusiōñ
 That̃ þer as first̃ Arcite and Palamon

Had for loue þe bataile hem bitwene
 þat in þe self groue swete and grene 2860
 þer as he had his Amerous desires
 His compleynt and for loue his hote fires
 He wold[e] make a fire in which þe office
 ffuneral he myzt hem aft compleice 2864
 He lete anon comaunde to hakke *and* hewe
 þe okes olde and leye hem on a rewe
 In colpons wel araied forto brenne
 His Officers with swift[e] fote thei renne 2868
 And rizt anon at his comaundement
 And aftere Theseus hap ysent
 Aftere a beer and it al ouer spradde
 Wij cloþ of gold the richest þat he hadde 2872
 And of þe same sute he cloþer Arcite [leaf 40, back]
 Vpon his hondes [were] his gloues white
 Eke on his hede a croune of laurere grene
 And in his hand a swerde ful brizt *and* kene 2876
 He laide him bare þe visage vnto þe bere
 Ther wij he wepte þat pite was to here
 And for þe puple shulde sene hym aft
 Whan it was daie he brouzt hym to þe hall 2880
 þat roreþ of þe crie and of þe sorowe sone
 þoo gan þis woful Thebean Palamon
 Wij flotery berd and ruggy asshy heres
 In cloþes blake dropped al wij teeres 2884
 And passing oþer of weping Emelie
 She rewfullest of al þe companye
 In as moche as þe seruyse shuld be
 þe more noble and riche in his degre 2888
 Duke Theseus lete forþ þe stedes bringe
 That trapped were in steel al gliteringe
 And keuered wij þe armes of Dame Arcite [for Daine]
 Vppon þise stedes grete and white 2892
 Ther stoden folk of which oon bare his sheelde
 An oþer his spere vpon his hondes helde

The iij. bare wiþ him bowe turkeys	
Of brent ^t gold was þe caas <i>and</i> eke þe harneys	2896
And riden forþ a paas wiþ sory chere	
Towardes þe groue as 3e shul after' here	
The noblest ^t of þe Grekes þat' þer were	
Vpon her shulders cariden þe bere	2900
Wiþ sclak[e] paas and yen rede <i>and</i> wete	
þorgh out þe Cite by þe maister strete	
þat sprad was al wiþ blak and wonder hye	
Riȝt of þe same is þe strete ywrie	2904
Vpon þe Riȝt honde went' olde Egeus	
And on þat' oþer side Duke Theseus	
Wiþ vesselles in her hondes of gold ^t ful fyne	
Al ful of hony. mylk. [and] blood. <i>and</i> wyne	2908
Eke Palamon with ful grete companye	[leaf 41]
And aftere þat' come wooful Emelie	
Wiþ fire in hand as was þat' time þe Gyse	
To do þe office of funeral seruise	2912
High labour / and ful grete apparailinge	
Was at' þe seruyse and at' þe fire makinge	
That' wiþ his grene top þe heuene raught	
And xx ^{ti} fadmes in brede þe armes raught ^t	2916
This is to seine þe bowes were so brode	
Of strawe first þer was leide mony a lode	
But' howe þe fire was maked vp[on] hiȝt ^t	
Ne eke þe names howe þe trees hiȝt ^t	2920
As Oke. fir. birch. asp. alder. Elme. popelere.	
Wilowe. holme. playn. ass. box. Chesteyn. bynd. laure.	
Mapel. þorne. becche. ewe. hasel. wypultre.	
How þei were felled shal not' be tolde for me	2924
Ne howe þe goddes ronnen vp <i>and</i> down	
Disherites of her habitacioun	
In whiche þei wonden in rest' <i>and</i> pees	
Nymphes. ffawnes <i>and</i> amadries	2928
Ne howe þe beestes ne þe briddes alle	
fledden for fere whan þei were falle	

Ne howe þe grounde agast^t was of þe liz^t
 That^t was not^t wonte to se þe sonne bryzt^t 2932
 Ne how þe fire was couched first wip stre
 And þan wip drie stikkes clouen a þree
 And þan wip grene wode and spicerie
 And þan wip cloþe of gold^d and [wip] perrie 2936
 And Garlondes honging^t wip mony a floure
 The myrr^o þensence with swete odoure
 Ne how arcite lay among^t al þis
 Ne what^t richesse aboute his body is 2940
 Ne howe Emely as was þe Gise
 Put^t in þe fire of funeral seruisse
 Ne howe she swowned whan made was þe fire
 Ne what^t she spak ne what^t was her desire 2944
 Ne what^t Ielous men in þe fire cast^t [leaf 41, back]
 Whan þat þe fire was grete and brente fast^t
 Nowe howe some cast^t her sheelde *and* some her sperre
 And of her vestementes which þei were 2948
 And Coppes ful of mylke and wyne *and* blood
 Into þe fire þat^t brent^t as it^t were wode
 Ne howe þe greges wip an huge route
 Thrise riden al þe fire aboute 2952
 Vpon þe list^t honde wip a loude shoutinge
 And thries wip her speres clateringe
 And thries how þe ladise gan crie
 Ne howe þat^t lad was homward^d Emely 2956
 Ne how arcyte is brent^t in asshen colde
 Ne how þe liche-wake was [y]holde
 Al þat^t nyght^t ne howe þe Grekes pleye
 The wake-plaies kepe I not^t to seie 2960
 Who wrastelep best^t naked *with* oile anyont^t
 Ne who [that] bare him best^t in no dysioynt^t
 I wil not^t tellen aþ^t howe þei [ben] gone
 Home til Athenes whan þe play is done 2964
 But^t shortely to þe point^t þan wil I wende
 And make[n] of my longe tale an ende

By processe and by length of 3eres	
Al stinte is þe mournyng and þe teeres	2968
Of Grege by oon general assent	
Than semed me þer was a parlement	
At Athenes vpon a certeyn point <i>and</i> caas	
And amonge pointes [ther] yspoken waas	2972
To haue wiþ certeyn contrees alliance	
And haue of Thebeanes fully obeisañce	
ffor which this noble theseus anōn	
Lete sende[n] after gentile Palamon	2976
Vnwist of him what was þe cause <i>and</i> whi	
But in his blake cloþes sorowfully	
He come at his comaundement in hie	
Tho sente Theseus for Emelye	2980
Whan þat þei were sette and huyst was al þe place	[leaf 42]
And Theseus abiden haþ þe space	
Or eny worde come fro his wise brest	
His yen sette he þer hym lest	2984
And such a sad visage he sighed stille	
And after þat riȝt þus he seide his wille	
The firste mouer of þe cause aboue	
Whan he first made þe faire cheyn of loue	2988
Gret was þe effecte and high was his entent	
Wel wist he why and what þerof he ment	
ffor wiþ þat faire cheyne of loue he bonde	
The fuyre. þe. Eire þe water and þe londe	2992
In certeyn boondes þat þei may not flee	
That same prince and þat same mouer <i>quod</i> he	
Haþ stablessed in þis wrecched world adoun	
Certeyn days and Dominacioun	2996
To al þat is engendred in þis place	
Ouer þe whiche day þei may not pace	
Al mowe þei ȝit þe daies abregge	
Ther nys noon autorite to legge	3000
ffor it is proued by experience	
But that me lust declare my sentence	

Than may men by þis order discerne
 That þilk mouer stable is and eterne 3004
 Wel may men knowe but' it' be a fool
 That' euery part' darrayueth fro his hool
 ffor nature haþ not' taken his bygynnyng'
 Of no partie or of catel of no þing' 3008
 But' oon þinge þat' parfit is and stable
 Descendinge so til it' be corruptable
 And þefore of his wise purueaunce.
 He haþ so wel bysette his ordynaunce 3012
 þat' specifie of þingges and progressiones
 Shullen endure by successiones
 And not' eterne wiþ oute eny lye
 This maist' þou vnderstonð *and* see atte ye 3016
 Lo the Oke þat' hath so longe a norshinge [leaf 42, back]
 ffor þe tyme þat' it bygynneþ furst' to springe
 And haþ so longe a lif as 3e may se
 3it' at þe laste waasted is þe tree 3020
 Considereþ eke howe þat' þe herde stone
 Vnder our fete on which we treden and gone
 3it' .3. wastep it' as it lith in þe way
 þe Brode Ryuer somtyme wexeþ dray 3024
 þe grete townes so wide wane and wende
 Than þe see þat' al þis þing' haþ ende
 And man and womman so we wil also
 That' nedeþ in oon of þe teermes twoo 3028
 þat' is to sayn in youþe or ellis in age
 He mote be dede þe kinge as wel as page
 Some in his bed some in þe depe see
 Some in þe large felde as 3e may see 3032
 Ther helpeþ nouzt' al goþ þat' ilk waye
 þan may I seie þat' al þis þing' wil deye
 What' makeþ þis but' Iubiter þe king'
 þat' is prince and cause of al þing' 3036
 Couerting' al vnto his propre wille
 ffrom which it is darreyude soþ to telle

Aud here agayne no creature on lyue
 Of no degre availleþ forto stryue 3040
 Than is it' wisdome as þenkeþ me
 To make vertue of necessite
 And take it' wel þat' we may not' eschew
 And namely þat'. þat' to vs all is dwe 3044
 And who so gruccheþ ouzt' he doþ foly
 And rebeft' is to him þat al may gye
 And certeynly a man haþ most' honour
 To dyen in his excellence and flour' 3048
 Whan he is siker of his good name
 þan haþ he done his frende ne hym no shame
 And gladder' auzt / his frende . ben of his deth
 Whan wiþ honour' yzolden is vp þe breeth 3052
 Than whan his name appalled is for age
 ffor al forȝeten is his vassalage
 Than is þe best' as for a worþi fame
 To dyen whan he is best' of name 3056
 The Contrarie of al þis is wilfulnesse
 Why grucche we whi haue we heuynesse
 That' goode Arcite of Chyualre þe flour'
 Departed is wiþ dwete and wiþ honour' 3060
 Out' of þe foule prison of þis liff
 Whi grucchen here his cosyn and his wiff
 Of his welfare þat' loueþ hem so wel
 Can he hem þonk. nay god wote neuer a dett 3064
 That' boþ his soule and eke hem [self] offende
 And ȝit' þei mowe not' hir lustes amende
 What' may conclude of þis longe serie
 But' after woo I rede vs be merie 3068
 And þanken Iubiter of al his grace
 And or we departen from þis place
 I rede we made of sorowes twoo
 Oo parfite Ioie lasting' euermoo 3072
 And loke nowe wher most' sorowe is her' Inne
 þer at' wil I furst' bygynne

Suster quod he þis is my ful assent
 Wiþ aff thaues here of my parlement 3076
 That Gentile Palamon þour owne knyght
 þat serueþ þou wiþ wille herte *and* myght
 And euer haþ do siþen þe first hym knewe
 þat þe shal of þoure grace vpon hym rewe 3080
 And taken [hym] for husbonde and for lord
 Lene me þoure honde for þis is our accord
 Lete se nowe of þoure womanly pite
 He is a kingges broþer sone *parde* 3084
 And þouþe he be a poor bachiler
 Siþ he haþ serued þou so mony a þere
 And had for þou so grete aduersite
 It most be considered leueþ me 3088
 ffor gentel Mercy ouzt to passen riht
 [leaf 43, back]
 Than seide he þus to Palamon þe knyght
 I trowe þere nede litel sermonyng
 To make þou assente to þis þinge 3092
Commeþ nere and takeþ þoure lady by þe honde
 Bytwix hem two was made anon þe bonde
 þat hiȝte *Matrimoyne* or mariage
 By aff þe counsaile and [the] baronage 3096
 And þus wiþ al[le] blisse and melodye
 Haþ Palamon ywedded Emelye
 And god þat al þis world haþ wrouzt
 Send hym his loue þat haþ it dere bouzt 3100
 ffor nowe is Palamon in al[le] wele
 Lyuyng in al blisse in riches and in hele
 And Emely him loueþ so tenderly
 And he hir serueþ so gently 3104
 Was neuer no worde hem bitwene
 Of Ielousie or eny oþer tene
 Thus endeþ þe tale of Palamon and Emelye
 And god saue al þis faire companye 3108

¶ Here endeþ þe knyghtes tale

& here bygnneþ

þe Prologe of þe Milleres tale

¶ The Prologe

Whan þat þe knyght had þus his tale told
 In al the companye nas þer 3onge ne olde
 þat he ne seide it was a noble storie
 And worþi to be drawe in memorie 3112
 And namely the gentels euerechoñ
 Our hooste loughe and swore so mot I goñ
 This goþ a ri3t vnbokeled is þe male
 Lat se nowe who shal telle anoþere tale 3116
 ffor trewly þe game is wel bygonne
 Now telleþ 3e sir monke 3if 3e conne
 Somwhat to quyte wiþ þe knyghtes tale
 The Miller' þat for-dronke was al pale 3120
 So þat vnneþes vppon his hors he satte
 He wold availe neiþe hode ne hatte
 Ne abide no man for his curtesie [leaf 44]
 But in Pilates vois he bygan to erie 3124
 And swore by armes blode and bones
 I can a noble tale for þe nones
 Wiþ þe which I wil now quyte þe kny3tes tale
 Our [hooste] seghe þat he was dronke of ale 3128
 And seide abide Robyn leue brother'
 Somme better man shal telle vs first anoþer'
 Abide and [let] us wirche thriftely
 By goddes soule quod he þat wil not I 3132
 ffor I wil speke or ellis go my way
 Our hooste answerð seye on a deuel way
 Thou arte a fool þi witt is ouercommen
 Now harkenþ quod þe myllere al and som 3136
 ¶ But first I make a protestacioun
 þat I am dronke I knowe it by my soun
 And þefore 3if I mysspeke or say
 Wite it þe Ale of suthwerk I 3ou pray 3140

- ffor I will telle a legend^d and a liff
 Boþ of a Carpenter and [of] his wiff
 How þat a clerke ref^t the wriþtes cappe
 The reue answer^d and seide stint of þi clappe 3144
 Lat be þi lewde dronken harlotrie
 It is a synne and eke a grete folye
 To appeyren eny man or hym diffame
 And eke to bringe wives in such name 3148
 þow maist ynowe of oþer þingges seine
 þis dronken Millere spake ful sone ageyñ
 And seide leue broþer oswalde
 Who haþ no wif. is no kukwold^d 3152
 But I seie not þerfor þat þou art ooñ
 Ther ben ful good[e] wyues mony oñ
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] 3156
 Whi art þou angry wiþ my tale nowe
 I haue a wiff *parde* as wel as þou/
 3it nolde I for þe oxen in my plogh
 Take vpon me more þan ynogh 3160
 As demen of my seluen þat I were oone (leaf 44, back)
 I wil bylieue þat þat I am none
 An husbond shuld not be inquesitif
 Of goddes priuete ne of his wif 3164
 So he may finde goddes foyson þere
 Of þe remenant nedeþ nat to enquere
 What shuld I more seie but þe Millere
 He nyl his wordes for no man for-bere 3168
 But tolde his Chirles tale in his manere
 Me forþenkeþ þat I shal reherce it here
 And þerfore euery gentil wiþt I preie
 Demeþ not for goddes loue þat I seie 3172
 Of euel entent but for I mote reherce
 Her tales alle be þei better or wors/
 Or ellis fals somen of my matere
 And þerfore who list it not here 3176

Torne ouer þe lief and chese anoþer tale
 ffor 3e shul fynde ynow grete *and* smale
 Of historial þinge þat' toucheþ gentilnesse
 And eke moralite and holynesse 3180
 Blame not' me 3if þat' ye chese amys
 The Millere is a cheerle 3e knowe wel þis
 So was the Reue eke and other moo
 And harlotrie þei told' boþ twoo 3184
 Avise 3ou and put' me out' of blame
 And eke men shal not' make earnest' of game
Thus endeþ þe prologe.

[*No break in the MS.*]

And here by-

gynneþ þe Millers Tale.

¶ Narracio

Whilom þer was dwelling' in Oxenford'
 A riche gnof' þat' gestes helde to bord' 3188
 And of his craft' he was a Carpenter'
 Wiþ him þer was dwelling' a pore scolere
 Had lerned arte but' al his fantasie`
 Was turned forto lere Astrologie 3192
 And cowde a certeyn of conclusions
 To demen by interrogacioñs .
 3if þat' men axed him incerteyn houres [leaf 45]
 Whan þat' men shuld' haue drouzte of shoures 3196
 Or 3if men axed him what' shuld' byfalle
 Of euery þing' I may not' rekne alle
 This tale was cleped hende Nicholas
 Of derne loue and priue solas 3200
 And þerto he was sclegþ and ful priue
 And liche to a maiden meke to see
 A chambre had he in þat' ostelrie
 Allone wiþ-out' eny companye 3204
 fful fetist' dight' wiþ herbes swote
 And he hym self as swete as is þe rote
 Of licorace or ony sytuale
 His almagist' and bokes grete *and* smale 3208
 His aster-laboure longinge for his arte
 His awgryme stoness layen ful faire aparte
 On shelues couched at his beddes heuede
 His presse ykeuered wiþ a falding' rede 3212
 And al aboute þer lay a gay sautrie
 On which he made on nyghtes melodye
 So swetely þat' al þe chambre ronge
 And angelus ad virginem he songe 3216
 And after þat' he songe þe kingges note
 fful ofte blessed was his mery þrote

And þus þe swete Clerk' his tyme spente
 Aftere his frendes fynding' and his rente 3220
 This Carpenterere had wedded newe a wiff
 Which þat' he loued more þan his liff
 Of xvij. 3ere she was of age
 Ielous he was and kept' hir' streit' in cage 3224
 ffor she was wily and yonge and he was olde
 And demed hym self to be like a Cukwolde
 He knewe not' Caton for his wit' is rude
 þat' bad man shuld' wedde his similitude 3228
 Men shul wedde aftere her estate
 ffor 3ouþe and elde is oft' at' debate
 But sith he was fallen in þe snare [leaf 45, back]
 He most' enduren as oþer folk his care 3232
 ffair was þis yonge wif and þer wif' all
 As eny weself her body gent' *and* smafl
 A seynt' she wered barred al of silk'
 A barmelope as white as morn[e] mylk' 3236
 Vpon her lendes ful of mony a gore
 White was hir smok' and enbrauded al byfore
 And eke be-hinde on her coler' aboute
 Of Cole-blak silk' with-Inne and eke wif'oute 3240
 The tapes of hir' white volipere
 Were of þe same sute of hir colere
 Hir' Philett brode of silk' *and* sette ful hie
 And sikerly she had a lykerous ye 3244
 fful smal y pulled were her browes twoo/
 And þoo were bent' and blake as eny sloo/
 She was more blisful on to se
 þan is þe newe Perient' tree 3248
 And softer þan þe wolff is of eiper'
 And by hir' girdel henge a purs of leder'
 Tasshed wif' silk' and perled with latoun
 In al þis worlde to seke vp and down 3252
 Ther nys no man so wise þat' couþe þenche
 So gay a popelot' or [such] a wenche

fful briȝt was the shyning^t of her hwe
 Than in þe toure þe noble forged newe 3256
 But^t of her songe it^t was as loude *and* ȝerne
 As eny swalowe sittinge on a beerne
 þerto she couþe skippe and make a game
 As eny kid or calf folowing^t his dame 3260
 Her mouþe was swete as braket or methⁿ
 Or horde of apples leide in hay or hethⁿ
 Wynsinge she was as is a Ioly colt
 Longe as a mast^t and vþward^t as a bolt^t 3264
 A broche she bare on her loue coler^t
 As brode as is þe boos of a bokelere
 Her shoes were laised on her legges hie [leaf 46]
 She was a Primeroff a Pigges nye 3268
 ffor eny lorde to liggen in his bedde
 Or ȝit^t for eny [good] ȝeman to wedde
 Now sir^t and eft^t sir^t. and so bifelle þe caas
 That^t on a day þis heende Nicholas / 3272
 felle wiþ þis yonge wif forto rage *and* play
 While þat^t her husbonde was at^t osenay
 As clerkes bene ful subtile and ful queynte
 And prively he kauȝt^t hur^t by þe queynte 3276
 And seide ywis but^t I haue my wille
 ffor deerne loue of þe lemman I spille
 And helde hure fast^t by þe haunche bonys
 And seide lemman my wilft^t at^t onys 3280
 Or I wil die as god me saue
 And she spronge as a colt^t in traue
 And wiþ her hede sche wried fast^t away
 She saide I wil not^t kisse þe by my fay 3284
 Wy labbe quod she latt be Nicholas
 Or I wil crie out^t harowe *and* alas
 Do way ȝoure hondes for ȝour curtesie
 This Nicholas gan mercy forto crie 3288
 And spake so faire *and* profred him ful fast
 þat^t she her loue graunted hym atte last^t

And swoor hir' oope by seint' Thamas of kent'	
That' she wolde bene at' his comaundement'	3292
Whan þat' she may hir' laizere wel aspie	
Myn husbonde is so ful of Ielousie	
þat' but' 3e waite wele <i>and</i> by prive	
I woote rizt' wel I ne am but' dede quod she	3296
3e mote be ful deerne as in þis caas	
Nay þerof care zou not' quod Nicholaas	
A Clerk has liperly bysette his while	
But' 3if he couþe a carpenter' begile	3300
And þus þei acorded and sworne	
To awaite a tyme as I haue seide biforñ	
Whan Nicholas had' doñ þus euery dele	[leaf 46, back]
And twakked her aboute þe lendes welle	3304
He kisseþ her swete and takeþ his sautrie	
And pleieþ fast' and makeþ melodye	
þan fille it þus þat to þe parissñ chirche	
Cristes werkes for to wirche	3308
This good wif went' vpon an halyday	
Hir' forhede shoon as briez't' as eny day	
So was it' wasshe whan she left' her werk'	
Now was þere of þe chirchñ a parissñ clerk	3312
þe which was cleped absaloñ	
Crulle was his heer' and as þe golde shone	
And strouted as [a] fanne large <i>and</i> brode	
fful streite and euene laie his Ioly shode	3316
His ruddle was rede his eyen grey as goos	
Wif Powles wyndowes corven in his shoos	
In hosen rede he wente fetisly	
I-clad he was ful smal and proprely	3320
Al in a kirtel of light' wagett	
fful faire and pikke ben þe poyntes sette	
And þer-vpon he had [a] gay surprise	
As white as is þe blossom on [the] rise	3324
A mery child' he was so god me saue	
Wel coude he late blood [and] clippe and shaue	

And make a chartere of londe or a quytaunce
 In xx^{ti} maners coude he trippe *and* daunce 3328
 After the scole of Oxenforde þoo
 And wiþ his legges casten to and froo
 And pleyen songes on a small rybibe
 Some he songe a loude quynybe 3332
 As as wel coude he pley on a gytern
 In al þe towne nas brewhous ne tauern
 þat he ne viset wiþ his solas
 þer eny gailerð tapster' was 3336
 But' soth to sayn he was somdele squeymous
 Of fartinge *and* of speche daungerous
 This Absolon þat' was Ioly *and* gay [leaf 47]
 Goþ wiþ a sensure on þe sonday 3340
 Sensinge þe wyues of þe parissch fast'
 And mony a louely loke on hem he cast'
 And namely cn þe Carpenters wiff
 To loke on hyr' him þouzt' a mery lif 3344
 She was so propre . swete . *and* likerous
 I dar wel say and she had be a mous
 And he a Catt' he wold' hire hent' anōn
 This parissch clerk' þis Ioly absoloñ 3348
 Haþ in his herte such a loue longynge
 That' of no wiff toke he non offringe
 For curtesie he seide he wolde none
 The mone whan it' was nyzt' brizt' shone 3352
 And absolon his gitern haþ [i]take
 For paramours he þouzte forto wake
 And forþe he goþ Ielous and amerous
 Til he come to þe Carpenter[e]s hous 3356
 A litel aftere þe Cok' had ycrowe
 And dressed hym vnder a shette wyndowe
 That' was vpon þe Carpenter[e]s walle
 He singeþ in his vois gentile *and* smalle 3360
 Now dere lady zif þi wil be
 I prei zou þat' ze wil rewe on me

Ful wel according^t to his giternynge
 This Carpentere a-woke and her^t hym singe 3364
 And spake vnto his wif and seide anoñ
 What^t alison herest^t þou not^t Absoloñ
 þat^t chaunteþ þus vndere our boures waft
 And she answer^t her husband^t þer wip aft 3368
 ʒis god wote Iohn I here it^t euery dele
 þis passeþ forþ what^t wil ʒe than but wele
 ffro day to day þis Ioly absoloñ
 So woweþ hire þat^t hym was woo-bygoñ 3372
 He wakeþ al þe nyʒt^t and al þe day
 He kembeþ his lockes brode and made hem gay
 He woweþ hir^t by menes and brocage [leaf 47, back]
 And swor he wolde bene her wne page 3376
 He Syngeþ brokking^t as a nyghtyngale
 He sent^t her pyment^t Methe and spised ale
 And wafres pyping hote out^t of þe glede
 And to hir^t often he profered mede 3380
 ffor some wil be wonnen for riches
 And some for strokes and some for gentilnesse
 Somtyme to shewe his lightnesse and maisstrie
 He pleieth herawdes vpon a scaffold^t hie 3384
 But what^t availleþ him as in þis caas
 So loueth she þis hende Nicholaas
 That^t Absolon may blawe þe buke horn
 He ne had for his labour but^t a scorñ 3388
 And þus she makeþ absolon her Ape
 Al his eernest *turneþ* but^t to a Iape
 ffor soþe þis prouerbe it^t is no lye
 Men seien þus alway þe nyʒte scлие 3392
 Makeþ þe feer loue to be loth
 ffor þouʒe þat^t absolon be wode or wroth
 By cause þat^t he fer was from her siʒt^t
 This Niʒte Nicholas stode in his liʒt^t 3396
 Nowe bere ʒou wel thou hende Nicholas/
 ffor absolon may waille *and* singe allas

And so by-felle it^t on a Saterdag
 This Carpentere was gone to Osnay 3400
 And hende Nicholas and Alison
 Accorded were to þis conclusiōn
 þat^t Nicholas shal shapen hym a wile
 This sely Ielous husbonde to begile 3404
 And if so be þe game went^t a riȝt^t
 She shulde slepe in his arme al þat^t nyȝt^t
 For þis [was] his desire and hers also.
 And riȝt^t anon wiȝ-oute wordes moo/ 3408
 This Nicholas no lenger wold tarie
 But^t doȝ ful softe into his chamber carie
 Both^h mete and drinke for a daye or tweye [leaf 43]
 And to hir^t husbonde bad hir^t for to seie 3412
 If þat^t he asked after Nicholas
 She shulde seie she nyst^t not^t wher he was
 Of al þat^t day she see hym not^t wiȝ ye
 She trowed þat^t he was in maladye 3416
 ffor no crie her maide can calle
 He nolde answeere for nouȝt^t that^t may bifalle
 This passeȝ forȝ al þe Saterdag
 That^t Nicholas stille in his bed lay 3420
 And ete and slepte and [dede] what^t hym lest^t
 Til sonday þat^t þe sonne goȝ to rest^t
 This sely Carpenter^t haȝ grete mervaile
 Of Nicholas or what^t þing^t myȝt^t hym aile 3424
 And saide I am a-drad by seynt^t Thomas
 It^t stondesth not^t a-riȝt^t wiȝ Nicholas
 God shilde þat^t he deyed sodenily
 This world is nowe ful tikil sikerly 3428
 I seghe to-day a coors born to chirche
 That^t now on monday I segȝ fast^t wirche
 Go vp quod he to his knaue anōn
 Clepe at^t his door or knobbe wiȝ a stoñ 3432
 Loke howe it^t is and telle me boldely
 þis knaue went^t him vp ful sturdely

And at the Chamber door while þat he stode
 He cried an knocked as he were wode 3436
 What howe what do 3e maister Nicholay
 Howe may 3e sclopen al þis longe day
 But al for nou3t he herd neuer a word
 An hoole he foonde ful lowe vnder a bord 3440
 Ther as þe Catt was wonte forto crepe
 And at þe hole he loked in ful depe
 And atte last he had of him a sizt
 þis Nicholas satte euere gaping vp rizt 3444
 As he had kiked on þe newe moone
 And doune he goþ and told his maister sone
 In what araie he segh þat ilke man (leaf 48, back)
 This carpentere to blissen hym by-gan 3448
 And seide helpe vs seint ffredeswyde
 A man wote litel what shal hym betide
 This man is fallen wiþ his astronomye
 In some woodnesse or in some Agonye 3452
 I þou3t wel howe it shuld be
 Men shuld not knowe of goddis priuete
 3e blessed be alway þe lewde man
 þat nou3t but only his bileeue can 3456
 So ferde anoþer clerk with astronomye
 He walked into þe feeldes for to prie
 Vpon þe sterres to wit what shal by-falle
 Til he was in a Marle pitte yfalle 3460
 He seighe no3t but yit by seint Thomas
 Me rueþ soor hende Nicholas
 He schal be rated of his stodyng
 If þat I may by Ihesu¹ heuene knyge [1 MS the] 3464
 Gete me a staf þat I may vnderspore
 While þat þou Robyn heuest vp þe dore
 He shal out of his stodyng as I gesse
 And to þe Chamber dore he gan hym dresse 3468
 His knaue was a stronge Carle for þe nones
 And by þe haspe he haue it vp at ones

Into þe floor þe door fille anoñ
 This Nicholas sat ay stille as stoñ 3472
 And euere gaped vpward into þe eire
 þis carpenter wende he were in despeir'
 And hent hym by þe shuldres myztely
 And shoke him hard and cried spitously 3476
 What Nicholay what loke adoun
 A-wake and þenk on cristes passioun
 I crouche þe from eveles and fro wiztes
 þer-with þe nyzt spelle he seide anoñ riztes 3480
 On four halues of the hous aboute
 And on þe thressshold on þe dore withoute
 Ihesu crist and seynt Benedight [leaf 49]
 Blesse þis hous from euery wicked wight 3484
 ffor þe nyghtes verye þe white pater noster
 Where wentestowe . seynt Peters suster'
 And atte last þis hende Nicholas
 Gan for to sighe sore and seide allas 3488
 Shal al þe world be loste eftsones nowe
 This Carpentere answerde what seist þowe
 What þenk on god as we doñ þat swynk'
 This Nicholas answerde focche me drink 3492
 And aftere I wil speke in private
 Of certeyn þing þat towcheþ þe and me
 I wille telle it noon oþer man eere teyne
 This carpenter goþ down and commeþ ageyne 3496
 And brouzt of myghty ale a large quarte
 And whan þat eche of hem had dronke his parte
 þis Nicholas his door fast shette
 And down þe Carpenter by hym he sette 3500
 And seide Iohñ myn hooste lief and dere
 þow shalt vpon þi trouþ swere me heere
 That to no wight þou shalt þis counseil wrey
 ffor it is cristes counsaile þat I sey 3504
 And if þu telle it man þou art forlore
 ffor þis vengeance þou shalt haue þerfore

þat if þow wrey me þou shalt be wode
 ¶ Nay crist forbede it for his holy blood 3508
 Quod þoo þis sely man I ne am no labbe
 Ne þough I seie it I ne am not lief to gabbe
 Sey what þowe wolt I shal it neuer telle
 To Childe ne wif by hym þat harowed helle 3512
 Nowe Iohñ quod Nicholas I wil not lie
 I haue yfounden in myn astrologie
 As I haue loked in þe mone brizt
 þat nowe on monday next a quarter nyzt 3516
 Shal falle a rayn and þat so wild and wode
 þat half so grete was never noes flode
 This world he saide in lasse þan in an houre [leaf 49, back]
 Shal al be dreint so hidous is þe showre 3520
 Thus shal mankinde drenche and lese her liff
 This Carpentere answerd allas my wiff
 And shal she drenche allas myñ alisoun
 ffor sorowe of þis he fille al-most adoun 3524
 And seide is no remedye in þis caas
 Wy 3is for god quod heende Nicholas
 If þow wolte worchen aftere lore and rede
 þowe maist not worchen after þine owne hede 3528
 ffor þus seith salomon þat was ful trewe
 Worche al by counsaile and þou shalt not rewe
 And if þou worchen wolt by good counsaile
 I vndertake wiþ-uten mast or saille 3532
 3it shal I saue hir and þe and mee
 Hast þou not herd how saued was Noe
 Whan þat our lorde hap warned hym byforn
 þat al the world wiþ water shuld be lorñ 3536
 3is quod þis Carpenter ful 3ore a-goo
 Hastowe not herde quod Nicholas also
 þe sorowe of Noe wiþ his felawship
 Or he myzt gete his wif to ship 3540
 Hym had leuere I dar wel vndertake
 At pilke tyme þan aff his weperes blake

þat she had a ship hure self allōn
 And þerfor woostowe what is best to doñ 3544
 Thix axeth hast and of an hastif þinge
 Men may not preche or make taryinge
 Anoon go gete vs fast into þis Inne
 A knedinge trougħ or ellis a kemelyne 3548
 ffor eche of vs but loke þat þei bene large
 In whiche men mowe swymme as in a barge
 And han her vitailles suffisaunt
 But for a day fye on þe remenaunt 3552
 þe water shal a-slake and goñ a-way
 Aboute pryme vpon þe nexte day
 But Robyne may not wit of þis þi knaue [leaf 50]
 Ne eke þi maide Gift I may not saue 3556
 Axe not why for þouze þou axe me
 I wil not tellen goddes priuete
 It suffiseþ þe but if þi wittes madde
 To haue as grete a grace as Noe hadde 3560
 þi wif shal I wel saue out of doute
 Go nowe þi way and spede þe here aboute
 But whan þou hast for hir and þe and me
 ygeten vs þise kneding treies þre 3564
 þan shalt þou honge hem in þe roof ful hie
 þat no man of oure purueaunce espie
 And whan þou þus hast doñ as I haue seide
 And hast oure vitaille faire in hem y-leide 3568
 And eke an axe to smyte þe cord a two
 Whan þat þe water commeþ þat we may goo
 And broke and hole on high vpon the gable
 Vnto þe gardyne ward ouer þe stable 3572
 þat we may frely passen forþ our waye
 Whan þat þe grete shoure is passed awaye
 Than shalt þou swymme as mery I vndertake
 As doþ þe wight duk aftere þe drake 3576
 þan wol I clepe how alisoñ. howe Iohn
 Be mery for þe flood wil passe anōn

And þowe wilt^t seyn heil Maister Nicholay
 Good morowe I see þe wele for it^t is day 3580
 And þan shal we be lordes al oure lif
 Of alle þe world^t as Noe and his wif
 But^t þat^t of oo þing^t I warne þe ful riȝt
 Be wel avised on þat^t ilk[e] nyȝt^t 3584
 þat^t we bene entred into þe shippes boord^t
 þat^t noon of vs ne speke not^t a word^t
 Ne Clepe ne crie but^t bene in his preire
 ffor it^t is goddis owe heeste dere 3588
 Thi wif and þou mote honge fer atwynne
 ffor þat^t bitwix ȝou shal be no synne
 No more in loking^t þan þer shal in dede [leaf 50, back]
 þis ordinaunce is seide so god þe spede 3592
 To morowe at^t nyght^t whan men bene all^t a-slepe
 Into our kneding^t trowes wil we crepe
 And sitten þer abidinge goddis grace
 Go nowe þi way I haue no lenger space 3596
 To make of þis no lenger sermonyng^t
 Men seyn þus sende þe wise *and* say no þinge
 þou art^t so wise it^t nededeþ þe not^t teche
 Go saue our lif and þat^t I þe biseche 3600
 ¶ This sely Carpenter^e goþ forþ his way
 fful off^t he seide alas and wayleway
 And to his wif he tolde his priuete
 And she was war and knewe it^t bet^t þan he 3604
 What^t al þis queinte cast^t was for to saye
 But^t nathelees she feerde as she wold^t deye
 And saide alas go foorþ þi way añon
 Helpe vs to scape or we bene dede echoñ 3608
 I am þi trewe verry wedded wiff^t
 Go dere spouse and helpe to saue our lif
 Lo swich a grete þing^t is affectiõn
 Men may dye for ymaginaciõn 3612
 So depe may impression be take
 This sely Carpenter^e bygynneþ quake

Hym þenkeþ verrely þat he may se
 Noe flood come walking^t as þe See 3616
 To drenchen alison his hony dere
 He wepeth weilleth and maketh sori chere
 He sigheþ wiþ mony a sory swough
 And gooþ and geteþ hym a kneding³ trougħ 3620
 And aftere a Tubbe and a kemelyne
 And prively he sent^t hem to his Inne
 And henge hem in þe roof in private
 His owne honde he made eke ledders þre 3624
 To clymben by þe ronges *and* þe stalkes
 Vnto þe tubbes hongyng^t in þe balkes/
 And hem vitailled boþ[e] trouze and tubbe [leaf 51]
 Wiþ brede. wiþ chese wiþ good ale in a Iubbe 3628
 Suffisinge riȝt^t ynowe as for a day
 But^t er he had made al þis aray
 He sent^t his knaue and eke his wenche alsoo
 Vpon his nede to London for to goo 3632
 ¶ And on þe Monday whan it^t drouze to nyȝt^t
 He shette his door wiþ-uten candel liȝt^t
 And dressed al þing^t as it^t shuld be
 And shortely clumben vp al þre 3636
 þei seiten stille wel a forlonge way
 Now *Pater noster* Clum seide Nicholay
 And Clum quod Iohn . and clum seide Alison
 This Carpenter seide his devociōn 3640
 And stille he sitte and biddeþ his preier^t
 Awaitinge on þe reyne if he it^t here
 The deþe sleep for very bisynesse
 ffile on þis Carpenter riȝt^t as I gesse 3644
 Aboute Curfewe tyme or litel more
 ffor travaile of his goost^t he groneþ sore
 But^t ofte he routed for his hede myslay
 Doun of þe ledder stalkeþ Nicholay 3648
 And Alison ful softe adoune she spedde
 Wiþ-uten wordes moo þei goñ to bedde

þer as þe Carpenter' is wonte to lye
 þer was þe reuel and þe melodye 3652
 And þus lith alison and Nicholas
 In busynes of myrth *and* of solas
 Til þat' þe belle of laudes gan to ryng
 And freres in þe chaunsel gan to singe 3656
 ¶ This Pariss̄ clerk þis amorous absolōn
 þat' is for loue alway so woo bygoñ
 Vpon þe Monday was at' Oseney
 Wip Company him to disport' *and* pley 3660
 And axed vpon a caas a Cloystre
 fful priuely after Ioñ þe Carpentere
 And he drowe hym apart' out' of þe chirch [leaf 51, back]
 And seide I note I seghe hym here not wirch 3664
 Siþ saterday I trowe þat he be went'
 ffor tymbre þer oure abbot' haþ hym sent'
 ffor he is wonte for tymbre forto goo
 And dwellen at' þe graunge a day or twoo 3668
 Or ellis he is at' his hous certeyn
 Wher þat' he be I can not' soþly seyn
 This absolon ful Ioly was *and* lizt'
 And þought' now is tyme to wake al nyght' 3672
 ffor sikerly I seḡh hym not' stirenge
 Abouten his door siþ day bygan to springe
 So mote I thrive I shal atte Cokes crowe
 fful priuely knocken at' his wyndowe 3676
 þat' stant' ful lowe vpon his bowres walle
 To Alison now wil I tellen alle
 My loue longyng' for þat' I shal not' mysse
 þat' at' þe leeste wey I shal hir' kisse 3680
 Som manere comfort' shal I haue parfay
 My mouþe haþ icched al þis longe day
 þat' is a signe of kissing' atte leest
 Al nyght' me met' eek I was at' a fest' 3684
 þer-for I wil goo slepe an hour or twey
 And al þe nyght' þan wil I wake *and* pley

- Whan þat þe firste cok haþ crowe anoñ
 Vp stert' þis Ioly loue absoloñ 3688
 And hym araied gay and poynt' devise
 But' first' he sheweþ greyn *and* licorise
 To smellen swote er he had kempt' his here
 Vndere his tunge a trewe loue he bere 3692
 ffor þerby wende he to be gracious
 He roomeþ to the Carpenters hous
 And stille he stant' vndere þe shot' wyndowe
 Vnto his brest' it' raught' it' was so lowe 3696
 And soft' he kougheþ wiþ a semy soun
 What' do 3e hony combe swete alisoun
 My faire brid my swete Synamome [leaf 52]
 A-waikeþ lemman myne *and* spekeþ to me 3700
 fful litel þenken 3e vpon my woo
 þat' for 3oure loue I swete as I goo
 No wonder is þouze that' I swelt' or swete
 I mourne as doþ þe lombe after þe tete 3704
 I-wis leuman I haue such' loue-longyng'
 þat' like a turtel trewe is my mournynge
 I may not' eten no more þan a maide
 Go fro þe wyndowe Iak fool she seide 3708
 So god me spede it' wil not' be compame
 I loue anoþer and ellis I were to blame
 Wel bet' þan þe by Ihesu absolon
 Go forþ þi waie or I wil cast' a stoñ 3712
 And lat' me slepe a twenty deuelway
 Alas quod absolon and weyloway
 That' trewe loue was euere so euel bysette
 Than kisse me siþ it' may be no bette 3716
 ffor Ihesus¹ loue and for þe loue of me [1 MS the]
 Wilt' þou þan go þi waie þer-with quod she
 3e Certes lemman quod þis absolon
 þan make þe redy quod she I come anoñ 3720
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 This absolon doune sette hym on his knees

And seid I am a lord at alle degrees	3724
ffor aftere þis I hope þer commeth more	
Lemman þi grace and swete brid þine ore	
The wyndowe she vndop and þat' in haste	
Haue doo quod she come of and spede þe faste	3728
Lest' þat' our neigheboures þe espie	
þis absolon gan wipe his mouþ ful drie	
Derk was þe nyght' as piccē or as þe cole	
And at' þe wyndowe out' she putt' her hole	3732
And absolon him felle no bette ne wers	
But' wiþ his mouþe he kissed her naked ers	
fful sauourly er he was ware of þis	
Abak he sterte and þought' it' was amys	3736
ffor wel he wist' a womman hap no berde	[leaf 52, back]
He felt' a þing' al roughe and longe yherede	
And seide fye alas what' haue I doo	
Ti he quod she and clapt' þe wyndowe to/	3740
And absolon goþ forþ a forþer paas	
A beard a beercl' seide hende Nicholaas	
By goddes corpus þis goþ faire <i>and</i> well	
This sely absolon herde it' euery dell	3744
And on his lippe he gan for anger bite	
And to him self he seide I shal þe quyte	
Who rubbeth nowe who freteth nowe his lippes	
Wiþ dust' wiþ sonde wiþ strawe wiþ cloþ <i>with</i> chippes/	
But' absolon that' seiþ ful oft' allas	3749
My soule bitake I to Satlanas	
But' me were leuere þan al þis toune <i>quod</i> he	
Of þis despite a-wroken forto be	3752
Allas quod he allas I ne had ybleynt'	
His hote love is cold <i>and</i> al yqueynt'	
ffor fro þat' tyme þat' he had kist' her ers	
Of paramours he sette not' a kers	3756
ffor he was heled of his malady	
fful oft' paramours he gan defie	
And wepeþ as doþ a child' þat' is ybete	
A softē paas he went' ouer þe strete	3760

Vnto a smyth̄ men clepen dann Gervase
 That̄ in his forge smyteþ plowh harnase
 He sharpeth share and culter bisily
 This absolon knockeþ al Esily 3764
 And seide vnto Gervays and þat̄ anon
 What̄ who art̄ þou it̄ am I absolon
 What̄ Absolon. what̄ cristes swete tre
 Why rise 3e so rathe .o benedicite 3768
 What̄ eileþ 3ou som gay gerle god it̄ wote
 Haþ brouzt̄ 3ou þus [up]on þe Vyritote
 By seynt̄ Noet̄ 3e whote wele what̄ I mene
 þis Absolon ne rouzte not̄ a bene ./ 3772
 Of al þis pley no word a3ein he gaf
 [leaf 53]
 He had more towe on his dystaf
 þan Gervais knewe and seide frende so dere
 þe hote Cultere in þe Chymeney here 3776
 As lene it̄ me I haue þerwip̄ to doñ
 I wil bringe it̄ a-geyn ful sone
 Gervais answerd̄ certes were it̄ gold̄
 Or in a poke nobles al vntold̄ 3780
 Thou shuldest haue as I am trewe smyth̄
 A cristes foo what̄ wil 3e do þerwith̄
 Therof quod absolon be as be may
 I shal tellen it̄ þe to morowe day 3784
 And caught̄ þe Culter̄ by þe colde stele
 fful soft̄ out̄ atte door he gan stele
 And went̄ vnto þe Carpenter̄e walle
 He koughed first̄ and knocked þer wip̄ aff 3788
 Vppon þe wyndowe right̄ as he did eere
 þis Alison answerde who is þere
 þat̄ knockeþ so I waraunt̄ it̄ a þeef
 We nay quod he god wote my swete leef 3792
 I am þine absolon þine derlinge
 Of gold̄ quod he I haue þe brouzt̄ a ryng
 My modere 3aue it̄ me so god me saue
 fful fyn it̄ is and þerto wel ygraue 3796

This wil I zeuen þe if þowe me kisse þis Nicholas was risen forto pisse And þou3t he wold amenden al þe Iape He shulde kisse his ers er þat he scape	3800
And vp þe wyndowe did he hastely And out his ers he putteþ pr'uely Ouer þe buttoke to þe haunche boñ And þerwip spake þis clerk þis absolone	3804
Speke swete bridde I not wher þou art þis Nicholas anoñ lete fleigh a fart As grete as it had bene a þonder dent þat wip þe stroke he was almost yblent	3808
And he was redy wip his yren hote And Nicholas in þe ers he smote Of goþ þe skyn an honde brede aboute þe hote culter brenned so his toute	3812
And for þe smerte he wende forto deye As he were wood for woo he gan to crye Help water water helpe for goddys hert This Carpenter out of his slomber stert	3816
And herde oon crien water as he were wode And þou3t allas now commeth noes flode He sette hym vp wipout[e] wordes moo And wip an axe he smote þe cord a two	3820
And doun goþ alle he fonde neiþer to selle Brede nor Ale til he com to þe selle Vpon þe floor and ther a swoun he lay Vp stert hir Alison and Nicholay	3824
And criden out and horowe in þe strete þe neighbours boþ smale and grete Ronnen forto gawren on þis man þat a swonn lay boþ pale and wan	3828
ffor wip þat falle he brusten hap his arme But stonden he most vnto his owne harme ffor whan he spak he was anoñ born doun Wip hende Nicholas and alisoun	3832

[leaf 53, back]

Thei tolde euery man þat he was wode
 He was agast so of þe Noes flode
 þorgh fantasie þat of his vanyte
 He had ybouzt hym kneding tubbes þre 3836
 And had hem honged in þe roof aboue
 And þat he preied hym for goddys loue
 To sitten in þe roof par companye
 þe folk gan laughen at his fantasie 3840
 And to the Roof þei kepen and þei gape
 And turned al his harme vnto a Iape
 ffor what so þis Carpenter answerd
 It was for nouzt no man his resoñ herd 3844
 Wiþ oþes grete he was so sworn a down [leaf 54]
 That he was holden woode in al þat town
 ffor euere clerk anoon riȝt helde wiþ oþer
 þei seide þe man is wood my leue broþer 3848
 And euere wight gan laughen at his strif
 Thus swyued was þe Carpenter[c]s wif
 ffor al his keping and his Ielousie
 And Absalon haþ kissed her nethere ye 3852
 And Nicholas is scalded in his toute
 This tale is doñ and god saue al þe route.
 ¶ Here endep þe mylers tale.

[No break in the MS.]^r

¶ And þus bygynneþ þe **P**rologe of þe Reues tale ¶ Cap. 3^o.

Whan folk han laughen at þis nyce cas
 Of absolon and hende Nicholas 3856
 Dyuers folk dyuersly þei seide
 But for þe more parte þei louze *and* pleide
 Ne at þis tale I seghe no man hym greue
 But it were only Oswold þe Reue 3860
 Bycause he was of Carpenter[*e*]s craft
 A litel Ire in his herte laft
 He gan to grucche and blamed it a lite
 So thick quod he ful wele quouþ I þe quyte 3864
 Wiþ blering of a proude Millers ye
 If þat me list to speke of Ribawdye
 But ik am olde me list not pley for age
 Gras tyme is done my foder is forage 3868
 This white top writeþ myn olde 3eeres
 Myn hert is al so mowled as myn heeres
 But if I fare as doþ an open-ers
 þat ilke fruyte is euer lenger þe wers 3872
 Til it be roten in Mullok or in stre
 We olde men I drede so fare we
 Til we be roten can wē not be ripe
 We hopen alway while þe hert wil pipe 3876
 ffor in our wille þer stikketh euer a naile
 To haue an hoor heer and a grene taile
 As haþ a leke for þough our myzt be goñ [leaf 54, back]
 Our wille desireþ foly euer in oon 3880
 ffor whan we may not doñ þan wil we speke
 3it in oure asshed olde is fire yreke
 ffour gledes han we which I shal deuyse
 Auautinge lying. angre. and coueitise 3884
 Thise four sparkles longep vnto elde
 Our olde lymes may wel bene vnwelde

But^t wil ne shal not^t faille þat^t is soth
 And 3it^t haue I alwaye a coltes toth 3888
 As mony 3ere as it^t is passed henne
 Siþ þat^t my tap of lif^t byganne to renne
 ffor sikerly whan I was born anōn
 Deþ drough þe tappe of lif and lete it goñ 3892
 And euere siþen haþ so þe tap yronne
 Til at^t almost^t al empty is þe tonne
 The strem of lif now droppeþ on þe chymbe
 þe sely tunge may wel rynge and chymbe 3896
 Of wrecchednesse þat^t passed is ful yore
 Wiþ olde folk saue dotage is no more
 ¶ Whan þat^t our ooste had herde þis sermonyng
 He gan to speke as lordly as a kinge 3900
 He seide what^t amounteþ al þis witte
 What^t shal we speke alday of holy writte
 The deuel made a Reue forto preche
 Or of a Souter^t shipman or a lecche 3904
 Say forþ þi take and tary not^t þe tyme
 Loo Depford and it^t is almost^t prime
 Lo Grenwich þat^t mony a shrewe is Inne
 It^t were hie tyme þi tale forto bygynne 3908
 ¶ Now Sirs quod þis Oswold^t þe Reue
 I prei 3ou al þat^t 3e 3ou not greue
 þou3e I answeere and somdele sette hys houwe
 ffor leeful it^t is wiþ force . force of shouwe 3912
 This dronken Miller^t haþ ytolde vs here
 Hou þat^t bigiled was a Carpentere
 Peraenture in scorn for I am ooñ [leaf 55]
 And by 3oure leue I shal hym quyte anoñ 3916
 Riz^t in his Cheerles teermes wil I speke
 I prei to god his nekke mot^t alto-breke
 He can wel in myn ye seen a stalk
 But^t in his owne he can not^t seen a balk^t 3920
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe Prologe of þe Reue

And here bygynneþ þe Reeues tale

At Trumpington not fer fro Caunterbruge
 Ther goþ a broke and over þat a bruge
 Vpon þe whiche broke þer stonte a melle
 And þis is verrey soþ þat I 3ou telle 3924
 A Millere was þere dwelling mony a day
 As ony Pecok he was proude and gay
 Pipen he coupe an fisshen and nettes bete
 And turne Coppes *and* wel wrastel and shete 3928
 Ny by his belt he bare a longe panade
 And of a swerd ful trenchaunt was þe blade
 A Ioly popper bere he in his pouche
 Ther nas no man for perile durst hym touche 3932
 A Shefeld thwytel bere he in his hose
 Rounde was his face and camoyse was his nose
 As pilled as an ape was his sculle
 He was a market beter atte fulle 3936
 þer nas no wight þat durst hond on hym legge
 But if he swore he shuld anoñ abegge
 A theef he was forsoþ of corn and mele
 And þat a sleegh and vsaunt forto stele 3940
 His name was hoten deyne3ouse Symkyn
 A wif he hadde *commen* of nobel kyn
 The *person* of þe toune her fader was
 Wif hir he 3aue ful mony a panne of bras 3944
 ffor þat Symkyn shuld in his blood allie
 She was yfostred in a nonrie
 ffor Symkyn wold[e] no wif as he seide
 But she were wel ynorshed and a mayde 3948
 To Sauen his Astate of 3emanrie [leaf 55, back]
 And she was proude and peert as is a pie
 A ful feire sight was it vpon hem twoo/
 On holy daies byforn hir wold he goo/ 3952

Wiþ his typet' bounden aboute his hede
 And she come aftere in a gite of rede
 And Symkyn had[de] hosen of þe same
 þer durst no wiȝt' clepe hur' but' dame 3956
 Was noon so hardy þat' went' by þe way
 þat' wiþ hir' dorst' ones rage or play
 Bat' if he wold be slayn of Symkyn
 Wiþ panade and wiþ knyf or boydekyn 3960
 ffor Ielous folk ben perylous euermoo
 Algates þei wolde her wyues wenden soo
 And eke for she was somdeft smoterlich
 She was as digne as water in a dich 3964
 As ful of hoker and of bismare
 Hire þouȝte þat' a lady shuld hir' spare
 What' for her kynrede and her nortelrie
 þat' she had lerned in þe Nonerie 3968
 A douȝtere had[de] þei bitwene hem twoo
 Of xx^{ti} ȝere wiþ-outen ony moo/
 Sauyng' a childe þat' was of half ȝere age
 In cradel it' lay and was a propre page 3972
 This wenche thik and wel ygrowe was
 Wiþ Camoys nose and eyen as grey as glas
 Wiþ buttokes brode and brestes round *and* hie
 But' riȝt' faire was hur' heor I wil not' lye 3976
 ¶ The person of þe toune for she was so faire
 In purpoos was to make hir' his aire
 Boþ of his Catell and of his messuage
 And straunge he made it' of hur' mariage 3980
 His purpoos was to bystowe hir' hie
 Into som worþi blood of Auncetrie
 ffor holy churches good most' be despended/
 On holy chirche blood þat' is descended/ 3984
 Therefore he wold his holy blood honoure [leaf 56]
 poo þat' he holy churche shuld devoure
 Grete soken haþ þis mellere out' of doute
 With whete and malt of al þe londe aboute 3988

And namely þer was a grete colege	
Men clepen þe solere halle atte Cauntebrigge	
Ther was her whete and eke her malt ygrounde	
And on a day it happed in a stounde	3992
Sik lay þe manciple on a maladie	
Mon wenden wishly þat he shuld[e] dye	
ffor whiche þe Millere stale boþ mele <i>and</i> corn	
An hundred tyme more þan byforñ	3996
ffor þer byforne he stale but curteisly	
But nowe he was a þeef outrageously	
ffor which þe wardeyne chidde <i>and</i> made fare	
But þerof sette þe Millere not a tare	4000
He craked booste and swore it was not soo/ þan were þere yonge scolers two	
That dwelten in þe halle of which I seie	
Teestif þei were and lusty forto pleye	4004
And only for her merrh <i>and</i> reverye	
Vpon þe wardeyn bisily þei erie	
To 3eue hem leue but a litel stounde	
To goo to melle and se her corn y-grounde	4008
And hardely þei dorst lay her nekke	
þe Millere shuld not stele hem half a pekke	
Of corn ne by sleight ne by force hem reue	
And at þe last þe wardeyn 3af hem leue	4012
Iohñ hight þat oon an Aleyn hizt þat oper	
Of oon toun were þei born þat hight[e] strother	
fferre in þe norþe I can not telle where	
This Aleyn makeþ redy al his gere	4016
And on an hors þe sak he cast an̄ n	
fforþ goþ Aleyn þe Clerc and also Iohñ	
Wiþ good swerde and bokeler by her side	
Iohñ knewe þe way hym neded no gyde	4020
And atte Mille þe Sak a doune he laith	[leaf 56, back]
Alayn spake first alhaille Symonde in faip	
How fareþ þi fare douztere and þi wiff	
Aleyn welcome quod Symkyn be my liff	4024

And Iohñ also how nowe what' do 3e here
 By god quod Iohñ Symond' nede haþ no pere
 Hym byhoueþ serue hym self þat' haþ no swayñ
 Or ellis he is a fool as clerkes sayne 4028
 Our manciple I hope he wil be dede
 Swa worchen hym ay þe wanges in his hede
 And þerfore is I commen and eke Aleyñ
 To Grynde our corn and carie hit' hom' ageyn 4032
 We prey 3ou spede vs hepen þat' 3e may
 It' shal be done quod Symkyn be my fay
 What' wil 3e done while þat' it' is in hande
 By God ri3t' by the hoper wil I stande 4036
 Quod Iohñ and see how gates þe corn goþ Inne
 3it' sagħ I neuere be my fadere kynne
 How þat' þe hoper waggeþ til and fraye
 Aleyñ Answerd' Iohan wiltowe swaye 4040
 þan wil I be byneþe by my croune
 And se howe gate the mele falles adoun
 Into þe trough þat' shal be my disport'
 Quod Iohñ in faath I may bene of 3our' sorte 4044
 I is as il a Miller as is 3e
 This Millere smyled of her nycete
 And þou3t' al þis is doñ but' for a wile
 þei wene þat' no man may hem bygyle 4048
 But' by my þrift' 3it' shal I blere her ye
 ffor al þe sleizt' in her philosophie
 The more queynte Clerkes þat' þei make
 þe more wil I stele whan I take 4052
 In stede of floure 3it' wil I 3eue hem brenne
 The grettest' clerkes ben not' þe wisest men
 As whilom to þe wolf þus spake þe mare
 Of alle her arte counte I nou3t' a tare 4056
 Out' at' þe Dore he goþ ful priuely [leaf 57]
 Whan þat' he seghe his tyme softely
 He lokeþ vp and doune til he haþ founde
 The Clerkes hors þer as he stode ybounde 4060

Behinde þe mylle vndere a leueselle
 And to þe hors he goþ hym faire and welle
 He strepeþ of þe bridel riȝt' anōn
 And whan þe hors is louse he gynneþ to goñ 4064
 Toward' þe fenne where wilde Mares renne
 And forþe-wiþ þorgħ þikke and þorgħ þenne
 This Mellere goþ ageyn no word he seide
 But' doþ his note and wiþ þise clerkes pleide 4068
 Til þat' her corn was faire and welle ygrounde
 And whan þe mele is sakked and ybounde
 This Iohñ goþ oute and fonde her hors away
 And gan to erie harowe and walowway 4072
 Our hors is lost' aleyñ for goddis banes/
 Steppe on þi fete come of man / al at' anes
 Allas our wardeyn haþ our palfrey lorñ
 This Aleyñ forgate boþ mele and corñ 4076
 Al was out' of his mynde his husbandrie
 What' whilk' way is he goñ he gan to erie
 þe wif come lepinge inward' at a renne
 She seide alas ȝoure hors goþ to þe fenne 4080
 Withñ wilde mares as fast' as he may goo
 Vnþonke come on his honde þat' bonde hym soo/
 And he þat' better shuld' haue knette þe reyñ
 Allas quod Iohñ Aleyñ for cristes peyñ 4084
 Lay doune þi swerde and I wil myn alswaa
 I is ful swift god wate as is a Ra
 By goddes hert' he shal not' scape vs bathe
 Whi ne had þou putte þe Capel in þe lathe 4088
 Ilhaile by god Aleyñ þou is a fonne
 Thise sely clerkes han ful fast' yronne
 Touard' þe fenne boþen aleyñ an eke Iohñ
 And whan þe Miller' segħ þat' þei were goñ 4092
 He half a busshel of her floure haþ take [leaf 57, back]
 And bad his wif go knede it' in a cake
 And seide I trowe þe clerkes weren a-ferde
 ȝit' kan a Miller make a clerkes beerde 4096

ffor al her arte 3it' lat' hem goñ her way	
Lo wher þei gon 3e lat' þe children play	
They gete him not' so lightly by my croun	
Thise sely clerkes remmen vp and doun	4100
With kepe. kepe. stonde. stonde. Iossa warderere	
Ga qwistel 3ou I shal kepe hym here	
But' shortely til it' was verrey ny3t	
þei couþe not' þoughe þei did al her my3t'	4104
þeire Capel cauche he ranne alway so fast'	
Til in a dicche þei caught' him at þe last'	
Wery and wete as beestis in þe reyne	
Commeþ sely Iohñ and wiþ hym <i>commeþ</i> aleyñ	4108
Allas quod Iohñ þe day þat' I was borñ	
Nowe are we dryuen til heþing' <i>and</i> to scorñ	
Our corn is stolle men wil vs foles calle	
Boþ þe wardeyn and our felawes alle	4112
And namely þe Meller' weylawaye	
þus pleyneþ Iohñ as he goþ by þe waye	
Toward' the Melle and baiard' in his honde	
The Millere sitting' by þe fire he fonde	4116
ffor it' was nyght' and ferþer myght' he nou3t'	
But' for þe loue of god þei hym bisou3t'	
Of harborowe and of ease as for her peny	
þe Millere seide a3ein if þer be enye	4120
Such' as it' is 3ete shal 3e haue 3oure parte	
Myn hous is streite but' 3e han lerned arte	
3e can by argumente make a place	
A myle brode of xx ^{ti} fete of space	4124
Lat' se nowe if þis place may suffise	
Or make it rowmer wiþ speche as is 3our gise	
Now Symond' seide þis Iohñ be seynt' Cutberd'	
Ay is þou mery . and þat is faire answerde	4128
I haue herde seye men shal taken of two þingges	[leaf 58]
Such' as he fint' or take such' as he bringes	
But' specialy I prey þee hooste dere	
Gete vs some mete and drink and make vs chere	4132

Anl we wil paien trewly atte fulle	
Wif empty hondes men may not ^t haukes tulle	
Lo here our siluer redy forto spende	
This Mellere to þe toune his douzter sende	4136
ffor Ale and brede and rosted hem a goos	
And bonde her hors for he shuld no more go loos	
And in his owne chambre he made a bedde	
Wif shetes and wif chalons faire yspredde	4140
Nouzt ^t from his owne bedde .x. fete or xij.	
His doughter had a bed al by hir' selue	
Rizt in þe same chambre by <i>and</i> by	
It myghte be no bette and cause why	4144
þer was no rommer herborowe in þe place	
þei soupen and þei speken hem to solace	
And drynken euere stronge ale atte beste	
About ^t mydnyzt ^t went ^t þei to reste	4148
Wel hap þis Mellere vernyssed his hede	
fful pale he was for-dronken and not ^t rede	
He zeskeþ and he spekeþ þorgh ^t þe nose	
As he ware in þe quakke or on þe pose	4152
To bedde he gooþ and wif hym goþ his wif	
As eny Iaye he light ^t was and Iolif	
So was her Ioly whistel wel ywette	
þe Cradel at ^t her beddis fete is ysette	4156
To Rokken and to zeue þe child ^t to souke	
And whan þat ^t dronken was al in þe crouke	
To bedde went ^t þe doughter rizt ^t anōn	
To bedde goþ Aleyn and also Ioħn	4160
þer nas no more hem neded no dwale	
This Mellere hap so wisly bebbed ale	
þat ^t as an hors he snorteþ in his slepe	
Ne of his tale behynde he toke no kepe	4164
His wif bare him a Burdoñ a ful stronge	[leaf 53, back]
Men myght ^t here þe routing ^t þens a forlonge	
The wenche routeþ eek <i>par</i> companye	
Aleyn þe Clerk þat ^t herd ^t þis melodye	4168

He pouked on Iohñ and seide slepestowe
 Herde þou euere sclike a sang' or nowe
 Lo sclike a couplinge is ytwix hem alle
 A wilde fire on her bodies falle 4172
 Who herkened euere sclike a ferly þinge
 3e þei shal haue þe floure of euel endinge
 This lange nyzt þer tydes men no reste
 But' 3it' na fors al shal be for þe beste 4176
 ffor Iohñ seide he as euere mote I þriue
 If þat' I may 3on wenche þan wil I swyve
 Some esement' haþ lawe shapen vs
 ffor Iohñ þer is a lawe þat' seiþ þus 4180
 That' if a man in oon point' be agreued
 That' in anoþer he shal be releued
 Our corn is stolen soþly it' is no nay
 And we han had an euel fit to day 4184
 And syn I shal haue no amendement'
 Ageyn my losse I wil haue esement'
 By goddes saule it' sal na noþer be
 þis Iohñ answerde Aleyn awise þe 4188
 The Mellere is a perilous man he seide
 And if þat' he out' of his slepe abreide
 He myghte don vs boþ a vylenye
 Aleyn answerd' I counte hym not' a flye 4192
 And vp he rist' and by þe wenche he crepte
 This wenche lay vprizt' and faste slepte
 Til he so nygh was er she myzte spie
 þat' it' had bene to late forto crie 4196
 And shortely for to seie þei were at' oñ
 Nowe pleye Alayn for I wil speke of Iohñ
 This Iohñ lith stille a forlonge way or two
 And to hym self he makeþ wamenting' and woo 4200
 Allas quod he þis is a wikke Iape [leaf 59]
 Now may I seie þat' I is but' an ape
 3it' haþ my felawe somewhat' for his harme
 He haþ þe mellers douzter in his arme 4204

He Auntreþ hym and haþ his nedes spedde
 And I ly as a draf sak in my bedde
 And whan þis Iape is tolde anoþer day
 I shal be holde a daff a cokenay 4208
 I wil arise and aunter be my fath
 Vnhardy is vnsely þus men satli
 And vp he roos and softely he went'
 Vnto þe Cradel and in his arme hit' hent' 4212
 And bare it' soft' vntil his beddes fete
 Sone aftere þe wif her rowting' lete
 And gan to wake and went' her out' to pisse
 And come agein and gan her cradel mysse 4216
 And groped here and þere but' she foond' noon/
 Allas quod she I had almost' mysgoñ
 I had almost' go to þe clerkes bedde
 Ey benedicite þan had I foule yspedde 4220
 And forþ she goþ til she þe cradel fonde
 She gropeþ alway forþer wiþ her honde
 And fond þe bed and þouzt' nouzt' but' of good
 By cause þat' þe cradel by it' stode 4224
 And nyste wher she was for it' was derk
 But faire and wel she crepte in to þe clerk'
 And lith ful stille and wolde haue kauzt' a slepe
 Wiþ-In a while þis Iohñ þe clerk' vp lepe 4228
 And on þis good[e] wif hee leiþ ful sore
 So mery a fitte ne had she not' ful zore
 And prikeþ harde and depe as he ware¹ madde [P MS]
 þis Ioly lif' han þise two clerkes ladde 4232
 To þat' þe iij. coke bygan to singe
 Aleyn wexe wery. in þe daw[e]nynge
 ffor he had swonken al þe longe nyzt'
 And seide fare wel malyñ sweete wigt' 4236
 The day is come I may no lenger byde [leaf 59, back]
 But' euermo where so I go or ride
 I am þine owne clerk so haue I sele
 Now dere lemman quod she go fare wele 4240

But er þou goo. on þinge I wil þe telle
 Whhan þat þow wendest homward by þe melle
 Right at þe entre of þe door be-hinde
 Thow shalt a Cake of half a busshel fynde 4244
 That was ymaked of þine owne mele
 Which þat I helpe my Sire forto stele
 And good lemman god þe saue and kepe
 And wiþ þat word almost she gan to wepe 4248
 Aleyñ vprist and þouzt er þat it dawe
 I wol go crepen in by my felawe
 And fonde þe cradel wiþ his honde anoñ
 By god þought he alwrong / I haue mysgoñ 4252
 Myn hede is toty of my swynk to nyght
 þat makeþ me þat I go not aright
 I wote wele by þe cradel I haue mysgo
 Here lith þe meller and his wif also 4256
 And forþ he goþ on twenty delway
 Vnto þe bedde þer as þe meller lay
 He wende haue copen by his felawe Ioñ
 And by þe Meller in he crept anoñ 4260
 And kaught him by þe nek and soft he spake
 And seide þou Ioñ þou swyneshede awake
 Of Cristes saule and here a noble game
 ffor by þat lord þat called is seint Iame 4264
 As I haue þries in þis shorte nyzt
 Swyved þe Mellers douzter bolt vprist
 Whilst þow hast as a Coward beñ agast
 Ye fals harlot quod þe Mellere hast 4268
 A fals traitour. fals clerk quod he
 þow shalt be dede by goddes dignyte
 Who durste be so bolde to disparage
 My douzter þat is come of swich lynage 4272
 And by þe þrote bolle he kauzt aleyñ
 [leaf 60]
 And he him hent dispitously ageyñ
 And on þe nose he smote hym with his fist
 Doune ranne þe bloody streme vpon his brist 4276

And in þe floor wiþ nose and mouþ to-broke
 þei walowen as don two pigges in a poke
 And vp þei goon and doune anoñ
 Till þat þe Mellere spurned at a stoñ 4280
 And downe he felle bakward vpon his wiff
 þat wist no þinge of þis nyce striff
 ffor she was falle a slepe a litel wizt
 Wiþ Iohñ þe clerk þat waked had al nyzt 4284
 And wiþ þe falle out of her slepe she braide
 Help holy crosse of bromholm she saide
 In manus tuas lorde to þe I calle
 Awake Symond þe feend is on me falle 4288
 Myn hert is broken help I ne am but dede
 þere lith vpon my wombe *and* on myn hede
 Helpe Symkyn for þise fals clerkes fizt
 This Iohñ stert vp as fast as euere he myzt 4292
 And grasped by þe walles to and fro
 To fynden a staf and she stert vp also
 And knewe þe Eisters bet þan did Iohñ
 And by þe walle she fonde a staf anōn 4296
 And segñ a litel shymering of a lizt
 ffor at an hole in shone þe mone brizt
 And by þat lizt she segñ hem boþ[e] two
 But sikerly she nyste who was who 4300
 But as she seegh a white þinge in her eye
 And whan she gan þis white þing asprie
 She wende þe Clerk had wered a volipere
 And wiþ þe staf she drough ay ner and nere 4304
 And wende han hitte þis Aleyn atte fulle
 And smote þe Mylere on þe pyled skulle
 þat down he goth *and* cried harowe I dye
 Thises Clerkes bette hym wel and lete hym lye 4308
 And Greieþ hem and toke her hors anoñ [leaf 60, back]
 And eke her/ mele and on her way þei gōn
 And at the Melle zit þei toke her Cake
 Of half a busshel floure ful wel ybake 4312

Thus is þe proude Mellere wel ybete
 And hath ylost' þe grynding' of þe whete
 And paide for þe soper euery dell
 Of aleyn and of Iohā þat' bette hym weſt 4316
 His wiff is swyued and his douȝtere als
 Lo such it' is a Miller' to be fals
 And þerfor þis prouerbe is seide ful soth
 Hym ther not' wene wele þat' euel doth 4320
 A Gilour shal hym self begiled be
 And god þat' sitteþ hegh in mageste
 Saue al þe company grete *and* smale
 Thus haue I quytte þe Meller' in my tale 4324
¶ Thus Endeth þe Reues Tale

[*No break in the MS.*]

And here bygynneþ þe Cokes tale

The Coke of london while þe Reue spak ¶ The Prologe
 ffor Ioye him þou3t he clawed hym on þe bak^t
 Ha. ha. quod he for cristes passioñ
 This Millere haþ a sharpe conclusioñ 4328
 Vpon his argument^t of harbigage
 Wel seide Salomon in his langage
 Ne bringe not^t euery man into þine hous
 ffor herbowringe by nyght^t is perilous 4332
 Wel ou3t^t a man avised forto be
 Whoom þat^t he brou3t^t into his pryvete
 I prey to god so 3eue me sorowe and care
 If euer siþen I hight^t hogge of ware 4336
 Herd I Meller better ysette a werke
 He had a Iape of malice in þe derke
 And þerfor if 3e vouche sauf to here 4340
 But^t god forbede þat^t we stynt^t heere 4339
 A tale of me þat^t am a poor man
 I wil 3ou telle as wel as euer I can
 A litel Iape þat^t felle in *our* Cite [leaf 61]
 Our hooste answerd^t *and* seide I graunte it^t þe 4344
 Now telle on Rogger and loke þat^t it^t be good
 ffor mony a paast hast^t þou laten blood
 And mony a Iak of Douer hast^t þou sold^t
 þat^t haþ be twies hoote and twies cold^t 4348
 Of mony a pilgryme hast^t þou cristes curs
 ffor of þi-Persely 3it^t fare þei þe wors
 þat^t þei han eten wiþ þi stobel goos
 ffor in þi shoppe is mony a flee loos 4352
 Now telle on gentil Rogger by þi name
 But^t 3it^t I prei þe be not^t wroþ for game
 A man may say ful soþ in game *and* play
 þow seist ful soþ quod Rogger be my fay 4356

But soþ play quade play as þe flemmyng' saiþ
 And þerfore henry balyf by þi feiþ
 Be þow not' wroþ er we departen here
 þoughe þat' my tale be of an ostylere 4360
 But' napelees I wil not' tellen it' 3it'
 But' er we part' I-wis þou shalt' be quy't
 And þerwiþ al [he] lough and made chere
 And saide his tale as 3e shal after here 4364
þus endeþ þe prologe of þe cokes talè

[*No break in the MS.*]

And here bygyneþ þe Cokes tale

¶ The Cokes Tale.

A Prentis whilom dwelled in our' Cite
 And of a craft' of vitalers was he
 Gailard' he was as gold-fynch' in þe shawe
 Broun as þe bery. a *propre* short felawe 4368
 Wiþ lockes blake ykempt' ful fetisly
 Daunce he couþe so wel and Iolily
 þat' he was cleped Perkyn reveilour'
 He was as ful of loue and *paramour* 4372
 As is þe hyve ful of hony swete
 Wel was þe wenche wiþ him myzt' mete
 And euery Bridale wold' he sing' and hoppe
 He loued bette þe Tauern þan þe shoppe 4376
 ffor whan þer eny ridyng was in chepe [leaf 61, back]
 Out' of þe Shoppe þidere wold' he lepe
 Til þat' he had al þe sizt' yseyñ
 And daunsed wel wold he not' come ageyñ 4380
 And gader' hym a mayne of his sort'
 To hoppe and synge and make such' disport'
 And þer þei setten steuen forto mete
 To pleyn at' þe dis in such a strete 4384
 ffor in þe toune nas þer no prentys
 þat' fairrer couþe cast' a peire of dys
 þan perkyn couþe *and* þerto he was free
 Of his dispence in place of pryvete 4388
 That' fonde his maister wel in his chaffare
 ffor oft' tymes he fonde his boxe ful bare
 ffor sikerly a prentise Reveilour'
 þat' haunteþ dis ryot' and *paramour*' 4392
 His maister' shulde in his shop abye
 Al haue he not' part' of þe mynstralcie
 ffor þeft and riot' þei ben conuertible
 Al conne he pley on gitern or rubible 4396

APPENDIX TO GROUP A.

[THE SPURIOUS TALE OF GAMELYN.]

[*Spurious Link.*]

But here-of I wil pas as nowe
 And of yonge Gamelyn I wil telle 3ou. 2

[*Tale.*]

Lipes *and* listnep and harknep a-ri3t ¶ *þe tale of yonge Gamelyne*
 And 3e shul here of a doughty kny3t
 Sir Iohā of boundes was his name
 He coude of Norture and of mochel game 4
 Thre sones þe knyght had *and* wiþ his body he wan
 The eldest was a moche schrewe and sone bygan
 His breþer loued wel her fader *and* of him were agast
 þe eldest deserued his faders curs *and* had it atte last 8
 þe good knyght his fadere lyued so yore
 þat deþ was *commen* to hym . and handled hym ful sore
 þe Good knyght cared sore . sik þer he lay
 How his children shuld lyuen after his day 12
 He had ben wide where . but non husbonde he was
 Al þe londe þat he had it was purchas/
 ffayn he wold it were dressed among hem alle
 That eche of hem had his parte as it my3t falle 16
 þoo sente he in to contrey after wise kny3tes
 To helpen delen his londes : *and* dresen hem to ri3tes
 He sent hem word by letters : þei shul hie blyve
 Yf þei wolk speke wiþ hym : whilst he was a lyve 20

Whan þe knyȝtes harden sik þat he lay
 Had þei no rest' neiþer' : nyȝt' ne day
 Til þei come to hym' : þer he lay stille
 On his deþes bedde/ to abide goddys wille 24
 Than seide þe good knyght' seke þer he lay [leaf 62, back]
 Lordes I ȝou warne for soþ wip-out' nay
 I may no lenger lyuen here in þis stounde
 ff̃or þorgh̃ goddis wille' : deþ droueþ me to grounde 28
 þer nas noon of hem alle' : þat' herd hym ariȝt'
 þat' þei ne had routh' : of þat' ilke knyȝt'
 And seide sir' for goddes loue' : dismay ȝou nouȝt'
 God may doñ boote of bale' : þat' is now ywrouȝt' 32
 þan speke þe good knyȝt' : sik' þer he lay
 Boote of bale god may sende' : I wote it' is no nay
 But' I bisecc̃he ȝo^u knyȝtes for þe loue of me
 Gop̃ and dresseþ my londes' : among' my sones þre 36
 And for þe loue of god deleþ not' amys
 And forgeteþ not' Gamelyne' : my ȝong' sonne þat' is/
 Takeþ hede to þat' oon as wel as to þat' oþere
 Seelde ȝe seen eny hier . helpen his broþere 40
 þoo lete þei þe knyght' lyen' : þat' was not' in hele
 And wenten into counseff̃ his londes forto dele
 Forto delen hem alle to oñ' : þat' was her þouȝt'
 And for Gamelyñ was ȝongest' he shuld haue nouȝt' 44
 Aft̃ þe londe þat' þer was' : þei dalten it' in two
 And lete Gamelyne þe ȝonge' : without' londe goo
 And eche of hem seide to other ful loude
 His breþeren myȝt' ȝeue him londe whan he good cowde 48
 And whan þei had deled þe londe at' her wille
 þei comen to þe knyght' . þer he lay stille
 And tolde him anoon' : how þei had wrouȝt'
 And þe knyght' þere he laye liked it' riȝt nouȝt' 52
 ¶ Than seide þe knyȝt' : be seint' Martyne
 For al þat' ȝe han done' : ȝit is the londe myne
 ff̃or goddis loue neighbours . stondeþ alle stille
 And I wil delen my londe' : after myn owne wille 56

Iohñ myne eldest' sone' : shal haue plowes fyve
 þat' was my faders heritage' : whan he was alyve
 And my myddelest' sone .v. plowes of londe
 þat' I halpe forto gete *with* my riȝt' honde 60
 And al myñ oþere purchase of londes *and* ledes [leaf 63]
 þat' I biqueþe Gamelyñ . and al my good stedes
 And I biseche ȝou good men þat' lawe conne of londe
 For Gamelynes loue' : þat' my quest' stonde 64
 Thus dalt' þe knyȝt'. his londe by his day
 Riȝt' on his deþ bed sik þer he lay
 And sone afterward he lay stoon stille
 And deide whan tyme come' : as it' was cristes wille 68
 Anoon as he was dede and vnder gras graue
 Sone þ^e elder broþer' : giled þe ȝonge knaue
 He toke into his honde his londe *and* his lede
 And Gamelyne him seluen to cloþe *and* to fede 72
 He cloþed him and fedde him/ eueñt' *and* eke wrothe
 And lete his londes forfare' : and his houses boþe
 His Parkes and his wodes' : and did no þing' welle
 And siþen he it' abouȝt' on his owne felle 76
 So longe was Gamelyne in his broþers halle
 ffor þe strengest' of good wiñt' þei douted hym alle
 þer was noon þer-Inne neiþer ȝonge ne olde
 þat' wold' wrethe Gamelyñ. were he neuer so bolde 80
 Gamelyne stood on a day' : in his broþeres ȝerde
 And byganne wiþ his hond/ to handel his berde
 He þouȝt' on his landes þat' lay vnsowe
 And his fare okes þat' doune were ydrawe 84
 His Parkes were broken/ and his deer reued
 Of alle his good stedes/ noon was hym byleued
 His hous were vnhilled/ *and* ful eueñt' diȝt'
 Tho þouȝt' Gamelyne/ it' went' not' ariȝt' 88
 ¶ Afterward' come his broþer walking' þare
 And seide to Gamelyñ. is our mete ȝare
 Tho wrathed him Gamelyñ/ *and* swore by goddys boke
 þow shalt' go bake þi self/ I wil not' be þi coke 92

What broþer Gamelyne howe answerst þou nowe
 þou spekest' neuere such' a word' as þou dost nowe
 By feiþe seide Gamelyn' : now me þenkeþ nede
 Of al þe harmes þat' I haue : I toke neuere 3it' hede . 96
 My parkes bene broken : *and* my dere reued [leaf 63, back]
 Of myn armes ne my stedes : nouzt' is byleued
 All þat' my fader' me byquape : al goþ to shame
 And þerfor haue þou goddes curs : broþere be þi name 100
 þan spake his broþer þat' rape was and rees
 Stond stille Gadlynge and holde þi pees
 Thou shalt' be fayn to haue : þi mete *and* þi wede
 What' spekest' þow gadeling'. of londe or of lede 104
 Than seide Gamelyn' : þe child so 3ing'
 Cristes curs mote he haue : þat' me clepeth Gadelinge
 I am no wors Gadeling' : ne no wors wizt'
 But' born of a lady and gete of a knyzt' 108
 Ne dorst' he not' to Gamelyn' neuere a foot' goo
 But' cleped to hym his men : and seide to hem þoo/
 Goþ and betep þis boye and reueþ hym his witte
 And lat' him lerne anoþer tyme : to answer' me bette 112
 Than seide þe Child' 3onge Gamelyn'
 Cristes curs mote þou haue : broþer art þou myn
 And if I shal algates be beten an' n
 Cristes curs mote þou haue : but þou be þat' on 116
 And anon his broþer in þat' grete hete
 Made his men to fette staues Gamelyn to bete
 Whan euery of hem had a staf ynommen
 Gamelyn was werre . whan he segh hem commen 120
 Whan Gamelyne segh hem commen . he loked ouer all
 And was ware of a pestel : stode vnder þe wall
 Gamelyn was lizt' and þider' gan he lepe
 And droof alle his broþeres men rizt' sone on an hepe 124
 And loked as a wilde lyon . and leide on good wone
 And whan his broþer segh þat' : he byganne to goñ
 He fley vp into a loft' : and shette þe door fast'
 þus Gamelyn wip his pestel . made hem al a-gast' 128

Some for Gamelyns loue. *and* some for eye
 Alle þei droughen hem to halues whan he gan to pleye
 ¶ What' nowe seide Gamelyn' : euel mote 3e the
 Wil 3e bygynne contecte : and so sone flee 132
 Gamelyn' souzt' his broþer : whider' he was flowe [leaf 64]
 And seghe where he loked out' a wyndowe
 Broþere seide Gamelyn. come a litel nere
 And I wil teche þe a play at þe bokelere 136
 His broþere him ansuerde. *and* seide by seint' Richere
 þe while þat' pestel is in þine honde. I wil come no nere
 Broþer I wil make þi pees : I swer by *cristes* oore
 Cast' away þe pestel. and wreþe þe no more 140
 I most' nede seide Gamelyn wreþ me at' onys
 ffor þou wold make þi men. to breke my bonys
 Ne had I hadde mayn *and* myzt' in myn armes
 To han hem fro me. þei wold haue doñ me harmes 144
 Gamelyn seide his broþer be þou not' wroth
 Forto sene þe han harme. me were ri3t' loth
 I ne did it' not' broþer but' for a fendinge
 ffor to loken wher þou art' stronge and art' so 3enge 148
 Come a doune þan to me and graunt' me my bone
 Of oon þing' I wil þe axe and we shal sau3t' sone
 Doune þan come his broþer þat' fikel was *and* felle
 And was swiþ sore a-feerd of þe pestelle 152
 He seide broþer Gamelyn axe me þi bone
 And loke þou me blame but' I it' graunte sone
 þan seide Gamelyn broþer I-wys
 And we shul be at' oñ. þou most graunte me this 156
 All þat' my fader me by-quaþ. whilst' he was alyue
 þow most' do me it' haue. if we shul not' strive
 þat' shalt' þou haue Gamelyn I swere bi *cristes* oore.
 Al þat' þi fadere þe by-quaþe. þough þou wold' haue more
 Thy londe þat' lith ley. wel it' shal be sawe 161
 And þine houses reised vp þat' bene leide ful lawe
 Thus seide þe knyght. to gamelyn wiþ mouþe
 And þou3t on falsnes as he wel couþe 164

þe knyȝt^t þouȝt^t on tresoñ. and gamelyn anoñ
 And wente *and* kissed his broþer *and* whan þei were at oñ
 Alas yonge Gamelyn no þing^t he ne wist
 Wiþ suč^t fals tresoñ . his broþer him kist^t 168
 Lyþeneth and listeneþ and holdeþ *ȝour* tonge [leaf 64, back]
 And ȝe shul here talking^t of Gamelyn þe ȝonge
 ¶ Ther was þere bisiden cride a wrastelinge
 And þefore þer was sette a ramme *and* a ringe 172
 And Gamelyn was in wille to wende þerto/
 fforto preuen his myȝt^t what^t he coude doo
 Broþere seide Gamelyn by seint^t Richere
 þow most^t lene me to nyȝt^t a litel coursere 176
 That^t is fresshe fro þe spore on for to ride
 I most^t on an erand^t a litel here beside
 By god seide his broþer/ of stedes in my stalle
 Goo and chese þe the best^t spare noñ of hem alle 180
 Of stedes and of coursers þat^t stoden hem byside
 And telle me good broþer whider þou wilt ride
 Here beside broþer is cried a wrastelinge
 And þefore shal be sette a ram *and* a ringe 184
 Moche worchip it were broþere to vs alle
 Might^t I þe ram *and* þe ring^t bring^t home to þis halle
 A stede ther was sadeled smertly an skete
 Gamelyn did a peire spores fast^t on his fete 188
 He sette his foote in þe stirop þe stede he bistrode
 And towardses þe wrasteling^t þe yong^t childe rode
 ¶ Whan Gemelyn þe ȝonge was riden out^t atte gate
 þe fals knyȝt^t his broþer loked it^t after^t þate 192
 And bysouȝt^t Ihesu *cris*t^t þat^t is heuene kinge
 He myght^t breke his necke in þe wrestelinge
 As sone as Gamelyn come þer þe place was
 He light^t doune of his stede *and* stood on þe gras 196
 And þer he herde a frankeleyn weiloway singe
 And by-gonne bitterly his hondes for to wringe
 Good man seide Gamelyn : whi mast þou þis fare
 Is þer no man þat^t may. ȝou helpen out^t of care 200

Allas seide þis frankleyn þat' euere was I bore
 ffor twey stalworþ sones : I wene þat' I haue lore
 A champion is in þe place. þat' haþ wrouzt' me sorowe
 ffor he haþ sclayn my two sones. but' 3if god hem borowe
 I wil zeue x. li. by Ihesu crist *and* more [leaf 65]
 Wiþ þe nones I fonde a man wold' handel hym sore
 Good man seide Gamelyn wilt' þou wele doñ
 Holde my hors þe whiles my man : drowe of my shoñ 208
 And helpe my man to kepe/ my cloþes *and* my stede
 And I wil to place goñ . to loke if I may spede
 By god seide þe ffrankeleyn it' shal be doñ
 I wil my self be þi man to drowe of þi shoñ 212
 And wende þou into place Ihesu crist þe spede
 And drede not' of þi cloþes. ne of þi good stede
 Bare-foot' and vngirt'. Gamelyn Inne came
 Alle þat' were in þe place . hede of him name 216
 Howe he durst' auenture him to doñ his myzt'
 þat' was so doghty a champiõn in wrasteling' *and* in fizt'
 Vp stert' þe Champion rapely anõn
 And toward' yong' Gamelyn byganne to gõn 220
 And seide who is þi fadere *and* who is þi sire
 ffor sothe þou art' a grete fool þat' thou come hire
 Gamelyn answerd' þe Champiõn þo
 Thowe knewe wel my fadere while he myzt' goo 224
 þe whiles he was alyue by seynt' Martyn
 Sir' Iohñ of Boundes was his name *and* I am Gamelyñ
 ¶ ffelawe seide þe Champiõn so mote I þriue
 I knewe wel þi fadere þe whiles he was alyue 228
 And þi silf Gamelyn I wil þat' þou it here
 While þou were a 3ong' boy. a moçh shrewe þou were
 Than seide Gamelyn and swore by cristes ore
 Now I am older wexe þou shalt' finde me a more 232
 By god seide þe Champion welcome mote þou be
 Come þow onys in my honde . þou shalt' neuere the
 It was wel wiþ-in þe nyzt' *and* þe mone shone
 Whan Gamelyn and þe Champiõn to-gider' gon gone 236

The Champion cast^t turnes to Gamelyn þat was prest^t
 And Gamelyn stode and bad hym done his best^t
 Than seide Gamelyn to þe Champioun
 þowe art^t fast^t aboute to bringe me adoun 240
 Now I haue proued mony turnes of þine [leaf 65, back]
 Thow most^t he seide oon or ij. of myne
 Gamelyn to þe Champioñ zede smertely anōn
 Of alle þe turnes þat^t he couþe he shewed hym but oñ
 And cast^t him on þe lift^t side. þat þre ribbes to-brake 245
 And þerto his owne arme þat^t zaf a grete crake
 Than seide Gamelyn smertly anōn
 Shal it^t bihold^t for a cast^t or ellis for nōn 248
 By god seide þe Champion whedere it^t bee
 He þat^t commep ones in þi honde shal he neuere the
 ¶ Than seide þe frankeley þat had þe sones þere
 Blessed be þou Gamelyn þat^t euere þou bore were 252
 The ffrankleyn seide to þe Champioñ on hym stode hym
 This is zonge Gamelyn þat^t tauzt/ þe þis pleye [noñ eye
 Azein answerd þe Champion). þat^t likeþ no þing^t wel
 He is alþer maister and his pley is riȝt^t felt 256
 Siþen y wrasteled first^t it^t is goon zore
 But^t I was neuer^t in my lif handeled so sore
 Gamelyn stode in þe place anon wiþ-out^t serk^t
 And seide zif þer be moo lat^t hem come to werk^t 260
 The Champion þat^t pyned hym to worch sore
 It^t semeþ by his countenaunce þat^t he wil no more
 Gamelyin in þe place stood stille as stone
 ffor to abide wrastelinge but^t þer come nonē 264
 þer was noon wiþ gamelyn þat wold wrastel more
 ffor he handeled the Champioñ so wonderly sore
 Two gentile men þat zemed þe place
 Come to Gamelyin god zeue hym good grace 268
 And seide to hym do on · þi hosen and þi shoone
 ffor soþ at^t þis tyme þis fare is done
 And þan seide Gamelyn so mot^t I wel fare
 I haue not^t zete haluendele sold my ware 272

- þoo seide þe Champion : so broke I my swere
 He is a fool þat þerof bieþ þou selleþ it' so dere
 Tho saide þe frankleyñ þat' was in moçh care
 ffelawe he saide whi lackest' þou þis ware 276
 By sante Iame of Gales þat' mony man haþ souzt [leaf 66]
 3it' is it' to good chepe þat' þow hast' bouzt'
 Thoo þat' wardeynes were of þat' wrasteling'
 Come and brouzt' Gamelyn þe Ramme *and* þe rynge 280
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 And Gamelyn biþouzt' him it was a faire þinge
 And went' wiþ moche Ioye home in þe mornynge 284
 ¶ His broþer see wher he came : wiþ þe grete route
 And bad shitt' þe gate and hold' hym wiþ oute
 The Porter of his lord' was soor a gaast'
 And stert' anon to þe gate and lokked it' fast' 288
 ¶ Now lithenes *and* listneþ boþ 3onge *and* olde
 And 3e shul here gamen of Gamelyn þe bolde
 Gamelyn come to þe gate for to haue come Inne
 And it' was shett' fast' wiþ a strong' pynne 292
 þan seide Gamelyn Porter vndo þe 3ate
 ffor good mennys sonen stonden þer-ate
 þan answerd þe porter and swore by goddys berde
 þow ne shalt' Gamelyñ come into þis 3erde 296
 Thow lixt' seide Gamelyñ/ so broke I my chyne
 He smote þe wikett' wiþ his foote and breke awaie þ^e pynne
 The Porter seie þoo/ it myzt' no better be
 He sette foote on ertñ and bygan to flee 300
 By my feye seide Gamelyn þat' travaile is ylore
 ffor I am of fote as light' as þou . if þou haddest' it swore
 Gamelyn ouertoke þe porter' . and his tene wrake
 And girt' him in þe nek' þat' þe boon to-brake 304
 And toke hym by þat' oon arme/ and threwe hym in a welle
 vij^c. fadme it' was depe/ as I haue herd' telle
 ¶ Whan Gamelyn þe yonge þus had plaid his playe
 Alle þat' in þe yerde were . drowen hem awaye 308

þei dredden him ful sore for werk þat' he wrouzt'
 And for þe faire company þat' he þider brouzt'
 Gamelyn zede to þe gate/ and lete it' vp wide
 He lete Inne aft. þat' goñ wold' or ride 312
 And seide ze be welcome wiþ out' eny greue
 ffor we wil be maisters here and axe no man leue
 3usterday I left/ seide zonge Gamelyñ [leaf 66, back]
 In my broþer seler/ v. tonne of wyñ 316
 I wil not' þis company partyn a-twynne
 And ze wil done after me/ while sope is þer-Inne
 And if my broþer gruche or make foule chere
 Eiper for spence of mete and drink'/ þat' we spende here
 I am oure Catow' and bere our alþer purs 321
 He shal haue for his grucching' seint' Maries curs
 My broþer is a Nigon' I swere be cristes oore
 And we wil spende largely/ þat' he haþ spared yore 324
 And who þat' make grucchinge þat' we here dwelle
 He shal to þe porter in to þe drowe-welle
 .Vij. dayes and vij. nyztes Gamelyn helde his feest'
 Wiþ moche solace/ was þer noon cheest' 328
 In a litel torret' his broþer lay steke
 And see hem waast' his good and dorst' no word' speke
 Erly on a mornynge on þe viij. day
 The Gestes come to Gamelyn and wolde goñ her way 332
 Lordes seide Gamelyn wil ze so hie
 Al þe wyne is not' zit' dronke' so brouke I myñ ye
 Gamelyn in his hert'/ was ful woo
 Whan his gestes toke her leue. fro hym forto go 336
 He wolde þei had dwelled lenger. and þei seide nay
 But' bytaught' Gamelyn. god and good day
 Thus made Gamelyn his feest'. and brouzt' wel to ende
 And aftere his gestes. toke leue to wende 340
 ¶ Lythen and listen and holde zour' tunge
 And ze shal here Game of Gamelyn þe zonge
 Harkeneth lordingges and listeneþ arizt'
 Whan alle gestis were goon how gamelyn was dizt' 344

- Alle þe while þat Gamelyn heeld his Mangerye
 His broþere þouȝt on hym be wroke/ *with* his trecherye
 Whan Gamylens gestes were riden and goñ
 Gamelyn stood anon allone/ frend had he noñ 348
 Tho aftere felle sone/ *with-in* a litel stounde
 Gamelyn was taken/ and ful hardȝ ybounde
 fforþ Come þe fals knynght' out of þe Solere [leaf 67]
 To Gamelyn his broþer/ he ȝede ful nere 352
 And saide to Gamelyn/ who made þe so boldȝ
 For to stroien þe stoor of myn householdȝ
 Broþer seide Gamelyn wreþ þe riȝt nought
 ffor it' is many day gon siþ it' was bouȝt 356
 ffor broþer þou hast' had by seint' Richere
 Of xv. plowes of londe. þis xvj. ȝere
 And of alle þe beestes þou hast' forþ bredde
 That' my fader me byquatȝ on his deþes bedde 360
 Of al þis xvj. ȝere I ȝeue þe þe prove
 ffor þe mete and þe drink þat' we han spended nowe
 Than seide þe fals knyȝt'. eucl mote he þee
 Herken broþere Gamelyn what' I wil ȝeue þe 364
 ffor of my body broþer' here geten haue I none
 I wil make þe myn heire I sere by seint' Ioħn
 Parfay seide Gamelyn' *and* if it' so be
 And þou thenk' as þou seist' god ȝeeldȝ it' þe 368
 No þinge wist' Gamelyn of his broþer gile
 Therefore he hym bygiled in a litel while
 Gamelyn seide. oon þing' I þe telle
 þoo þou þrewe my porter in þe drowe-welle 372
 I swore in þat' wreþe and in þat' grete moote
 þat' þou shuldest' be bounde boþe honde *and* fote
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] 376
 This most' be fulfilled' my men to dote
 ffor to holden myn avowe as I þe bihote
 ¶ Broþer seide Gamelyn as mote I þee
 þou shalt' not' be forswore for þe loue of me 380

Tho maden þei Gamelyn to sitte and not stonde
 To þei had hym bounde boþ fote and honde
 þe fals knyght his broþer. of Gamelyn was a-gast
 And sent efter fetters to fetter' hym fast' 384
 His broþer made lesingges on him þer he stode
 And tolde hem þat' commen Inne þat Gamelyn was wode
 Gamelyn stode to a post. bounden in þe hall
 þoo þat' commen Inne. loked on hym aȝt 388
 Euer stode Gamelyn euen vp-riȝt' [leaf 67, back]
 But' mete and drink had ne noun. neiþer day ne nyȝt'
 Than seide Gamelyn/ brother be myn hals
 Nowe haue I aspied þou art' a party fals 392
 Had I wist' þe Treson þat' hast' yfounde
 I wold haue ȝeue strokes or I had be bounde
 Gamelyn stode bounde stille as eny stone
 Tho daies and two nyȝtes mete had he none 396
 Than seide Gamelyn : þat' stood ybound' stronge
 Adam Spenser' me þenkeþ I fast' to longe
 Adam Spencere now I biseche þe
 ffor þe moche loue my fadere loued þe 400
 If þou may come to þe keys/ lese me out' of bonde
 And I wil part' wiþ þe of my free londe
 Than seide Adam þat' was þe spencere
 I haue serued þi broþer þis xvj ȝere 404
 ȝif I lete þe gone out' of his boure
 He wold saye afterwarde I were a tratour
 Adam seide Gamelyn so brouke I myn hals
 Thow shalt' finde þi broþer at' þe last' fals 408
 Therefore broþer Adam lose me out' of boȝdes
 And I will parte wiþ þe of my free londes
 Vp such forward' seide Adam ywis
 I wil do þerto al þat' in me is 412
 Adam seide Gamelyn as mote I þe
 I wil holde þe Conaunte and þou wil me [fre]
 Anoon as Adams lord' to bed was goȝ
 Adam toke þe þeyes and lete Gamelyn out' anoȝ 416

He vnlocked Gamelyn boþ hondes *and* fete
 In hope of auauncement' þat' he hym byhete
 Than seide Gamelyn þonked be goddis sonde
 Nowe I am lose boþ fote and honde 420
 Had I nowe eten and dronken arizt'
 þer is noon in þis hous shuld' bynde me þis nyzt'
 Adam toke Gamelyn as stille as eny stone
 And ladde him into þe spence raply anone 424
 And sette him to sopere rizt' in a priuey styde [leaf 68]
 He bad hym do gladly and so he dide
 Anoon as Gamelyn had eten wel *and* fyne
 And þerto y-dronken wel of þe rede wyne 428
 Adam seide Gamelyn what' is nowe þi rede
 Or I go to my broþer and Gerd of his his hede
 Gamelyn seide Adam it' shal not' be so
 I can teche þe a rede þat' is worþ þe twoo/ 432
 I wote wel forsop þat' þis is no nay/
 We shul haue a Mangerye rizt' on sonday
 Abbotes and Priours mony here shul be
 And oþer men of holy chircĥ as I telle þe 436
 þou shal stonde vp by þe post' as þou were bounde fast'
 And I shal leue hem vnloke þat' away þou may hem cast'
 Whan þat' þei han eten and wasshen her handes
 þow shalt' biseche hem alle to bringe þe out' of bondes 440
 And if þei willen borowe þe þat' were good game
 þan were þou out' of prison and [I] out' of blame
 And if ecche of hem saye to vs nay
 I shal do anoþer I swere by þis day 444
 þow shalt' haue a good staf *and* I wil haue anoþere
 And cristes curs haf þat' on þat' failleþ þat' oþere
 3e for god seide Gamelyn I say it' for me
 If I faille on my side evel mot' I þee 448
 If we shul algate assoille hem of her synne
 Warne me brother/ Adam whan we shul bygynne
 Gamelyn seid Adam by seint' charite
 I wil warne þe biforn whan it' shal be 452

Whan I winke on þe. loke forto gone
 And caste away þi fetters and come to me anoñ
 Adam seide Gamelyn blessed be þi bonys
 þat' is a good counseile zeuen for þe nonys 456
 3if þei warne me þe to bring' out' of bondes
 I wil sette good strokes rizt' on here lendes
 Whan þe Sunday was commen and folk to þe feest
 ffaire þei were welcomed. boþ leest' and mest' 460
 And euer as þei at' þe haldore come Inne [leaf 68, back]
 They casten her yen/ on zonge Gamelyñ
 The fals knyzt' his broþer ful of trecherye
 Al þe gettes þat' þer were at' þe mangerye 464
 Of Gamelyn his broþer he tolde hem wiþ mouþe
 Al þe harme and þe shame þat' he telle couþe
 Whan þei were yserued of messes ij. or thre
 þan seide Gamelyn howe serue ze me 468
 It' is not' wel serued by god þat' aþ made
 þat' I sitte fastinge and oþer men make glade
 The fals knyzt' his broþer þer as he stode
 Told to aþ þe gestes þat' Gamelyn was wode 472
 And Gamelyn stode stille and answerd' nouzt'
 But' Adames wordes he helde in his þouzt'
 Thoo Gamelyn gan speke doolfully wiþ-aþ
 To þe grete lordes þat' seten in þe haþ 476
 ¶ Lordes he seide for cristes passioñ
 Helpe to bringe Gamelyn out' of prisoñ
 þan seide an Abbot' sorowe on his cheke
 He shal haue cristes curs and seint' Maries eke 480
 That' þe out' of prison beggeþ or borowe
 And euer worþ him wel þat' doþ þe moche sorowe
 After þat' Abbot' þan speke anoþere
 I wold' þine hede were of þough þou were my broþere 484
 Aþ þat' þe borowe foule mot' hem falle
 Thus þei seiden alle þat' were in þe halle
 ¶ Than seide a Priour/ euel mote he preue
 It' is grete sorowe and care boy þat' þou art alyue 488

Ow seide Gamelyn so brouke I my bone
 Now haue I spied þat' frendes haue I non
 Cursed mote he worþ. boþ flessĥ and blood
 þat' euer doþ Priour or Abbot' eny good 492
 Adam þe Spencere toke vp þe cloþĥ
 And loked on Gamelyn and segh þat' he was wroþe
 Adam on the Pantry litel he þouzt'
 And two good staues to þe halle door he brouzt' 496
 Adam loked on Gamelyn and he was warre anon [leaf 69]
 And cast' away þe fetters *and* bygan to goñ
 Whan he come to Adam he toke þat' on staf
 And bygan to worĥ and good strokes 3af 500
 Gamelyn come into þe halle and þe Spencer' boþe
 And loked hem aboute as þei hadden be wroþe
 Gamelyn spreynep holy watere wiþ an oken spire
 That' some þat' stode vprizt' felle in þe fire 504
 þer was no lewe man þat' in þe halle stode
 þat' wolde do Gamelyn eny þing' but' good
 But' stoden bisides and lete hem boþ wirĥ
 ffor þei had no rewþe of men of holy churchĥ 508
 Abbot' or Priour' monk or chanoun
 That' Gamelyn ouertoke. anon þei 3eden down
 Ther was noon of alle þat' with his staf mette
 þat' he ne made hem ouer-þrowe to quyte hem his dette
 Gamelyn seide Adam for seint' charite 513
 Pay good lyuere for þe loue of me
 And I wil kepe þe door so euere here I masse
 Er þei bene assoilled þer shal non passe 516
 Doute þe not' seide Gamelyn whil we ben *in* fere
 Kepe þowe wel þe door and I wil wirche here
 Bystere þe good adam and lete non fle
 And we shul telle largely how mony þat þer be 520
 Gamelyn seide Adam do hem but' goode
 þei bene men of holy churchĥ drowe of hem no blode
 Saue wel þe crownes. and do hem no harmes
 But' breke boþ her logges/ and sipen her armes 524

Thus Gamelyn and Adam wrou3t ry3t fast
 And pleide wiþ þe monkes and made hem agast
 þidere þei come ridinge Ioly wiþ swaynes
 And home azein þei were ladde *in cartes and waynes* 528
 Tho þei hadden al ydo. þan seide a grey frere
 Allas Sir' abbot' what' did we nowe here
 Whan þat' we *commen* hidere it' was a cold' rede
 Vs had be bet' haue be at' home . *with water and brede* 532
 While Gamelyñ made orders of monke *and frere* [leaf 69, back]
 Euere stood his broþer and made foule chere
 Gamelyn vp wiþ his staf þat' he wel knewe
 And girt' hym in þe nek þat' he ouer thrwe 536
 A litel aboute þe Girdel þe Rigge-boon he brast
 And sette him in þe fetters þer he sat' arst'
 Sitte þer broþer seide Gamelyñ
 fforto colen þi body/ as I did myñ 540
 As swith as þei had wroken hem on her fooñ
 þei asked water and wasshen anoñ
 What' some for her loue and some for her Awe
 Añ þe seruantes serued hem on þe best' lawe 544
 þe Sherreue was þennes but .v. myle
 And añ was tolde him in a lytel while
 Howe Gamelyn and Adam had ydo a sorye rees
 Bounden and wounded men azeinst þe kingges pees/ 548
 Tho bygan sone strif' for to wake
 And þe shereff about' Gamelyn forto take
 ¶ Now liþen and listen so god zeue zou good fyne
 And ye shul here good game of yonge Gamelyne 552
 xxiiij^{ti} zonge men þat' helde hem ful bold'
 Come to þe shiref and seide þat' þei wold'
 Gamelyn and Adam fette by her fay
 The Sheref 3aue hem leue soþ for to say 556
 Thei hiden fast' wold þei not' lynne
 To þei come to þe gate þere Gamelyn was Inne
 Thei knocked on þe gate þe porter was ny3e
 And loked out' att' an hool as man þat' was sele3e 560

þe Porter had bihold hem a litel while
 He loued wel Gamelyn and was dradde of gyle
 And lete þe wikett' stonde ful stille
 And asked hem wiþ out' what' was her wille 564
 ffor aft' þe grete company/ speke but oõn
 Vndo þe gate porter and lat' vs in goñ
 þan seide þe Porter so brouke I my chyn
 3e shul saie 3oure erand er 3e come Inne 568
 Sey to Gamelyn and Adam/ if þeire wil be [leaf 70]
 We wil speke wiþ hem two wordes or þre
 ffelawe seide þe Porter stonde þer stille
 And I wil wende to Gamelyn to wete his wille 572
 Inne went' þe porter to Gamelyn anõn
 And saide sir' I warne 3ou here ben *commen* 3our' fooñ
 The Shireues men bene at' þe gate
 fforto take 3ou boþ 3e shul not' scape 576
 Porter seide Gamelyn so mote I þe
 I wil alowe þi wordes whan I my tyme se
 Go ageyn to þe gate and dwelle wiþ *hem* a while
 And þou shalt' se ri3t' sone porter a gile 580
 Adam seide gamelyn hast' þe to goñ
 We han foo-men mony and frendes neuere oñ
 It' bene þe shireues men þat' hider bene *commen*
 þei ben swore to-gidere þat' we shal be *nomen* 584
 Gamelyn seide Adam hye þe ri3t' blyve
 And if I faile þe þis day euel mot' I þriue
 And we shul so welcome þe shyreues men
 þat' some of hem shal make her beddes in þe fenne 588
 At' a postern gate Gamelyn out' went'
 And a good Cartstaf in his hondes hent'
 Adam hent' sone anoþer grete staff
 ffor to helpen Gamelyne and good strokes 3af 592
 Adam felled tweyn and Gamelyn þre
 þe oþer sette fete on erþe and bygan to flee
 What' seide Adam so euere here I masse
 I haue ri3t' good wyne drynk er 3e passe 596

Nay by god seide þei þi drink is not goode
 It wolde make a mannys brayn to lyen on his hode
 Gamelyn stode stille and loked hym aboute
 And seide þe Shyref commep wiþ a grete route 600
 Adam seide Gamelyn what bene nowe þi redes
 Here commep þe sheref and wil haue *our* hedes
 Adam seide to Gamelyn my rede is now þis
 Abide we no lenger lest we fare amys 604
 I rede we to wode goñ/ er we be founde [leaf 70, back]
 Better is þer louse þan in þe toune bounde
 Adam toke by þe honde yonge Gamelyn
 And euery of hem dronke a drauþt of wyñ 608
 And after token he cours and wenten her way
 T[h]o fonde þe Shyrreue nyst but non aye
 ¶ The Shirreue lizt/ doune and went into halle
 And fonde þe lord fetred fast wiþ alle 612
 The Schirreue vnfetred hym rizt sone anoñ
 And sent aftere a leche to hele his rigge-boñ
 Lat we nowe þe fals knyzt lye in his care
 And talke we of Gamelyn . and of his fare 616
 Gamelyn into þe wode stalked stille
 And Adam Spensere liked rizt ille
 Adam swore to Gamelyn by seint Richere
 Nowe I see it is mery to be a spencere 620
 3it leuer me were kayes to bere
 þan walken in þis wilde wode my cloþes to tere
 Adam seide Gamelyn dismay þe rizt nouzt
 Mony good mannys child in care is brouzt 624
 As þei stode talkinge boþen in fere
 Adam herð talking of men. *and* rizt nygh hem þei were
 Tho Gamelyn vnder wode loked arizt
 vij^{xx}. of zonge men he seye wel ydizt 628
 Alle satte at þe mete compas about
 Adam seide Gamelyn now haue I no dout
 Aftere bale commep bote þorgh goddis myzt
 Me þink of mete and drynk I haue a sizt 632

Adam loked þoo vnder wode bough	
And whan he segħ mete was glad ynogh	
ffor he hoped to god to haue his dele	
And he was sore alonged after a mele	636
As he seide þat worde þe mayster outlawe	
Saugħ Adam and gamelyn vnder þe wode shawe	
ʒonge men seide þe maistere by þe good rode	
I am ware of gestic . god sende vs goode	640
ʒone ben twoo ʒonge men wel ydight	[leaf 71]
And paraventure þer ben mo who so loked riʒt	
A-riseþ vp ʒonge men and fette hem to me	
It is good þat we weten what men þei be	644
Vp þer sterten .vij. from þe dynere	
And metten wiþ Gamelyn and Adam Spencer	
Whan þei were nyghe hem þan seide þat oon	
ʒeeldeþ vp ʒonge men ʒour bowes and ʒour floon	648
þan seide Gamelyn þat ʒongt was/ of// elde	
Moche sorowe mote þei haue þat to ʒou hem ʒelde	
I Curs noon oþere but right my silue	
þoo ʒe fette to ʒou .v. þan be ʒe twelue	652
Whan þei hard by his word þat myʒt was in his arme	
Ther was noon of hem þat wold do hym harme	
But seide to Gamelyn myldely <i>and stille</i>	
Comeþ a-fore our Maister and seiþ to hym ʒour wille	656
ʒonge men seide Gamelyn be ʒour lewte	
What man is ʒour maister þat ʒe wiþ be	
Alle þei answerd wiþ out lesing	
Our maister is crowned of outlawe king	660
Adam seide Gamelyn go we in <i>cristes name</i>	
He may neiþer mete ne drink warne vs for shame	
If þat he be hende and come of gentil blood	
He wil ʒeue vs mete and drink and do us som gode	664
By seint Iame seide Adam what harme þat I gete	
I wil auenture me þat I had mete	
Gamelyn and Adam went forth in fere	
And þei grette þe Maister þat þei fond þere	668

Than seide þe Maister king^t of outlawes
 What^t seche 3e 3onge men vnder þe wode shawes
 Gamelyn answerd þe king^t *with* his croun
 He most^t nedes walk^t in feeld^t þat^t may not^t in toun 672
 Sire we walk not^t here no harme to doo
 But^t 3if we mete a dere to shete *þerto*
 As men þat^t bene hungry *and* mow no mete fynde
 And beñ hard^t bystad^t vnder wode lynde 676
 Of Gamelyns wordes / þ^e maister had reuþe [leaf 71, back]
 And seide 3e shul haue ynow haue god my treuth
 He bad hem sitte down forto take rest^t
 And bad hem ete and drink^t and þat^t of þe best^t 680
 As þei eten and dronken wel and fyne
 þan seide on to anoþer. þis is Gamelyñ
 þo was þe Maistere outlawe into counseile nome
 And tolde howe it^t was Gamelyn þat^t þider was come 684
 Anon as he herd^t how it^t was byfalle
 He made him maister^t vnder hym ouer hem alle
*Wit*Inne þe iij. weke hym come tydinge
 To þe Maistere outlawe þat^t was her kinge 688
 þat^t he shuld come home his pees was made
 And of þat^t good tydinge he was ful glade
 þoo seide he to his 3onge men soþ forto telle
 Me bene comen tydinges ! I may no lenger dwelle 692
 Tho was Gamelyn anoon wiþ out^t taryinge
 Made maister^t outlawe and crowned her kinge
 Whan Gamelyn was crowned king^t of outlawes
 And walked had a while vnder þe wode shawes/ 696
 þe fals kny3t^t bis broþer was sherif *and* sire
 And lete his broþere endite for hate *and* for ire
 þoo were his boond-men sory ! *and* no þing^t glade
 Whan Gamelyn her lord / wolfes hede was *cried and* made
 And sent^t out^t of his men wher þei my3t^t hym fynde
 ffor to go seke Gamelyñ vnder þe wode lynde
 To telle hym tyding^t þe wynde was wente
 And al his good reued and al his men shent^t 704

Whan þei had hym founden on knees þei hem setten
 And adoune *with* her hodes and her lord gretten
 Sir' wreth 3ou not' for þe good rode
 ffor we han brouzt' 3ou tydyngges but' þei be not' gode 708
 Nowe is þi broþer Sherreue *and* hap þe bayly
 And hap endited þe / and wolfes hede doþ þe crye
 Allas seide Gamelyn þat' euere I was so slak
 þat' I ne had broke his nek whan I his rigge brak' 712
 God greteþ wel myn husbondes and wif [leaf 72]
 I wil be at' þe next' shyre haue god my lif
 Gamelyn come redy to þe next' shire
 And þer was his broþer boþ lord and sire 716
 Gamelyn boldely come into þe mote halle
 And putt' a doun his hode / amonge þo lordes alle
 God saue 3ou lordings þat' here be
 But' broke-bak sherreue euel mote þou þee 720
 Whi hast þou doñ me þat' shame and vilonye
 fforto lat' endite me / and wolfeshede do me crye
 þoo þouzt' þe fals knyzt' forto bene awreke
 And lette Gamelyn most' he no þing' speke 724
 Might' þer be no grace. but' Gamelyn atte last'
 Was cast' in prison and fettred fast'
 ¶ Gamelyn hap a broþere þat' hi3t' sir Ote
 Als good an knyght' and hende as myzt' goñ on fote 728
 Anoon 3ede a massager' to þat' good knyzt'
 And tolde him al to-gidere how gamelyn was dizt'
 Anoon whan sir' ote herd howe Gamelyn was dizt'
 He was rizt' sory and no þing' lizt' 732
 And lete sadel a stede and þe way namme
 And to his tweyne broþeren rizt' sone he camme
 Sir' seide Sir' Ote to þe sherreue þoo
 We bene but' þre broþeren shul we neuere be mo 736
 And þou hast' prisoned þe best of vs alle
 Such' anopere broþer euel mote hym byfalle
 Sir' Ote seide þe false knyght' lat' be þi cors
 By god for þi wordes he shal fare þe wors 740

To þe kingges *prison* he is ynome
 And þer he shal abide to þe Iustise come
 Parde Seide Sir' Ote better it' shal be
 I bid hym to maynprise þat þou graunte me 744
 To þe next' sitting' of delyueraunce
 And lat' þan Gamelyn stonde to his chaunce
 Broþere in such a forward' I take hym to þe
 And by þ^e fader soule þat' þe bigate *and* me 748
 But' he be redy whan þe Iustice sitte [leaf 72, back]
 þou shalt' bere þe Iuggement' for al þi grete witte
 I graunte wel seide Sir' Ote þat' it' so be
 Lat' delyuere hym anoon and take hym to me 752
 Tho was gamelyn delyuered to Sir' ote his broþer'
 And þat' nyght' dwelled þe ooñ wiþ þe oþer'
 On the morowe seide Gamelyn to Sir' Ote þe hende
 Broþer he seide I mote forsop from 30ⁿ wende 756
 To loke howe my 3onge men leden her liff
 Whedere þei lyuen in Ioie or ellis in striff
 By god seide Sir' ote þat' is a colde rede
 Nowe I se þat' alle þe Carke shal fal on my hede 760
 ffor whan þe Iustise sitte and þou be not' yfound'
 I shal anoon be take and in þi stede I-bound'
 Broþer seide Gamelyn dismay 3ou nou3t'
 ffor by seint Iame in Gales þat' mony men haþ sou3t' 764
 3if that god almy3ty holde my lif and witte
 I wil be redy whan þe Iustice sitte
 Than seide sire Ote to gamelyn god shilde þ^e from shame
 Come whan þou seest' tyme and bring' vs out' of blame 768
 ¶ Liþeneþ and listeneþ and holde 3ou stille
 And 3e shul here howe Gamelyn had al his wille
 Gamelyn went' vnder þe wode Ris
 And fonde þer pleyng' 3eng' men of *pris* 772
 þo was 3ong' gamelyn ri3t' glad ynou3e
 Whan he fonde his men vnder wode bou3e
 Gamelyn and his men talkeden in fere
 And þei had good game her maister to here 776

His men tolde him of *auentures* þat þei had found
 And Gamelyn tolde hem aȝein howe he was fast bounde
 While Gamelyn was outlawe had he no cors
 þer was no man þat for him ferde þe wors 780
 But *Abbottes and Priours* monk and chanone
 On hem left he nouȝt whan he myȝt hem nome
 While Gamelyn and his men made merþes ryve
 þe fals knyght his broþer euel mot he thryve 784
 ffor he was fast about boþ day and oþer
 ffor to hiren þe quest to hongen his broþer
 Gamelyn stode on a day and byheeld
 þe wodes and þe Shawes and þe wild feelde 788
 He þouȝt on his broþere how he hym byhette
 þat he wold be redy whan þe Iustice sette
 He þouȝt wel he wold wiþ-out delay
 Come to-fore þe Iustice to kepen his day 792
 And saide to his ȝonge men dighteþ ȝou ȝare
 ffor whan þe Iustice sitte we most be þare
 ffor I am vnder borowe til þat I come
 And my broþer for me to *prison* shal be nome 796
 Be seint Iame seide his ȝonge men and þou rede þerto
 Ordeyn how it shal be and it shal be do
 While Gamelyn was *commynge* þer þe Iustice satte
 þe fals knyȝt his broþer forȝate he not þat 800
 To hire þe men of þe quest to hangen his broþer
 þouȝe þei had not þat oon þei wold haue þat oþer
 Tho come Gamelyn from vnder þe wode Ris
 And brouȝt with hym ȝonge men of pris 804
 I see wel seide Gamelyn þe Iustise is sette
 Go a-forȝ adam and loke how it spette
 Adam went into þe halle *and* loked al aboute
 He segȝ þer stonde lordes grete *and* stoute 808
 And Sire Ote his broþer fetred ful fast
 þoo went Adam out of halle as he were a-gast
 Adam seide to Gamelyn and to his felawes aft
 Sire Ote stout fetered in þe mote half 812

[.	
.	<i>no gap in the MS.]</i>
If gode zeue vs grace wel forto doo	
He shal it abigge þat it brouzt þerto /	816
þan seide Adam þat lockes had hore	
Cristes curs mote he haue þat hym bonde so sore	
And þou wilt Gamelyn do after my rede	
þer is noon in þe halle shal bere away his hede	820
Adam seide Gamelyn we wil not do soo	
We wil slee þe giltif and lat þe oþere goo/	
I wil into þe halle and with þe Iustice speke	[leaf 73, back]
Of hem þat bene giltif I wil ben awreke	824
Late no skape at þe door take 3onge men zeme	
ffor I wil be Iustise þis day domes to deme	
God spede me þis day at my newe werkt	
Adam come with me for þou shalt be my clerk	828
His men answerde hym. and bad done his best	
And if þou to vs haue nede þou shalt finde vs prest	
We wil stonde wiþ þe while þat we may dure	
And but we worchen manly pay vs none hure	832
3onge men said Gamelyn so mote I wel þe	
A trusty maister ze shul fynde me	
Rizt þere þe Iustise satte in þe halle	
Inne went Gamelyn amonges hem alle	836
Gamelyn lete vnfetter his broþer out of bende	
þan seide Sir Ote his broþer þat was hende	
þow haddest almost Gamelyn dwelled to longe	
ffor þe quest is out on me þat I shuld honge	840
Broþer seide Gamelyn so god zeue me good rest	
þis day shul þei be honged / þat ben on þe quest	
And þe Iustise boþ þat is þe Iuge man	
And þe Sherreue also. þorgh hym it bigan	844
Than seide Gamelyn to þe Iustice	
Now is þi power done. þe most nedes rise	
þow hast zeuen domes þat bene euel dizt	
I wil sitten in þi sete and dresen/ hem arizt	848

The Iustise satte stille and roos not anone
 And Gamelyn cleued his cheke bone
 Gamelyn toke him in his armes *and* no more spake
 But threwe hym ouer þe barre and his arme brake 852
 Dorst' noon to Gamelyn seie but' good'
 ffor feerd of þe company þat *with-out* stooðe
 Gamelyn sette hym down in þe Iustise sete
 And Sire Ote his broþere by hym. and Adam at' his fete
 Whan gamelyn was sette in þe Iustise sede
 Herken of a bourde þat' Gamelyn dede
 He lete fetter þe Iustise and his fals broþere [leaf 74]
 And did hem come to þe barre þat' on *with* þat' oþere 860
 Whan gamelyn had þus ydone had he no rest'
 Til he had enquered who was on his quest'
 fforto demen his broþer sire Ote forto honge
 Er he wist' what' þei were hym þouzt' ful longe 864
 But' as sone as Gamelyn wist' where þei were
 He did hem euerechone fetter in fere
 And bringgen hem to þe barre & setten in rewe
 By my feiþ seide þe Iustise þe sherrue is a shrewe 868
 þan seide Gamelyn to þe Iustise
 þou hast' 3oue domes of þe worst assise
 And þe xij. Sesoures þat' weren on þe quest'
 þei shul be honged þis day so haue I good rest' 872
 Than seide þe sheref to 3onge Gamelyn
 Lord I crie þe mercie broþer art' þou myñ
 þerfor seide Gamelyn haue þou *cristes* curs
 ffor and þow were maister. I shuld' haue wors 876
 fforto make short' tale and not' to longe
 He ordeyned hym a quest' of his men stronge
 þe Iustise and þe Sirreue boþ honged hie
 To weyuen wiþ þe ropes and þe winde drye 880
 And þe xij. Sisours sorowe haue þat' rekke
 All þei were honged fast' by þe nekke
 þus endeþ þe fals knyzt' wiþ his trecherye
 þat' euere had lad his lif in falsnesse *and* folye 884

He was honged by þe nek and not by þe purs
 þat was þe mede þat he had for his faders curs
 Sire Otes was eldest and Gamelyn was 3enge
 Wenten to her frendes / and passed to þe kinge 888
 þei maden pees wiþ þe king of þe best sise
 þe king loued wel sir Ote & made hym iustise
 And after þe king made Gamelyn in est *and in west*
 þe cheef Iustice of his free forest 892
 All his wizt 3onge men þe king forgaf her gilt
 And siþen in good office þe king haþ hem pilt
 Thus wanne Gamelyn his land and his lede
 And wreke him on his enemyes . *and quytte hem her mede*
 And Sire Ote his broþer made him his heire
 And Siþen wedded gamelyn a wif good and faire
 They lyued to-gidere þe while þat crist wold
 And siþen was Gamelyn grauen vnder mold 900
 And so shul we all : may þer no man fle
 God bring vs to þat Ioye þat euer shal be
here endeþ þe tale of þe Coke.)

*[The Prologue and Tale of the Shipman follow, without
 any break in the MS.]*

¶ **And** *[on leaf 74, back]*

Thus gyneþ þe prologe of þe shipman

N owe frendes seide our hoost ^t so dere	¶ The Prologe.
How likeþ 3ou by Iohñ þe pardonere	
ffor he haþ vnbokeled wel þe male	
He haþ vs tolde riȝt ^t a thrifty tale	4
As touching ^t of mys <u>g</u> ouernaunce	
I prey to god 3eue hym good chaunche	
As 3e han herd of þise retourres þre	
Now gentil Marynere hertely I preye þe	8
Telle vs a good tale and þat ^t riȝt anoñ	
It ^t shal be done by god & by seint ^t Iohñ	
Seide þis marinere as wel as euer I can	
And riȝt anoon his tale he bygan .	12

¶ **Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe shipman.**

[No gap in the MS.]

GROUP B. (β. FRAGMENT III.)

§ 4. THE SHIPMAN'S TALE.

And here bygynneþ þe shipman tale

[on leaf 74, back]

A Marchaunt' whilom dwelled in seynt' denys
 þat' riche was for which men held hym wys
 A wif he had of excellent' bewte
 And companable and reuerent' was she
 Which is a þing' þat' causeþ more dispence
 þan worþ is al þe chere and reuerence 1196
 þat' men hem done at' feestes and at' daunces
 such salutations and countenaunces
 Passeþ as doþ þe shadowe vpon a waht
 But' woo is hym þat' payen mote for aht 1200
 The Sely husbond' algate he mot' paye
 He mote vs cloþe and vs aray
 ffor his owne worship richely [leaf 75]
 In which aray we dauncen Iolily 1204
 And if þat' he may not' peraventure
 Or ellis list noon such spence endure
 But' þenkeþ þat' it' is waast' and ylost'
 þan mote anoþer paien for þe cost' 1208
 Or lene vs gold and þat' is perilous
 This noble marchaunt' helde a noble hous
 ffor which he had alday grete repayre
 ffor his largesse and for his wif was faire 1212
 þat' wonder is but' herkenep to my tale
 Amonge aht his gestis. grete and smale
 Ther was a monk a faire man and a bold'
 I trowe xxx^{ti}. wynter he was olde 1216
 That' euer in oon was drowing' to þat' place
 þis yonge monk þat' was so faire of face

- Aqueynted was so wiþ þat' good man
 [. 1220

 *no gap in the MS.*]
- And eke þis monke of' which I byganne 1224
 Were boþ twoo yborn in oo vilage
 þe monke hym cleymed as for cosynage
 And he azein seiþ not' ones nay
 But' was as glad þerof as foule of day 1228
 ffor to his hert' it' was a grete plesañce
 Thus bene þei knyut' wiþ eterne aliance
 And eche of hem gan oþer ensure
 Of breþerode þe whiles her lif' may dure 1232
 ffree was dañ Iohn and namely of dispence
 As in þat' hous and ful of diligence
 To do plesaunce and also grete costage
 He forʒate not' to zeue þe lest' page 1236
 In alle þat' hous but' after her degre
 He ʒaue þe lord' and siþen his Mayne
 Whan þat' he came some maner honest þing
 ffor which þei were as glad of his commyng' 1240
 As foule is fayne whan þe sonne vpriseth
 No more herof as nowe for þis suffiseþ
 But' so byfelle þis marchaunt' on a day
 Shope hym to make redy his aray [leat 75, back]
 Towarde þe toune of Brugges for to fare
 To byen þer a porcioun of ware
 ffor which he haþ to Paris sent' anōn
 A massagere and preied haþ dañ Iohn 1248
 þat' he shuld come to seynt' denys to pleyn
 Wiþ hym and wiþ his wif a day or tweyn
 Or he to brugges went' in al wise
 This noble monk of which I ʒou devise 1252
 Haþ of his abbot' as hym list' licence
 Bycause he was a man of high prudence

And eke an officere out ^t forto ride	
To seen her graunges and her beernes wide	1256
And vnto seint denys he <i>commeþ</i> anoñ	
Who was so welcome as my lord ^t dañ Iohñ	
Our dere cosyn ful of curtesie	
<i>With</i> him brouz ^t he a Iubbe of Maluesie	1260
And eke anoþer ful of fyñe vernage	
As volatile as ay was his his vsage	
And þus I lat ^t hem .ete. boþ drink ^t <i>and</i> playe	
This merchaunt ^t and þis monk a day or twaye	1264
The .iiij. day þis Marchaunte vp ariseþ	
And on his nede sadly hym avisethñ	
And vp into his counter hous goþ he	
To rekne wiþ him self as wel may be	1268
Of þilk 3ere hou þat ^t it ^t wiþ hym stode	
And how he despended had his good	
And 3if þat ^t he encesed were or noñ	
His bokes and his bagges mony oñ	1272
He leip to-fore him on his countyng ^t boord ^t	
fful riche was his tresour and his hord ^t	
ffor whiche ful fast ^t his counter door he shette	
And eke he nold ^t þat ^t no man shuld ^t hym lette	1276
Of his acomptes for þe mene tyme	
And þus he sitte til it ^t was passed <i>pr</i> ime	
Dan Iohñ was risen in þe morowe also	
And in þe Gardyne walked to and fro	1280
And haþ his þingges seide ful curteisly	[leaf 76]
This good wif come walking ^t prively	
Into þe Gardyne þer he walked soft ^t	
And hym saluethñ as he haþ doñ ful oft ^t	1284
A mayden childe cam in her companye	
Which as hure lust ^t she may gouern and gye	
ffor 3it ^t vndere þe 3eerd was þe mayde	
O deer Cosyn myn dañ Iohñ she seide	1288
What ^t eileþ 3ou so rathe to arise	
Nece <i>quod</i> he it ^t auz ^t ynoughñ suffise	

V. houres forto slepe vpon a nyȝt
 But it were for an olde palled wiȝt 1292
 As ben þise wedded men þat lye *and* dare
 As in a forme sitte a wery hare
 Were al for-straught wiȝ houndes grete *and* smale
 But dere nece whi beñ ȝe so pale 1296
 I trowe certes þat oure good man
 Haȝ ȝow labored siȝ þe nyght bygan
 That ȝou were nede to resten hastely
 And wiȝ þat word he lough ful merely 1300
 And of his owne þouȝt he wex al rede
 This faire wif gan to shake her hede
 And seide þus / ȝe god wote al quod she
 Nay Cosin myne it stont not so wiȝ me 1304
 ffor by þat god þat ȝaue me saule *and* lif
 In aȝ þe rewme of fraunce is þer no wif
 þat lasse lust haȝ to do þat sorie play
 for I may syngen alas and wele away 1308
 That I was born but no wiȝt quod she
 I dar not tellen how it stant wiȝ me
 werfore I þenk out of þis lond to wende
 Or ellis of my self to make an ende 1312
 So ful I am of drede and eke of care
 þis monk bygan vpon þis wif to stare
 A saide alas nay nece god forbede
 þat ȝe for eny sorowe or eny drede 1316
 fforto ȝoure self but telleȝ me ȝour greef [leaf 76, back]
 Perauenture I may in ȝoure meschief
 Conseile or helpe *and* þerfor telleȝ me
 Alle ȝour avis for it shal be secre 1320
 ffor on my portoos I make an oȝe
 þat neuere in my lif for leef ne loȝe
 Ne shal I of no counsaile ȝou by-wrey
 þe same aȝein to ȝou quod she I seie 1324
 By god and by þis portoos I swere
 þei men me wold al into peces tere

160 GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Ne shal I neuer forto goo to helle
 Bywrey a word^l of þing^t þat^t 3e me telle 1328
 Nou3^t for no cosinage ne alliance
 But^t verrely for loue *and* affiance
 Thus bene þei sworn and here vpon kist^t
 And eche of hem told^l oþer what^t hem list^t 1332
 Cosyn quod she if I had a space
 As I haue non namely in þis place
 þan wold I tellen a legend^l of my lif^t
 þat^t I suffred haue siþ I was a wif^t 1336
With myn husbond^l al þough^h he be 3our cosyñ
 Nay quod þis monke by god & by seint^t Martyn
 He nys no more Cosyn vnto me
 þan is þis leef^t þat^t hongep on þe tree 1340
 I clepe hym so by seint^t denys in ffrance
 To haue þe more cause of a-queyntaunce
 Of 3owe þe which I haue loued specialy
 A-bouen al wommen sikerly 1344
 þis swere I 3ou on my professioun
 Telleþ 3our greef lest^t he come adoun
 And hastep 3ou and goop 3oure way anofñ
 My dere loue quod she o dañ Iohn 1348
 fful leef me were þis counsaile to hide
 But out^t it^t mote / it^t may no lengere bide
 My husbond is to me þe worst^t man
 þat^t euer was siþ þis world^l bygan 1352
 But^t siþen I am a wif it^t sitte not^t to me [leaf 77]
 To telle no wight^t of our priuete
 Neiper in bedde ne in noon oþer place
 God shild^l I shuld telle it^t for his grace 1356
 A wif ne shuld not^t seye of her husbond^t
 But^t al honure as I can vnderstonde
 Saue vnto 3ou þus moche telle I shal
 As helpe me god he nys not^t worþ at^t al 1360
 In no degre þe valewe of a flee
 But^t 3it^t me greueþ most^t his nygarde

And wel 3e wote þat' wommen naturelly
 desiren þingges . sex as wel as I. 1364
 þei wolden þat' her husbond' shuld' be
 Hardy and wise . riche *and* þerto free
 And boxom to his wif and fressh' abedde
 But' by þat' ilk lord þat' for vs bledde 1368
 ffor his honoure my self to aray
 A sonday next' I mote pay
 An C. frankes or ellis am I lorñ
 3it' were me leuere þat' I were vnborñ 1372
 þan me were done a sclauder or vilanye
 And if myn husbonde eke my3t' espie
 I nere but' lost and þerfor I 3ou prey
 lene me þis somme and ellis mote I dey 1376
 Danne Iohñ I seie lene me þise hundred frankes
 Parde I wold' not' faile þe my þonkes
 If þat' 3ou lust to do þat' I 3ou pray
 ffor a certeyn day I wil 3ow pay 1380
 And to do 3ou what' plesaunce *and* seruyse
 þat' I may do right as 3ou list' devise
 And but' I do god take on me vengeance
 As foule as had genyloñ of ffraunce 1384
 This gentil monke answerd' in þis manere
 Nowe trewly myn owne lady dere
 I haue quod he on 3ow so grete a rouþe
 þat' I 3owe swere *and* plizt' 3ou my trouþe 1388
 That' whan 3oure husbonde is to fflaundes fare [leaf 77, back]
 I wil delyuere 3owe out' of þis worldes care
 I wil bringen 3ou an C. frankes
 And wiþ þat' he kaught' hure by þe shankes 1392
 And hire enbrased harde and kissed oft'
 Goþ now 3oure way quod he al stille *and* soft'
 And lat' vs dyne as sone as euere 3e may
 ffor by my children it is prime of day 1396
 Goþ nowe and beþ as trewe as I shal be
 Nowe ellis god forbede sire quod she

162 GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And forþ she gooþ as Ielous as a pye
 And had þe Cokes þat þei shuld hem hie 1400
 So þat men myzt dyne and þat anoñ
 Vp to her husbond is þis wif goñ
 And knobkeþ at his counter boldely
 Quy la quod he . Peter it am I 1404
 Quod she what howe longe wol 3e fast
 How longe tyme wil 3e rekken *and* cast
 3oure *sommes* 3oure bokes *and* 3oure þingges
 þe deuel haue part on al suche rekenyngges 1408
 3e han ynogh *parde* of goddes sonde
 Come doune to day and lat 3oure bagge stonde
 Ne be 3e not ashamed þat dan Iohñ
 Shal fasting al þis day elenge goñ 1412
 What lat vs here masse and go dyne
 Wiff quod þis man litel canst þou devyne
 þe Curious bysynes þat we haue
 ffor of vs Chapmen so god me saue 1416
 And by þat lord þat called is seint yve
 Scarcely amonges .xij. tweyn shul þriue
 Contynuely lasting vnto our age
 We may wel make chere and good visage 1420
 And drive forþ þe world as it may be
 And kepen our astate in *pruete*
 Til we be dede or ellis þat we pleye
 A pilgrymage or gon out of þe weye 1424
 And *perfor* haue I grete necessite [leaf 78]
 Vpon þis queynt world to avise me
 ffor euermore we mote stonde in drede
 Of happe and fortune in our chapmanhede 1428
 To fflaundes wil I goo to morowe at day
 And come azein as sone as euere I may
 ffor which my dere wif I þe biseke
 As be to euery wight buxom *and* meke 1432
 And forto kepe our good be Curious
 And honestly gouerne wel oure hous

Thow hast' nowe in euery maner wise
 þat' to a þrifty husbonde may suffise 1436
 þe lackeþ noon araye ne no vitaile
 Of siluere in þi purs þou maist' not' faile
 And wiþ þat' worde his counter door he shette
 And doune he goþ no lenger nold' he lette 1440
 And hastely a masse was þere saide
 And spedely þe tables were ylade
 And to þe dyner fast' þei hem spedde
 And richely þis monke þe chapman fedde 1444
 And after dynere daun Iohn soberly
 This Chapman toke a-part' al priuely
 he seide him þus Cosyn it' stondeþ soo
 þat' wel I see to brugges 3e wil goo 1448
 God and seint' Austyn speke 3ou and gide
 I prei 3ou Cosyn wisly þat' 3e ride
 Gouverneþ 3ou also of 3oure diete
 And temperaly and namely in þis hete 1452
 Bitwix vs twey nedeþ no stronge fare
 ffare wel Cosyn god kepe 3ou fro care
 3if eny þinge þer be by day or by nyȝt'
 If it' ligge in my power and in my myȝt' 1456
 þat' 3e me wil commaunde in ony wise
 It' shal be doñ riȝt' as 3e wil devise
 Oon þing' er þat' 3e goñ if þat' 3it may be
 I wold' prei 3ou forto lene me 1460
 An C frankes for a weke or twey
 ffor certeyn beestes I mot' beye
 To store wiþ a place þat' is owres [leaf 78, back]
 God helpe me so I wolde it' were 3oures 1464
 I shal not' faile swerly of my day
 Nouȝt' for a Ml. frankes a myleway
 But' lat' þis þinge be secre I 3ou prey
 And god of heuene spede 3ou in 3oure weye 1468
 And fare nowe wele myn owne cosyn dere
 Graunt' mercy of 3oure cost' & of 3oure chere

This noble Merchaunt' gentely anoñ
 Answerde and seide . O cosyn dañ Iohñ 1472
 Nowe sikerly þis is a smal request'
 My golt' is 3oures whan þat' 3ou lest'
 And not' oonly my gold' but' my chaffare
 Take what' 3ou lest' god shilde þat' 3e spare 1476
 But' oo þinge is 3e knowe it' wel ynogh
 Of Chapmen þat' her money is her plou3e
 We may creaunce while we haue a name
 But' goldelees forto be is no game 1480
 Paye it' a3ein whan it' lith in 3oure ese
 Aftere 3oure myzt' fayn wold' I 3ou plese
 These hundred ffrankes he fette forþ anoñ
 And priuely he toke it' to dañ Iohñ 1484
 No w3t' in al þis world' wist' of þis lone
 Sauyng' þis merchaunt' and dañ Iohñ allone
 þei dronken and romen and goñ to pleye
 Til þat' dañ Iohñ rideþ to his abbay 1488
 þe morn come and forþ þis merchaunte rideþ
 To fflaundes ward' his prentis wel hym gideþ
 Til he came into brugges merely
 Now goþ þis merchaunt' fast' and bisily 1492
 Aboute his nede and bieþ and creaunseþ
 He neiþer pleieþ at þe dis ne daunseþ
 But' as a merchaunt' shortely forto telle
 he lad his lif and þer I lete hym dwelle 1496
 ¶ The sonday next' þe merchaunt' was a-goñ
 To seynt Denys y-commen is dañ Iohñ
 Wiþ croune and berde fressh and newe yshaue
 In al þe hous þer nas so lite a knaue [leaf 79]
 Ne no w3t' ellis þat' he nas fayñ
 ffor þat' my lord daun Iohñ was come a3ayñ
 And shortely to her poynt' forto goñ
 This faire wif acordeþ to daun Iohñ 1504
 And for þise hundred frankes he shuld al nyzt'
 Haue her in his armes bolt' vprizt'

- And þis acorde *perfourmed* was in dede
 In myrth̄ al nyȝt̄ a bysy lif þei lede 1508
 Til it̄ was day þat̄ dañ Iohñ went̄ his way
 And bad þe mayne fare wele and haue good day
 ffor noon of hem ne no wiȝt̄ in þe toun
 Han of dañ Iohñ none suspecioun 1512
 And forþ he rideþ home to his abbaye
 Or wher hym lust̄ no more of hym I saie
 ¶ This marchaunt̄ whan þat̄ ended was þe fare
 To seint̄ Denys he gan forto repare 1516
 And wiþ his wif he makeþ feest̄ *and* chere
 And telleþ her þat̄ chaffare is so dere
 þat̄ nedes most̄ he make a cheuysance
 ffor he was bounden in a reconysañce 1520
 To pay xx^{ti}. þousand̄ sheldes añon
 ffor which̄ þis marchaunt̄ is wont̄ to goñ
 To borowe of certeyñ frendes þat̄ he hadde
 A certeyn ffrankes and somme *with* hym he ladde 1524
 And whan he was come into þe toñ
 ffor greet̄ cheerte and grete affeccoun
 Vnto dañ Iohñ him first̄ he goþ to pley
 Nouȝt̄ for to borowe of hym no money 1528
 But̄ forto witt̄ and see of his welfare
 And for to tellen him of his chaffare
 As frendes done whan þei ben mette in fere
 Dañ Iohñ him makeþ feest̄ *and* mery chere 1532
 And he him told̄ aȝein ful specialy
 Howe he had bouȝt̄ ful wel & *graciously*
 Thonked be god al hole his *merchaundyse*
 Saue þat̄ he most̄ in al manere wise [leaf 79, back] 1536
 Maken a chevisaunce as for his beste
 And þan shuld̄ he be in Ioye *and* reste
 Dañ Iohñ answerd̄ Certes I am fayn
 þat̄ ȝe in hele be *commen* home aȝeyñ 1540
 And if þat̄ I were riche as haue I blisse
 Of xx^{ti} M̄. sheldes shuldest̄ þou not̄ mysse

- ffor 3e so kindely þis oþer day
 Lent me gold and as I can and maye 1544
 I þonke 3ou by god *and* by seint Iame
 But napelees I toke vnto our dame
 3oure wif at home þe same gold a3ein
 Vpon 3oure benche she wote it wel certeyn 1548
 By certeyne tokens þat I can her telle
 Now by 3our leue I may no lenger dwelle
 Our abbot wil out of þis town anoñ
 And in his company I mot goñ 1552
 Grete wele our dame myn owene nece swete
 And fare wele dere cosyn to we mete
 ¶ This Marchaunt wif þat was ful ware *and* wys
 Creaunsed hap and eke paide in Paris 1556
 To certeyn lumbardes redy in her handes
 This some of gold and gate of hem þe bandes /
 And home he goþ mery as a popeniaye
 ffor wel he knewe he stood in such araye 1560
 þat nedes most he wyne in such a viage
 A þousand frankes aboue al his costage
 His wif ful redy mette hym at þe gate
 As she was wont of olde vsage algate 1564
 And all þat nyzt in myrthe þei bysette
 ffor he was riche and cleerly out of dette
 ¶ Whan it was day þis merchaunt gan embrace
 His wif al newe and kissed hir on hir face 1568
 And vp he goþe and makeþ it wonder toogh
 No more quod she by god 3e haue ynogh
 And wāntonly a3ein wif hym she pleide
 Til at þe last þat þis merchaunt seide [leaf 80] 1572
 By god quod he I am a litel wroth
 Wif 3ou my wif al-þo it be me loth
 And wote 3e why by god as þat I gesse
 ffor 3e haue made a manere straungenesse 1576
 Bytwixen me and my cosyn daun Iohn
 3e shuld haue warned me er I had goñ

pat' he had 3ou an hundred fraunkes paide
 By redy token and he hym held' euel paide 1580
 ffor þat' I to him spake of cheuysance
 Me semed so as by his countenañce
 But' nape-lees by god heuen kinge
 I þou3t' not' to axe of hym no þinge 1584
 I prey þe wif ne do no more soo
 Telle me alway er þat' I fro þe goo
 If eny dettour haþ in myn absence
 Ypaide þe lest' þorgh þine negligence 1588
 I my3t' him axe as þing' þat' he haþ paide
 This wif was not' afferd ne affraied .
 Bot' boldely sche seide *and* þat' anoñ
 Mary I diffie þat' fals monk dañ Ioħn . 1592
 I kepe not' of his tokens neuer a dele
 He toke me certeyn gold þis wote I wele
 What' euel thedom on his monkes snoute
 ffor god it' wote I went' wiþ-out' doute 1596
 þat' he had 3oue it' me by cause of 3owe
 To do þer-wiþ myn honure *and* my prowce
 ffor Cosynage and eke for bele chere
 þat' he haþ hadde ful often tyme here 1600
 But' siþen I see I stonde in such' disioynt'
 I wil answere 3ou shortely to þe poynt'
 3e haue moo slakker dettours þan am I
 for I wil pay 3ow wel *and* redely 1604
 ffro day to day *and* if so be I faile
 I am 3oure wif score it' on my taile
 And I shal paye as sone as euer I may
 ffor by my trouþe I haue on myn aray [leaf 80, back] 1608
 And nouht' on waast' bystowed euery dele
 And for I haue bystowed it' so wele
 To 3oure honour for goddes sake I say
 As be not' wroþ but' lat' vs laugh *and* play 1612
 3e shullen my Ioly body haue to wedde
 By god I nyl not' paye 3ou but' abedde

168 GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

fforzeue it me myn owne spouse dere
 Turne hiderward and make better chere 1616
 This Marchaunte seye þer was no remedye
 And forto chide it ner but foly
 Syþens þat þe þing may not amended be
 Now wif he seide *and* I forzeue it þe 1620
 But be þi lif ne be no more so large
 kepe bette my good þis zeue I þe in charge
 þus enden now my tale and god vs sende
 Tailing y-nowe into our lyues ende. 1624

¶ Thus endep þe shipmannys tale

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ *þe prologe.***And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe priores.** [*on leaf 80, back*]

WEl seid^t by corpus *dominus* quod *our* hoste
 Now longe mote þou saile by þe coste
 Sire Gentile Maister gentyll marynere
 God 3eue þe monk a M̄. last^t quade 3ere 1628
 A ha felowes beþ ware of suchⁿ a Iape
 þe Monk^t put^t in þe mannys hode an ape
 And in his wyues eke by seint^t Austyñ
 Draweþ no mo monkes into 3our Inne 1632
 But^t now passe ouer & lat^t vs seke aboute
 Who shal now telle first^t of al þe route
 Anoper tale and wiþ þat^t word he saide
 As curteisly as it^t had bene a Mayde 1636
 My lady Piores by 3oure leue
 So þat^t I wist^t I shulde 3ou not^t greue
 I wolde deme þat^t 3e telle shuld^t
 A tale next^t if so be þat^t 3e wold^t 1640
 Now wil 3e vouche sauf my lady dere
 Gladly quod she and seide in þis manere. [leaf 81]

Thus endeþ þe prologe.[*No break in the MS.*]

My Conyng^t is to waike . o blesful quene
 fforto declare þi grete worþinesse [leaf 81, back]
 þat I ne may þe weght^t not^t susteyne
 But^t as a childe of xij monþe elde or lesse 1674
 þat can vnneþes eny word^t expresse
 Riȝt^t so fare I and þerfore I ȝowe preye
 Gideþ my songe þat I shal of ȝou seie 1677

[THE TALE.]

Ther was a child in a grete Cite
 Amonges cristen folk^t in Iwerye
 Susteyned by a lord of þat cuntre
 ffor foule vsure & lucre of vilany 1681
 Hatful to Crist^t and to his companye
 And þorghe þe strete men myȝt^t ride & wende
 ffor it was fre and open at^t euery ende 1684

A litel scole of Cristen folk þer stode
 Doune at^t þe ferþer ende in which þer were
 Children an hepe ycome of cristes blode
 þat lerned in þat scole ȝere by ȝere 1688
 Such manere doctrine as men vsed þere
 þis is to saie to syngen and to rede
 As smale children done in her childhede . 1691

Amonges þise children was a widowes sone
 A litel Clergioun .vij. ȝere of age
 þat day by day to scole was his wone
 And eke also wher he segħ þe ymage 1695
 Of cristes modere had he in vsage
 As him was tauȝt to knele adoun and seie
 His Aue marye as he goþ by þe weye 1698

172 GROUP B. § 6. Prioress's Tale. **Petworth MS.**

Thus haþ þis widowe her litel childe tauȝt
 Our blesful lady *cristes moder dere*
 To worship ay *and* he forgate it nouȝt
 ffor sely child̄ wil alday sone lere 1702
 But̄ ay whan I remembre me on þis matere
 Seint̄ Nicholas stant̄ euere in my *presence* [leaf 82]
 ffor he so ȝonge to *crist̄* did reuerence 1705

This childe his litel boke lernynge
 As he satte in þe scole at̄ his prymere
 He **Alma redemptoris** / herd singe
 As Children lered her antiphonere 1709
 And as he durst̄ he drow *hym ner and nere*
 And harkened ay þe wordes *and* þe note
 Til he þe first̄ vers couþe al by rote 1712

Nouȝt̄ wist̄ he what þe latyn was to say
 ffor he so ȝonge and tender was of age
 But̄ on a day his felawe gan he pray
 To expoune hym þe songe in his langage 1716
 Or tellen him whi þis songe was in vsage
 This preide he hym to construe *and* declare
 ful ofte tyme vpon his knees bare 1719

His felawe which þat̄ elder was þan he
 Answerd him þus þis songe I haue herd̄ say
 Was maked of our blisful lady fre
 Her to saluc and eke her forto pray 1723
 To bene our helpe and socour whan we dey
 I Can no more expounde in þis matere
 I lerne songe I can but̄ smal gramere 1726

And is þis songe ymade in Reuerence
 Of Cristes modere seide þis Innocent̄
 Now certes I wil done my diligence
 To conne it̄ er cristmas be went̄ 1730

þoo þat I for my primere shal be shent
 And shal be beten pries in an houre
 I wil it konne our lady to honoure 1733

His felawe tauȝt hym homward priuely
 ffro day to daye til he coupe it by rote [leaf 82, back]
 And þan he songe it wel *and* boldely
 ffro word to word acording to þe note 1737
 prise on a day it passeþ þorgh his þrote
 To scoleward and hamward whan he went
 On cristes modere sette was his entent 1740

As I haue seide þorgh-oute þe Iwerye
 þis childe as he came to and froo
 fful merely þan wolð he singe *and* crye
 On **alma redemptoris** euermoo 1744
 The swetnesse hap his hert perced so
 Of cristes modere þat to hir to prey
 he can not stint of syngyng by þe wey 1747

Our furst foo þe serpent Sathanas
 þat hap in Iwes his waspes nest
 Vpswal and seide o Ebraike puple alas
 Is þis a þing to ȝou þat his honest 1751
 þat such a boy shal walken as hym lest
 In ȝoure despite and singgyng of such sentence
 Which is aȝeinst ȝoure lawes reuerence 1754

From þennes forþ þe Iwes han conspired
 This Innocent out of þis world to chace
 In homycide þerto han þei hured
 þat in a Aley had a prive place 1758
 And as þe childe gan forby forto pace
 þis cursed Iwe him hent *and* helde fast
 And kitte his þrote and in a pitte hym cast 1761

174 GROUP B. § 6. Prioress's Tale. Petworth MS.

I say þat' in a wardrobe þei hym drwe
 Wher þat' þise Iwes purgen entraile
 O cursed folk of herawdes al nwe/
 What' may 3oure euel tent' 3o^u availe 1765
 Mordere wil out' it' wil not' faile .
 And namely þer honure of god shuld' sprede [leaf 83]
 þe blood out' criep' of 3oure cursed dede 1768

O Matir sounded to virginite
 Now maist' þow syngen folowing' euere in oñ
 þe white lombe celestial quod he
 Of which þe grete euangelist' seynt' Iohn 1772
 In Pathmos wrote which seyn þei þat' gōn
 Byfore þis lombe and singe a songe al nwe
 That' neuer fleshly wommen þei knewe 1775

This poor widowe waiteþ al þat' ny3t'
 After this litel childe . but' home cam he nou3t'
 ffor whom as sone as it' is daies li3t'
 Wiþ face pale for drede and bisy þou3t' 1779
 She haþ atte scole and ellis whe[re] him sou3t'
 Til fynaly she gan so fer espie
 þat' he was sene last' in þe Iwerye 1782

Wiþ moders pite in her brest' enclosed
 She goþ as þou3e she were half out' of mynde
 To euery place wher she haþ supposed 1786
 By liklihedede her child' to fynde
 And euere on cristes modere meke and kynde
 She cried and at' þe last' þus she wrou3t'
 Amonge þe cursed Iwes she him sou3t' 1789

She freyneþ and she preieþ pitously
 To euery Iwe þat' dwelte in þilk place
 To telle her if her child went' hem bye
 þei seiden nay but' Ihesus of his grace 1793

3aue in her þou3t^t inwiþ a litel space
 That^t in þat^t place after her sone she cried/
 Ther he was cast^t in a pitte beside 1796

O grete god þat^t *perfourmed* þi lawde
 By mouþe of Innocence lo here þi my3t^t [leaf 83, back]
 This Gemme of chastite þis emeraude
 And eke of Marterdom þe rubie bri3t^t 1800
 Ther he wiþ þrote y-corue lay vpri3t^t
 He **alma redemptoris** gan to singe
 So longe þat^t al þe place gan to ryng 1803

The Cristen folk^t þat^t þorgh þe strete went^t
 Inne comen forto wondren on þis þinge
 And hastely þei for þe prouost^t sent^t
 He come anone wiþ-out^t tariynge 1807
 And herieþ crist^t þat^t is of heuen kyng
 And eke his modere honoure of man kynde
 And after þat^t þe Iwes lete he bynde 1810

This child^t wiþ pitous lamentacioñ
 Vptaken singyng^t his songe alway
 And wiþ honure of grete processioñ
 þei Carien hym to þe next^t abbay 1814
 His modere swownyng^t by þe bere lay
 Vnneþes my3t^t þe puple þat^t was þere
 þis new Racheft bring^t fro his bere 1817

Wiþ torment^t and *wit*h shameful deþ ilkoñ
 This prouost^t doþ þise Iwes to sterue
 þat^t of þis mordre wist^t and þat^t anōn
 He nolde none such^t cursednesse obserue 1821
 Euel he shal haue þat^t euel wol deserue
 perfore wiþ wilde hors he did hym drawe
 And after þat^t he henge him by þe lawe 1824

176 GROUP B. § 6. Prioress's TALE. Petworth MS.

¶ Vppon þis bere ay liþ þis Innocent
 Byfor þe chief autere whiles masse last
 And after þat þe Abbot wip his Couent
 had spedde hem forto bury hym fast 1828
 And whan þei holy water on hym cast
 3it' spake þe child' whan spreynt' was þ^e holy watere [1884]
 And songe .O alma redemptoris matere 1831

This Abbot which þat' was an holy man
 As monkes be or ellis ou3ten to be
 þis 3onge childe to coniure þei bygan
 And saide good child' I hailse þe 1835
 Be vertue of þe holy trinite
 Telle me what' is þi cause to singe
 Sipeþ þat' þi prote is kitte at' my semynge 1838

My prote is kitte vnto my nek' bone
 Saide þis child' and as be way of [k]ynde
 I shuld haue deied longe tyme a-gone
 But' Ihesu crist' as 3e in bokes fynde 1842
 Wol þat' his glorie last' and be in mynde
 And for þe worship of his moder dere
 3it' may I singe .o Alma. loude and clere 1845

This welle of me[r]cye cristes modere swete
 I loued alway as aftere my comynge
 And whan þan I my lif shuld' lete .
 To me she cam and bad me for to singe 1849
 þis Anteme verrely in my mynd' deyinge
 As 3e han herd' . and whan þat' I had songe
 Me þou3t' she leide a greyn vpon my tonge 1852

Wherfore I singe and singe mote certeyn
 In honure of þe blisful martere fre
 Til of my tunge of taken is þe greyñ
 And aftere þat' þus seide she to me 1856

My litel childe now wol I fecche þe
 Whan þat þe greyn is fro þi tunge ytake
 Be not' agast' I wil þe not' forsake 1859

This holy monke þis abbot' hym mene I
 His tunge out' kaught' and toke away þ^e greyn/ [leaf 84, back]
 And he ȝaue vp þe goost' ful softly
 And whan þe abbot' had þis wonder seyn 1863
 His salte teeres striked down as reyn/
 And gruf he fille al plat' to þe ground'
 And stille he lay as he had bene ybound' 1866

The Couent' eke lay vpon þe payment'
 Weping' and heryng' cristes moder dere
 And after þat þei rise *and* forþ bene went'
 And toke away þis martere fro his bere 1870
 And in a toumebe of Marble stonys clere
 Enclosen þei his litel body swete
 Ther he is nowe god leue vs forto mete 1873

O yonge hugħ of lyncoln slayn also
With cursed Iwes as it' is notable
 ffor it' nys but' a litel while agoo
 Prei eke for vs we sinful folk vnstable 1877
 þat' of his mercy god so merciable
 On vs his grete mercy multiplie
 ffor reuerence of his modere marye . 1880

¶ Here endep þe prioress tale.

[*The Man of Law's Prologue and Tale follow in the MS.*]

GROUP B. (α. FRAGMENT II.)

§ 1. MAN OF LAW'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

¶ Prologus
viri legis

And here by- <sup>[on leaf 84,
back]</sup>

gynnes þe prologe of þe man of lawe

Oure hoost^t segh wel þat^t þe briz^t sonne
 þe arke of þis artificial day hadde ronne
 þe feerþ part^t and half an houre or more
 And þough he were not^t depe expert^t in lore 4
 He wist^t it^t was þe xvij. day
 Of Aprile þat^t is massagere to may
 And seghe wel þat^t þe shadowe of euery tre
 Was as in length^h þe same quantite 8
 þat^t was þe body erecte þat^t caused it^t
 And þefore by þe shadowe he toke his witte
 þat^t Phebus which^h þat^t shoon so clere *and* briz^t
 Degrees was xlv. clombe on hight^t 12
 And for þat^t day as in þat^t latitude [leaf 85]
 Hit^t was .x. of þe klok^t he gan conclude
 And sodeynly he pliz^t his hors about^t
 Lordingges quod he I warne 3ow al þis route 16
 þe feer party of þis day is goon
 Now for þe loue of god and of seint^t Iohn
 Leseþ no tyme as ferforþ as 3e may
 Lordingges þe tyme it^t wastep^t boþ ny3^t *and* day 20
 And stelep^t from vs what^t priuely slepinge
 And what^t þourgh^h neglygence in our wakinge
 As doþ þe streme þat^t turnep^t neuere agayn /
 Descending^t from þe mounteyn into playn 24
 Wel can Senec^t and many a philosophre
 Byweillen tyme more þan gold in Cofre
 ffor losse of Catel may recouered be
 But^t losse of tyme shendeþ vs quod he 28

It wil not ^t come a ³ ein wiþ-ou ^t en drede	
No more þan wil Malkyns Maidenhede	
Whan she haþ lost ^t it ^t in her wantonesse	
Lat ^t vs nou ^t mowlen þus in Ydelnesse	32
Sire man of lawe quod he so haue I blesse	
Telle vs a tale anoon as forward ^t es	
3e bene submitted þourgh ^t 3our fre assent ^t	
To stonden in þis cas at ^t my Iuggement ^t	36
Aquiteþ 3ou nowe of 3oure biheest ^t	
þan han 3e done 3oure devoire at ^t þe leest ^t	
Oost quod he <i>depardeux</i> ich ^t assent ^t	
To breke forward ^t is not ^t myñ entent ^t	40
Biheest ^t is dette and I wil holde fayne	
Al my biheest ^t I can no better seyne	
ffor such ^t lawe as a man 3eueþ anoþer wizt ^t	
He shuld hym self vsen it ^t by rizt ^t	44
Thus wil our text ^t but ^t napeles certeyne	
I can rizt ^t now no trusty tale seyne	
þat ^t chaucere þouzt ^t he can but ^t lewdely	
On meters and in rymyng ^t craftely	48
Haþ seide hem in such ^t englissh as he can	[leaf 85, back]
Of olde tyme as knoweþ mony a man	
And if he haue nouzt ^t seide hem leue broþer ^t	
In oo boke he haþ seide in a-noþer	52
ffor he haþ told ^t of louers vp <i>and</i> down	
Moo þan Ovide made menciou ⁿ	
In his Epistels þat ^t bene ful olde	
What ^t shuld I tellen hem siþ þei be tolde	56
In 3oupe he made of Ceys <i>and</i> Alcione	
And siþ haþ he spoke of euerychone	
These noble wyues and þise louyers eke	
Who so þat ^t wol his large volom seke	60
Cleped þe Seintes legende of Cupide	
þer may he see þe large woundes wide	
Of lucesse and of Babylan Tysbe	
þe swerd ^t of Dido for þe fals ene	64

The tre of Phillis for hir demophon þe pleynte of Dyanyre <i>and</i> of Hermyon Of Andrian and of ysiphilee	
þe barayn Isle standing in þe see	68
þe dreynt leander for his erro The teres of Elyne and eke þe woo Of Brixseid and of þe ladomya	
The cruelte of quene Medea /	72
þe litel children honging by þe hals ffor þe Iason þat was of loue so fals Of ypinistra penelope Alceste	
3oure wivehode he <i>commendep</i> wiþ þe best But certeynly no worde ne writeþ he Of þilk wicke ensample of canace þat luffed her oune broþere synfully	76
Of suche cursed storis I seie fye	80
Or ellis of Tiro Appolloneus How þat þe cursed king Antiocus Biraft his douzter of her maydenhede þat is so horrible a tale for to rede	84
Whan he her drewe þorgh-out þe pament And þerfor he of ful avisement Nold neuer write in none of his <i>sermons</i> Of such vnkinde abhomynacions .	[leaf 86]
Ne I ne wil none reherce if þat I may But of my tale how shal I done þis day Me were loth be likned doutlees To muses þat men clepen pieriades	88
Methanorphoseos wote what I mene But napelees I recche not a bene þouze I come after hym wiþ hawe bake I speke in prose and lat hym rymes make	92
And wiþ þat word he wiþ a sobre chere Bygan his tale as 3e shal after here	96
	98

¶ Thus endep þe prologe [*no break in the MS.*]

And here by- ¶ Incipit fabula
 gynneþ þe Mannys of lawe Tale

[Prologue.]

O hateful harme condicioñ of pouert^t 99
 Wiþ þrust^t wiþ cold^t with hunger so *confounded^t*
 To asken help þe shamest^t in þine hert^t
 If þowe now aske wiþ nede art^t þou so wounded^t 102
 þat^t verrey nede vnwrappeþ al þi wonud hed
 Maugre in þine hede þou most^t for indigence
 Or stele or begge or borowe þi dispence 105

Thow blamest^t *cris^t* and seist^t ful bitterly
 He mysdeparteþ riches temporal
 þi neighbour þow witest^t sinfully
 And saist^t þou hast^t to litel and he hap^t all 109
Parfay seist^t þou somtyme he rekne shaft
 Whan þat^t his tale shal brenne in þ^e glede
 ffor he nouzt^t helpeþ nedeful in her nede 112

Herken what^t is þe menyng^t of þe wise
 Bett^t is to dyen þan haue indigence
 þi self neighbour wil þe despise
 If þou be poor fare wele þi reuerence. 116
 3it^t of þe wise man take þis sentence [leaf 86, back]
 Al þe daies of poor men ben wikke
 Be war þerfore er þou come in þat prikke 119

3if þou be poor þi broþer hateþ þe
 And alle þi freendes fleen fro þe alas
 O riche marchauntes ful of wele be 3e
 O noble prudent^t folk as in þis cas 123
 3oure bagges bene not filled *with* ambees aas
 But^t wiþ sise cynk þat^t renneþ for 3our chance
 At^t Cristes mas mery may 3e daunce 126

3e seken londe and ffe for 3our wynnyngges
 As wise folk þat knowen al þe state
 Of regnes 3e bene fadere of Tithenges
 And tales bopen of pees & debate 130
 I was rizt nowe of tales desolate
 Ner þat a marchaunt gone is mony a 3ere
 Me taught a tale which þat 3e shal here 133
 [Only the usual stanza-gap of a line in the MS.]

[As there is no room in this print for the Latin notes in the margin of the MS, they are put here, with the numbers of the lines to which they refer.]

- l. 197. ¶ *Ceptra pharonei fratrum discordia thebe*
 ¶ *flammam phetentis deutalionis aque*
 ¶ *In stellis priami. species audacia turni*
 ¶ *Sensus vlixus herculies que vigor* [MS, leaf 87, back.]
- l. 295. ¶ *Vnde Philomeus libro .j°. c°. 8°. primi motus ocli duo*
sunt quorum vnus est qui mouet totum semper ab oriente & occidente
vno modo super orbis & cetera. Ita aliter vero motus est qui mouet
orbem stellarum currencium contra motum primum viz ab occidente
in orientem super alios duos polos & cetera. Omnes enim concordati
sunt quod electiones sint debiles nisi in diuitibus. habent enim. isti
licet debilitentur eorum electiones radicem .i. natiuitates eorum que
confortat omnem planetam debilem in Itinere. Hec. Philosophus.
 [MS, leaf 89.]
- l. 421. ¶ *Semper mundane leticie tristicia repentina succedit.*
Mundana ergo felicitas multis amaritudinibus est respersa Extrema
gaudii. luctus occupat. Audi ergo salubre consilium in die bonorum
ne in memor sis malorum. [MS, leaf 91.]
- l. 771. ¶ *Quid turpius ebrioso cui fetor in ore. tremor in corpore.*
qui promit stulta. prodit occulta Cui mens alienatur facies transfor-
matur nullum enim latet secretum. vbi regnat Ebrietas. [MS, leaf
 96, back.]
- l. 925. ¶ *O extrema libidinis turpitude que non solum mentem*
effeminat. sed et corpus eneruat semper sequantur dolor & penitencia
post & cetera. [MS, leaf 99.]
- l. 1127. ¶ *A mane vsque ad vesperam mutabitur tempus. tenent*
tympanum & gaudent ad sonum organi. [MS, leaf 102, back.]
- l. 1134. *Quis vnquam vnica diem totam duxit in sua delecta-*
cione iocundam quem in aliqua parte die reatus consciencie vel im-
petus ire vel motus concupiscencie inde non turbauerit quem liuor
invidie vel ardor auaricie vel timor superbie non vexauerit. quem
aliqua iactura vel offensa vel passio non commouerit & cetera. [MS,
 leaf 102, back.]

[TALE. PART I.]

In Surry whilom dwelt a companye
 Of Chapmen riche *and* þerto sadde *and* trewe
 þat wide where setten her spicerie
 Cloþes of golde and saten riche of hue 137
 Her chaffare was so þrifty *and* so nwe
 þat euery wize þat hap deynte to chafare
 Wiþ hem and eke to sellen hem her ware 140

Nowe fille it þat þe maisters of þat sort
 Han shapen hem to Rome forto wende
 Were it for chapmanhode or for disport
 Noon oþer massage wold þei þider sende 144
 But commen hem self to Rome þis is þe ende
 And in suche place as þouzt hem auantage
 ffor her entent þei taken her herbergage 147

Soiourned han þise merchaundes in þat toun [leaf 87]
 A certeyn tyme as fille to her plesaunce
 But so byfelle þat þe excellen renoun
 Of þe Emperour douztere Dame Castaunce 151
 Reported was *with* euery circumstaunce
 Vnto þise Surryen merchauntz in such wise
 ffro day to day as I shal þou deuise 154

This was þe comon vois of euery man
 Our Emperour of Rome god hym see
 A doughter hap þat siþe þe world bygan
 To rekne as wel her goodnes as bewte 158
 Nas neuere such anoþer as is she
 I prei to god in honore hir sustene
 And wolde she were of al Europe þ^e quene ¶ Europa est tercia /
 pars mundi

IN hire is hegh bewte wip-oute *pride*
 3ouþe wip-out' grenehode or folye
 To aH her werkes vertue is her gide
 Humblesse haþ selayn in hire al tyrannye 165
 She is a myroure of al Curtesie
 Hire herte is verrey chambere of holynesse
 Her hand mynystre of fredam for almesse 168

And al þis vois was soþ as god is trewe
 But' nowe to purpoos lat' vs turne ageyn
 þise Merchauntz han do fraught her shippes newe
 And whan þei han þis blisful Maiden seyñ 172
 Howe to Surrey ben þei went' ageyñ
 And done her nedes as þei han do 3ore
 And lyuen in wele I can say 3ou no more 175

Now fille it' þat' þise marchauntes stoden in *grace*
 Of hym þat' was þe Sawden of Surrye
 ffor whan þat' þei came from eny strañge place
 He wolde of his benygne Curtesie. 179
 Make hem good chere and bysilie asprie [leaf 87, back]
 Tipingges of sondry rewmes forto lere
 þe wondres þat' þei my3t' se or here 182

Amonges opere þingges specialy
 Thisse marchauntes han hym tolde of dame custauce
 So grete noblesse in earnest' ceriously
 þat' þis sowden haþ caught' so grete plesaunce 186
 To han her figure in his remembraunce
 And al his lust' and al his bysy cure
 Was forto loue her' þe whilis his lif may dure 189

Perauenture in þe þikke large book
 Whiche þat' cloped is heuene ywriten was
 Wip sterres whan þat' he his birth toke
 þat' he for loue shuld' han his deth allas 193

ffor in þe sterres clerer þan is þe glas /
 y-writen god wote who coude it rede
 þe depe of every man *with*-outen drede 196

In Sterris mony a wynter þer byforñ [*Latin note*, p. 133.]
 Was writen þe deþ of Ector achilles 132
 Of pompe Iulius er þei were bornñ
 þe strif of Thebes and of hercules / 200
 Of sampson turuno *and* of Socrates
 þe deþ but mennys wittes beñ so dulle
 þat no wizt can wel rede it at þe fulle 203

This souden for his *prive* counseñ sent
 And shortly of þis matere forto pase
 He hap to hem declared his entent
 And seide hem certeyn but he myzt haue *grace* 207
 To haue custance wiþ-Inne a litel space
 He nas but dede *and* charged hem in hie
 To shapen for his lif somme remedye 210

Dyuers men dyuers þingges seiden
 þe argumentz Custen vp and Douñ [leaf 88]
 Mony a sotele resoñ forþ þei leideñ
 þei speken of magik and abusioñ 214
 But fynaly as in conclusioñ
 þei can not seen in þat noñ *auauntage*
 Ne in noon oþer way sauf mariage 217

Than segh þei þere in such difficulte
 Be way of reson forto speke al playñ
 By cause þat þer was such dyuersite
 Bytwene hor boþ lawes þat þei seyñ 221
 þei trowe þat no cristen *prince* wold fayn
 Wedden his childe vnder oure lawes so swete
 þat vs was taught be Mahoun our *prophete* 224

And he answered raper þan I lese
 Custance I wil be Cristened doutlees
 I mote bene hers I may non oþere chese
 I prei 3ou holde 3oure argumentes in pees 228
 Saueþ my lif and beþ not rechelees
 To geten hure þat haþ my lif in cure
 ffor in þis woo I may not longe endure 231

What nedeþ gretter dilataciõ
 I saye by tretis and Embassadrye
 And by þe popes mediacion
 And alle þe cherch and aþ þe Chivalrye 235
 þat in destruccioñ of Mawmetrie
 And in encrees of cristes lawe dere
 þei bene acorded so as 3e shal here 238

Now þat þe Sawden and his Baronage
 And al his lieges shuld ycristened be
 And he shal haue custance in mariage
 And certeyn gold I note what quantite 242
 And herto founden sufficient suerte
 This same accorde was sworn in eiper side [leaf 88, back]
 Now faire custauce almyzty god þe gyde 245

Now woldt somme men waiten as I gesse
 þat I shulde tellen al þe purviaunce
 That þe Emperour of his noblesse
 haþ shapen for his douzter dame Custaunce 249
 Wel may men knowe þat so grete ordynaunce
 May no man telle in a litel clause
 As was araied for so hie a cause 252

Bisshopes bene shapen wiþ hure forto wende
 Lordes ladys kny3tes of renoun
 And oþer folk ynow þis is þe ende
 And notified is þorgh-out þe toun 256

That euery wight *with* grette deuocioun
 Shulde preye crist þat he þis mariage
 Resceyue in gre and spede þis viage 259

The day is *commen* of her departinge
 I seie þe wooful day fatal is come
 That þer may be no lenger tariyng
 But forþward þei hem dressed al and some 263
 Custance þat *with* sorowe is al ouercome
 fful pale arist and dresseþ hure to wende
 ffor wel shee seeþ þer is noon oþere ende 266

Allas what wondere is it þouze she wepte
 þat shal be sent to straunge naciōn
 ffro frendes þat so tenderly her kepte
 And to be bounden vnder subiecciōn 270
 Of oon she knoweþ nouzt his *condiciōn*
 Husbondes bene all good and han ben zore
 þat knowen wives I dar seie zou no more 273

Fadere she seide þi wrecched child custance
 Thi zonge douztere fostred vp so soft ¶ Cap. 9 [leaf 89]
 And ze my modere my souereyn plesaunce
 Ouer al þinge outaken *crist* aloft 277
 Custaunce zoure child hire recomandep oft
 Vnto zoure grace for I shal to Surrye
 Ne shal I neuere seyn zow more wiþ ye 280

Allas vnto þe Barbarye naciōn
 I most anon siþ it is zoure wille
 But crist þat starf for oure redempeciōn
 So zeue me grace his heestes to fulfille 284
 I wrecched womman no fors þouze I spille
 Wommen ben borū to thraldom and penaunce
 And to bene vnder mannes gouernaunce 287

I trowe at' Troye whan purrus brak þe waſt
 Or ylyon þat' brent' Thebes þat' Cite
 Nor Rome for þe harme þorgh Hanybaſt
 þat' Romaynes han venqwished tymes þre 291
 Nas herd' such' tendere weping' for pite
 As in þe Chambere for her departinge
 But' forþ she mote wher she wepe or singe 294

O first' mouynge cruel firmament' [Latin note, p. 133.]
182
 Wiþ þine dyurnal sweigh þat crowdest' aye
 And hurlest' al from eest' to occident'
 That' naturelly wold' hold' anoþer waye 298
 þi Crowding' sette þe heuene in such' araye
 At' þe bygynnyng' of þis feers viage
 That' cruel mars haþ sclayn þis mariage 301

Infortunat' ascendent' tortuous
 Of which' þe lord is helplees falle allas
 Out' of his Angle in to þe derkest' hous
 O Mars o Atazir in this caas 305
 O feble mone vnhappy bene þi paas./
 þow knettest' þe þer þou art' not' receyued [leaf 89, back]
 Ther þou were wele fro þennes now art' þou weyued 308

Imprudent' Emperour of Rome alas ¶ Inspirant
 Was þer no Philisophre in al þi toun
 Is no tyme bette þan oþer in such' cas/
 Of viage is þer non election 312
 Namely to folk of high' condicioñ
 Nat' whan a roote is of a birþ yknowe
 Allas 3e bene to lewde or to sclowe 315

The shippe is brouzt' þis woful faire mayde
 Solempnely wiþ euery circumstaunce
 Nowe Ihesu crist' be wiþ 3ou al she seide
 Ther is no more but' fare wel faire Custaunce 319

She peyneþ hure to make good countenaunce
 And forþe I lete hire saile in þis manere
 And turne I wil ageyn to my matere 322

The modere of þe Sowden welle of vices
 Espied haþ her sones pleyn entent'
 Howe he wil lete his olde sacrificises
 And rizt' anone she for her counsel sent' 326
 And þei ben commen to knowe what' she ment'
 And whan assembled was þis folk' in fere
 She sette her doune and seide as 3e shal here 329

Lordes quod she 3e knowe euerichoñ
 Howe þat' my sone in poynt' is forto lete
 þe holy lawes of our akkaron
 3euene by goddes massagere Makamete 333
 But' on avowe to grete god I hete
 þe lif shal raþer out' of my body sterte
 Or makametes lawe out' of myñ herte. 336

What' shuld' vs tyden of þis newe lawe
 But' þaldome to our bodies and penaunce [leaf 90]
 And afterward' in helle to ben drawe
 ffor we reveied Mahonne our creaunce 340
 But' lordes wil 3e maken assurance
 As I shal sein assenting' to my lore
 And I shal make vs sauf for euermore 343

¶ Thei sworn and assenten euery man
 To lyve and dye wiþ hure and by hure stonde
 And euery in þe best' wise he can
 To strengthen hure shal al his freendes fonde 347
 And she haþ þis emprise taken on honde
 Which 3e shal here þat' I shal devise
 And to hem alle she spak' in þis wise 350

We shul first feyn vs cristendom to take
 Cold watere shal not greue vs but a lite
 And I shal suche a reuel and feest make
 þat as I trowe I shal þe Sowden quite 354
 ffor þouze his wif be cristned neuer so white
 She shal haue nede to wassh away þe rede
 þough she a font ful of water wip her lede 357

O Sawdenesse Roote of Iniquite
 Virago þou Semyram þe Second
 O Serpent vnder femyninete 361
 Like to þe Serpent depe in helle ybound
 O feyned womman al þat may confound
 Vertue and Innocence þorgh þi malice
 Is bredde in þe as nest of euery vice 364

O Sathan envious sij þilk day
 þat þou were chased fro *our* heritage
 Wel knewest þou to wommen þe old way
 þou madest Eva to bringe in seruage 368
 Thow wilt fordone cristen mariage
 Thyñ Instrument so wele away þe while
 Makestowe of wommen wham þou wilt begile [leaf 90, back]

This Sowdonesse whom I þus blame *and* warye
 Lat prively her counsel gone her way
 What shuld I in þis tale lenger tarye
 She rideþ to þe Sawden on a daye 375
 And seide him þat she wold reneye her laye
 And Cristendom of preestes hondes fonge
 Repenting she heþen was so longe 378

Biseching him to done her þat honoure
 þat she most han þe cristen folk to feest
 To plesen hem I wil do my labour
 þe Sawden seiþ I wil doñ at þour heest 382

And knelinge þonkeþ hure of þat request
 So glad he was he nyst what to seye
 She kist her sone and hom she goþ her way 385

[PART II.]

Arriued bene þise cristen folk to londe
 In Surrye wiþ a grete solempne Route
 And hastely þis Sowden sent his sonde
 ffurst to his modere and al þe regne aboute 389
 And seide his wiff was *commen* out of doute
 And preide hure forto riden ageyn þe quene
 The honure of his regne to sustene 392

Grete was þe prees and rich was tharray
 Of Surriens and romaynes met yfere
 The modere of þe Sowden riche *and* gay
 Resceyueþ her wif as glad a chere 396
 As eny modere myzt her douzter dere
 And to þe next Cite þer beside
 A soft paas solempnely þei ryde 399

Naught trowe I þe *triumphe* of Iulius
 Of which þat lucan makeþ such a boost
 Was ryallere ne more curious [leaf 91]
 Than was þe asseple of þis blisful hoost 403
 But þis scorpion þis wikke goost
 þe Sawdenesse for al her flateringe
 Cast vnder þis ful mortally to styng 406

The Sowden *commeþ* hym self sone after þis
 So Rialli þat wonder is to telle
 He welcommeþ hure *with* alle ioye *and* blis
 And þus in merþe and Ioie I lete hem dwelle 410

þe froyte of þis matere þat I telle
 Whan tyme come men þouzt it for þe best
 That reueH stint and men goñ to her rest 413

The tyme come þis olde Sawdenesse
 Ordeyned haþ þis feest of which I told
 And to þe fest cristen folk hem dresse
 In general boþ zenge and old 417
 Here may men feest and rialte bihold
 And deyntes moo þan I can 30ⁿ devise
 But al to dere þei bouzt it er þei rise 420

O sodeyn woo þat euer art successoure [Latin note, p. 133.]
 To worldly blisse sp[r]ayned is wiþ bitterncsse 132
 þe end of þe ioye of our worldely laboure
 Woo occupieþ þe fyne of our gladnesse 424
 Herk þis counsaile for þi sikernesse
 Vppon þi glade day haue in þi mynde
 þe vnwar woo or harme þat commeþ behinde 427

For shortely forto tellen at oon word
 The Sowden and þe cristen euerechone
 Bene al to-hewe and stikked at þe bord
 But it were oonly dame custance allone 431
 þis olde Sawdenes þis cursed krone
 haþ wiþ her frendes done þis cursed dede
 ffor she her self wold al þe cuntre lede [leaf 91, back]

NE þer nas Surrien noon þat was conuerted
 þat of þe counsaile of þe Sawden wote
 þat he nas al to-hewe er he asterted
 And Custaunce han þei take anoñ fote hoot 438
 And in a shippe al steerless god woote
 þei han hure sette and bidden her lerne saile
 Out of Surry ageynward to ytaile 441

A certeyn tresour þat she þider' ladde
 And soþe to seyn vitaille grete plente
 They han her 3euen and cloþes eke she hadde
 And fforþ she sailleþ in þe salt' see 445

O my custauñce ful of benygnyte
 O Emperours 3onge dou3tere dere.
 He þat' is lord of fortune be þi stere 448

She blesseþ and wiþ ful pitous voys
 Vnto þe Crois of crist' þus seid she
 O cleer o. welful autere holy croys
 Rede of þe lambes blood ful of pite 452
 That' wessh þe world' from þe olde iniquyte
 Me from þe feende and from his clawes kepe
 þat' day þat' I shal drenche in þe depe 455

Victorious tree protection' of trewe
 That' oonly worþi were for to bere
 The king' of heuene wiþ his woundys newe
 The white lombe þat' hirte was with a spere 459
 flemer of feendes out' of hym and here
 On which þi lyues feiþfully extenden
 Me kepe and 3eue myght' my lyf tamenden 462

Yeeres and daies fleet' þis Creature
 Thorgh-out' þe see of Grece vnto þ^e strayte
 Of Marrok as it' was hir' aventure [leaf 92]
 O mony a sory mele nowe may she baite 466
 After her deth ful oft may she wayte
 Er þat' þe wilde waves wil her dryve
 Vnto þe place þere she shal aryue 469

MEn myghten axen whi she was not' sclaynd
 Eke atte feeste who myght' her body saue
 I Answere to þat' demannde agayn
 Who saued Danyel in þe horrible caue 473

Ther euery wízt^t saf he maister^r or knaue
 Was wíþ þe leon frette or a-stert^t
 No wíght^t but^t god þat^t hem bare in his hert^t 476

GOd list^t to shewe his wonderful myracle
 In hir^r? þat^t shee shulde seen his myzty werkes
 Crist^t which þat is to euery harme triacle
 By certayne meenes oft / as knowen clerkes 480
 Doþ þing^t for certeyn ende þat^t ful derk es
 To mannys witt^r? þat^t for our ignoraunce
 Ne kon not^t knowe his prudent^t puruyaunce 483

Now síþ she was not^t at^t þe feest^t ysclawe
 Who kepte her from þe drenching^t in þe see
 Who kepte Ionas in þe fisshes mawe
 Til he was spowted vp at^t Nynyve 487
 Wel may men knowe it was no wízt^t but^t he
 What^t kept^t puple Ebrayk from drenchinge
 Wíþ drie feet^t þorgh^t out^t þe see passinge 490

Who bad þe foure spiretes of tempest^t
 That^t power han boþ annoyen londe *and* see
 Boþ norþe and souþe *and* also west^t *and* Eest^t
 Annoyep^t neiþer See londe ne tree 494
 Soply þe Comannder^r of þat^t was he
 That^t from þe tempest^t ay þis womman kept^t
 As wel whan she woke as whan she sclepte [leaf 92, back]

Where myz^t þis womman mete or drynk^t haue
 Thre zere or more how lastep^t hir^r vitaille
 Who fedde þe Egipcien mary in þe Caue
 Or in desert^t noon but^t Crist^t saunz faille 501
 V. M^t. folk it^t was as grete mervaille
 Wíþ loues .v. and fisshes two to fede
 God sent^t his foysen at^t her grete nede 504

She dryueþ forþ into our' Occiān
 Thorgh-out' cure wilde See to atte last'
 Vnder an hold' þat' nempne I ne can
 ffor in Nourth humberlonð þ^e wawe hire cast' 508
 And in þe sonde her shipp stiked so fast
 þat' þennes wold it' not' of al a tyde
 The wille of *Crist* was þat' she shuld' abide 511

The Constable of þe Castel down is fare
 To seen þis werk and al þe ship he souzt'
 And fonde þis very womman ful of care
 He fonde also þe tresoure þat' she brouzt' 515
 In her langage mercy she bysouzt'
 The lif' out' of her body forto twynne
 Hire to delyuere of woo þat' she was Inne 518

A Maner' latyn corrupte was her speche
 But' algates þer-by was she vnderstonde
 The Constable whan he list' no lengere seche
 This wooful womman brouzt' he to þe londe 522
 She kneleþ doune *and* þonkeþ goddys sonde
 But' what' she was she wolde no man seye
 ffor foule ne faire þouze þat' she shuld' deye 525

She seide she was so mased in the See
 þat' she forgate hure mynde by hure trouþe
 The Constable of hire haþ so grete pite [leaf 93]
 And eke his wiff þat' þei wepen for rouþe 529
 She was so diligent' wip-uten slouþe
 To serue and plese euerech in þat' place
 That' al her louen þat' loken on her face / 532

The Constable and dame Ermengeld' his wiff'
 Were paynymes and þat' contray euer'ywhere
 But' Hermengilt' loued hure rizt' as hir liff'
 And Constance haþ so longe soiournd þere 536

In Orisons wiþ mony a bitter tere
 Til Ihesu haþe conuerted þorgh his grace
 Dame hermengild Constablesse of þat place 539

In aH þat londe durst none cristen route
 Alle Cristen folk ben fledd fro þat cuntre
 Thorgh paynymes þat conquered þer aboute
 þe plages of þe north by lond and see 543
 To wales fledde þe Cristiante
 Of olde Bretoyne dwellin in þe Ile
 Ther was hure refute for þe mene while 546

But 3it nas neuere cristen Bretoyne so exiled
 That þer nas somme in her priuete
 Honoured Crist and heþen folk begyled
 And nyze þe Castel such þer dwelled thre 550
 That oon of hem was blynde and myzt not see
 But it were wiþ þilk yen of his mynde
 With which men seen after þat þei bene blynd 553

Brizt was þe sonne as in þat somers day
 ffor whiche þe constable and his wif also
 And Custance han ytake þe rizt way
 Toward þe see a forlonge way or two 557
 To pleien and to romen to and froo /
 And in her walk þis blynde man þei mette
 Croked and olde wiþ fast eyen yshett [leaf 93, back]

In þe name of crist cried þis blynd Bretoun
 Dame hermegild zeue me sizt agayn
 This lady wexe a-fraied of þe soun
 Lest þat her husbond shortely forto seyne 564
 Wold hure for Ihesu cristes loue haue slayn
 Til Custance made hure bold and bad hire wirche
 The wille of crist as douzter of his chirche 567

The constable wexe abasshed of þat' sight
 And seide what' amounteþ al þis fare
 Custance answerd Sire it' is cristes myȝt'
 þat' helpeþ folk out' of þe fendes snare 571
 And so ferforþ she can our lay declare
 þat' she þe constable er it was eve
 Conuertep and on crist' made hym byleue 574

This Constable nas no þing' lord' of þis place
 Of which I speke þer he Custaunce fonde
 But' kepte it' strongly mony a wynter' space
 Vnder Alla king' of aH Norþhumberlonde 578
 þat' was full wise and worþi of his honde
 Ageyne þe scottes as men may wel here
 But' turne I wil ageyn to my matere 581

Sathan þat' euere vs waiteþ to begile
 Seghe of Custance al hure perfeccioun
 And cast' anone howe he myȝt' quyte her while
 And made a yonge knyght' þat' dwelt' in þe town 585
 Loue hire so hoot' of foule affeccioun
 þat' verrely hym þouȝt' he shulde spille
 But' he of hire ones myȝt' haue his wille 588

He woweþ hure but' it' availleþ nouȝt'
 She wolde do no synne by no weye
 And for despite he compased in his þouȝt' [leaf 91]
 To make hure a shameful deep to dye 592
 He waiteþ whan þe constable was away
 And priuely vpon a nyȝt' he crept'
 In hermengildes Chambre while she slept' 595

Wery for-waked in her Orisons
 Slepeþ Custance and hermengild' also /
 This knyght' þourgh Sathanas temptacioñs
 Al softly is to þe bed y-goo 599

And kitte þe þrote of hermengild^t atwoo ,
 And laide þe blody knyf by dame Custaunce
 And went^t his waye þer god ʒeue hym meschaunce 602

Sone after Commeþ þis Constable home agayn
 And Eke Alla þat^t kinge was of þat^t londe
 And segħ his wiff dispitously slayn
 ffor whiche ful oft^t he wepte and wronge his honde 606
 And in þe bedde þe blody knyf he fonde
 By dame Custaunce allas what^t myʒt^t she say
 ffor verry woo her witte was al away 609

So kinge Alla was tolde al þis meschaunce
 And eke þe tyme and where and in what wise
 þat^t in a shipp was founden þis Custaunce
 As here byforn ʒe han herde devise 613
 The kingges hert^t of pite gan agrise
 Whan he seye so benigne a creature
 ffalle in dissese and in mysauenture 616

For as þe lombe toward^t þ^e deth is brouʒt^t
 So þis Innocent^t stant^t to-fore þe king^t
 þis fals knyʒt^t þat^t haþ þis tresoñ wrouʒt^t
 Bereþ hure on honde þat^t she haþ do þis þing^t 620
 But^t napelees þer was grete mournyng^t
 Amonge þe puple and seie þai can not gesse
 Tha[t] she had done so grete a wickednesse [leaf 94, back]

For þei han seyn her^t euere so vertuous
 And louyng^t hermengile riʒt^t as her liff
 Of þis bare witesse euerich in þat^t hous
 Saue he þat^t hermengild^t slowe with his knyff 627
 This gentile kinge haþ kauʒt^t a gret^t motiff
 Of þis witesse and þouʒt^t he wold^t enquere
 Depper in þis caas troupe forto lere 630

Allas Custaunce þow nast' no champyōn
 Ne fighte Canstowe nat' so wele away
 But' he þat' for oure redempciōn
 And bonde Sathan and lyeþ hym þer he lay 634
 So be þi strong' Champiōn þis daye
 ffor but' Criste on þe miracle kith
 Wiþ-owten gilt' þou shalt' be slayn as swiþe 637

She sette her doune on knees and þer she seide
 Immortal god þat' sauedest' Susanne
 ffro fals blame and þou merciful maide
 Marye I mene douzter to seint' Anne 641
 Byforn whoos childe aungels sing' Osanne
 If I be gitlees of þis felonye
 My socoure be for ellis shal I dye 644

Haue 3e not' sene somtyme a pale face
 Amongt' a prees of him þat' haþ be ladde
 Toward' þe deþe where as he gete no grace
 And swich a coloure in his face haþ hadde 648
 Men myzt' knowe his face þat' was bistadde
 Amonge alle þe faces of þat' route
 So stant Custance and lokeþ hire aboute 651

O quenes lyuyng in prosperite
 Duchesses and 3e ladies euerechone
 Haue some rouþe on her aduersite [leaf 95]
 An Emperours douztere stant' allone 655
 She haþ no wizt' to whom to make her mone
 O blood real þat' stondest' in þis drede
 ffer bene þi frendes at' þi grete nede 658

This Alla king' haþ swich compassioun
 As Geltile hert' is fulfilled of pite
 þat' from his eyen ranne þe water down
 Now hasteli do fecche a boke quod he 662

And if þis knyght wil swere howe þat she
 þis womman selowe ȝit wil we vs advise
 Whom þat we wold shuld be *our* Iustise 665

A breton booke writen *with* euangielies
 Was fette and þer-on he swore anone
 She giltif was in þe mene whiles
 An honde him smote vpon þe nekke bone 669
 þat doune he felle at ones as a stone
 And boþe his eyen brast out of his face
 In sizt of euery body in þat place 672

A voys was herde in general audience
 And seide þou hast disslaunders giltelees
 þe douȝter of holy church in high presence
 Thus hastowe done and ȝit I mot hold my pees 676
 Of þis mervaile agast was all þe prees
 As mazed folk þei stoden euerechone
 ffor drede of wreche sauf Custance alone 679

Grete was þe drede and eke þe repentaunce
 Of hem þat hadden wrongt suspecioun
 Vppon þis cely Innocent Custaunce
 And for þis miracle in conclusioun 683
 And by Custance Mediacioun
 þe kinge and mony anoþer in þat place
 Conuerted were þonked be goddis grace [leaf 95, back]

This fals knyght was selayn for his vntrouþe
 By Iuggement of Alla hastily
 And ȝit Custance hap of his deþ gret rouþe
 And after þis Ihesus of his mercye 690
 Made Alla wedden ful solempnely
 This holy maiden þat is so briȝt and shene
 And þus hap crist made Custance a quene 693

But who was wooful if I shal not lye
 Of þis wedding but donegildt *and* no moo /
 The kingges modere ful of Tyrannye
 Hire þouzt her cursed hert brast a two 697
 She woldt not her sone had done so /
 Hire þouzt a despote þat he shulde take
 So straunge a creature vnto his make 700

ME list not of þe Chaf ne of þe stre
 Make so longe a tale as of þe corne
 What shuld I tellen of þe Rialte
 Of mariage or which cours goþ byforne 704
 Who bloweþ in trompe or in an horne
 þ^e frwte of euery tale is forto seye
 þe[i] and drinke . þei daunce singe or pley . 707

Thei gone to bedde as it was skil *and* riȝt
 ffor þouze þat wives bene ful holy þingges
 þei most take in pacience a nyght
 Such manere necessaries as ben plesingges 711
 To folk þat han ywedded hem *with* ringges /
 And laye a litel her holynesse aside
 As for þe tyme it may none opere betide 714

On hire he gate a knaue childt anone
 And to a bisshope and his Constable eke
 He toke his wif to kepe whan he is gone [leaf 96]
 to scotlandt wardt his foomen for to seke 718
 Nowe faire Custance þat is so humble *and* meke
 So longe is goon wiþ childt til þat stille
 She halt her chambere abidingt cristes wille 721

The tyme is come a knaue child she bere
 Mauricius atte fontstone þei hym calle
 þis Constable doþ forþ come a massagere
 And wrote to his kinge þat cleped was Alle 725

Howe þat þis blisful tydyngges is byfalle
 And oþer tydyngges spedeful forto seye
 He takeþ þe *lettre* and forþ he goþ his waye 728

This Massagere to done his *auauntage*
 Vnto þe kingges *modere* rideþ swiþe
 And salweþ hire ful faire in his langage
 Madame quod he . 3e may be glad *and* bliþe 732
 And þonkeþ god an hundred þousandt siþe
 My lady quene haþ childt wiþ-outen doute
 To Ioie and blisse of al þis regne aboute 735

Lo here þe *lettres* seled of þis þinge
 þat I mot bere wiþ al þe hast I may
 If 3e wil ouzt vnto 3oure sone þe kinge
 I am 3oure seruauante boþ nyzt *and* day 739
 Dongildt answerd not not at þis tyme
 But here al nyzt I wil þou take þi rest
 To morowe wil I saye what me lest 742

This Massagere dronkt sadly ale *and* wyne
 And stollen were his *lettres* prively
 Out of his boxe whilst he slepte as a swyn
 And counterfeted was ful subtilly 746
 A noþere *lettre* wrouzt ful synfully
 Vnto þe kinge directe of þis matere
 ffrom his Constable as 3e shal after here [leaf 96, back]

The *lettre* spak þe Quene delyuered was
 Of so horrible a fendlich creature
 That in þe Castel noon so hardy was
 þat eny while dorst þer-Inne endure 753
 The *modere* was an Elf by *auenture*
 Ycome by Charmes or by sorcerye
 And euery wight hateþ her companye 756

WOo was þis kinge whan he þis *lettre* had seyne
 But to no wizt' he tolde his sorowes sore
 But' of his owne honde he wrote ageyne
 Welcome þe sonde of *cris*t' for euermoore 760
 To me þat' am nowe lered in his lore
 Lord welcome be þi lust' and þi plesaunce
 My lust' is putte al in þine ordynaunce 763

Wepeþ þis child' al be it' foule or feire
 And eke my wiff vnto myn home *commynge*
 Crist' whan him list' may sende me an heire
 More a-greable þan þis is to my likinge 767
 This letter he celeþ prively wepinge
 Whiche to þe massagere was take sone
 And forþ he goþ þer nys no more to done 770

O Massagere fulfilled of dronkenesse [*Latin note*, p. 133.]
 Stronge is þi breeþ þi lymmes flateren ay 182
 And þou by-wreiest' al sikernesse
 Thy mynde is lorn þou langlest' as a Iaye 774
 Thi face is turned in a newe aray
 Ther dronkenesse regneþ in ony route
 Ther nys no counseþ hidde wiþ-oute doute 777

O Donegild' I ne haue noon englissþ digne
 Vnto þi malice and þi tyrannye ¹ [*1* line repeated in MS, with *tirannye*,
as the first line of leaf 97]
 And þefore to þe fende I þe resigne
 Lat' hym enditen of þi traterye 781
 ffy mannyssþ fy . o nay by god I lie
 ffy feendisþ spirit'. for I dar wel telle
 Thowe þou here walk' þi spirit' is in helle 784

This massagere *commeþ* fro þe feende agayn
 And at' þe kingges moders court' he lizt'
 And she was of this massagere ful fayn
 And plesed him in al þat euere she myzt' 788

He drank wel his girdel vnder piȝt'
 He selepeȝ and he ffronteȝ in his gise
 Al nyght' to þe sonne gan arise 791

Ofte were his *lettres* stolle euerechione
 And counterfeted *lettres* in þat' wise
 þe kinge commaundeȝ his constable anone
 Vp peyn of hongyng' on an high Iwyse 795
 That' he ne shulde suffre in no wise
 Custance wiȝ-Inne his regne forto abide
 Thre daies and a quarter of a tyde 798

But' in þe same ship as he hire fonde
 Hure and her yonge sone and al her gere
 He shulde putte and croude fro þ^e londe
 And charge hure þat' she neuere eft come þere 802
 O my Custaunce wel may þi goost' haue fere
 And sleping' in þi dreame bene in penaunce
 Whan donegil cast' aH hir ordinaunce 805

This Massagere on morowe whan he woke
 Vnto þe Castel halt' þe next' waye
 And to þe Constable he þe *lettre* toke
 And whan þat' he þis pitous *lettre* saye 809
 fful oft he seide allas and walawaye
 lord Crist' quod he howe may þis *lettre* endure [leaf 97, back]
 So ful of synne is mony a creature 812

O myȝty god if' þat' it' be þi wille
 Siȝ þou art' riȝtful Iuge how may it' be
 þat' þou wilt' suffren Innocentz to spille
 And wicked folk regnen in prosperite 816
 O good Custance allas so woo is me
 þat' I mote be þi turmentour or deye
 On shames detli þer nys noon oþere waye 819

Weþen boþ 3onge and olde in al þat' place
 Whan þat' þe kinge þis cursed *lettre* sent'
 And Custance wiþ a dedly pale face
 þe ferþe day toward' her ship she went' 823
 But' napelees she takeþ in good entent'
 þe wille of Crist' and kneling' in þe stronde
 She saide lorde G. welcome be þi sonde 826

He þat' me kept' from þe fals blame
 While I was in þe londe amonges 3ou
 He kan me kepe from harme *and* eke fro sham
 In salt' See al-pou3e I se not' howe 830
 As stronge as euer he was he is rizt' nowe
 In hym trust' I and in his modere dere
 þat' is to me my saille and eke my stere 833

Hire litel child' lay weping' in her Arme
 An kneling' pitously to him she seide
 Pees litel sone I wil do þe noon harme
 Wiþ þat' her keercchef of her hede she breide 837
 And ouer' his smale yen she it' leyde
 And in her Arme she lulleþ it' ful fast'
 And in to heuene her yen vp she cast' 840

Modere quod she and maide bri3t' marie
 Soþe is þat' þorowe wommennys eggement' (leaf 98)
 Mankinde was lorn and dampned ay to dye
 ffor which þi child' was on croys yrent' 844
 þi blisful eyen segþ al his turment'
 þan is þer no comparison bytwene
 þi woo and any woo man may sustene 847

Thowe seghe þi sone yslayn bifore þine eyen
 And 3it' now lyueþ my litel child *parfay*
 Now lady bri3t' to whom al woful crien
 Thowe glory of wommanhode þou faire may 851

þow hauen of refute briȝt^t sterre of day
 Rewe on my child^t þat^t of þi gentilnesse
 Rewest^t on euery Rweful^h in distresse 854

O litel child allas wat^t is þi gilt^t
 þat^t neuer wrouȝtest^t synne as ȝit^t parde
 Why wil þine harde fadere haue þe spilt^t
 O mercye dere constable *quod* she 858
 As lat^t my litel child^t dwelle here *with* þe
 And ȝif þou darst^t not^t fauour *hym* for blame
 So kisse him onys in his faders name 861

Therwiþ she lokeþ bacward^t to þe lande
 And saide fare wel husbond^t rewthlees
 And vp she rest^t and walkeþ down þ^e stronde
 Toward^t þe shippe hire foloweþ al þe prees 865
 And euere she preieþ her child^t to hold^t his pees
 And takeþ her leue and *with* an holy entent^t
 She blesseþ hire and into ship she went^t 868

Availed was þe ship it^t is no drede
 Abundantly for hire a longe space
 And oþer necessaries þat shulde nede
 She had ynowe heryed be goddes *grace* 872
 ffor wynde and weder almyȝty god *purchase*
 And bringe hure home I can no better seye [leaf 98, back]
 But^t in þe See she driveþ forþ her weye 875

[PART III.]

Alla þe kyng^e commeþ home sone after^t þis
 Vnto his Castel of þe which I tolde
 And axeþ wher his wif^t and his child^t is
 The Constable gan about^t his hert^t cold^t 879

And pleynly al þe manere he hym told
 As 3e han herde I can telle it' no bettere
 And sheweþ þe kinge his seele *and* his lettere 882

And seide lord as 3e *commaunded* me
 Vp peyn of deþe so haue I done certeyne
 This massagere tormented was til he
 Most' be-knowen and tellen plat' *and* pleyne 886
 ffrom nyght' to nyzt' in what' place he had leyne
 And þus by witte and subtil enqueringe
 Ymagened was by whom þis harme can sprynge 889

The honde was knowen þat' þe *lettere* wrote
 And al þe venyme of þis cursed dede
 But' in what' wise certeynly I note
 þe effecte is þis þat' Alla out' of drede 893
 his modere selowe þat' mony men pleynly rede
 That' for she tratour was to her legeaunce
 Thus endeþ old' donegild' *with* meschaunce 896

The Sorowe þat' þis Alla nyzt *and* day
 Makeþ for his wif' and for his child' also
 Ther nys no tunge þat' it' telle may
 But' now wil I vnto Custance goo 900
 That' fleteþ in þe See in peyn *and* woo
 V. 3ere and more as liked *cristes* sonde
 Er þat' her shippe approached vnto londe 903

Vnder an hethen CasteH atte last'
 Of which þe name in my tixt' nozt' I fynde [leaf 99]
 Custance and eke þe child' þe see vp cast'
 Almyzty god þat' saueþ al man kinde 907
 Haue on custaunce and her childe som mynde
 þat' fallen is in hethen hand eft' sone
 In poynt' to spille as I shal telle 3ou sone 910

Downe fro þe CasteH comþe þere mony a wizt'
 To gawen on þis ship and on custance
 But' shortely from þe Castel on a nyzt'
 The lordes steward' god 3eue hym meschaunce 914
 A thief þat' had reyned our creaunce
 Come into shipp allone and seide he shuld'
 Her lemman be where so she wold' or nold' 917

Woo was þis wrecched womman þoo bygone
 Her childe cried and she cried pitously
 But' blisful mary halpe hure rizt' anone
 ffor wiþ her strogelinge wel *and* myztely 921
 þe thief fille ouer bord' al sodeynly
 And in þe See he dreynt' for vengeance
 And þus haþ crist' vnwemmed kepte custance 924

O foule lust' of luxurie lo þine ende [Latin note, p. 133.]
 Not' only þat' þou fayntest' manyns mynde 132
 But' verrely þou wilt' his body shende
 þe ende of þi werk or of þi lustes blynde 928
 Is compleynyng' how mony one may men fynde
 þat nouzt' for werk somtyme but' for þentente
 To done þis synne bene eiper' slayn or shente 931

How may þis weiike womman han þis strength
 Hire to defend' azeinst' þis Renegat'
 O Golyas vnmesurable of length
 How myzt' dauid make þe so mat 935
 So yonge and of armure so desolat'
 How durst' he loke vpon þi dredful face [leaf 99, back]
 Wel may men seen it' was but' goddes grace 938

Who 3af' Iudith corage or hardynesse
 To sleen hym Olesphernus in his tent'
 And to delyuere out' of wrecchednesse
 The puple of god I seye for þis entent' 942

That' riȝt' as god spirit' and vigor sent'
 To hem and saued hem out' of meschaunce
 So sent' he myȝt' and vigor to Custaunce 945

Forþ gob þe shippe þorowe-out' þe narrow mouþe
 Of Iubaltar and scepte dryuyng aye
 Som tyme west' and somtyme nourþe *and* souþe
 And somtyme Este ful mony a very daye 949
 Til Cristes modere blessed be ȝe aye
 haþ scapen þorgh her endeles goodnesse
 To make an ende of al her hevynesse 952

Now lat' vs stynt' of Custance but' a throwe
 And speke we of þe Romayn Emperour
 þat' out' of Surry haþ by letters knowe
 þe slaughter of Cristen folk and dishonoure 956
 Doon to his douȝter by a fals tratour
 I mene þe Cursed wicked Sowdenesse
 That' at þe feest' lete scleen boþ more *and* lesse 959

For which þe Emperour haþ sent' anon
 His Senatour wiþ real ordynaunce
 And oþer lordes god wote mony on
 On Surriens to taken hie vengeaunce 963
 They brennen sleen *and* bringgen hem to meschaunce.
 fful mony a day but' shortely þis is þende
 Homword to Rome þei shapen hem to wende 966

This senatour repaireþ *with* victorye
 To Romeward saillinge ful Rially [leaf 100]
 And mette þe Shippe dryuyng' as seiþ þe storye
 In which Custance sitte ful pitously 970
 No þing' ne knewe what' she was ne why
 She was in such aray. ne she nyl sey
 Of her astaat' þough þat' she shulde deye 973

HE bringeþ her to Rome and to his wiff
 He 3aue hure and her 3onge sone also
 And wiþ þe Senatoure she lad her liff
 Thus can our lady bringen out' of woo 977
 Woolful Custance and mony an oþer moo
 And longe tyme dwelled she in þat' place
 In holy werkes euer as was hire grace 980

The Senatours wif her Aunte was
 But' for al þat' she knewe her neuere þe more
 I wil no lenger tarien in þis cas
 But' to kinge Alla which I spake of yore 984
 þat' for his wiff wepeþ and sigheþ sore
 I wil retorne *and* lete I wil Custance
 Vnder þe Senatours gouernaunce 987

Kynge Alla which þat' had his modere sclayn
 Vpon a day felle in such repentaunce
 þat' if I shortely tellen shal *and* playn
 To Rome he commeþ to reseceyuen his penañce 991
 And putte him in þe Popes ordinañce
 In by and lowe and Ihesu crist' bysou3t'
 ffor3eue his wicked werkes þat' he wrou3t' 994

The fame anon þorowe Room toune is born
 How Alla þe king' shal commen in pilgrim'age
 By herberious þat' wenten hym biforn
 ffor which þe Senatoure as was vsage 998
 Rode hym a3ein and mony of his lynage
 As wel to shewen his hie magnificence [leaf 100, back]
 As to doon eny king' a Reuerence 1001

Grete chere doþ þis noble Senatour
 To kinge Alla and he to hym also
 Euerech of hem doþ oþere grete honour
 And so byfelle þat' in a day or two 1005

This Senatour is to king^t Alla goo /
 To feest^t and shortely if I shal not^t ly
 Custance sone in his Companye 1008

Somme men wold^t seyn atte request^t of Custance
 This Senatour hap^t ladde þis child^t to fest^t
 I may not tellen euery Circumstance
 Be as be may þer was he atte leest^t 1012

But^t soþe is þis þat^t at^t his moders hest^t
 Byforn alla duringe þe metes space
 The Childe stode loking^t in þe kingges face 1015

This Alla kinge hap^t of þe child^t gret^t wonder
 And to þe Senatore he seide anoon
 Whoos is þat^t faire childe þat^t stondeþ 3onder^t
 I noot^t quod he by god and be seynt^t Iohⁿ 1019

A modere he hap^t but^t fadere hap^t he non^t
 þat^t I of wote and shortly in a stounde
 He told^t Alla how þat^t þis child^t was founde 1022

But^t god wote quod þis Senatour also
 So vertuous a lyuere in my liff
 Ne segh I neuere as she ne herd of mo
 Of worldly wommen / mayde ne wiff 1026

I dar wel seide she had leuer^t a knyff
 þorowe-out^t her brest^t þan bene a womman wicke
 þer is no man couþe bringe hire to þat^t prikke 1029

Now was þis Childe as like vnto custance
 As possible is a creature to be [leaf 101]

This Alla hap^t þe face in remembrañce
 Of Dame Custance and þeron mused he 1033

If þat^t þe childes modere were ouzt^t she
 þat^t is his wif and priuely he sizt^t
 And spedde hym fro þe table þat^t he myzt^t 1036

Perfay he pouzt^t þe fantom is in myn hede
 I ouzt^t demen of skilful Iuggement^t
 That^t in þe salt^t se my wif is dede
 And afterward^d he made his argument^t 1040
 What wote I 3if^t þat^t crist^t haþ hider^t sent^t
 My wiff by see as wel as he her^t sent^t
 To my cuntre from þennes as she was went^t 1043

And aftere anoon home wiþ þe Senatoure
 Gop^t alla forto see þis wonder^t chance
 This Senatour doþ Alla grete honoure
 And hastify he sent^t aftere Custance 1047
 But^t trusteþ wel her lust^t nouzt^t to dance
 Whan þat^t she wist^t wherfor was þat^t sonde
 Vnneþes on her fete she myzt^t stonde 1050

Whan Alla segh^t his wif faire he her grette
 And wepte it^t was reuþe forto see
 ffor atte first^t loke he on hir sette
 He knewe wel verrely þat^t it^t was she 1054
 And for sorowe as dombe stant as a tre
 So was hert^t shette in her distresse
 Whan she remembred his vnkindenesse 1057

Twise she swowneþ in his owne sizt^t
 He wepte and him excuseþ pitously
 Nowe god quod he and his halowes brizt^t
 So wisly on my soule haue mercy 1061
 þat^t of 3oure harme as giltelees am I
 As is Maurice Mi sone so lik 3oure face [leaf 101, back]
 Ellis þe feend me fecche out^t of þis place 1064

Longe was þe sobbyng^t and þe bitter peyne
 Er þat^t her wooful hertes myzten cese
 Grete was þe pite forto here hem pleyne
 þorgħ^t whiche pleyntes gan her woo encrees 1068

I prei 3ou aH my labour to relees
 I may not' tellen her woo vntil to morowe
 I am so very to speke of her sorowe 1071

But' fynaly whan þat' þe soþe is wist'
 That' Alla giltlees was of her woo
 I trowe an C. tymes ben þei kist'
 And suche a blisse is þer ytwix hem twoo 1075
 þat' saue þe Ioie þat' lestep euermo
 þer is non like þat' eny creature
 Haþ seyne or shal while þe worldt may dure 1078

Tho preied she her husbondt mekely
 In relief of her longe pitous pyne
 þat' he wolde prei hure fadere specialy
 þat' of his maieste he woldt enclyne 1082
 To vouche sauf *with* him som day to dyne
 She preied him eke he shulde by no way
 vnto her fader no wordt of hire say 1085

Somme men woldt seyn how þat' þe childe Maurice
 Doþ þis massage vnto þe Emperour
 But' as I gesse alla was not' so nyce
 To him þat' was of so souereyn honour 1089
 As he þat' is of cristen folk' þe flour'
 Sent' eny childe but' it is bette to deme
 He went' him self and so it' may wel seme 1092

This Emperour haþ graunted gentilly
 To come to dyner as he hym bysou3t' [leaf 102]
 And wel rede I he loked bisily
 Vpon þis childt and on his dou3ter þou3t' 1096
 Alla goþ to his Inne and as hym ou3t'
 Arraied for þis feest' in euery wise
 As ferforþ as his conyng' may suffice 1099

The morowe come and Alla can hym dresse
 And eke his wif þis emperour forto mete
 And forþ þei ride in Ioie and in gladnesse
 And whan she segħ her fadere in þe strete 1103
 She liȝt a-doune and falleþ hym to fete
 ffadere quod she ȝoure ȝonge child Custance
 Is nowe ful clene out of ȝoure remembrance 1106

I am ȝoure douȝtere Custance quod she
 þat whilom ȝe sent vnto Surray
 It am I fadere þat in þe salt see
 Was putte allone and dampned forto dye 1110
 Good fader now I yow mercye crye
 Send me no more vnto noon heȝenes
 But þonke my lord here of his kindenes 1113

Who can þe pitous Ioye tellen alle
 Bitwixe hem þre siþ þei ben þus ymette
 But of my tale make an ende I shal
 The day goþ fast I wil no lenger lette 1117
 This glad folk to dyner þei hem sette
 In Ioye and blisse at mete I lat hem dwelle
 A þousand fold wel more þan I can telle 1120

This child Maurice was siþen Emperour
 Made by þe pope and lyued cristenly
 To cristes church he did grete honour
 But I lat al þis story passen by 1124
 Of Custance is my tale specialy
 In olde romayn Gestes may men fynde
 Mawrices lif I bere it not in mynde

[leaf 102, back]
 [Latin note, p. 133.]
 182

This king Alla whan he his tyme say
 Wiþ Custance his holy wif so swete
 To Engelond ben þei come þe riȝt way
 Wher as þei lyve in Ioie and in quiete 1131

But litel while it lasteþ I 3ou hete
 Ioie of þis world for tyme wil not abide
 ffrom day to nyȝt it changeþ as þe tyde 1134

Who lyued euere in suche delite a day [Latin note, p. 133.]
 þat ne meued eiþer conscience 182
 Or Ire or talent or somkyn affray
 Envie or pride. or passioñ or offence 1138
 I ne seie but for þis ende þis sentence
 þat litel while in Ioye or in plesaunce
 Lasteþ þe blisse of alla wiþ Custaunce 1141

For deþ þat takeþ of high and lough his rente
 Whan passed was a ȝeer euene as I gesse
 Out of þis world þis kinge alla he hente 1145
 ffor whom Custance haþ ful grete hevynesse
 Now lat vs preien god his saule blisse
 And Dame Custance fynally to seye
 Toward þe towne of Rome goþ her weye 1148

TO Rome is come þis holy creature
 And fyndeþ her frende hool and sound
 Now is she scaped aȝ hure auenture
 And whan she her fadere haþ yfounde 1152
 Doune on her knees falleþ she to grounde
 Weping for tendernesse in hert blith
 She herieþ God an C. thousand siþe 1155

In vertue and holy Almesdede
 þei lyuen aȝ and neuere a sondrie wende [leaf 103]
 Til deþ departe hem þis lif þei lede
 And fareþ now wel my tale is at an ende 1159
 Now Ihesu crist þat of his myȝt may sende
 Ioye after woo gouerne vs in his grace
 And kepe vs aȝ þat beñ in þis place 1162

¶ Here endeþ þe tale of þe man of lawe

[*The Squire's Prologue follows in the MS.*]

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe sqwier [*on leaf 103*]

Oure hoost' vpon his stiropes stood anoñ || þe prologe

And seide good men herkenep eueychoñ

This was a þrifty tale for þe nones

Sire parissñ preest quod he for goddes bonys 1166

Telle vs a tale as was þi forward yore

I se wele pat' 3e leerned men in lore

Can moche good by goddes dignyte

þe Parsones hym answered benedicite 1170

What' eileþ þe man so synfully to swere

Oure hoost' answerd' O Iankyn be 3e þere

I smelle a lollard' in þe wynde quod he

Howe good men quod our hoost' herkneþ me 1174

Abideþ for goddis digne passioñ

ffor we shal haue a predicacioñ

þis lollard' here wil prechen vs somewhat'

Nay by my fader' soule þat shal he nat' 1178

Seide þe Sqwier here shal he nat' preche

He shal no gospel glosen here ne teche

He leueþ al in þe grete god he

He wolde sowen som difficulte 1182

Or springeþ Cokel in oure clene corn

And þefore hoost' I warne þe byforn

Mi Ioly body shal a tale telle

And I shal Clynken 3ou so mery a belle 1186

þat' I shal waken al þis companye

But' it' shal not' bene of Philosophie

Ne Phislyas ne teermes queynt' of lawe

þer is but' litel latyn in my mawe 1190

[*The Squire's Tale follows in the MS.*]

¶ The Sqwiers Tale.

[headline]
[leaf 103, back]

And here by-

gynnep þe Sqwiers tale. /

At Sarray in þe land of Tartarye ¶ ffabula Armigeri
 þer dwelt' a kyng' þat' werried Russye
 þorgh which þer deyed mony a dughty man
 þis noble king' was cleped Cambynskan 12
 Which in his tyme was of so grete renoun
 þat þer nas nowhere in no regioun
 So Excellent' a lord in al þinge
 Hym lacked nouzt' þat' longed to a kyng 16
 As of þe secte of which þat' he was born
 He kepte his lay to which þat' he was swor̄n
 And þerto he was hardy wise *and* riche
 And pitous and Iust' alway ylich 20
 Soop of his worde benygne *and* honorable
 Of his corage as ony centre stable ¶ *centrum circuli*
 3ongt' fresshe and stronge in Armes desirous
 As eny bachilere in al his hous 24
 A faire *persone* he was and fortunat'
 And kept' alway so wel rial astat'
 þat' þer nas nawhere such a noþer man
 This noble kinge þis tatre Cambynskan 28
 had two sones on Eltheta his wiff
 Of which þe eldest' hight' Algarsiff
 þat' oþer was cleped Camballo
 A doughtere had þis worþi kinge also 32
 þat 3ongest' was and hizt' Canace
 But' forto telle 3ou al her beute
 It' liþe not' in my tunge ne in my connyng
 I dar not' vndertake so hye a þinge 36

Myn engelissĥ eke is insufficient'	
It' most bene a ritther' excellent'	
þat' kouþe his colours longyng' for þat' arte	
If he shuld here discryve eny part'	40
I am noon suche I most speke as I can	
And so byfelle þat' þis Cambynskan	
Hath xx ^{ti} wyntere born his diademe	[leaf 104]
As he was wonte fro 3ere to 3ere I deme	44
He lete þe feest' of his natiuite	
Done Crien þorghĥ Sarray his Cite	
þe last' Idus of March' after' þe 3ere	
Phebus þe sonne ful Iolyf was <i>and</i> clere	48
ffor he was nye his exaltacioñ	
In Martes face and in his mancioñ	
In Aries þe Colerik þe hote signe	
fful lusty was þe weder' <i>and</i> benigne	52
ffor which þe fowles azeinst' þe sonne shene	
What' for the seson and þe 3onge grene	
fful loude songe hir' affeccioñs	
Hem semed han geten hem proteccioñs	56
Azeinst' þe swerd' of wynter kene and cold'	
This Cambynskan of which I haue 3ou told'	
In Rial vesturent' sitte vpon his des	
Wip dia[de]me ful high in his paleys	60
And halt' his feest' so solempne <i>and</i> so riche	
þat' in þis world' ne was þer noñ it liche	
Of which if I sal telle al þe araye	
Than wold it' occupie a somers daye	64
And eke it' nedeþ nat' to devise	
And euery cours þe order' of her' seruise	
I wil not' telle of her strañge sewes	
Ne of her swannes ne her heron-sewes	68
Eke in þat' londe as tellen kny3tes olde	
There is som mete þat' is for deynte holde	
That' in þis londe men recche but' smaĥ	
þer nys no man þat' may reporten aĥ	72

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

I wil not tary 3ou for it is pryme	
And for it is no frute but losse of tyme	
Vnto my furst I wil haue my recours	
And so byfeh þat after þe þred recours	76
Whil þat þis kinge sitte þus in his nobleye	
Herkenyng his menstralles her þingges pleye	
Byform him at þe boord deliciously	[leaf 104, back]
Inne atte halle door so sodeynly	80
Ther come a knyght vpon a stede of bras	
And in his honde a brood myroure of glas	
Vpon his þombe he had of gold a rynge	
And by his side a naked swerd hangyng	84
And vp he rideþ to þe heigh boord	
In al þe halle ne was þer spoke no word	
ffor merveile of þis knyght hym to biholde	
fful bisily þei wayten 3onge and olde	88
This stronge knyght þat come þus sodeynly	
Al armed saue his hede ful richely	
Salued þe king þe quene and lordes alle	
By ordere as þei seten in þe halle	92
Wiþ so high reuerence and obeysance	
As wel in speche as in his countenance	
þat Gawayne wiþ his olde curtasie	
þouze he come ageyn out of ffarye	96
Ne coude him nouzt amende <i>with</i> no word	
And after þis bifore þe highe bord	
He wiþ a manly vois saide his massage	
After þe forme vsed in his langage	100
With-out vice of sillable or of <i>lettre</i>	
And for his tale shulde seme þe bettere	
Accordant to his wordes was his chere	
As techen arte of speche hem þat it lere	104
Al be it þat I can not sowne his styele	
Ne can not clymben ouer so hiȝe a styele	
3it say I þis þat as to comune entente	
Thus moche amounten al þat euere he ment	108

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

If it^t so be þat^t I haue it^t in my mynde
 He seide þe kyng of Arabye and of ynde
 My liege lord^d on þis solemne day
 Salweþ^þ 3ou as he best^t can *and* may 112
 And seendeþ^þ 3owe in honur^t of 3our feste
 By me þat^t am redy al at^t 3oure heeste
 This stede of bras þat^t esily & weþ^þ [leaf 105]
 Can in a space of a day naturel 116
 This is to saye in *four and twenti*¹ houres [1 MS xxiiij.]
 Wher so 3ou lust^t in drou3t^t or in shoures
 Beren 3oure body in to euery place
 To which^h 3oure hertes wilneþ^þ forto pace 120
 Wiþ^þ-oute wemme of 3ou þorow foule or fare
 Or if 3ow list^t to flee as hie in þe Eire
 As doþ an Egle whan him list^t to sore
 This same stede shal bere 3ou euermore 124
 Wiþ^þ-outen harme til 3e be where 3ou list^t
 þow þat^t 3e sclepen on his bak^t or rest^t
 And turne a3ein wiþ^þ wriþing^t of a pynne
 He þat^t it^t wrou3t^t cowde ful mony a gynue 128
 He waited mony a constellaciõ
 Or he had doo þis operaciõ
 And knewe ful mony a seal *and* mony a bonde
 This myroure eke þat^t I haue in myn honde 132
 Hap^þ suche a my3t^t þat^t men may in it see
 whan þer shal fallen eny aduersite
 Vnto 3our^t regne or vnto 3our^t self also
 And openly who is 3oure freend^d or ffoo / 136
 And ouer al þis if eny lady brizt^t
 Hap^þ sette her hert^t in eny maner wizt^t
 If he be fals she shal his tresõ see
 His neue loues *and* al his subtilite 140
 So openly þat^t þer shal no þing^t hide
 wherfore ageyn þis lusty somers tyde
 This myrour and þis ryng^t þat^t 3e may see
 He hap^þ sent^t to my lady Canacee 144

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

3oure excellent ^t dou3tere þat ^t is here	
þe vertue of þis ryng ^e if 3e wil here	
Is þis? þat ^t if her list ^t it ^t forto were	
Vpon her thombe or in her purs it bere	148
þer nys no fowle þat ^t fleep vnder þ ^e heuene	
þat ^t he ne shal vnderstonde his steuene	
And knowe his menyng ^t openly <i>and</i> pleyne	[leaf 105, back]
And answe ^r e him in his langage ageyne	152
And euery gras þat ^t groweþ vpon rote	
She shal wel knowe <i>and</i> whome it wil do bote	
And be his woundes neuere so depe <i>and</i> wide/	
This naked swerd þat ^t longeþ by my side	156
Such ^e vertue haþ þat ^t what ^t man so 3e smyte	
þorowe-out ^t his armure it ^t wil kerue <i>and</i> bite	
were it ^t as thikke as is a braunched oke	
And what ^t man þat ^t is wounded <i>with</i> þe stroke	160
Shal neuere be hool til þat 3ou list ^t of grace	
To stroke him <i>with</i> þe plat ^t in þilk place	
Ther he is lirt ^t þis is as moche to seyñ	
3e mote <i>with</i> þe plat ^t swerde ageyñ	164
Stroke hym in the wounde <i>and</i> it ^t wil close	
This is a verrey soþe wiþ-uten glose	
It ^t failleþ nou3t ^t þe whilis it ^t is in 3our holde	
And whan þis kny3t ^t haþ þus þis tale tolde	168
He rideþ out ^t of þe halle <i>and</i> down he lizt ^t	
His stede which ^e þat ^t shoon as sonne bri3t ^t	
Stant ^t in þe courte stille as eny stoon	
This knyght ^t is to his chambre lad anoon	172
And is vnarmed and to þe mete I-sette	
þe presentes bene ful richely fette	
This is to seyñ þe swerd ^t and þe <i>Mirroure</i>	
And born anoon vnto þe hie toure	176
Wiþ certeyn officers yordeyned þefore	
And vnto Canacee þe ryng ^t is bore	
Solempnely þer she sitte atte þ ^e table	
But ^t sikerly wiþ-oute eny fable	180

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

pè hors of bras þat' may not' be remewed It' stant' as it' were to þe grounde yglwed / þer may no man out' of þe place it' drive ffor noon engyn of wyndas or polyve	184
And cause whi for þei can not' þe craft' And þefore in þe place þei han it' laft' Tyl þat' þe knyzt' haþ tauzt' hem þe manere	[leaf 106] 188
To voyden him as 3e shal after here Grete was þe prees þat' swarmed to <i>and</i> froo To Gowren on þis hors þat' stondeþ soo / ffor it' so hegh was . and so brode <i>and</i> long'	192
So wel proporciond forto be stronge Rizt' as it' were a stede of lumbardye Ther-wiþ so horsly and so quyke of eye As it' a ge[n]til poyleis coursere were ffor Certes from his tale vnto his ere	196
Nature ne art' ne koude hym nouzt' mende In no degre as al þe puple wende But' euer-more hir' most' wonder was / Howe þat' it' cowde gon and was of bras	200
It' was of fayre as þe puple semed Dyuers folk dyuersly han demed As mony hedes as mony wittes þer bene þei Mormured as don a swarme of been	204
And mede skilles after her fantasies Rehersinge of þe olde poetries	¶.i. equus pedasus.
And seide it' was lik' þe Pegasee þe hors þat' had wenges forto fle	208
Or ellis it' was þe Gr[e]kes hors Synon That' brouzt' Troy to destruction As men in þise olde Geestes rede Myne hert' quod oon is euer more in drede	212
I trowe somme men of arnes bene þer-Inne That' shapen hem þis Cite forto wynne It' were rizt' good þat' al such þing' were knowe Anoþer rowned to his felawe lowe	216

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And seide he lieþ for it is rap̄er like	
An apparence ymade by soñ magike	
As Iogelours pleyen at þise feestes grete	
Of sondry þouztes þus þei Iangle <i>and</i> trete	220
As lewde puple demen comonly	
Of þingges þat bene made subtily	
Than þei can in her lewdenesse comprehende	[leaf 106, back]
þei demen gladly to þe badder ende	224
An somme of hem wondren on þe myroure	
þat born was vp vnto þe maister toure	
How men myzt in hit suche þingges see	
Anoþer answerd <i>and</i> seide it myzt wel be	228
Naturelli by composiciõs	
Of Angeles and of seley reflexiõs	
And seide þat in rome was such̄ oon	
þei speke of Alocen and Vitilioñ	232
And of Aristote þat writ in her lyues	
Of queynt Mirours <i>and</i> of prospectyues	
As knowen þei þat han her bokes herde	
And oþer folk han wondred on þe swerde	236
þat wold perce þourgh̄ euery þinge	
And fille in speche of Thelophus þe kinge	
And of Achilles for his queinte spere	
ffor he kouþe wiþ it boþ hele <i>and</i> dere	240
Rizt in such̄ wise as men may <i>with</i> þe swerde	
Of which̄ rizt nowe 3e han 3oure seluen herde	
þe[i] speken of sondry hardyng of MetaH	
And speken of medecynes þer-wiþ-aH	244
And howe <i>and</i> whan it shuld harded be	
which̄ is vnknowe algate vnto me	
¶ Tho speke þei of Ganaces rynges	
And seiden aH þat such̄ a wondere þinge	248
Of craft of ryngges had þei neuere noñ	
Saue þat he Moyses and kyng Salomon	
Had a nane of Conyng in swich̄ arte	
Thus seyn þe puple and drawn hem a parte	252

But napelees somme seide þat it was
 wonder to maken of feerne Asshen glas
 And ȝit is glas not like asshen of feerne
 But for þei han knowen it so ȝerne 256
 Therefore Ceseþ her Iangelinge *and* her wonder
 As sore wondren some on cause of þondere
 On ebbe on flood on gossomer *and* on myst [leaf 107]
 And al þing to þe cause is wist 260
 Thus Iangelen þei and demen and devise
 Til þat þe kinge can from his boord arise
 Phebus haþ laft þe angle Meredyonal
 And ȝit ascending was þe beest Royal 264
 þe gentil leon wiþ his Aldrean
 Whan þat þis tartre kinge Cambynskan
 Roos from his boord þer as he satte ful hie
 Byforne him goþ þe lowde Mynstralceye 268
 Til he come to his Chambre of paramentys
 Ther as þei sownen dyuers Instrumentys
 That is like an heuene forto here
 Now daunsen lusty venus children dere 272
 ffor in þe flissþ hir lady satte ful hie
 And lokeþ on hem wiþ a frendly ye
 This noble kinge is sette vpon his trone
 þis straunge knyght is fette to hym ful sone 276
 And on the Daunce he goþ wiþ Canace
 Here is þe reuel and þe Iolite
 þat is not able a dulle man to deuyse
 He most han knowe loue and his seruyse 280
 And be a feestlicþ man as fressþ as may
 That shulden ȝou deuyesen swicþ array
 Who couþe tellen ȝou þe forme of daunces
 So vncouþe and such fressþ countynaunces / 284
 Such Subtile lokingges and dyssymulynges
 ffor drede of Ialowsie mennys apperceyuunges
 No man but launcelett *and* he is dede
 þerfor I passe ouer of al þis lustihede 288

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

I say no more but in þis Iolynesse
 I lete hem to men to soper hem dresse
 þe Steward bit spices forto hie
 And eke the wyne in al þis melodye 292
 þe vsshers and þe sqwiers ben ygoñ
 þe Spices and þe wyne is come anōn
 Thei ete and drinke and whan þis had an ende [leaf 107, bk]
 Vnto þe temple as reson was þei wende 290
 ¶ The servise done / þei souþen al by day
 whatt nedep þou rehersen her array
 Eche man wote wel þat at a kingges feest
 Hap plente to þe mest and to þe leest 300
 And deyntees moo þan be in my knowinge
 And aftere soper goþ þis noble kyng
 To sene þis hors of bras with al a route
 Of lordes and ladys hym aboute 304
 Such wondring was þer on þis hors of bras
 þat siþen þe grete sege of Troye was
 þer as men wondren on an hors also
 Ne was þer such a wondering as was þoo 308
 By fynaly þe kinge axep þe knyzt
 þe vertue of þe Coursere and þe myzt
 And preide hym to telle his gouernañce
 þe hors anon gan forto trippe and dançe 312
 whan þat þis knyght leide hond vpon his reyne
 And seide Sir þer is to more to seyne
 but whan þe list to ride owhere
 3e moot trille a pynne stonde in his ere 316
 which I shal telle þou bytwene vs twoo
 3e mote nempne hym to what place also
 Or to what cuntre þat þou list to ride ./
 And whan 3e come þere as þou list to abide 320
 Bidde hym descende and trille anopere pynne
 ffor þer-Inne lith þeffecte of al þat gynne
 And [he] wol doune descende and done þoure wille
 And in þat place he wille abide stille 324

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

pougħ al the world had þe contrary swore
 He shal not þennys by throwe ne ybore
 Or if þou list bidde hym þennes gōōn
 Trille þis pynne and he wil vanyssh anōn 328
 Out of þe sizt of euery maner wizt
 And come azein be it day or nyght
 whan þat þou list to clepen hym ageyn [leaf 108]
 In swich a gise as I shal to þou seyn / 332
 By-twixen þou and me and þat ful sone
 Ride whan þou list þer is no more to done
 ¶ Enformed whan þe kyngt was of þe knyzt
 And hap conceyued in his witt arizt 336
 The manere *and* þe forme of al þis þinge
 fful glad and bliþe þe noble douzt kyng
 Repeyring to his reuel as byforñ
 þe bridel is into þe toure born 340
 And kepte amonge his Iwels leef *and* dere
 þe hors vanysshed I note in what manere
 Out of her sizt þe gete no more of mee
 But þus I lete in lust and Iolite 344
 This Cambynskan is lordes feestinge
 Til wel nygh þe day bygan to springe

¶ **Explicit. prima pars./**

¶ **The Stagt of an hert**

The norice of digestion is sclepe
 Gan on hem wynke and bad hem take kepe 348
 þat moch mete and labour wil haue rest
 And wiþ a galpingt mouþe hem albycast
 And seide þat it was tyme to lye adoune
 ffor blood was in his domynacioun 352
 Cheressheþ blood natures frende *quod* he
 þei þonken hym galpingt by two or þre
 And euery wight gan drowen hym to his rest
 As sclepe hem bad þei toke it for þe best 356

Her dremes now not^t be tolde for me
 fful were her hedes of ffumosite
 þat^t causet^t drem of which þer is no charge
 þei selepen til it was pryme large 360
 þe moste parte but^t it^t were Canacee
 She was ful mesurable as wommen be
 ffor of her fadere had she take her leue
 To goo to rest^t sone after it was Eue 364
 Her list^t not^t appalled forto be [leaf 108, back]
 ffor on þe morowe vnfeestlich forto see
 And sclepte hure first^t sclepe and awoke
 ffor such a Ioie she in her herte toke 368
 Boþ of her queynt^t rynges and of her myroure
 þat^t xx^{ti} tyme she chaunged her colour
 And in her sclepe riȝt^t for impressiō
 Of her myroure she had a visiō 372
 wherfore er þat^t þe sonne vp gan glide
 She cleped vpon her maistresse here beside
 And seide þat^t hir list^t forto arise
 þise olde wommen þat^t bene gladly wise 376
 As is her maistresse answerd^t hir' anōn
 And seide Madame whidere wold^t ȝe gōn
 þus erly for folke bene al in rest^t
 I wil quod she arise for me lest^t 380
 No lenger slepen but^t walken aboute
 Her Maistresse clepeþ wommen a grete route
 And vp þei risen wel . ten or twelue
 Vpriseþ fresshe Canace her selue 384
 As rodde and briȝt^t as þei þe ȝonge sonne
 þat^t in þe Ram is ten degrees vp ronne
 Noon hier was he whan she reddy was
 And forþ she walked esily a pas 388
 Arraied aftere þe lusty seson sote
 listly forto prey and walk on fote
 Nat^t but^t .v. or .vj. of her mayne
 And in a trenche fer in þe park/ gooþ she 392

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

The vapour which þat fro þe erthe glode Makeþ þe sonne to seme rody <i>and</i> brode But napelees it was so faire a sizt þat it made aH her hertes forto lizt	396
What for þe seson and þe mowrnynge And for þe fowles þat she herde synge ffor rizt anoon she wist what þei ment Rizt by her songe and knewe al her entent	400
¶ The knotte whi þat every tale is told 3if it be taried til lust be cold Of hem þat han it herkened after 3ore þe Sauour passeþ euer lenger þe more	404
ffor ffulsomnesse of prolixite And by þis same reson þenkeþ me I shuld vnto þe knotte condescende And maken of her walking sone an ende	408
¶ Amydde a tree for-drye as white as chalke As Canacee was plaiyng in her walke þer satte a fawcoñ ouer her hede ful hie þat wiþ a pitous vois so gan to crie	412
þat alle in þe wode resed of her crie And beten had her self so pitously Wip bothe her wenges to þe rede blode Ranne endelonge þe tre þer as she stode	416
And euer in oon she cried alway <i>and</i> shrighit And wiþ her beke her seluen so she pi3t þat þer ne was Tigre ne cruel beest þat dwelleþ eiper in wode or in forest	420
þat ne wold haue wepte if þat she wepe couþe ffor sorowe of hir she shrighit alway so louþe ffor þer nas neuere 3it man on lyue If þat I coude a fawcon wel diseryve	424
þat herd of such anoþer of fairnesse As wel of plummage as of gentilnesse Of shappe of al þat my3t rekned be A ffawcon peregryne þan semed she .	428

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Of fremde londe and eueremore as she stode
 She swowned nowe and nowe for lakke of blood
 Til wel nygh is she fallen fro þe tre
 This faire kyngges doughter' þis Canace 432
 þat' on her fynger bere þe queynte rynge
 þorgh which she vnderstode wel euery þinge
 þat' eny foule may in his ledne seyne
 And coude answe're him in his ledne ageyne 436
 Haþ vnderstode þat' þis fawcon seide [leaf 109, back]
 And wel nygh for þe rouþe alme'st' she deide
 And to þe tree she goþ ful hastely
 And on þis faucon lokeþ ful pitously 440
 And helde her lappe abrood for wel she wist'
 þe faucon most' falle from þe twist'
 Whan þat' it' swowned next' for lacke of blode
 A longe while to waite her she stode 444
 Til atte last' she spake in þis manere
 Vnto þe hawke as 3e shal after here
 ¶ What' is þe cause if' it' be forto telle
 þat' 3e bene in þis furial peyn of helle 448
 Quod Canacee vnto þis hawke aboue
 Is þis for sorowe of detþ or losse of loue
 ffor as I trowe þise bene causes two
 þan causen most' a gentil hert' woo / 452
 Of other harme it' nedeþ not' to speke
 ffor þi 3oure self vpon youre self 3ou wreke
 Which þat' proueth wel þat' eiþere ire or drede
 Mote bene encheson of 3oure cruel dede 456
 Siþ þat' I see noon oþer wizt' 3ou chace
 ffor loue of god so doþ 3our self grace
 Or what' may be 3oure helpe for west' nor este
 Ne seghe I neuere er nowe ne brid ne beste 460
 þat' ferde wiþ him self so pitously
 3e sclee me wiþ 3oure sorowe verreyly
 I haue of 3ou so grete compassioun
 ffor goddes loue come fro þe tree adoun 464

And as I am a kingges douȝhter' trewe
 If þat' I verrely þe causes knewe
 Of ȝoure dis[e]se if it' lay in my nyȝt'
 I wold amende it' er þat' it were nyȝt' 468
 As wisly helpe me grete god of kinde
 And Erbes shal I riȝt' ynow fynde
 To hele wiþ ȝoure hirtes hastely
 þoo shrighȝt' þis fawcon ȝit' more pitously 472
 þan euere she did and fille to grounde anōn [leaf 110]
 And lith a swowne dede as is þe stoñ
 Til Canacee hap in hure lappe her take
 Vnto þat' tyme she gan of swowne awake 476
 And after þat' she of swowne gan vpbreide
 Riȝt' in hire hawkes leodene þus she seide
 ¶ þat' pite rennep' sone in gentil herte
 ffeling' his symilitude in peynes smerte 480
 Is proued alday as men may it see
 As wel be werk' as be auctorite
 ffor gentil hert' kepeþ gentillesse
 I se wele þat' ȝe han on my distresse 484
 Compassion my faire Canacee
 Of verrey wommanly benignyte
 That' nature in ȝoure principles hap sette
 But' for noon hope forto fare þe bette 488
 But' forto obeye vnto ȝoure herte free
 And forto maken oþer be ware by me
 As by þe whelpe chastised is the lyōn
 Riȝt' for þat' cause and for þat' conclusioñ 492
 While þat' I haue a leisere and a space
 Myn harme I wil confessen er I pace
 And euere while þat' she her sorowe told'
 þat' oþer wepte as she to water wold' 496
 Til þat' þe ffaucon bad hir' to be stille
 And wiþ a sighe þus she seide hir' tille
 Ther I was bredde allas þat' ilk daye
 And fostred in a roche of Merbel graye 500

So tenderly þat no þing ciled me
 I ne wist not what was aduersite
 Til I coude flee ful hie vndere þe skie
 Tho dwelled a tercelet me fast by 504
 þat semed welle of al gentilnesse
 Al were he ful of treson and falsnesse
 It is wrapped vnder humble chere
 And vnder hwe of troupe & in such manere ./ 508
 Vndere plesaunce and vnder bisy peyne [leaf 110, back]
 þat no wight couþe han wende he coude feyne
 So depe in greyne he dyed his coloures /
 Rizt as a serpent hyd hym vnder floures 512
 Til he may se his tyme forto bite
 Rizt so þis god of loue ypocrite
 Doþ so his serymonijs and obeysances
 And kepeþ in semblaunt al his obseruaunces / 516
 That sowneþ into gentilnesse of loue
 As in a tompe is al þe faire aboute
 And vnder is þe cours which as 3e wote
 Such was þis ypocrite boþ colde and hote 520
 And in þis wise he serued his entente
 þat saue þe feende non wist what he mente
 Til he so longe had wepte and compleyned
 And many a 3eer his servise to hym feyned 524
 Til þat myn hert to pitous and to nyce
 Al Innocent of his crowned malice
 ffor-ferde of his deþ as þouzt me
 Vpon his oþes and his Suerte 528
 Graunted hym loue vpon þis condicioun
 þat euer moo myn honure and my renoun
 Were saued boþ privey and apert
 þis is to seyn þat after his dissert 532
 I 3aue hym al myn hert and my þouzt
 God woot and he þat oþer wise nouzt
 And toke his hert in chaunge of myn for ay
 But soþ is seide go siþen mony a day 536

A trewe wight and a þeef thenkeþ not oñ
 And whan he sawe þe þing so fer ygoñ
 þat I [had] graunted hym fully my loue
 In such a gise as I haue seide aboue 540
 An zeuen hym my trewe hert as free
 As he swore he 3af his hert to me
 Anon þis tigre ful of doublenesse
 ffil on his knees wiþ so deuoute humbleesse 544
 Wiþ hye reuerence and as by his chere [leaf 111]
 So like a gentile louere of manere
 So rauissed as it semed for þe Ioye
 þat neuere Iason ne Paris of Troye 548
 Iason certes ne noon oþere man
 Siþ Lameþ was þat alþer furst biganne
 To louen two as writen folk to-forne
 Ne neuere siþ þe first man was born 552
 Ne coude man by xx^{ti} þousand part
 Countrefete þe sophymes of his arte
 Ne were worþi to vnbocle his galoche
 þer dowblenesse or faynyng shuld approche 556
 Ne so couþe þonke a wigt as he did me
 His manere was an heuene for to see
 Til eny womman were she neuere his wys
 So peynted he and kembeþ at poynt devis 560
 As wel his wordes as his countenaunce
 And I so loued hym for his obeysaunce
 And for þe troupe I demed in his hert
 þat if so were þat eny þinge hym smerte 564
 Al were it neuere so lite and I it wist
 Me þouzt I felt deþ at myn herte twiste
 And shortely so ferforþ þis þinge wente
 þat my wille haþ his willes Instrument 568
 þis is to seyne my wille obeied his wille
 In al þinge as ferre as reson fille
 Keping þe boundes of my worship euere
 Ne neuere had I þinge so leef ne leuere 572

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

As hym : god wote ne neuere shal no moo /
 þis last' lenger þan a ȝere or twoo
 ¶ That' I Suppose of hym no þing' but' good' 576
 But' fynaly þus at' the ende it' stood
 þat' fortune wold' þat' he most' twynne
 Out' of þat' place which' þat' I was Inne
 where me were woo it is no question
 I can not' make of it discripcion 580
 ffor oon þinge dar I telle boldely [leaf 111, back]
 I knowe what' is þe peyne of deþ þerby :
 Such' harme I felt' for he no wizt' by-leue
 So on a day of me he toke his leue 584
 So sorowefulli eke þat' I wende verrely
 þat' he had feled as moche harme as I
 Whan þat' I herde hym speke and segħ his hwe
 But' napelees I þouz't he was so trewe 588
 And eke þat' he repeire shuld agayn/
 Wiþ-Inne a litel while soþ to sayn
 And reson wold eke þat' he most' goo
 ffor his honoure as oft happeþ soo 592
 þat' I made vertue of necessite
 And toke it wel siþ þat' it' most be
 As I best' myght I hid fro hym my sorowe
 And toke hym by þe honde seint' Iohñ to borowe 596
 And seide þus loo I am ȝoures aH
 Beþ swiçh as I haue be to you and shal
 what' he answerd' it' nedeþ not' reherce
 who can seyn bette þan he who can do wors 600
 whan he haþ al wel seide þan haþ he done
 þerfore bihoueþ hym a ful longe sponne
 þat' shal eten with a feend þus herd I seye
 So at' þe last' he mote forþ his weye 604
 And forþ he fleep til he come þer hym list
 whan it' come hym to purpoos for to rist'
 ¶ I trowe he had þilk' texte in mynde
 þat' al þinge repeiryng' to his kinge ¶ Redditi suo sui
 gula gaudent / 608

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Gladeþ *hym* self þus seyn men as I gesse
 Men louen of propre kinde newfangilnesse
 As briddes doon þat men in cages fede
 ffor þeiȝh þou nyzt and day take of *hym* hede 612
 And strawe her cage faire and soft as silk
 And zeue hem sugre . hony . brede *and* mylkt
 3it right anoon as þat his door is vppe
 He wiþ his feete wil spurne down his cuppe 616
 And to þe wode he wil and wormes ete [leaf 112]
 So newfangle bene þei of her mete
 And louen nouelries of propre kinde
 No gentilnesse of blood may hem bynde 620
 So ferde þis tercelet allas þe day
 Thowe he were gentiȝh born fressh and gay
 And goodly forto sene . humble *and* free
 He segȝh vpon a tyme a kite fle 624
 And sodeynly he loued þis kite soo
 That al his loue is clene fro me goo
 And haþ his trowþe falsed in þis wise
 Thus haþ þe kite my loue in her seruyse 628
 And I am lorn *with*-outen remedye
 And wiþ þat worde þis fawcon gan to crie
 And swowned eft in Canaces barme
 Grete was þe sorowe for þat haukes harme 632
 That Canacee and alle her wommen made
 þei nyst howe þat þei myzt þe faucon glade
 But Canace home bereþ her in hir lappe
 And softly in plaasters gan hir wrappe 636
 þer as she *with* hire beek had hurt her selue
 Nowe can not Canace but herbes delue
 Out of the grounde and maken salues newe
 Of herbes precious *and* fyne of hewe 640
 To helen wiþ þe hauke from day to nyzt
 She doþ her bysynesse and al her myzt
 And by hire beddes hede she made a mewwe
 And keuered it wiþ veluetes blewe 644

And here

[on leaf 112, *ba^rk*]

bygynneþ þe prologe of þe merchaunte.

In feiþ Squier þow hast' þe wel yquytte
 And gentely I preise wel þi witte
 Quod þe merchaunt' consideryng' þi zouþe
 So felingly þou spekest' sir' I þe alouþe 676
 As to my dome þer is non þat' is here
 Of Eloquence þat' shal be þi pere
 [And if þat þow lyue god 3if þe goode chaunce [Barlow MS 20]
 And in vertue sende the Contynaunce] 680
 ffor of þi speche I haue gret' deynte
 I haue a sone and by þe trinite
 I had leuere þan xx^{ti} pounde worþ lond'
 þough' it' were riȝt' nowe fallen in my hond' 684
 3e ere a man of such' discrecion
 As þat' 3e beñ fy on possession
 But' 3if a man be uertuous withal
 I haue my sone snybbed *and* 3it' shal / 688
 ffor he to vertue listep not' entende [leaf 113]
 But' forto pley atte dys and to dispende
 And lese al þat' he hap is his vsage
 And he hap leuere talke wiþ a page 692
 þan to comune wiþ a gentile wizt'
 where he myȝt' lerne gentillesse ariȝt'
 A strawe for 3oure gentilnesse quod our Hoost'
 What' Marchaunte parde Sir' wel þou woost' 696
 That' eĉh of 3ou mote tellen at' þe leest'
 A tale or twoo or breken his bihest'
 That' knowe I weH quod þe Merchaunte certeyñ
 I prey 3ou haueþ not' me in disdeyne 700

GROUP F. § 3. SQUIRE-FRANKLIN LINK. **Petworth MS.**

þouze to þis man I speke a word̄ or twoo
 Telle on þi tale wiþ-outen wordes moo /
 Gladly sir' ooste *quod* he I wil obeye
 Vnto þour wille now herkenē what I seye 704

I wil þou not' contrarye in no wise.
 As ferre as my wittes wil suffise
 I prey to god þat' it' may plesen þou
 þan woot' I wele þat' it' is good ynowe 708

þus endeþ þe prologe /

And here by-
gynnep þe *Merchauntes tale.*

[on leaf 113]

Whilom þer was dwellinge in lumbardy ¶ *The tale.*
 A worþi knyzt þat born was at Pavy
 In which he lyued in grete prosperite
 And sixty zere a wyueles man was he 1248
 And folowed ay his bodely delite
 On womman þer as was his Appetite
 As doon þise fooles þat bene seculers
 And whan þat he was past sixty zeres 1252
 Were it for holynesse or ellis for dotage
 I can not seye but suche a corage
 had þis knyght to be a wedded man
 That day and nyght he doþ al þat he can 1256
 To asprie where he myzt wedded be
 Preiynge our lord to graunt hym þat he /
 Might ones knowe þat blisful liff [leaf 113, back]
 þat is bytwixe an husbonde and his wif 1260
 And for to lyuen vnder þat holy band
 Wip which god furste man to womman band
 Noon oþer lif seide he is worþ a bene
 ffor wedloke is so esi and so clene 1264
 That in þis world it is a paradys
 Thus seiþ þis olde knyzt þat was so wis
 And certeynly as soþ as god is kinge
 To take a wif it is a glorious þinge 1268
 And namely whan a man is olde and hoore
 þan is a wif þe frute of his tresore
 þan shuld he take a zonge wif and a faire
 On which he myzt engender him an aire 1272

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And lede his lif in Ioye and solace	
Wher as þe bachilers synggen alas	
Whan þei fynde eny aduersite	
In loue which þat' is but' childes vanite	1276
And trewly it' sitte wel to be soo	
That' bachilers han ofte peyne <i>and</i> woo	
On brutel grounde þei beelde brutelnesse	
þei fynde whan þei wene sikernesse	1280
þei lyue but' as a bridde or a beest'	
In liberte and vnder nyce areest'	
þer as a wedded man in his astate	
Lyueþ his lif blisful and ordynate	1284
Vndere þe 3ok' of mariage ybounde	
Wel may his hert' in Ioye and blisse be founde	
ffor who can be so buxom as a wif	
Who is so trewe and eke so tentiff	1288
To kepe him seke and hole as is his make	
ffor wel ne woo she wil not' hym forsake	
She nys not' very hym to loue <i>and</i> serue	
þou3e þat' he lye bedrede til he sterue	1292
And 3it' somme clerkes sein þat' it' is not' soo	
Of which theofraste is oon of þoo ./	
What' foorce þou3t' Thophrast' lusteþ lye	[leaf 114]
Ne take no wif <i>quod</i> he for husbandrye	1296
As forto spare in household' þi dispence	
A trewe seruante doþ more diligence	
Thi good to kepe þan þine owne wif	
ffor she wil cleyme half part' al her lif	1300
And 3if þat þou be seke so god me sauē	
Thi verrey frendes or a trewe knaue	
Wil kepe þe better þan she þat' waiteþ ay	
Aftere þi good and hap do mony a day	1304
And if þou take a wif ¹ þat' to þe is vntrewe	
fful ofte tyme it' shal þe Rwe ¹	[¹⁻¹ ? <i>spurious</i>]
This entent' an hundred sipes wors	
writeþ þis man þer god his bonys curs	1308

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- But take no kepe of al such vanyte
 Defie Theofrast and herkenþ me
 A wiff is goddys 3ift verreyly
 Al oþer manere 3iftes hardely 1312
 As londes . rentes pasture or comune
 Or mebles al bene 3iftes of fortune
 þat passen as a shadowe on a waþ
 But drede it nou3t pleylnly speke I shaþ 1316
 A wiff wil last and in þine hous endure
 Wel more þan þe list peraventure
 Mariegge is a ful grete sacrament
 Who haþ no wiff I telle hym shent 1320
 He lyueþ helplees and is al desolate
 I speke of folk in seculere astate
 And herken whi . I seie not þis for nou3t
 þe womman is for mannes helpe ywrou3t 1324
 þe highe god whan he had Adam maked
 And seghe him alone bely naked
 God of his grete goodnesse seide þan /
 Lat vs make an helpe vnto þis man 1328
 Like to hym self and þan he made Eue
 Here may 3ee see and herby may 3e preue
 þat þe wiff is mannys Comfort [leaf 114, back]
 His Paradys terrestre and his disport 1332
 So buxom and so vertuous is she
 þei moste nedes lyue in vnite
 Oo flesh þei bene and two soules as I gesse
 Haþ but oon hert in hele and in distresse 1336
 A wif a seynt Mary benedicite
 How my3t a man han eny aduersite
 þat haþ a wiff certes I can not seie
 þe blisse þat is ytwixe hem tweye 1340
 þer may no tunge tellen or hert þenk
 If he be poor she helpeþ him to swynk
 She kepeþ his good and waasteþ neuer a dele
 Al þat her husbond lust she likeþ wele 1344

She seiþ not' onys nay whan he seith 3e
 Doþ þis seiþ he. al redy sire seiþ she
 O blisful ordere of wedloke precious
 þou arte so mery and eke so vertuous 1348
 And so commended and so appreued eke
 þat' euery man þat' halt' him worþ a leke
 Vpon his bare knees au3t' al his lif
 Thanken his god þat' him haþ sent' a wif 1352
 Oyþer prei to god him for to sende
 A wif to last' vnto his lyues ende
 ifor þan his lif is sette in sikernesse
 He may not' be desceyued as I gesse 1356
 So þat' he worche after his wyues rede
 þan may he boldely bere vp his hede
 þei bene so trewe and also wys
 ffor which if þou wilt' worchen as þ^e wis 1360
 Do alway so as wommen wil þe rede
 Loo howe þat' Iacob as þise clerkes rede
 By good counseil of his modere Rebekke
 Boonde þe kyddes skyn about' his nekke 1364
 ffor which his faders benyson he wan
 Loo Iudith as þe storie telle can
 Be wise counsail she goddes puple kepte [leaf 115]
 And sclowe hym Olophernes while he sclepte 1368
 Lo Abygail by counseille how she
 Saued her husbonde NabaH whan þat' he
 Shuld haue be sclayne and loke aster alsoo
 By good counsaile delyuered out' of woo 1372
 þe puple of god and made hym marche
 Of assure enchaunced forto be
 Ther is no þinge in grete superlatif
 As seiþ seneke [above] an humble wif 1376
 Suffre þi wifes tunge as Catoñ bitte
 She shal commaunde and þou shalt' suffre it'
 And 3it' she wil obeye of Curtesie
 A wif is keper of þine hushondrye 1380

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

wele may þe seke man by-weile *and* wepe
 þer as þer nys no wif þe hous to kepe
 I warne þe 3if wisly þou wirche
 Loue wel þi wif as crist loueþ his chirche 1384
 If thou louest þi self wel. þou louest þi wif
 No man hateþ his flessþ but in his lif
 He fostreth it and þefore bid I þe
 Cherisse þi wif or þou shalt neuere the 1388
 Husbonde and wif what so men Iape or pleye
 Of worldly folk holde þe siker weye
 They bene so knytte þer may noon harme betide
 And namely vpon þe wives side 1392
 ffor which þis Ianuarie of which I tolde
 Considered haþ wif-in his daies olde
 þe lusty lif þe vertuous quiete
 þat is in mariage hony swete 1396
 And for his frendes on a day he sent
 To tellen hem the effecte of his entent
 wif face sadde his tale he haþ hem told
 He saide frendes I am hoor and olde 1400
 And almost god wote vpon þe pittes brinke
 Vpon my soule somewhat I most þenke
 I haue my body folily dispended / [leaf 115, back]
 Blessed be god it shal be amended 1404
 ffor I wil bene certeyn a wedded man
 And þat anon in al þe hast I can
 Vnto some maide faire and tender of age
 I prey 3ou shapeþ for my mariage 1408
 Al sodeynly for I wil not abide
 And I wil foonden to asprie on my side
 To whom I may be wedded hastely
 But for as moche as 3e bene more þan I 1412
 3e shul raþer such a þinge esprien
 þan I and þer me lust best to alien
 But of on þing I warne 3ou my frendes dere
 I nyl noon olde wif haue in no manere 1416

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

She shal not' passe xvj zere in fayn
 Old fīssh and zonge flessħ þat' wil I haue certayñ
 Bett' is quod he a p[i]ke þan a pikereħ
 And bette þan olde beef is þe tender' veeħ 1420
 I wil no womman of xxx^{ti} wynter' age
 It' is but' bene strawe and grete forage
 And eke þise olde wyues god it wote
 þei konnen so moche craft' on wades bote 1424
 So mochel broke harne whan þat' hem lest'
 That' wiþ hem shuld' I neuer' lyuen in rest'
 ffor sondry scoles makeþ subtile clerkes
 Womman of mony scoles . half a clerk es 1428
 But' certeyn a yonge þing' may man gye
 Riȝt' as men may warme wax *with* handis plye
 Wherefore I seie ȝou pleyñly in a clause
 I nyl non olde wif han riȝt' for þis cause 1432
 ffor if so were I had some meschaunce
 þat' [I] in hire ne couþe haue no plesaunce
 þan shuld' I lede my lif in auenture
 And so streite to þe deuel sure 1436
 Ne children shuld' I noon vpon hure geten
 ȝit' had me leuere þat' houndes had me eten
 Than þat' myne Heritage shulde falle [leaf 116]
 In straunge honde and þus I telle ȝou aħ 1440
 I dote not'. I not' þe cause whi
 Men shuld wedde and ferthermore wote I
 Ther spekeþ mony a man of Mariage
 þat' wote no more of it' þan doþ my page 1444
 ffor whiche causes men shuld' take a wif'
 ȝif he may not' chaast bene his lif
 Take him a wif wiþ grete deuocioñ
 Bycause of leefful procreacioñ 1448
 Of children to þe honure of god aboue
 And nouȝt' only for *paramour* ne for loue
 And for þei shulden leccherie eschewe
 And ȝeelde her dettes while þat' it' is newe 1452

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Or for þat eche man shuld helpe opere
 In meschief as sustere shal to broþere
 And lyve in chastite ful heuenly
 But sirs by 3oure leue þat am not I 1456
 ffor god byþonke it. I dar make auaunte
 I fele my lymmes sterke and suffisaunt
 To done al þat a man bylongeþ to
 I wote my self best what I may do 1460
 þou; I be hoor I fare as doþ a tre
 þat blometh er þe frute ywox[e] be
 þat blossmed tre is neiþer drie ne dede
 I fele no where hoor but on my hede 1464
 Myne hert and my lymmes ben as grene
 As lauriel is þorgh þe 3ere to sene
 And sythen 3e han herd al myn entent
 I prey 3ou to my wille 3e assent 1468
 Dyuers men dyuersly hym told
 Of Mariage mony ensamples olde
 Somme blamen it somme preisen it certayn
 But at þe laste shortely forto sayn 1472
 As alday falleþ altercaciõ
 Bitwixen frendes in disputaciõ
 þer fille a strif ytwix his breþeren two [leaf 116, back]
 Of which þat oon is cleped placebo ./ 1476
 Iustinus soplely called was þat other
 Placebo seide oo I am 3oure broþere
 fful litel nede han ye my lord so dere
 Counseile to aske of ony þat is here 1480
 But þat 3e bene so ful of Sapience
 That 3ou ne likeþ for 3oure high prudence
 To weyue from þe word of Salomon
 This word seiþ he vnto vs everechoñ 1484
 Wirk al þing by counseile þus seide
 And þan shalt þou not repent þe
 But þeigh þat Salomon speke such a word
 Myn owne dere broþer and my lord 1488

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

So wisly god bring^t my saule at^t ese and rest^t
 I holde ³oure owe counseH is þe best^t
 ffor broþer myn take of me þis moti^t
 I haue bene nowe a courte man al my lyf^t 1492
 And god woot^t þouze I vnworþi be
 I haue stonden in ful grete degre
 Abowen lordes of ful grete astate
 3it^t had I neuere wiþ none of hem debate 1496
 I neuere hem contraried trewly
 I wote wele þat^t my lord can more þan I.
 That^t he seiþ I holde it^t forme *and* stable
 I sieie þe same or ellis þing^t semblable 1500
 A ful grete fool is eny counselour^t
 þat^t serueþ eny lord of hie honour^t
 þat^t dar presume or ones þenk^t it^t
 That^t his counsaile shuld^t passe his lordes witte 1504
 Nay lordes bene no fooles be my fay
 3e haue ³oure self spoken here to day
 So high sentence so holy & so weH
 That^t I consent^t and conferme euery dele 1508
 3our wordes al & ³oure opynyoun
 By god þer is no man in al þis toun.
 Ne in Ytaile coupe bet^t han seide [leaf 117]
 Criste holdeþ of þis hym ful wel apaied 1512
 And trewly it^t is an hie corage
 Of eny man þat^t stoupeþ into age
 To take a 3onge wif be my fader^t kynne
 3oure hert^t hongep vpon a Ioly pynne 1516
 Dop now in þis matere riz^t as 3ou leste
 ffor fynally I holde it^t for þe best^t
 ¶ Iustinus þat^t ay stille satte *and* herde
 Riz^t in þis wise he to placebo ansuerde 1520
 Nowe broþer myn be pacient^t I prey
 Siþens þat^t 3e han seide herken what^t I sey
 Senek amonges oþer wordes wise
 Seiþ þat^t a man ouzt^t hym wel avise 1524

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- To whom he zeueth his land or his cateH
 And siþens I ought' avise me riȝt' weH
 To whom I zeue my [gode aweye ffrome Me [MS Reg. 17 D 15, leaf 110, back. Not in Sloane 1685, leaf 91; or Reg. 18 C ii, lf 94; but in Addit. 5140, lf 153; Harl. 7333's rymes corrected to me, avised be, lf 70, col. 1.]
 WeHe more I aughte auysede be 1528
 To whome I yeue my] body for alway
 I warne you wel it' is no childes play
 To taken a wif wiþ-out' avisement
 Men most' enquire þis is myn assent' 1532
 Whedere she be wis. sobre or dronklewe
 Eyþer proude or oþer wise a shrewe
 A chidere eiþer a waaster' of þi good
 Or riche or poor / or ellis a man is woodt 1536
 Al be it' so þat' no man fynde shal
 Non in þis world' þat' treteþ hool in aH
 Ne man ne beest' such' as men con devise
 But' napelees it' aught' ynowe suffise 1540
 Wiþ eny wif ȝif so were þat' ȝe hadde
 Moo good thewes þan her vices badde
 And al þis askeþ leisere to enquire
 ffor god wote I haue wepte mony a tere 1544
 fful priuely siþens I had a wif
 Preise who so wil a wedded mannys lif'
 Certeyn I fynde in it' but' cost' and care
 And obseruaunces of al blessed bare ./ 1548
 And ȝit' god þonk' my neighbours al aboute [leaf 117, back]
 A[nd] namely of wommen a grete route
 Sein þat I haue þe most' stedefast' wiff'
 And eke þe mekest oon þat' bereþ liff 1552
 But I woote best wher wrieþ [me] my shoo
 ȝe may for me riȝt' as ȝou list' doo
 Aviseþ ȝou ȝe bene a man of age
 Howe þat' ȝe entren into mariage 1556
 And namely wiþ a ȝonge wif and a feire
 By him þat' made water erþe and Eyre
 þe ȝongest' man þat' is in al þis route
 Is bisy ynouȝe to bringe it' aboute 1560

To haue his wiff allone trestep me	
3e shullen not plesen hure 3eres þre	
This is to seyn to done her plesaunce	
A wiff axep ful mony an obseruaunce	1564
I prey 3ou þat 3e ne be euel apaide	
Wel quod þis Ianuar' & hastowe al saide	
Strawe for þi senek & for þi prouerbes	
I count' not a panyer ful of herbes	1568
Of scole teermes wiser men þan thou/	
As þou hast' herd assentep it' ri3t' nowe	
¶ To my purpoos Placebo what' say 3e	
I sey it' is a cursed man quod he	1572
That' letteþ Matrimoyne Sikerly	
And wiþ þat' word' þei risen sodeynly	
And bene assented fully þat' he shuld'	
Wedded be whan hym list' and where he wold'	1576
Thy fantasie and þi curiousnesse	
ffro day to day gan in þi soule inpresse	
Of Ianuar' about' his mariage	
Mony faire shappe and mony faire visage	1580
Ther passeþ his hert' ny3t by nyght'	
As who so toke a myroure' polshed bright'	
And sette it' in a comune Market' place	
þan shuld' he seen mony a figure pace	1584
By his Miroure and in þe same wise	[leaf 118]
Can Ianuar' in wiþ his þou3t' devise	
Of Maidens which þat' dwellen [him] beside	
O. He wist' not' where he my3t' abide	1588
ffor þou3e þat' oon haue beute in her face	
A-noþer stant so in þe puples grace	
ffor her sadnesse and her benignite	
þat' of þe puple grettest' vois had she	1592
And somme were riche and hadden badde name	
But' na þe lees bytwixe earnest and game	
He atte last' enpoynted hym in oon	
A[nd] lete al oþer from his herte gooñ	1596

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And chese hire of his owne auctorite
 ffor loue is blynde al day and may not se
 And whan þat he was in þe bedde brouȝt
 He purtreide in his hert and in his þouȝt 1600
 Her freisshe beaute and her age tendere
 Hir' myddel smalle her armes longe and sclendere
 Her wise gouernaunce and her gentilnesse
 Her wommanly beringe and her sadnesse 1604
 And whan þat he to her' was condescended
 Hym þouȝt his chois myȝt not be amended
 ffor whan þat he him self concluded had
 Hym þouȝt eche oper mannys witt so bad 1608
 þat impossible it were to replie
 Aȝeinst his chois þis was his fantasie
 His frendes sent he to at his instañce
 And preieþ him to done hym þat plesañce 1612
 That hastily þei wolde to hym come
 He wold abreggen her labour al and some
 Hit nedep no more to hem to goo ne ride
 He was apointed þer he wold abide 1616
 Placebo came and eke his frendes sone
 And alþer first he bad hem aȝ a bone
 þat noon of hem noon argumentes make
 Aȝeinst his purpoos which þat he haþ take . 1620
 Which purpoos was plesaunt to god as seide he [if 118, bk]
 And verrey grounde of his prosperite
 He saide þer was a mayden in þe toune
 Which þat of bewte haþ grete renoun 1624
 Al were it so she were of smal degre
 Suffiseth him her zoupe and her bewte
 Which mayde he seide he wold haue to wif
 To leden in eese and in holynesse his lif 1628
 And þonkeþ god þat he myȝt han hir' aȝ
 þat no wizt his blisse part shaȝ
 And preieþ him to labour in þis nede
 And shapen þat he faile not to spede 1632

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor þan he seide his spirit^t was at^t eese
 þen is quod he no þing^t me may displese
 ¶ Saue oon þinge prikkeþ in my conscience
 þe which I wil reherce in þoure presence 1636
 I haue quod he herd saie ful þore agoo
 þer may no man han þarfit^t blesses twoo
 þis is to saie in erþe and eke in heuene
 ffor þei he kepte him from þe synnes seuene 1640
 And eke fro euery brannche of thilk tree
 3it^t is þere so þarfit prosperite
 And so grete eese and lust^t in mariage
 That^t euer I am a-gast^t nowe in myn age 1644
 þat^t I shal lede nowe so mery a lif
 [So delicat withouthen wo or strif [MS Harl. 7335, leaf 118,
no gap in Petworth.]
 That y shal han myn heuene in erthe] here
 ffor siþens þat^t verrey heuene is bouzt^t so dere 1648
 Wiþ tribulaciõ and grete penaunce
 how shuld I such in such plesaunce
 As alle wedded men done wiþ her wives
 Come to þe blisse þere crist^t eterne alyue es 1652
 This is my drede and 3e my breþere tweye
 Assoilleþ me þis question I 3ou preye
 ¶ Iustinus which þat hated his foly
 Answerd^t anon ri3t^t in his Iapry 1656
 And for he wold^t his longe tale abregge
 He wolde noon autorite alegge
 But^t seide sir³ so þere bene noon obstacle [leaf 119]
 Oþer þan þis god of his hye myracle 1660
 And of his mercy may so for 3ou wirche
 That^t er 3e han 3oure 3iftes of holy chirche
 3e may repent^t of wedded mannys lif
 In which 3e seyn is neiþer woo ne strif 1664
 And ellis god forbede but^t 3if he sent^t
 A wedded man grace hym to repent^t
 Wel often raper þan a syngle man /
 And þerfor sir³ þe best^t rede I can 1668

- Dispeireþ 3ou nou3t haueþ in memorie
 Perauerture she may be 3our' purgatorie
 She may be goddis mene *and* goddys whippe
 Than shal 3oure soule vp to heuen skippe 1672
 Swifter þan doþ an arowe out' of a bowe
 I hope to god here aftere 3e shal knowe
 þat' þer nys noon so grete felicite
 In mariage ne neuere more shal be 1676
 þat 3ou shal lak of 3our' saluacion
 So þat' 3e vse as skille is and resoñ
 þe lustes of 3oure wif attemperally
 And þat' 3e please hure not' to amerously 1680
 And þat' 3e kepe 3ou eke fro oþer synne
 My tale is done for my witte is þinne
 Beþ not agast' her-of my broþer'
 But' lat' vs wade from þis mater to an oþere 1684
 þe wif of baþe if 3e wil vnderstonde
 Of mariage which 3e han on honde
 Declaren can ful wel in litel space
 ffareþ nowe wel god haue 3ou in his grace 1688
 And wiþ þis word' þis Iustyne *and* his broþere
 Han take her leue and ech of hem of oþere
 ffor whan þei segħ it' most' nedes be
 þei wrou3ten so by wise and selegħ trete 1692
 þat' she þis maide which þat' Mayus hizt'
 As hastely as euere þat' she my3t'
 Shal wedded be vnto Ianuarye [leaf 119, back]
 I trowe it' were to longe 3ou to tary 1696
 If I 3ou tolde of euery scrite or bonde
 By which þat' she was festned in his londe
 Eiper forto herken of her riche aray
 But' fynaly ycommen is þe day 1700
 þat' to þe churche boþ[e] bene þei went'
 fforto receyue þe holy sacrament'
 fforþ commep þe preest' wiþ stole about' his neke
 And bad hir' be ylik' sarra and rebek' 1704

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

In wisdom and [in] troupe of mariage
 And saide his orisons as is his vsage
 And crowched hem and bad god shuld hem blisse
 And made al siker ynough *with* holynesse 1708
 Thus bene þei wedded *with* solempnite
 And at þe feeste sitteþ he and she
 Wiþ oþer worþi folk' vpon þe dees
 Al ful of Ioye and blisse is þe paleys 1712
 And ful of instrumentes *and* of vitaille
 þe moste deyntevous of al Ytaile
 Byform hem of instrumentis which soun
 þat Orpheus ne of phebes ampheouñ 1716
 Ne maden neuere suche a melody
 And at euery cours came loude mynstralcye
 That neuere Ioab trumped forto here
 Neiper Theodomas 3it' half so clere 1720
 And Thebes whan þe cite was in doute
 Bacus þe wyne hem shenkeþ al aboute
 And Venus laugheþ on euery wi3t'
 ffor Ianuar' was bycome her kny3t' 1724
 And wolde boþ assaien his corage
 In liberte and eke in mariage
 And wiþ hure fuyr bronde *with* her hand' aboute
 Daunseth byforne þe bride al aboute 1728
 And clenly I dar wel seyn right þis
 Emyneus þat god of weddyng' is /
 Segñ neuere in his lif' so mery a wedded man [leaf 120]
 Holde þou þi pees þou poete Marcean 1732
 þat' writest' vs þat' ilk wedding' mery
 Of hure Philologi and of Mercury
 And of þe sanges þat' þe muses songe
 So smale as eke þi penne *and* eke þi tunge 1736
 fforto discryuen of þis mariage
 Whan tender zoupe hap wedded stouping' age
 þer is suche myrþe þat it' may not' be writte
 Assaieþ it 3oure self þan may 3e wite 1740

3if þat I lak or noon in þis matere
 Mayus þat sitte wiþ so benygne a chere
 Hire to biholde it semed faierye
 Queen Estre loked neuere wiþ such an ye 1744
 On assure so meke a loke as she
 I may 3ou not advise al her bewte
 But þus moche of her bewte telle I may
 þat she was like þe brizt morowe of may 1748
 ffulfillede of beaute and of plesaunce
 This Ianuar' is rauissht in a traunce
 And at euery tyme he loked on hir' face
 But in his hert' he gan hir' to manace 1752
 þat he þat nyzt in armes wold hir' streyn
 Harder þan euere Paris did Eleyñ
 But napelees 3it had he grete pite
 þat ilke nyzt offenden her most' he 1756
 And þought' alas o tender' creature
 Nowe god wold 3e myzt wel endure
 Al my corage it is so sharpe *and* kene
 I am agast' 3e shul it not sustene 1760
 But god forbede þat I did al my myzt
 Nowe wolde god þat it were wexen nyzt
 And þat þe nyzt wolde lasten euere moo
 I wold þat al þis puple were a-goo 1764
 And fynaly he doþ al his labour
 As he best' myzt sauynge his honoure
 To hast' hem fro þe mete in subtile wise [leaf 120, back]
 The tyme came þat reson was to rise 1768
 And after þat men daunce *and* drinke fast'
 And spices al aboute þe hous þei cast'
 And ful of foye and blisse is euery man
 AH sauf a squyer þat hizt damyan. 1772
 which carf to-fore þe king' mony day
 He was so rauysshed on his lady may
 That for þe verrey peine he was nyze wode
 Almost' he swalte an swowned þer he stode 1776

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

As she him ladde daunsinge in her hand
 So fresshe she was and þerto so likand^t [spurious]
 And to his bedde he went^t hym hastely
 No more of him at^t this tyme speke I. 1780
 But þere I lete him wepe ynow and pleyñ
 Til fresshe may wil rewen on his peyn
 ¶ O perilous fyre þat^t in þe bedstrawe bredeþ
 O famulere foo þat^t his seruise bedep 1784
 O seruaunte traitoure fals [of] holy hewe
 Like to þe adder sclegħ . & in Basom vntrewe
 God shilde vs alle from 3oure iniquitaunce
 O Ianuare dronken in plesaunce 1788
 Of Mariage se howe þi damyan
 Thyne owne squyer and þi born man
 Entendeþ to done þe vilanye
 God graunte þe þine harme forto asprie 1792
 ffor in þis world^t nys no wors pestilence
 Than homely foo alday in þi presence
 Parfourmed haþ þis day his arke dyurne
 No lenger may þe body of hym soiourne 1796
 þe Orisonte as in þat^t latitude
 Ri3^t wiþ his mantel þat^t is derk^t and Rude
 Gan forto sprede þe mysprey aboute
 ffor which departed is þe lusty route 1800
 ffor Ianuare wiþ þonke on euery side
 Hoom to her howses lustely þei ride .
 Ther as þei done her þingges as hem lust^t [leaf 121]
 And whan þei segħ her tyme to go to rest^t 1804
 Sone aftere þat^t þis hastif Ianuar'
 Wol go to bedde he wil no lenger tar'
 He drinkeþ Ypocras clerre and vernage
 Of spices hote to encreesen his corage 1808
 And many a letuare had he ful fyne
 Such as þe cursed monk daune Costantyne
 Haþ writen in his boke of Coytu
 To eten hem al he nas no þing^t eschwe 1812

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And þus to his priuey frendes seide he
 ffor goddis loue as sone as it may be
 Lette voiden al þis hous in curteys wise sone 1815
 Men dronken and þe trauers drowe anōn 1817
 The bride was brouzt to bedde as stille as eny stoñ 1818
 So hasted Ianuar' it most be dōn [spurious]
 And whan þe bedde was with þe preest yblessed
 Out of þe Chambre haþ euery wizt hym dressed 1820
 And Ianuare haþ fast in armes take
 His fresshe may his paradis his make
 He lulleth hure he kisseth hure ful oft
 Wiþ þilke bristels of his beard vnsoft 1824
 Ylike to þe skyn of hounde fissh sharpe as brere
 ffor he was shaue al newe in his manere
 He rubbeþ hure vpon her tendere face
 And seide þus alace I mote trespace 1828
 To 3ou my spouse *and* 3ou gretly offende
 Or tyme come þat I wil doune descende
 But napelees considereþ þis quod he
 þer nys no werkman what so euer he be 1832
 þat may boþe worche wel and hastely
 þis wil be done at leisere partitely
 It is no force howe longe þat we pleye
 I trowe in wedloke coupled bene we tweye 1836
 And blessed by the yokke þat we bene Inne
 ffor in our actys we may do no synne /
 A man may do no synne wiþ his wiff [leaf 121, back]
 Ne hirt hym self wiþ his owne knyff 1840
 Now han we leue to pley vs by þe lawe
 Thus labowreþ he til þat þe day gan dawe
 And þan he takeþ a soppe in fyne clerre
 And vprizt in his bedde þan sitteþ he 1844
 And aftere þat he songe ful loude *and* clere
 And kissed his wiff and made wanton chere
 He was al coltissħ and ful of ragerye
 And ful of Girgoun as is flecked pie 1848

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

þe esclak skyn about^t his necke shakeþ
 While þat^t he songe so chaunteþ he *and* crakeþ
 But^t good woote what^t may þou³t^t in her hert^t
 Whan she him segþ vpsitting^t in his shert^t 1852
 In his ny³t^t cappe and wiþ his necke lene
 She preiseth nou³t^t his plesinge worþ a bene
 Than seide he þus my resting^t wil I take
 Nowe day is come I may no lenger wake 1856
 And doune he leide his hede *and* slepþ til prime
 And afterward^t whan þat^t he segþ his tyme
 Vp riseþ Ianuare but^t fresshe may
 Holdeþ her chambre vnto þe ferþe day 1860
 As vsage is of wives for þe best^t
 ffor euery laboure somtyme mot^t haue rest^t
 Oyþer ellis longe may he nou³t^t endure
 þis is to saye no lyues creature 1864
 Be it^t of fissh . or brid of beest^t or man
 Now wil I speke of woful damyan
 þat^t languowreþ for loue as 3e shul here
 Therefore I speke to him in þis manere 1868
 I say o. sely damyan allas
 Answere to þis demaunde as in þis cas
 Howe shalt^t þou to þi lady fressh[e] May
 Telle þi woo she wil alway sey nay 1872
 Eke if þowe speke she wil þi woo bywreie
 God bene þine helpe I can no better^t seye
 ¶ This seke Damyan in Venus fire [leaf 122]
 So brenneþ þat^t he deyeþ for desire 1876
 ffor whiche he putte his lif in auenture
 No lenger my³t^t he in þis wise endure
 But^t priuely a penner^t gan he borowe
 And in a letter wrote he al his sorowe 1880
 In manere of a compleint^t oþer a lay
 Vnto þis faire and fressh[e] lady may
 And in a purs of selk hong on his shert^t
 He haþ yputte and yleide it^t at^t his hert^t 1884

- þe mone þat at none was at thilk day
 þat Ianuare hap wedded þat fressh may
 yn two of taure was in þe Cancre gliden
 So longe hap she in her chambere bydeñ 1888
 As custumes is vnto þese nobles alle
 A bride shal not eten in þe halle
 Til daies foure eiper thre daies at þe lest
 Ypassed bene þan lat her goo to þe feest 1892
 þe *ferthe*¹ day complete fro none to none [1 MS iiiij]
 whan þat the highe masse was ydone
 In halle sitte þis Ianuare *and* may
 As fresshe as is þe briȝte somers day 1896
 And so bifelle howe þat þis good man
 Remembreþ hym vpon þis Damian
 And seide seint mary how may þis be
 That Damian entendeþ nouȝt to me 1900
 Is he ay seke or howe may þis betide
 His squyers which þat stoden hym beside
 Excusinge him bycause of his siknesse
 Which þat letted him to do his bysynesse 1904
 None oþer cause myȝt make hym care
 þat me forþenkeþ quod this Ianuare
 He is a gentile squyer be my troupe
 ȝif þat he deied it were harme *and* roupe 1908
 He is as wise discrete and secree .
 As eny man I woote of his degre
 And þerto manly and eke seruisable [leaf 122, back]
 And for to bene a prifty man riȝt able 1912
 But after mete as sone as euer I may
 I wil my self visite hym and eke may
 To done him al þe comfort þat I can .
 And for þat worde hym blessed euery man 1916
 þat of his bounte *and* his gentilnesse
 He wolde so conforten hym in his siknesse
 His squyer for it was a gentile dede
 Dame quod he þis Ianuare take good hede 1920

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

That at aftere mete 3e wiþ 3oure wommen alle
 Whan 3e han bene in chambre out of þis halle
 That alle 3e goon to se þis damyañ
 Doþ him disport he is a gentile man 1924
 And telleþ him þat I wil hym visite
 Hauē I no þinge but rested me a lite
 [And spede 3ou faste ffor I woñ abyde [MS Reg. 17 D 15, leaf 116;
no gap in Petworth.]
 TyHe þat ye slepe ffaste by my syde] 1928
 Now wiþ þat word he gan to hym calle
 A sqwier þat was a marshal of his halle
 And tolde him certeyn þingges what he wold
 þis fresshe may haþ streight her way yhold 1932
 Wiþ aþ her wommen vnto þis Damyan
 Doune by his beddes side satte she þan
 Confortinge him as she goodly may
 This Damyan whan he his tyme say 1936
 In secrete wise his purs and eke his bille
 In whiche þat he writen had al his wille
 Haþ putte into her honde wiþ-uten more
 saue þat he sikked wondere sore 1940
 And softly to hure rizt þus seide he
 Mercy and þat 3e diskeuere nouzt me
 ffor I am dede if þat þis þinge be kidde
 þis purs haþe she in her bosom hidde 1944
 And went her way 3e gete no more of me
 But vnto Ianuare ycommen is she
 And on his beddys side sitte ful soft
 He takeþ hur an kisseþ hure ful oft 1948
 And leide hym doune to slepe and þat anōn [leaf 123]
 She feyned hure as þoo she most gōn
 Ther as she woote þat euery wizt mote nede
 And whan she of þis bille haþ taken hede 1952
 She rent it al to cloutes at þe last
 And in þe priuee softly she it cast
 Who stodieth nowē but feire fresshe may
 And adoune by Ianuare she lay 1956

- þat' selepte to þe Coughe haþ hym a-waked .
 Anon he preide hire to stripe hur' naked .
 He wold of hur he seide haue som plesañce
 He seide hire cloþes did hym encombrañce 1960
 And she obeieþ be he leef or loth
 But' lest' þat' precious folk' be wiþ me wroþe
 How þat' he wrouz't I dar to 3ou not' telle
 Eiper whedere þat' he þouz't on paradis or on helle 1964
 But' I lete hem worche in her wise
 Til euensonge ringe *and* þat' þei most arise
 were it' be destanye eiper be auenture
 were it' by influence eiper be nature 1968
 Eiper in constellaciõ þat' in such' estate
 þe heuene stood þat' tyme fortunate
 was forto putte a bille of Venus werkes/
 ffor al þing' haþ tyme as seine þise clerkes 1972
 To eny womman forto gete her loue
 I can not' seie but' þe grete god aboue
 That' knoweþ þat' none acte is causelees
 He demep' of aþ for I wil holde my pees 1976
 But' soþ is þis howe þat' þis fresshe may
 Haþ take such' impressiõ þat' day
 On pite of þis sike Damyan
 That' from her hert' she ne drive can 1980
 The remembraunce forto done hym eese
 Certeine þouz't she whom þat' þis þing' displese
 I rek not' for here I him assure
 To loue him best' of eny creature ·/ 1984
 Though he no more nad þan his shert' [leaf 123, back]
 lo pite renneþ sone in gentil hert'
 Here may 3e se howe excellent' fraunchise
 In wommen is whan þei narowe hem avise 1988
 Somme tyraunt' þer is as bene mony oñ
 That' haþ an hert' as hard' as eny stoñ
 Whiche wold han lete him sterue in þe place
 Wel raper þan han graunted him þat' grace 1992

And hem reioysen in her cruel pride
 And recched nouzt' to bene an homycide
 This gentile may fulfilled of al pite
 Rizt' so of hure honde a *lette* made she 1996
 In whiche she graunteþ *hym* of hire *verrey grace*
 Ther lackeþ nouzt' only but' day *and* space
 wher þat' she myzt' to his lust' suffice
 ffor it' shal be rizt' as he wil deuise 2000
 And whan she seeghe her tyme vpon a day
 To visite þis Damyan goþ faire May
 And subtyly þis letter doune she þrest'
 Vnder his pilowe rede if him lest' 2004
 She takeþ him by þe hond and hard *hym* twist'
 So secrely þat' no wizt' it' wist'
 And bad him be al hole and forþ she wente
 To Ianuare whan þat' he for her sente 2008
 Vp riseþ Damyan the nexte morwe
 Al passed was his siknesse & his sorowe
 He kembep him and proyneþ *hym and* pykep
 He doþ al þat' his lady lust' and likeþ 2012
 And eke to Ianuare he goþ as lowe
 As euere did a dogge for þe bowe
 He is so plesaunt' to euery man
 ffor craft' is al who þat' it' can 2016
 þat' euery wight' is fayn to teche *hym* good'
 And fully in his lady grace he stood'
 Thus lete I Damyan aboute his nede
 And in my tale forþ I wil procede ·/ 2020
Somme Clerkes holden þat' ffelicite
 Stant' in delite and perfor he [leaf 124]
 This noble Ianuare wiþ al his myzt'
 In honest' wise as longeþ to a knyzt' 2024
 Shope him to lyve ful deliciously
 His howsing' his aray al honestly
 To his degree was makid as of kingges
 Amonges opere as of honest' þingges 2028

He had a gardyn walled al wiþ stoñ
 So faire a gardyne wote I nowhere noon
 ffor out of doute I verrely suppose
 þat he þat wrote þe romance of þe rose 2032
 Ne coupe of hit þe bewte wel devise
 Ne priapus ne myzt not suffice
 þough he be god of gardynes forto telle
 The bewte of þe gardyne and of þe welle 2036
 That stood vndere a laurere alway grene
 fful ofte tyme king Pluto *and* his quene
 Preserpyna and al her fairye
 Disporten hem and maken melodye 2040
 Abouten þat welle and daunceden as men told
 This noble knyght þis Ianuare þe olde
 Such deynte haþ in it to walken and to pley
 þat he wil suffre no wight to bere þe key 2044
 ssaue he him self for of þe smal wikett
 He bare alway of siluere a clikett
 Wiþ þe which whan þat hym lust vnshette
 And whan þat he wold pay his wiff his dette 2048
 In somer seson þidere wold he goo
 And may his wiff and no wigt but þei twoo
 And pingges which þat were not doñ abedde
 þei in þe gardyn perfourmed han and spedde 2052
 And in þis wise mony a mery day
 Lyued þis Ianuare and fresshe may
 But worldly Ioye may not alway endure
 To Ianuare ne to no worldely creature 2056
 O sodeyn happe . o þou fortune vnstable [leaf 124, back]
 ylike to þe scorpion uariable
 þat flaterest wiþ þine heued whan þou wilt stinge :
 Thy tale is deþ by þine enuenemyng 2060
 O brutel ioye o swete poyson queynt
 O mystery þat subtilly canst peynt
 Thyne ziftes vndere þe hwe of stidfastnesse
 þat þou desceyuedest boþ more and lesse . 2064

Why hast þou Ianuare þus desceyued .
 And haddest hym for þi ful frende receyued .
 And now þou hast byraft hym boþ his eyen
 ffor sorowe of whiche desireth he to dyen 2068
 ¶ Allas þe noble Ianuare þat is so fre
 Amydde his lust and his prosperite
 Is wexen blynde and al sodeynly
 His deef þefore desireþ he vtterly 2072
 And þer-wiþ-aþ þe fuyre of Ielosie
 Lest þat his wif shuld falle in some foly
 So brent in his hert þat he wold fayn
 That somme man boþe hur and hym had slayn 2076
 ffor neuere aftere his deþe ne in his liff
 Ne wolde he þat she were loue ne wiff
 But euere lyue as a widowe in cloþes blake
 Sool as þe turtel doþ þat haþ lost her make 2080
 But at þe last after a monþe or tweye
 His sorowe gan to swage soþ to seye
 ffor whan he wist it may noon oþer be
 He paciently toke his aduersite 2084
 Sauf out of doute may he not forgoñ
 þat he nas Ialouse euermore in ooñ
 Which Ialousie was so outrageous
 That neiþer in halle ne in noon oþer hous / 2088
 He nolde suffre hure forto ride ne goo
 Ne in noon oþer place neuer þe moo
 But 3if þat he [had] hande on hir alway
 ffor which ful ofte wepeþ frecche may 2092
 Thal loueþ Damyan so benygnely :
 That she mote eiþer dey sodeynly
 Or ellis she mote han him at her list [leaf 125]
 She waiteþ whan [her] hert wold al to-brest 2096
 Vpon þat oþer side DAMyan
 Bycommen is þe sorowfullest man/
 þat euer was for neiþere nyzt ne day
 Ne myght he speke a word to fresshe may 2100

As to his *purpoos* of no *suche* matere
 But *3if* *þat* *Ianuare* most *it* here
þat had oon honde vpon hir' *euere* moo .
 And napeles by writing' to and froo 2104
 And priveys signes wist' he what' she ment'
 And she knewe of þe sygnes of his entent'
 ¶ O *Ianuare* what' my³t' þe availe
 Thowe my³test' se as ferre as shippes saile 2108
 ffor as good is a blynde desceyued be
 As to be disceyued whan a man may see
 Loo Arguys whiche *þat* had an C. eyen
 ffor al *þat* *euere* he couþe powre eyþere prien 2112
3it was he blent' and god woot' so bene moo /
 That' wenen wisly *þat* it' nys nat' soo
 Passe ouer is an eese & say no more
þis fresshe May of which I speke of *3ore* 2116
 In warme wexe haþ enprinted *þis* clikett'
þat *Ianuare* bere of *þat* smal wikett'
 By which vnto his gardyne of[t] he went'
 And *Damyán* *þat* knewe her entent' 2120
 þe Cliket' countrefeted prively
 þer nys no more to say but' hastely
 Somme wondere by *þis* cliket' shal betide
 Which ye shal here if' *3e* wil abide 2124
 O noble *Ovide* soþe seist' þou god wote
 What' sele³t' is it' þow it' be longe & hote
þat he nyl fynde it' out' in somme manere
 By *Piramus* and *Tisbe* may men lere 2128
 þough þei were kepte ful longe streit' oueratt'
 þei ben acorded rownyng' þorgh a waþ
 Ther nys no wizt' couþe han founde out' such a selei³t' ^[1f 125, bk]
 But' nowe to *purpoos* er *þat* daies viij. 2132
 were passed er the monþe of *Iuyl* byfille
 That' *Ianuare* haþ caught' so grete a wille
 þorowe eggyng' of his wiff' him forto pley
 In his gardyne and no þing' but' þei tweye 2136

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

þat in a morwe vnto his may seide he
 Rise vp my wif my loue my lady free
 The turtels vois is herd my douve swete
 The wynter is goon *with* al his reynes wete 2140
 Come forþ nowe *with* þine eyen columbyne
 How feirer bene þi brestes þan bene wyne
 The gardyne is enclosed al aboute
 Come forþ my white spouse out of doute 2144
 þow hast me wovnded in myn hert o wiff
 No spotte in þe nas in al þi liff
 Come forþ and lat vs take our disport
 I Cheese þe for my wiff and my comfort 2148
 Suche olde loude wordes vsed he
 On damyan a signe made shee
 That he shulde goo byform wif his cliket
 This damyan hap opned þe wiket 2152
 And in he stert and þat in such manere
 That no wif myz it see ne here
 And stille he sitte vnder a buss h anoñ
 This Ianuare so blynde as is a stoñ 2156
 Wif Maius in his honde *and* no wif moo
 Into his fresshe gardyne is he goo
 And crapte to þe wiket sodeynly
 Now wif *quod* he here nys but þou *and* I 2160
 That arte þe creature þat I best loue
 ffor by þat lorde þat sitte vs al aboute
 I had leuere dyen on a knyff
 þan 3e offended dere trewe wiff 2164
 ffor goddes sake þenk how I þe chees
 Nouzt for no coueityse doutelees /
 But only for þe loue I had to þe [leaf 126]
 And þough þat I be olde and may not see 2168
 Be to me trewe and I wil telle 3ou why
 Certes iij. þingges shul 3e wynn þerby
 ffirst loue of Crist and to 3oure self honour
 And al myne heritage toune *and* toure 2172

I 3eue it' 3ou makeþ Cher[tr]es as 3ou lest'
 This shal be doo to morowe er sonne¹ rest' [1st sonnesse]
 So wisly god my soule bringe in blisse
 I prey 3ou in couenant' þat' 3e me kisse 2176
 And þou3e þat' I be Ialous wite me nou3t'
 3e ben so depe enprented in my þou3t'
 That' whan I considere 3oure bewte
 And þerwipal þe vnlikly elde of me 2180
 I may not' certes þou3e I shulde deie
 fforbere to bene out' of 3our' companye
 ffor verrey loue þis is wip-oute doute
 Now kisse me wiff and lat' vs rome aboute 2184
 ¶ This freesshe may whan she þise wordes herd'
 Benignely to Ianuare she answerd'
 But' first' and formest' she bygan to wepe
 I haue quod she a soule to kepe 2188
 As wel as she and also myn honoure
 And of my wifhede pilke tendere floure
 whiche I haue assured in 3oure hand'
 whan þat' þe preest' to 3ou my body band'
 wherfore I wil answere in þis manere 2192
 with þe leue of 3ou my lord' so dere
 I prey god þat' neuere dawe þat' day
 þat' I ne sterue as foule as womman may 2196
 If euer I do vnto my kynne þat' shame
 Eiper ellis I enpeire so my name
 þat' I be fals And if I do þat' lakke
 To stripe me *and* putte me in a sakke 2200
 And in þe next' ryuere do me drenche
 I am a gentil womman *and* no wenche.
 whi speke 3e þus but' men bene euere vntrewe [leaf 126, back]
 And wommen ha reproof of 3ou ay newe 2204
 3e can noon oþer countynancē I leue
 But' speke to vs as vntrest' and in repreue
 And wip þat' worde she segħ wher damyan
 Satte in þe busshe and knele he bygan 2208

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And wiþ her fynger signes made she
 þat Damyas shuld clymbe vpon a tree
 þat charged was wiþ frwte and vp he went
 For verreily he knewe al her entent' 2212
 And euery signe þat she couþe make
 wel bette þan Ianuare her owne make
 ffor in a *lettre* she had tolde him aþ
 Of þis matere howe he worchen shaft 2216
 And þus I lat' hym sitte in þe pirry
 & Ianuare and Mayus regnyng' ful mery
 ¶ Briþt was þe day *and* blewe þe firmament
 Phebus of gold' doune hap' his stremes sent' 2220
 To gladen euery floure wiþ his warmnesse
 He was þat tyme in Gemynys as I gesse
 But' litel fro his declinacioñ
 Of Canser, Louis exaltacioñ 2224
 And so bifelle þat in a briþt morowtide
 þat in þe Gardyne on þat ferþer side
 Pluto þat is þe kyng' of ffairye
 And mony a lady in his companye 2228
 ffolowinge his wiff þe qwene *proserpina*
 Whiche þat he rauysshed out' of *proserpina*
 whilis þat she gadered floures in a mede
 In Claudyan 3e may þe stories rede 2232
 How in his Grisly carte he her fette
 This kinge of fairye adoune hym sette
 Vpon a benche of Turves fressh *and* grene
 And riþt anon seide he þus to his quene 2236
 My wif' quod he þat' may no wiz't say nay
 The experience proueth it' euery day
 The treson which þat' womman doþ to man
 x^c thousand telle I can [leaf 127] 2240
 Notable of 3oure vntrouþe *and* britelnesse
 O salamon richest' of alle rychesse
 ffulfilled of sapience and of worldely glorie
 fful worþi bene þi wordes to memorie 2244

To euery wight þat witte and resoñ can/
 Thus preiseþ he 3it þe bounte of man
 Among' a Mī men 3it fonde I oñ
 But' of alle wommen fonde I neuere noon 2248
 Thus seiþ þis knyght þat knoweþ 3oure wickednesse
 And *Ihesus filius C[i]rak* as I gesse
 Ne spekeþ of 3ou but' seelden reuerence
 A wilde fuyr a corrupte pestilence 2252
 So falle vpon 3oure bodies 3it to ny3t
 Ne Se 3e not' þis honorable knyght'
 By cause alas þat' he is blynde *and* olde
 His owne man shal make him kokewoldē 2256
 Lo where he sitte þe leccheour in þe tree
 Nowe wil I graunte of my maieste
 Vnto þis olde blynde worþi kny3t
 That' he shal han a3ein his eyen si3t 2260
 whan þat' his wiff wold do him vilanye
 þan shal he knowe al her harlotrie
 Boop in repreef' of hure and oþer moo/
 ¶ 3e Sire quod proserpyne and wil 3e soo 2264
 Nowe by my moders sire soule I swere
 þat' I shal 3euen hire suffisant' answere
 And alle wommen aftere for 3oure sake
 That' þou3e þei bene in eny gilt' ytake 2268
 Wiþ face bolde þei shullen hem self excuse
 And beren hem doune þat' wolden hem accuse
 ffor lacke of answer noon of hem shul dyen
 AH hadde 3e seie a þinge wiþ boþ 3oure yen 2272
 3it' shullen we so visage it' hardely
 And wepe and swere and chide subtyly
 þat' 3e shullen bene as lewde as bene gees [le: f 127, back]
 what' recketh me of such' autoritees/ 2276
 I wote wel þis Iwe this salomon
 ffoonde of vs wymmen foles mony oñ
 But' þou3e þat' he ne fonde no good womman
 þer haþ yfounde mony anoþer man 2280

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

wommen ful trewe ful good ful vertuuous
witnessse of hem þat dwellen in cristes hous
wiþ martierdome þei proued her constance
þe Romayn geestes maken remembraunce 2284
Of mony a verrey trewe wif also /
But sir ne be not wroþ as be it soo /
þough þat he seide he foonde no good womman
I prei 3ou take þe sentence of þe man 2288
He ment þus þat in souereyn bounte
Nis noon but god but neiþere he ne she
Eye for verrey god þat nys but oon
what make 3e so moche of Salomōn 2292
what þou3e he made a temple goddys hous
what þou3e he were riche and glorious
So made he a temple of fals goddes ./
Who my3t do a þinge þat more forbode es 2296
Parde as faire as 3e his name enplasterē
He was a lecchoure and an ydolastre
And in his elde he verrey god forsokē
And 3if þat god nad as seiþ þe booke 2300
yspared him for his faders sake he sholde
haue lost his regne souner þan he wolde
I sette nou3t of alle þe vyleynye
þat 3e of wommen write a botterflie 2304
I am a womman nede mote I speke
Eiþer ellis swelle to myñ hert breke
ffor siþen he seide þat we bene Iangler[ess]es
As euer mote I brouke boþ my tresses 2308
I shal not spare for no curtesye
To speke him harme þat wold vs vilanye
Dame quod þis Pluto be no lenger wroþe [leaf 128]
I 3eue it vp but siþens I swore myñ oþe 2312
þat I wolde graunten him his sizt a3eyñ
My word shal stonde þat warne I þe certeyñ
I am a kinge it sitte me not to lye
And I quod she a quene of fairye 2316

Her Answere she shal haue I vndertake
 Lat' vs no moo wordes make
 ¶ fforsoþ I wil no lenger 3ou contrarie
 Now lat' vs turne a3ein to Ianuarye 2320
 That' in þis Gardyn wiþ þis faire Maye
 Syngeþ wel merier þan þe popeniay
 3ou loue I best' and shal and oþer noñ
 So longe aboute þe alaies is he goñ 2324
 TiH he was come a3einst' þilk' piry
 where as þis damyan sitteþ ful mery
 On hegh amonge þe fresshe leues grene
 This fresshe May þat' is so bri3t' an shene 2328
 Gan forto sigh and seide alas my side
 Now sire quod she for ou3te þat' may bytide
 I moost' haue of þe peeres þat I see
 Or I mote dye so soore longeþ me 2332
 To eten of þe smale peres grene
 Helpe for her loue þat' is of heuene quene
 I telle 3ou wel a womman in my plite
 May haue to fructe so grete an appetite 2336
 þat' she may dyen but' she it haue
 Allas quod he þat' I nad here a knaue
 That couþe clymbe alas alas quod he
 ffor I am blinde 3e sire no fors quod she 2340
 But' wold' 3e vouchesauf for goddis sake
 þe piry in wiþ 3oure arnes forto take
 ffor wel I wote þat' 3e mystrest me
 Ellis shuld I clymbe wel ynowe quod she 2344
 So I my fote my3t' sette vpon 3oure bak'
 ffor soþe seide he in me shal be no lak'
 Might' I 3ou helpe wiþ myn herte blood [leaf 128, back]
 He stoupeþ doune and on his bak' she stood 2348
 And cau3t' hure by a twist' and vp she goop
 Ladyes I preie 3ou þat' ye be nat' wroop
 I can not' glose I am a rude man
 And sodeynly anoon þis damyan 2352

- Gan pullen vp þe smokke and in he þronge
 And whan þat Pluto segħ þis grete wronge
 To Ianuarie he 3aue his sizt' ageyñ
 [And made him se / as wel as evir he myht
 And whan he hadde / cauht his syht ageyñ]
 ne was þer neuer man of þinge so feyñ
 But' on his wiff his þou3t' was euer moo
 Vp to þe tree he cast' his eyen twoo / 2360
 And segħ þat Damyan his wif' had dressed.
 In which manere it' may not' be expressed
 But' [3if] I wolde speke vncurteysly
 And vp he 3aue a roringe *and* a crye 2364
 As doþe þe modere whan þe childe shal dye
 oute helpe alas harowe I gan to crye
 O stronge lady stoor what' doostowe
 And she answerþ sire what' eileth 3owe 2368
 Haue pacience and reson in 3oure mynde
 I haue 3ou hulpen of boþ 3oure eyen blynde
 Vp perile of my soule I shal not' lyen
 As me was tau3te to hele wiþ 3oure eien 2372
 Was no þinge bette forto make 3ou see
 Than strogle wiþ a man vpon a tree
 God wote I did it' in ful good entent
 Stroggel quod he . 3e algate in it went' 2376
 God 3eue 3ou boþe a shames dep' to dyeñ
 He swyued þe I segħ it' wiþ myne eyeñ
 And ellis be I honged by þe hals
 Than is quod she þe medecyne fals 2380
 ffor certeynly if 3e my3ten see
 3e wold not' saye no wordes vnto me
 3e han some glymysing' *and* no parfit sizt'
 I see quod he as wel as euere I my3t' 2384
 Thonked be god wiþ boþ myn eyen twoo [leaf 129]
 And by my trouþe me þought' he did þ' soo
 3e mase mase good sir' quod she
 This þonk' I haue for I haue made 3ou see 2388

Allas quod she þat euere I was so kinde
 Now dame quod he lat al passe out of mynde
 Come doune my leef *and* if I haue myssayd
 God helpe me so as I am euel apayd 2392
 But by my faders soule I wend haue seyn
 How þat þis Damyan had by þe leynd
 And þat þi smok had leye vpon þi brest
 3e sir quod she 3e may wene as 3ou lest 2396
 But sir a man þat wakeþ out of sclepe
 He may not sodeynly wel take kepe
 Vpon a þinge ne seen it parfityly
 To þat he be adawed verrey 2400
 Ri3t so a man þat long hap blynde ybe
 Ne may not sodeynly so wel yse
 ffirst whan þe sirt is newe commen ageyn
 As he þat hap a day or tweyen yseyñ 2404
 Til þat 3oure sirt ystabled be a while
 Ther may ful mony a sirt 3ou begile
 Beþ ware I preye 3ou for by heuene kinge
 fful mony a man weneþ forto se a þinge 2408
 And it is al anoþer þan it semeþ
 He þat mysconceyueþ mysdemeþ
 And wiþ þat word she lepe down fro þe tre
 This Ianuarie who is glad but he 2412
 He clippeþ hire and kisseþ hure ful oft
 And on hire wombe he strokeþ hure ful soft
 And to his Palays home he hap hire lad
 Nowe good men I prey 3ou to be glad 2416
 Thus endeþ here my tale of Ianuarie
 God blesse vs and his modere seynt Marie , 2418

¶ Here endeþ þe tale of þe marchaunt

GROUP D. FRAGMENT V.

§ 1. WIFE OF BATH'S PREAMBLE.

PETWORTH MS.

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe wif of Bathe [leaf 129]

Experience thouze noon autorite [leaf 129, back]
were in þis world̄ riȝt ynouze for me
To speke of woo þat̄ is in mariage
ffor lordingges siþ I twelue zere was of age 4
Thonked be god þat̄ is eterne alyue
Husbondes atte church̄ door haue I had fyve
ȝif I so often myȝt̄ han wedded be
But̄ alle were worþi men in her degre 8
But̄ me was tolde certeyn not̄ longe agoñ is
That̄ siþen crist̄ ne went̄ neuer but̄ onys
To wedden in þe cane of galile
þat̄ by þilk ensample tauȝte he me 12
That̄ I ne shuld wedded be but̄ onys
Herk eek . loo such̄ a sharpe word̄ for þe nones
Beside a welle Ihesu god *and* man
Spake in reproof of þe Samaritan 16
Thow hast̄ yhad .v. husbondes quod he
And þat̄ ilk̄ man þat̄ nouz haþ þe
Is not̄ thyne husbond̄ þus seide he certeyñ
What̄ he ment̄ þer-by I can not̄ seyñ 20
Wele! But̄ þat̄ I aske whi the fift̄ man
Was non husbond̄ to þe Samaritan
How mony myȝt̄ she han in mariage
ȝit̄ herd I neuere telle in myn age 24

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

vpoñ þis nombre diffinicioun
 Men may devise and glosen vp *and* down
 But wel I wote expresse wiþ-ou^ten lye
 God bad us forto wexe and multiplie 28
 That ge[n]tile text can I wel vnderstond
 Eke wel I wote he seide myñ husbond
 Shuld lete fadere *and* modere *and* take to me
 But of no nombre mencioñ made he 32
 Of bygamy or of octogamye
 Whi shuld men þan of it han vilanye
 loke here the wise man . kyng Salomon
 I trowe he had wyues moo þan oðñ ¶ *Genesis ijº quam-obrem* 36
 Now wold god it lieful were to me [leaf 130]
 To be refreshed half so oft as he
 Which 3ift of god had he for añ his wyues
 No man haþ such þat in þis world alyue es / 40
 God wote þis noble kinge as to my witte
 þe furst nyzt had mony a mery fitte
 Wiþ eche of hem so wel was hym alyve
 Blessed be god . þat I haue wedded fyve 44
 Welcome þe .vi. whan þat euer he shal
 ffor siþ I wil not kepe me chaast in añ
 Whan myn husbond is fro þe world ygoñ
 Somme cristen man shal wedde me anoñ 48
 ffor þan the apostel seiþ þat I am fre
 To wedde a goddes half where it likeþ me
 He seiþ þat to be wedded is no synne
 Better is to be wedded þan to brenne
 What rekkeþ me þoo folk sey vylanye 53
 Of shrewde lameþe and his Bygamye
 I woot wel Abraham was an holy man
 And Iacob eke as fer as euer I can 56
 And eche of hem had wyues moo þan twoo
 And mony anoþer holy man also
 Where can 3e say in eny maner age
 That vs god defended mariage 60

¶ *Relinquet homo
patrem & matrem
& adherabit vxori
sue & cetera.*

¶ *Melius est nubere
quam vri. //*

By expresse woord I prei 3ou telleþ me
 Or where commaunded he virginite
 I wote as wel as 3e it is no drede
 þe Apostel whan he spekeþ of maydenhede 64
 He seide þerof precept had he non
 Men may counsaile a womman to be on
 But counseilling nys non comaundement
 He putte it in oure owne Iuggement 68
 ffor had god commaunded maidenhede
 þan had he dampned weddyng wip þe dede
 And certes 3if þer were no sede ysowe
 Virginite þan wherof shuld it growe . 72
 Paule durst not commaunde at þe leest [leaf 130, back]
 A þing of which his maister 3af hym no heest
 þe darte is sette vp for virgynite
 Chace who so may who so renneþ best lat se 76
 But þis word is not take of every wizt
 But þer as god wold 3eue it of his myght
 I wote wel þat þe apostel was a mayde
 But napeles þough þat he wrote or seide 80
 He wold þat euery wizt were such as he
 All nys but counsaile to virgynite
 And forto be a wif he 3af me leue
 Of Indulgence so is it no repreue 84
 To wedde me 3if þat my make dye
 With-oute excepciõ of Bygamye
 Al were it good no womman forto touche
 He ment as his body or in his couche 88
 ffor perile is boþ fire and towe to assemble
 3e knowe what þis ensample may resemble
 þis is al and somme he helde virginite
 More parfit þan wedded in freelte 92
 Freelte clepe I not but þat he and she
 Wolde lede her lif al in chaastite
 I graunte it wel I haue non envie
 þoo Maidenhede preferre bygamye 96

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

It likeþ hem to be clene in body and goost.
 Of myn estaat I wil make no boost
 ffor wel 3e knowe a lord in his houshold
 Haþ not euery vessel of gold 100
 Somme bene of tree and doñ her lord *seruise*
 God clepeþ folk to him in sondry wise
 And euery haþ of god a *propre* zift
 Somme þis somme þat as hym likeþ shift 104
 Virginite ys grete *perfeccion*
 And continence eke wiþ deuociõn
 But *cris* þat of *perfeccion* is welle
 Bad not euery wigt he shulde selle 108
 Al þat he had and zeue it to þe poore [leaf 131]
 And in such wise folowe hym *and* his lore
 He spake to hem þat wold lyue *parfitely*
 And lordingges by 3oure leue þat am not I
 I wil bystowe þe floure of al myn age
 In charite and fruyte of mariage
 Telle me also to what *conclusion*
 Were membres made of *generacion* 116
 And of so *parfit* wise and whi ywrouzt
 Trestep rizt wel þei were not made for nouzt
 Glose who so wil I say boþ vp and down
 þat þei were made for *purgacioun* 120
 Of vryne and oure boþe þingges smale
 were eke to knowe a female from a male
 And for noon oþer cause . what seye 3e no
 þe *experience* woot þat it is so / 124
 So þat þe clerkes ben not wiþ me wroop
 I seie þis þat þei maked be² fore both [2 over a y rubd out.]
 This is to seyne for office *and* for eese
 Of engendringe ther we not god displese 128
 whi shuld men ellis in her bokes sette
 þat man shal zelde to his wif his dette
 Nowe wherwiþ shuld he paye his payment
 3if þat he ne vsed his sely instrument 132

¶ Mt xlx.¹ Dixit
 autem Ihesus
 vade & vende
 omnia quæ habes
 & da pauperibus
 [1 Matth. xix. 21]

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Than were þei made vpon a creature
 To purge vryne and eke for engendrure
 But I seye not þat euery wiȝt is holde
 þat haȝ such harneys as I to ȝou haue tolde 136
 To goon and vsen hem in engendrure
 þan shuld men take of chastite no cure
 Crist was a mayde and shapen as a man
 And mony a seint siȝ þat þe worldȝ bygan 140
 ȝit lyued þei euere in *parfit* chaastite
 I nyl envie wiȝ no virginite
 Lat hem ete brede of pured whete sede
 And lat vs wyues ete Barle brede . 144
 And ȝit wiȝ barle brede Mark telle can [leaf 131, back]
 Oure lord Ihesu refresshed mony a man
 In such astate as god haȝ cleped vs /
 I wil *perseuere* I ne am not precious 148
 In wifhode wil I vse myn Instrument
 As frely as my maker haȝ it sent
 If I be daungerous god ȝeue me sorowe
 Myn husbonde shal it haue boȝ eue *and* morowe 152
 Whan þat him list come forȝ *and* paye his dette
 An husbond I wil han I nyl not lette
 Which shal be boȝ my dettour *and* my þral
 And han his tribulaciō wiȝ-aȝ 156
 Vpon his flessch while þat I am his wif
 I haue the power during al my liff ¶ *Ad corinthios vijo.*
 vpon his propre body and not he *vir sui corporis potes-*
 Riȝt þus þe apostel told [it] vnto me 160 *tatem non habet. set*
 And bad oure husbondes forto loue hym weȝ *mulier.*
 Al þis sentence me likeȝ euery deȝ
Vp stert the pardonere and þat anoñ
 Now dame quod he by god *and* by seynt Iohn 164
 ȝe bene a noble precheour in þis caas
 I was about to wedde a wif alas
 What shuld I by it on my flessch so dere
 ȝit had I leuer wedde non to ȝere 168

Ibyde quod she my tale is not bygonne	
Nay þou shalt drinken a noþer tonne	
Er þat I goo shal sauour wors þan ale	
And whan þat I haue told forþ my tale	172
Of tribulacion in mariage	
Of whiche I am expert in myn age	
þis is to seye my silf haþ bene þe whippe	
þan maist þowe chese whider þou wilt scippe	176
þilk tonne þat I shal abroche	
Be war of it or þou to nye aproche	
ffor I shal telle ensamples moo þan ten	
who that wil not be war by oþere men ./	180
By hym shul oþer men corrected be	[leaf 132]
Thisse same wordes writeþ ptholome	
Rede in his almagest and take it þere	
Dame I wold þrey þou if þour wille were	184
Seide þis pardonere as 3e bygan	
Telle forþ þoure tale spare for no man	
And teche vs zenge men of þoure practyke	
Gladly quod she siþ it may þou like	188
But þat I þrey to al þis companye	
If þat I speke after my fantasie	
As takeþ nat a greef of þat I seye	
For myñ entent is not but to pleye	192
¶ Now sirs þan shal I telle þou my tale	
As euere mote I drinke wyne or ale	
I shal seie soþ þoo husbondes þat I hadde	
As iij. of hem were good <i>and</i> two were badde	196
þe iij. were good men riche <i>and</i> olde	
Vnneþes myzten þei þe statute holde	
In which þei were bounden vnto me	
3e wote wele what I mene of þis parde	200
As god me helpe I laugh whan I þenke	
How pitously a nyzt I made hem swynke	
But by my faye I tolde of it no store	
þei had me þoue her londe <i>and</i> her tresore	204

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Me neded not do lenger diligence
 To wyne her loue *and* do hem reuerence
 þei loued me so wel by god aboue
 þat I ne told no deynthe of her loue 208
 A wise womman wil bysyt hure euere *in* oñ
 To gete her loue 3e þer as she hap noñ
 But siþe I had hem holy in myn honde
 And siþ þat þei hadde 3oue me al her londe 212
 what shuld I take kepe hem forto plese
 But 3if it were my profite & myñ ease
 But sette hem so a werke by my faye
 þat mony a ny3t þei songen weleaway 216
 The bacon was not fette for hem I trowe [leaf 132, back]
 þat somme men han in Essex at donmowe
 I gouerned hem so wel after my lawe
 þat eche of hem ful blisful was *and* fawe 220
 To bringe me gay þingges fro þe feire
 knyves and ryngges & purses wel faire
 ffor god it woot I chide hem spitously
 Now herkenþ how I bere me *propely* 224
 3e wise wyues þat can vnderstonð
 þus shuld 3e speke and bere hem wrongt on hond
 ffor half so boldely þer can no man
 Swere and lye as womman can 228
 I say not þis by wyues þat bene wise
 But it be whan þat þei hem mysavise
 A wise wif shal if þat she can her goode
 Bere him an honde þat þe kowe is wode 232
 And take wisse of hire owne mayde
 Of hure assent but harkenþ how I seide
 ¶ Sire olde keynard is þis þine aray
 whi is my neighbours wif so gay 236
 She is honoured oueral wher she goþe
 I sitte at home I haue no þrifty cloþe
 what dostowe at myn neighbours hous
 Is she so faire art þou so amerous 240

what' rounē 3e wip' our mayde . benedicite
 Sire olde lecchoure lat' þi Iapes be
 And if I haue a gossipe or a frende
 wip'-oute gilt' 3e chide as a fende 244
 3if þat' I walk' or play vnto his hous
 þou comrest home as dronken as a mous
 An prechest' on þi benche wip' euel preef'
 þou seist' to me it' is a grete meschief 248
 To wedde a poor womman for costage
 And if þat' she be riche of grete parage
 þan seist' þou þat' it' is a turmentrie
 To suffre her pride and her malencolie . 252
 And if þat' she be faire þowe verrey knaue [leaf 133]
 þowe seist' þat' euery holoure wol hure haue
 She may no while in chaastite abide
 That' is assaiēd vpon eche side 256
 Thowe seist' somme folk' desire vs for richesse
 Somme for our shap and some for *our* fairnesse
 And somme for she can eiper sing' or dañce
 Thus seistowe wernard' god 3eue þ^e meschañce 260
 Somme for hure hondes *and* her armes smale
 Thus goþ al to þe deuēþ by þi tale
 Thow seyst men may not' kepe a casteþ walle
 It' may so longe assailed be oueraþ 264
 And if þat' she be foule þou saist' þat' she
 Coveiteþ euery man þat' she may se
 ffor as a spaynel she wil on hym lepe
 Til þat' she fynde somme man þat' wil hire chepe 268
 Ne noon so grey goos gos þer in the lake
 As seist' þou þat' wil be wip'-outen make
 And seist' it' is an harde þinge forto welde
 A wizt' þat' no man wil his þonkes helde 272
 Thus seist' þou lorel whan þou goost' to bedde
 And þat' no wise man nedep' forto wedde
 And no man þat' entēdeþ to þe heuene
 with wilde ponder' dynt' and fire leuene 276

Mote þi welked nek ^t be to-broke	
þou seist ^t þat ^t dropping ^t houses and eke smoke	
And chidinge wyues maken men to fle	
Out ^t of hir owne house . A benedicite	280
What ^t eileþ such ⁿ an old man forto chide	
þou seist ^t we wyues wil oure vices hide	
Til we be fast ^t <i>and</i> þan we wil hem schewe	
Wele may þis be a prouerbe of a schrewe	284
þou seist ^t þat ^t Oxen . assen . hors . <i>and</i> houndes	
þei ben assaide at ^t dyuers stoundes	
Basyns lauoyrs er þat ^t men hem bye	
Spones . stooles . <i>and</i> such ⁿ husbondrye .	288
And so bene pottes cloþes and oþer araies	[leaf 133, back]
But ^t of wommen are maked none assaies	
Til þei ben wedded old dotard ^t shrewe	
And seist ^t howe þen we wil our vices shewe	292
Thowe seist ^t also þat ^t it ^t displeseþ me	
But ^t 3if þou wilt ^t preise my bewte	
And but ^t þou poure alway vpon my face	
And clepe me faire dame in euery place	296
And but ^t þou make a feest ^t on þat ^t ilk ^t day	
þat ^t I was born and make fressh ⁿ <i>and</i> gay	
And but ^t þou do to myn norys honoure	
And to my chambere <i>with</i> Inne my bour	300
And to my faders folkes <i>and</i> his alyes	
Thus seist ^t þou olde bareh ^t ful of lyes	
And 3it ^t of oure apprentise Iankyn	
ffor his crispe here shynyng ^t as gold ^t fyne	304
And for he sqwiers me boþ vp <i>and</i> down	
3it ^t hast ^t þou þou3t ^t a fals suspecioun	
I wil hym not ^t þei þou were dede to-morowe	
But ^t telle me þis whi hidest ^t þou wiþ sorowe	308
þi keyes of þi chest ^t away fro me	
It ^t is my good as wel as þine <i>parde</i>	
what ^t wenest ^t þou make an ydyote of <i>our</i> dame	
Now by þat ^t lord þat ^t called is seint ^t Iame	312

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

þou shalt not boþ þouze þou were woode
 Be maister of my body and my goode
 þat oon þou shalt forgoen magre þine eizen
 what helpeþ it of me to quere *and* spien 316
 I trowe þoo þou woldest lokke me in þi chest
 þou shuldest seie wif go where þe lest
 Take þoure disport I wil leue no talis
 I knowe þou for a good wiff dame Alys 320
 we loue no man þat takeþ kepe ne charge
 where þat we go we wil be at *our* large
 Of alle men blessed mot he be
 þe wise astrologen daun ptholome 324
 That seip þis prouerbe in his almagest
 Of alle men his wisdom is hiest [leaf 134]
 þat rekkeþ not who hap þe world in hond
 By þis prouerbe þou shalt wel vnderstonð 328
 Haue þou ynowe what ther þe rekke *and* care
 Howe merely þat opere folk fare
 ffor certes olde dotarde be þoure leue
 þe shul haue queynt right ynowe at eue 332
 He is to grete a nygard þat wil warne
 A man to lizt a candel at his lantarne
 He shal haue neuere þe lasse lizt parde
 Haue þou ynowe þe ther not pleyne þe 336
 Thou seist also þat þif þou make vs gay
 with cloþinge or wiþ precious aray
 That it is perile of our chaastie
 And þit wiþ wordes þou mote enforce me 340
 And say þise wordes in þe apostels name
 In abite made wiþ chastite and shame
 þe wommen shuld apparaile þou quod he
 And not in tressed here and gay perre 344
 As perle ne wiþ gold *and* cloþes riche
 Aftere þi text ne aftere þi rubriche
 I nyl not worche as mochel as a gnatte
 Thowe seidest als þat I was like a catte 348

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

Butt who so wolde senge a cattis skyn
 þan woldt þe catte wel dwellen in his Inn
 And if þe cattes skyn be selyke *and* gay
 She nyl nott dwel in hous half a day 352
 Butt forþ she wil er eny day be dawed
 To shewe her skyn and go a caterwawed /
 þis to seie if I be gay sir' schrewe
 I wil renne outt my burel for to shewe 356
 Sir' olde foole what helpeþ þe to spien
 þei þowe prey argus wiþ his M̄. eyen
 To be my warde corps as he can bestt
 In feiþ he shal nott kepe me butt if me lestt 360
 3it' coupe I make his beerde so mote I þee [leaf 134, back]
 þou seist' eke þat' þer bene þinges þre
 þe which þingges trowblen al þis erþe
 And þat' no wizt' ne may endure þe ferþe 364
 O leue sir' schrewe Ihesu shortt þi liff
 3it' prechestowe and seist' an hatful wiff
 Yreckned is for oon of þise meschaunces
 Ben þere non oþer manere resemblaunces 368
 þat' 3e may likne 3oure parables too
 Butt 3if a cely wif be oon of þoo
 þow. liknest wommannys loue to helle
 To barayn londe þer water may nott dwelle 372
 Thou liknestt itt also to wilde fire
 þe more itt brennep þe more itt haþ desire
 To consume eny þing' þat' brentt wold be
 Thow seist' þat' rizt' a[s] wormes sheende a tre 376
 Rizt' so a wiff' distroieþ her husbonde
 þis knowe þei þat' bene to wyues bonde
 ¶ Lordingges rizt' þus as 3e han hunderstandt
 Bare I stifly myn olde husbondes on handt 380
 That' þus þei seiden in her dronkenesse
 And eke þat' þei had suspesioñ of Ialousnesse
 On Iankin and on myn neef also
 O lord þe peyn I did hem *and* þe woo / 384

fful giltelees by goddis swete pyne
 ffor as an hors I couþe boþ bite *and* whyne
 I couþe pleyne *and* I was in þe gilt'
 Or ellis often tyme I had be spilt' 388
 Who so þat' first' to mylle *commeth* first' grynt'
 I pleynded furst' so was oure werre stint'
 ¶ þei were ful glad to excusen hem ful blyue
 Of þinge of which þei agilt' neuer her lyue 392
 Of wenches wold' I beren hem on honde
 Whan þat' for seke þei myzt' vnneþ stonde
 3it' ticed I his hert' for þat' he
 wende I had of hym so grete chierte 396
 I swore þat' al my walking' by nyzt'
 [leaf 135]
 Was forto asprie wenches þat' he digt'
 Vnder þat' colour had I mony a myrþe
 ffor al such' witte is zeuen vs in our birþe 400
 Deceyte. weping'. spynnyng' god haþ zeue ¶ *ffallere. flere. nere*
s. atuit deus in muliere
 To womman kindly while þat' þei lyue
 And þus of' on þing' I auaunte me
 At' þe ende I had þe best' in eche degre 404
 By sleizt' or force. or by somme maner' þinge
 As by contynuel *murmur* or grucchinge
 Namely abed had þei meschaunce
 þer wold' I chide and do hem no plesauce 408
 I wolde no lenger in þe bedde abide
 3if þat' I felt' his arme ouere my side
 Til he had made his raunson vnto me
 þan wolde I suffre hym doo his nicete 412
 And þerfore euery man þis tale I telle
 Wiue who so may al are for to selle
With empty hond men may noñ hauke lure
 ffor wyunnyng' wold' I al his lust' endure 416
 And make me a feyned appetite
 And 3it' in bacon had I neuere delite
 That' maked me þat' euer I wold' hym chide
 ffor þouze þe pope had sitte hym beside 420

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

I wolde not spare hym at his owne bord
 ffor be my troupe I quytte hym worde for word
 As helpe me verrey god omnipotent
 þow I riȝt nowe shuld make my testament 424
 I ne owe hym a word þat it nys quytte
 I brouȝt it so aboute by my witte
 þat he must ȝeue it vp as for þe best
 Or ellis had we neuer be in rest 428
 ffor þough he loked as a lyon
 ȝit shuld he faile of his conclusiō
 Than wold I seie nowe goode leef take kepe
 Howe mekely lokeþ wilkin our shepe ./ 432
 Come nere my spouse lat me ba þi cheke [leaf 135, back]
 ȝe shul be al pacient and meke
 And han a swete spiced conscience
 Siþ ȝe so prech of Iobes pacience 436
 Suffreþ alway siþ ȝe so wel can preche
 And but ȝe doo certeyn we shul ȝou teche
 þat it is faire to haue a wif in pees
 Oon of vs mote bowen doutelees 440
 And siþ a man is more resonable
 þan womman is . sir ȝe moste be suffrable
 what eileth ȝou to grucche þus and grone
 Is it for ȝe wold han my queynt alone 444
 Wy take it alle lo haue it euery deþ
 Peter I schrewe ȝou but ȝe loue me weþ
 ffor ȝif I wolde selle my bele chose
 I couþe walk as frecch as eny rose 448
 But I wil kepe it for ȝour owne toþ
 ȝe be to blame be god I seie ȝou soþ
 Such manere wordes had we on hond
 Now wil I speke of my ferþe husbonde 452
 ¶ Mi ferþe husbonde was a reueloure
 þis is to seie he had a paramour
 And I was ȝenge and ful of ragerye
 Stiborn and stronge and Ioly as a pie 456

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

lord I coupe daunce to an harpe smale
 And synge ywis as eny nyztngale
 whan I hadde dronke a draught of swete wyñ
 Metelyus þe foule cheerle þo swyñ 460
 þat wif a staf byraft his wif her lif
 ffor she dronk wyne þouze I had ben his wiff
 Ne shuld he not han daunted me fro drinke
 And aftere wyne on venus most I þenke 464
 ffor as siker as colde engendreþ haile
 A likerous mouþ most han a lykerous tale
 In womman vinolent is no defence
 þis knowe leccours by experience 468
 But lord crist whan þat it remembreþ me [leaf 136]
 Vpon my zouþe and [on] my Iolite
 It ticleþ me aboute myn herte rote
 Vnto þis day It doþ myn herte bote 472
 þat I haue had my world as in my tyme
 But age alas þat al wil enuename
 Haþ me byraft my bewte and my pith
 Lat it go fare wel þe deuel goo þerwith 476
 The floure is goñ þer nys no more to telle
 þe bren as I best can now mote I selle
 But 3it to be riȝt mery wil I foonde
 Now forþe to telle of my ferþe husbonde 480
 I seie I had in hert gret despite
 þat he of eny oþer had delite
 But he was quytte by god and by seynt Iose
 I made hym of þe same wode a crose 484
 Nat of my body in no foule manere
 But certeynly I made folk such chere
 þat in his owne grece I made hym frye
 ffor Anger and for verrey Ialowsie 488
 By god in erþe I was his purgatorie
 ffor which I hope his saule be in glorie
 ffor god it woote he satte ful oft and songe
 whan þat his shoghñ ful bitterly hym wronge 492

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

ffor þer nas noon sauf god and he þat wist'
 In mony wise where I hym twist'
 He deyed whan I come fro Ierusalem
 And liþe in a graue vnder þe rode-beem 496
 All nys his tombe not' so curious
 As was þe sepulture of hym darius
 which þat' appelles wrouzt' subtily
 It' nys but' waast' to bury hym preciously 500
 Lat' hym fare wel god 3eue his soule rest'
 He is nowe in his graue *and* in his chest'
 ¶ Nowe of my .v. husbond' wil I telle
 God lat' neuere his soule come in helle 504
 And 3it' was he to me þe moost' shrewe [leaf 136, back]
 þat' fele I on my ribbes al by rewe
 And euere shal unto myn ending' daye
 But' in oure bed he was so fressh *and* gaye 508
 And þer wiþ al so wel couþe he me glose
 whan þat' he wold' han my bele chose
 þat þouze he had me bete on euery boñ
 He couþe wynne ageyn my loue anoñ 512
 I trowe I loued him þe bette for he
 Was of his loue daungerous to me
 We wommen han if þat' I shal not' lye
 In þis manere a queynte fantasie 516
 waite what' þinge we may not' liztly haue
 Theraftere wil we crie al day and craue
 fforbede vs þinge *and* þat' desiren we
 Prees on vs fast' and þan wil we fle 520
 with daungere outer we al oure chaffare
 Greet' prees atte Market' makeþ dere ware
 And to grete chepe is yholde atte litel pris
 This knoweþ euery womman þat' is wise 524
 ¶ My fift' husbonde god his soule blisse
 which þat' I toke for loue and no ricchesse
 he some tyme was a clerk' of oxenford'
 And had left' scole and went' at' home to boord' 528

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

wiþ my gossip dwelling^t in our toūn
 God haue her soule her name was alisoun
 She knewe myn hert^t and al my priuYTE
 Better þan oure parissĥ preest^t so mot^t I the 532
 To hure bywried I my counseil aĥ
 ffor had myn husbonde pissed on a walle
 Or doon a þinge þat^t shuld^t have cost^t his liff^t
 To hure and to anoþer worþi wiff^t 536
 And to my nece which I loue weĥ
 I wold han tolde his counseile euerideĥ
 And so I did ful often god it^t wote
 þat^t made his face often rede *and* hote . 540
 ffor verrey shame and blamed hym self for he [leaf 137]
 had tolde to me so grete a priuYTE
 And so byfelle þat^t ones in a lente
 So ofte tyme I to my gosype wente 544
 ffor euere ȝit^t I loued to be gay /
 And forto walke in marche Averil and may
 ffrom hous to hous to harken sonday tailes/
 þat^t Iankin clerk *and* my gossip dame alys 548
 And I my self into þe feeldes wente
 Myn husbonde was at^t london al þat^t lente
 I had þe better leisere forto pley
 And forto see and eke forto be seye 552
 Of lusty folk what^t wist^t I wher^t my *grace*
 Was shapen forto be or in what^t place
 Therefore made I my visitacions
 To vigiles and to processioñs 556
 To preching^t eke and to þise pilgrimages
 To plaies of miracles and of mariages
 And wered vpon my gay scarlet gites
 These wormes ne þise mothes ne þise mytes 560
 Vpon my perile frete hem neuer a dele
 And woostowe whi for þei were vsed wele
 Now wil I tellen forþ what^t happed me
 I seie þat^t in þe feeldes walked we 564

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

Til trewely we had such daliañce
 þis clerk' and I þat' of my purviañce
 I spake to hym and seide how þat he
 3if I were widowe shuld wedde me 568
 ffor certeynly I seye for no bobañce
 þat' I was neuere 3it' withoute purveañce
 Of mariage ne of oþer þingges eke
 I hold' a monnys witte nat worþ a leke 572
 þat' haþ but' oon hool forto stirten too
 And 3if þat faile þan is al ydoo /
 [I bare hym on) hande he hadde enchauntede me [MS Reg. 17
Dxxv, on leaf
132, back]
 My dame taughte me þat subtylte
 And eke I sayde I Mete of' hym) aH nyghete 577
 He wolde haue slayne Me As I laye vprighete
 And aH my bedde was ffuHe of' vereye blode
 Butte yette I hope þat ye schuH do me gode 580
 ffor' blode bitokeneþe golde As me was taughte
 And aH was ffalse I dremede of' hitt' righete noughete
 Butte as I ffollowede Ay My dames lore
 Aswelle of' that as of' oþer' þynge more] [MS Reg. extract stops]
 But' nowe Sir' lat' me se what' shal I seyn
 A A. by god I haue my tale ageyn .
 whan þat' my ferþ husbond' was on bere [leaf 137, back]
 I wepte algates and made sory chere 588
 As wyues moten for it' is þe vsage
 And with my keercheef keuered my visage
 But' for þat' I was purueide of a make
 I wepte but' smale *and* þat' I vndertake 592
 To church' was myn husbond yborn on morowe
 wiþ neighbours þat' for hym made sorowe
 And Iankyn our clerk' was on of þoo
 As helpe me god whan þat' I segh hym goo 596
 Aftere þe bere me þou3t' he had a peire
 Of legges and of fete so clene *and* feire
 þat' al my hert' I 3aue vnto his holde
 He was I trowe xx^{ti} wynter' olde 600

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

And I was xlt^h 3if I shal seie soþe
 But^r 3it^r I had alway a Coltiss^h toþe
 Gat^r toþed I was *and* þat^r by-cam me weH
 I had þe printe of seynt^r venus seeH 604
 As helpe me god I was a lusty oñ
 ffaire and riche . 3onge *and* welbygoñ
 And trewly as myn husbond^r tolde me
 I had þe best^r quoniam þat^r myzt^r be 608
 [ffor^r sertes I Am^r aH veneryen] [MS Reg. 17 D xv,
on leaf 133]
 In^r ffelenges And my herte is Mercyen^r
 Venus me yafe My luste my lykerousnesse
 And Mars yafe me my sturdye hardynesse] 612
 Myn ascendent^r was taure *and* mars þer-inne
 Allas alas þat^r euer loue was synne
 I folowed aye myn Inclinacioñ
 By vertue of my constellacioñ 616
 That^r made me I couþe not^r wiþdrawe
 My chambere of venus from a good felawe
 [Yette haue I Mars is Marke vpon^r my fface] [MS Reg. 17 D xv,
on leaf 133]
 And also in Anopere preuye place 620
 ffor^r god^r so wysse be My saluacion^r
 I louede neuer by no discrecion^r
 I ffollowede euer Myne Appetyte
 AH were he longe schorte blacke or^r whyte 624
 I toke no kepe so þat he lykede me
 How poure he was And eke of^r whatte degre] [MS Reg.
extract stops]
 What^r shuld I sei but^r at^r þe monþes ende
 This Ioly clerk^r Iankyn þat^r was so hende 628
 Hap wedded me wiþ grete solempnite
 And to hym 3aue [I] al þe londe and ffee
 þat^r euere was me 3euen þer**·**bifore
 But^r aftere[ward] repented me ful sore 632
 He nolde suffre no þinge of my lest^r
 by god he smote me onys on þe lest^r
 ffor þat^r I rent^r out^r of his boke a leef [leaf 138]
 That^r of þat^r stroke myn eeren wexen deef 636

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Stiborn I was as is a leonesse
 And of my tunge a verrey Iangeleresse
 And walkt I woldt as I had doñ to-forn
 ffrom hous to hous al þouze he had it^r sworn 640
 fforþwip ful often tyme he wolde preche
 And me [of] olde Romaynes geestes teche
 How he · symplicius gallus laft^r his wiff
 And hure for-soke for terme of his lif 644
 Nat^r but^r for open hede he hure say
 Lokinge out^r at^r his door on a day
 Anoper romayn tolde he me by name
 þat^r for his wiff was at^r a somers game 648
 Wip-oute his wittying^r he forsoke her^r eke
 And þan wolde he vpon his bible seke
 þat^r ilk prouerbe of Ecclesiast^r
 Where he *commaundeþ and forbedeþ* fast^r 652
 Man shal not^r suffre his wif to rome aboute
 Than wolde he seie riȝt^r þus wip-outen doute
 Who-so þat^r beeldeþ his hous all of salous ¶ *Nota bene*
 And prickeþ his blynde hors ouere þe falous 656
 And suffereþ his wif forto seken halowes
 Is worþi forto be honged on þe galowes /
 ¶ But al for nouȝt^r I sette not^r an hawe
 Of his prouerbis ne of his olde lawe 660
 Ne I wold not^r of *hym* corrected be
 I hate hym þat^r my vice telleþ me
 And so doñ moo god wote of vs þan I
 þis made him wip me wode al vtterly 664
 I nold^r forbere hym in no cas
 Now wil I seye ȝou soþ by seint^r Thomas
 Whi þat^r I rent^r out^r of his booke a leef^r
 ffor which he smote me þat^r I was deaf^r 668
 He had a boke þat^r gladly nyȝt^r *and* daye
 ffor his disport^r he wolde rede alway
 He cleped Valerye and theofraste [leaf 138, back]
 Atte whiche boke he lowgh^r alway ful fast^r 672

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

And eke þer was somtyme a clerk' in Rome
 A Cardynal þat' hight' seint' Ierome
 þat' made a boke azein Iouean
 In which boke eke þer was Terculan 676
 Crisippus . Trocula . and holowys
 That' was Abbas not' fer fro Paris/
 And eke þe parables of Salomon
 Ovydes art' and bokes mony oñ 680
 And alle þise were bounden in oo volom
 And euery nyȝt' and day was his custum
 Whan he had leisere and vacacioñ
 ffrom oþere worldly occupacioñ 684
 To reden in þis boke of wicked wyues
 He knewe of hem mo legendys þan lyues
 þan bene of good wyues in þe bible
 ffor trusteþ wel it' is an impossible 688
 þat' eny clerk' wil speken good of wyues
 But' ȝif it' be of holy seyntes lyues
 Ne of noon oþere womman neuere þe moo /
 who peinteþ þe lyon telle me who / 692
 By god ȝif' wommen had ywriten stories
 As clerkes han wiþ-In her oratories
 Thei wold han writen of men more wickednesse
 Than al þe Mark' of Adam may redresse 696
 The Children of mercury and Venus
 Ben in her worchinge contrarious /
 Mercury loueþ wisdom *and* science
 And Venus loueþ riote and dispence 700
 And for her dyuers disposicioñ
 Ech falleþ in oþer exaltacioñ
 As þus god wote mercure is disolate
 In pisces wher Venus is exaltate 704
 And Venus falleþ þer mercurye is reysed'
 þerfor no womman of no man is praised .
 The clerk' whan he is olde and may not' do [leaf 139]
 Of Venus werkes worþ his olde shoo 708

þan sitte he doun *and* writte in his dotage
 þat' wommen can not' kepe her mariage
 But' nowe to purpos whi I told þe
 þat' I was beten for a boke parde . 712
 Vpon a nyȝt' Iankin þat' was our sire
 Redde on his boke as he satte by þe fire
 Of Eua first' þat' for her wickednesse
 Was al mankinde brouȝt' to wrecchednesse 716
 [ffor' whiche þat' Ihesu Crist' hym selfe was slayne [MS Reg. 17D xv, on leaf 134, back]
 That boughȝte vs *with* his herte blode agayne
 Lo here expresse of' women) Maye ye ffynde
 That women) was the losse of' AH Mankynde] 720
 Tho redde he me howe sampsoñ lost' his heres
 Slepinge his lemman kitt' it' wiþ her sheres
 þourȝh whiche treson lost' he boþ his eyen /
 Tho redde he me if I shal not' lyen . 724
 Of Ercules and of his dyanyre
 þat' caused hym to sette hym self a fyre
 No þinge forgate he þe penaunce *and* woo
 þat' Socrates had wiþ his wyues twoo 728
 Howe þat' Ancipa cast' pisse on his hede
 þe Sely man satte stille as he were dede
 He wiped his hede no more durst' he seyn)
 But' er þat' thonder' stint' commeþ a reyn) 732
 Of ¹pasipa þat' was þe quene of grete [¹ at first ph]
 ffor schrewdenesse hym þouȝt' þ^e tale swete
 ffye speke no more it' is a grisly þinge
 Of hure horrible lust' and [hure] lykyng 736
 Of Clitermistra for her lecherye
 þat' falsly made her husbond' forto dye
 He redde it' wiþ ful good deuocioñ
 He tolde me for what occasion 740
 Amphiorax at' thebes lost' his lif'
 Myn husbonde had a legende of his wif
 Eriphilem . þat' for an ouĉh of gold'
 haþ prively vnto þe grekes told' 744

wher þat her husbond hidde hym in a place
 ffor which he had at Thebes sory grace
 Of lyma tolde he mee and of lueye [leaf 139, back]
 þei boþ made her husbondes forto dye 748
 Thatt on for loue þat oþer was for hate
 lyma her husbonde on euene late
 Enpoysoned had for þat she was his foo
 Lucia lykerous loued her husbond soo / 752
 þat for he shuld vpon her alway þinke
 She 3aue hym such a loue manere drinke
 That he was dede or it was by þ^e morowe
 And þus algates husbondes han sorowe 756
 ¶ Than tolde he me howe on latumys
 Compleyned to his felawe arius
 That in his gardyne growed such a tre
 On which he seide þat his wyues þre 760
 Hangged hem selue for hertes despitous
 O leue broþer quod þis arius
 3eue me a plant of þat blisful tre
 And in my gardyne planted shal he be 764
 Of latter date of wyues hap he redde
 þat han slayn her husbondes in þe bedde
 But lat hure lecchoure dizt hur' al þe nyzt
 Whan þat þe corps lay in þe floore vprizt 768
 And some han dryuen nayles in her brayn
 While þat þei selepe and þus þei han hem selayn
 Somme han 3euen poysen in her drinke
 He spak more harme þan hert may þenk' 772
 And þer-with-añ he knewe of moo prouerbes ¶ Sol^o melius est habitare.
 þan in þis world þer growen grasse or herbes /
 Bett' is quod he þine habitacion
 Be wiþ a leon or a foule dragoñ 776
 þan wiþ a womman vsing' forto chide
 Bet' is quod he high in þe roof abide
 þan wiþ an angry wif down in an hous
 þey bene so wicked and contrarious / 780

þei haten þat her husbondes louen ay
 He seide a womman cast her shame away
 whan she cast of her smokke *and ferþermo* [leaf 140]
 A faire womman but she be chaast also / 784
 Is lich a gold ryng on a sowes nose
 who wold wene or wold suppose
 The woo þat in myn herte was *and* pyne
 And whan I segh he wolde neuere fyne 788
 To reden on þis cursed boke al nyzt
 Al sodeynly þre leues haue I plizt
 Out of his boke rizt as he redde *and* eke
 I wiþ my fist so toke him on þe cheke 792
 That in our fire he fille bakward adoun
 And he vp stert as doþ a wood lyoun
 And wiþ his fist he smote me on þe hede
 þat in þe flore I laie as I were dede 796
 And whan he seegh how stille þat I lay
 He was agast and wold han fledde away
 Til at þe laste out of my swowe I breide
 O hastowe slayne me fals þeef I seide 800
 And for my londe þus hastowe mordred me
 Or I be dede zit wil I kisse þee
 And nere he come and kneled faire adoun
 And saide dere sustere Alisouñ 804
 As helpe me god I shal þe neuere smyte
 That I haue done it is þi self to wite
 fforzeue it me *and* þat I þe biseke
 And zit eftsones I hit hym on þe cheke 808
 And seide þeef þus moche am I wreke
 Nowe wil I dye I may no lenger speke
 But at þe last wiþ mochel care *and* woo
 We fille acorded by vs seluen two 812
 He 3aue me al þe bridel in myn honde
 To haue þe gouernaunce of hous *and* londe
 And of his tunge and his hand also
 And made him brenne his boke anoñ rizt þoo 816

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

And whan þat' I had gotten vnto me
 By maistry al þe souereynte .
 Than he seide myn owne trewe wif' [leaf 140, back]
 Do as 3ou lest' þe terme of al 3oure lif' 820
 kepe 3oure honure and kepe eke myn astate
 Aftere þat' day we had neuere debate .
 God helpe me so I was to him as kinde
 As eny wiff from denmarke into Ynde 824
 And also trewe / and so was he to me
 I prey to god þat' sitte in mageste
 So blesse his soule for his mercy dere
 Now wil I seie my tale if 3e wil here 828

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe wiff of bath

And here bygynneþ þe Tale.¹

[¹ that is, *The Wrangle between
the Summoner and the Friar.*]

¶ The tale./

The frere lowe whan he had herd al þis
 Now dame quod he so haue I ioye or blis
 þis is a longe preamble of a tale
 And whan þis somnour herd þe frere gale 832
 Lo quod þe somnour goddis armes two
 A frere wil entremete hym euermoo
 Loo good men a flie and eke a frere
 wollen falle in euery dissh and eke matere 836
 what' spekest' þou of preambulacioun
 what' amble or trotte or pees or go sitte down
 Thou lettest' oure disport' in þis manere
 3e wilt' þou so somnour' quod þe frere 840
 Now by my fay I shal er þat' I goo
 Telle a somnour such a tale or twoo
 That' alle þe folk shul laughen in þis place
 Now ellis frere I bishrewe þi face 844
 Quod þis somnour' and I bishrewe me
 But' 3if I telle þe tales two or þre
 Of freres er I come to sidyngburne
 þat' I shal make þine hert' for to mourne 848

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

ffor wel I wote þi pacience is goñ
 Our hoost' cried pees and þat' anoñ
 And seide lat' þe womman telle her tale
 3e faren as folk' þat' dronken beñ of ale ./ 852
 Do dame telle forth 3our tale þat' is þe best' [leaf 141]
 Al redy sire quod she ri3t' as 3ou lest'
 If I haue licence of þis worþi frere
 3is dame quod he telle forþ 3oure tale we wil here 856

[*No break in the MS.*]

[THE WIFE OF BATH'S TALE]

[on leaf 141]

<p>IN þe olde dayes of þe king^t arthour Of which þat^t bretons speken grete honour Al was þis land fulfilled of fayry þe Elfe quene wiþ her Ioly companye Daunced wiþ out^t in mony a grene mede þis was þe olde opynyon as I rede I speke of mony an .C. 3ere a-goo But^t nowe can no man se noon clues moo ffor nowe þe grete charite and preiers Of lymytoures and oþer poor freres That^t serchen euery londe and euery streme As þikke as motes in þe sonne beme Blessinge halles chambers and boures Citiees burghes castels hi3e toures Thropes . beernys . shipnes . dayrys This makeþ þat^t þer bene no fayrys ffor þer as wonte to walke was an elf^t Ther walkeþ nowe þe lymytour hym self^t In vnder meles and in mornyngges And seiþ his matyns and his hoþy þingges As he goþ in his lymitacioun Wommen may go nowe sauf vp <i>and</i> down In euery bussþ or vnder euery tre þer nys noþ oþer Incubus but^t he And he wil do hem but^t dishonour And so felle it^t þat^t þis king^t Arthour Had in his hous a lusty bachilere That^t on a day come riding^t fro ryvere</p>	<p>¶ fabula</p> <p>860</p> <p>864</p> <p>868</p> <p>872</p> <p>876</p> <p>880</p> <p>884</p>
--	---

And happed alone as she was born
 He seegh a maiden walking hym byfor
 Of which mayde Maugre her hede
 By verrey force he raft hure maydenhede 888
 ffor which oppression was such clamour [leaf 141, back]
 And such pursute vnto þe king arthour
 That dampned was þis knyzt forto be dede
 Be cours of lawe and shuld haue lost his hede 892
 Peraenture such was þe statute þoo /
 But þat þe quene and oþer ladis moo
 So longe preide þe kinge of grace
 Til he his lif him graunted in þat place 896
 And 3aue hym to þe quene al at her wille
 To chese whedere she wold hym saue or spille
 The quene þonkep þe kinge wiþ al her myzt
 And after þis þus speke she to þe knyght 900
 Whan þat she seegh her tyme on a day
 Thou stondest 3it quod she in such aray
 That of þi lif 3it hastowe no suerte
 I graunte þe lif if þou canst telle me 904
 ¶ What þing is it þat wommen most desiren
 Be ware and kepe þi nekbone fro yren
 And if þou canst not telle it me anoñ
 3it wil I 3eue þe leue forto goñ 908
 A xij. monþe and a daye. to seke and lere
 An answere suffisaunt in þis matere
 And suerte wil I han er þat þou passe
 þi body forto 3elde in þis place 912
 woo was þis knyzt and sorowfully he sikeþ
 But what he may not do al as hym likeþ
 And at þe last he chese hym forto wende
 And to come azein rizt at þe 3eres ende 916
 With suche answere as god wold hym purveye
 And takeþ his leue and wendeþ forþ his weye
 He sekeþ euery hous and euery place
 Where as he hopeþ forto fynde grace 920

To lere what þing wommen louen most
 But he nowe koude aryuen in no cost
 where as he myzte fynde in þis matere
 Two creatures acording in fere 924
 Somme seiden wommen louen best ricchesse [leaf 142]
 Somme seide honour somme seiden Iolynesse
 Somme riche aray. some seiden lust a bedde
 And oft tyme to be wydowe and wedde 928
 Somme seiden þat we bene most yesed
 Whan þat we bene yflatered and yplesed.
 He goþ ful ny þe soþ I wil nat lye
 A man shal wynne vs best wiþ flaterye 932
 And wiþ attendaunce and wiþ bisynesse
 bene we alyned boþ more and lesse
 And somme men seyn howe þat we louen best
 fforto be free and do rizt as vs lest 936
 And þat no man repreue vs of our vice
 But say þat we bene wise and no þinge nice
 ffor trewly þer nys noon of vs alle
 3if eny wizt wil clawe vs on þe galle 940
 þat we nyl loke or he saye vs soth
 Assaie and he shal fynde it þat he doþ.
 ffor be we neuer so vicious wiþ-Inne
 We wil be holden wise and clene of synne 944
 And somme seyn þat grete delit haue we
 ffor to be holden stable and eke secree
 And in oo purpos stedfastly to dwelle
 And not bewrey þing þat men vs telle 948
 But þat tale is not worþ a rake stele
 Parde we wommen connen no þing hele
 Witnessse on myda wil 3e here þe tale
 Ovide amonges oþer þingges smale 952
 Seiþ Mida had vnder his longe heres
 Growinge vpon his hede two asses eres
 The whiche vice he hidde as he best myzt
 fful subtily from euery mannys sizt 956

þat' saue his wif þer wist' it' no moo
 He loued her most' and trested to her also
 He preide hir' most' þat' vnto no creature
 She shuld' not' tellen of his disfigure 960
 She swore hym nay for al þis world' to wynne [leaf 142, back]
 She wold' do þat' vilanye or þat' synne
 To make her husbond han so foule a name
 ffor reprevynge of hym and foule shame 964
 But' napelees her þouzt' þat' she dide
 þat' she so longe shuld' a counseile hide
 Her þouzt' it' sattu so sore about' her herte
 þat' nedely som word her mote a-sterne 968
 And siþe she durst' [nat] tellen it' no man
 Doune to a marise fast' she ranne
 Til she came þere her herte was a fire
 And as a bitor bumleþ in þe myre 972
 She laide her mouþ vnto þe water' down
 Bewrey me not' þou watere wip þi souñ
 Qooþ she to þe I telle it' *and* no moo
 Myñ husbonde haþ longe asses eren two 976
 Now is my hert' al hole now is it' oute
 I myzt' no lenger kepe it' out' of doute
 Here may 3e se þouze we a tyme abide
 3ete oute it' moot' we mowe no conseil hide 980
 The remenaunte of þe tale if 3e wil here
 Redeþ ovide and 3e mowe it' lere
 ¶ This knyzt' of which my tale is specialy
 Whan þat' he seegh he myzt' not' come þerby 984
 This is to seyn . what' wommen louen most'
 Wip-in his hert' soryful was þe goost'
 But' home he goþe he myzt' not' sojourne
 þe day was come þat' homward' most' he tourne 988
 And in his way it' happed hym to ride
 In al his care vndere a forest' side
 Where he seggh in oon daunce goo /
 Of ladis *foure and twenti*¹ *and 3it'* moo [1 MS xxiiij.th] 992

Toward þe daunce he drowe hym 3erne
 In hope þat somme wisdom shuld he lerne
 But certeynly er he cam fully þere
 Vanysshed was þe daunce he nyst not where 996
 No creature seye he þat bare lif [leaf 143]
 Saue in þe grene he sey sitting a wif
 A fouler wizt þer may no man deuise
 Ageyn þe knyzt þe old wif gan arise 1000
 And seide sir knyzt here forþ ne lieþ no way
 Telle me what þat ze seken be 3oure fay
 Peraenture it may þe better be
 Thise olde folk konne moche þing quod she 1004
 My leue modere quod þis knyzt certayn
 I am but dede but 3if þat I can sayn
 Whatt þinge it is þat wommen most desire
 Cowde ze me wisse I coude wel quyte 3our hire 1008
 Plite me þi troupe here in my hand quod she
 The nexte þinge þat I require þe
 Thow shalt it doo if it lye in þi myzt
 And I wille telle it 3ou er it be nyzt 1012
 Haue here my troupe quod þe knyzt I graunte
 Than quop she I may me wel auaunte
 þi lif is sauf for I wil stonde þer-by
 Vpon my lif þe quene wil say as I 1016
 Lat se which is þe proddest of hem alle
 þat wereth on a kerchif or a calle
 þat dar seie nay of þat I shal 3ou teche
 lat vs goo forþ wip-oute lenger speche 1020
 Tho rowned she a pistel in his eere
 And bad hym to be glad and han no fere
 Whan þei be commen to þe courte þis knyzt
 Seide he had holde his day as he had hizt 1024
 And redy was his answeere as he seide
 fful mony a noble wif and mony a maide
 And mony a widowe for þat þei be wise
 þe quene her silf sitting as a Iustise 1028

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Assembled ben þis answere forto here
 And aftere þis knyzt^t was bode apere
 And þat^t þe knyzt^t shuld^t telle *in* audience
 To euery wīzt^t *commmaunded* was silence 1032
 what^t þing^t þat^t worldly wommen louen mest^t [leaf 143, back]
 This knyght^t ne stode not^t stille as dop a beest^t
 But^t to his question^t anoñ answerd^t
 wīþ manly vois þat^t al þe courte it^t herde 1036
 My lege lady generally quod he
 wommen desiren to han souereynte
 As wel ouer hir husbond *and* her loue
 And forto be in maistrie *hym* aboue 1040
 This is 3oure most^t desire þou3e 3e me kille
 Dop as 3ou list^t I am here at^t 3oure wille
 In al þe courte ne was þer wif ne mayde
 Ne wydowe þat^t contraried what^t he saide 1044
 But^t seiden he was worþi han his lif
 And wīþ þat^t word vp stert^t þat^t olde wif
 which^t þat^t þe knyght^t sey sitting^t on þe grene
 Mercy quod she my souereyn lady quene 1048
 Er þat^t 3oure courte departe do me ri3t^t
 I taught^t þis answere vnto þis knyzt^t
 ffor which^t he plizte me his troythe þere
 þe first^t þinge I wolde of him requere 1052
 He wold it^t doo 3if it^t lay in his my3t^t
 Bifore þe court^t þan prey I þe sir knyzt^t
 Quod she þat^t þou me take vnto þi wiff
 ffor wel þou woost^t þat^t I. haue kepte þi liff 1056
 If I sey fals seye nay vpon þi faye
 þis knyzt^t answerd^t allas *and* weleaway
 I woot^t ri3t^t wel þat^t such^t was my bihest^t
 ffor goddis loue chese a newe request^t 1060
 Take al my good *and* lat^t my body goo
 Nay þan quod she I schrewe vs boþe twoo
 ffor þou3e þat^t I be foule *and* olde *and* poor
 I nold^t for al þe metal ne for ore 1064

þat vnder erþe is graue or lith aboue
 But 3if þat I þi wif were *and* þi loue
 My loue quod he nay my dampnaciõ
 Allas þat eny of my naciõ 1068
 Shuld euere so foule ydisparaged be [leaf 144]
 But al for nouzt þe ende is þis þat he
 Constreyned was he nedes most her wedde
 And takeþ þis olde wif and goþ to bedde 1072
 Nowe wolden somme men seyn *perauenture*
 þat for my necligence I do no cure
 To telle 3ou þe Ioie and þe araye
 þat at þe feest was þat ilk day 1076
 To which þinge shortly answeere I shal
 I seie þer nas no Ioye ne feest at aH
 þer nas but hevynesse and mochel sorowe
 ffor priuely he wedded hure on a morowe 1080
 And alday aftere hid hym as an owle
 So woo was him his wif loked so foule
 Grete was þe sorowe þe knyzt had in his þouzt
 Whan he was wip his wiff a bedde brouzt 1084
 He waloweþ and turneþ to and froo
 His olde wiff laye smylingt euermoo
 And seide .o dere husbond o benedicite
 fareþ euery knyzt þus wip his wif as 3e 1088
 Is þis þe lawe of king Arthures hous
 Is euery knyzt of his loue þus dañgerous
 I am 3oure owne loue and eke 3oure wiff
 I am she which þat saued hap 3oure lif 1092
 And certes 3it did I 3ou neuere vnrizt
 whi fare 3e þus wip me þe firste nyzt
 3e faren lich a man had lost his witte
 ffy what is my gilt for goddes loue telle it 1096
 And it shal ben amended if I may
 Amended quod þis knyzt nay nay
 That wil not bene amended neuere moo
 þou art so loþly and so old also 1100

And þerto commen of so lowe a kinde
 þat no wonder is þouze I walowe & wynde
 So wolde god my herte wolde bres
 Is þis quod she þe cause of þoure vnrest' 1104
 3e certainly quop he no wonder' is [leaf 144, back]
 Now sire quod she I couþe amende al þis
 If þat' me list' er it' were daies þre
 So wel 3e myzt' bere þou vnto me. 1108
 ¶ But' for 3e speken of such gentillesse ¶ *No/a bene de nobilibus*
 As is descended out' of alle richesse
 þat' þefore shulden 3e be gentile men
 Such errogance nys not' worþ an heñ 1112
 Loke who so is moost' vertuous alway
 Privey and aperte and best' endeþ ay
 To do þe beste dedis þat' he can
 And take him for þ[e] grettest' gentile man 1116
 Of criste cleyme we our' gentylesse
 Not' of oure elders for our old richesse
 ffor þouze þei 3eue vs al *our* heritage
 ffor which we cleyme to be of hie parage 1120
 3it' may þei not' byqueþ for no þing'
 To noon of vs her vertuous lyuyng
 þat' made hem gentile men ycalled be
 And bad vs folowen in such degre 1124
 wel can þe wise poete of florence
 þat' hight' dañt' speke in þis sentence
 Lo in such manere Ryme is dantes tale
 fful seelde vpriseþ by his braunches smale 1128
 Prowesse of man for god of his prouesse
 wil þat' of hym we clayme our gentilnesse
 ffor of oure elders may we no þing' clayme
 But' temporel þing þat' man may hirt *and* mayme 1132
 Eke euery wízt' wote þis as wel as I
 þo gentelesse were planted naturelly
 Vnto a certeyn lynage down þe lyne
 Prive *and* apert' þan wold he neuere fyne 1136

To doñ of gentelesse þe fair' office	
þei myȝten do no vileny or vice	
Take fire and bere it' in þe derkest' hous	
By-twix þis <i>and</i> the mount' of Caucasous .	1140
And lat' men shette þe doores and go þenne	[leaf 145]
ȝit' wol þe fire as faire lye and brenne	
A[s] thowsand men myȝt' it' biholde	
His office naturel ay wil it' holde	1144
Vp perile of liff til þat' it' die	
Here may ȝe se wel how þat' gentrie	
Is nat' annexed to possession	
Sip folk do not' her operaciõ	1148
Al waie as doþ þe fire lo in his kinde	
ffor god it' wote men may ful often fynde	
A lordes sone doo shame and vilenye	
And he þat' wil haue price of his gentrie	1152
ffor he was born of a gentile hous	
And had his elders noble <i>and</i> vertuous	
And nyl him-seluen do no gentile dedys	
Ne folow his gentile Auncestre þat' dede is	1156
He nys nat' gentile be he duke or erle	
ffor vileyns sinful dedes make a cheerle	
ffor gentilnesse nys but' reuent' renome	
Of þine ancestres for hir bewte bounte	1160
Whiche is a strong' þing' for þi persone	
The gentilesse <i>commeþ</i> from god alone	
Than <i>commeth</i> our verrey gentilesse of <i>grace</i>	
It' was no þing' byqueþe vs <i>with</i> our place	1164
Thenkeþ howe noble as seiþ valerius	
Was þilk Tullius Hostilius	
þat' out' of pouerte roos to hie noblesse	
Redeþ Senek and redeþ eke Boesse	1168
þer shul ȝe sene expresse þat' it' no drede is	
þat' he is gentile þat' doþ gentile dedys	
And þerfore dere husbonde I þus conclude	
Al were it' þat' myn ancestres were rude	1172

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ȝit may þat hie god an so hope I	
Graunt me grace to lyue vertuously	
Than am I gentile whan þat I bygynne	
To lyuen vertuously and leuen synne	1176
And þer as ȝe of pouert me repreue	[leaf 145, back]
The hie god on whom þat we byleue	
In wilful pouerte. chas to lede his lif	¶ <i>nota de paupertate.</i>
And certes eury man boþ maide & wiff	1180
May vnderstonde Ihesu heuen kinge	
Ne wold not chese a vicious lyuynge	
Glad pouerte is an honest þing certayn	
This wil senek and opere clerkes seyñ	1184
Who þat holte him paide of his pouerte	
I holde him riche al had he nouȝt serte	
He þat coueiteþ is a poor wȝt	
ffor he wold han þat is not in his myȝt	1188
But he þat nouȝt hap ne keuciteþ to haue	
Is riche al þough men hold him but a knaue	
Verrey pouerte is signe proprely	
Iuuenal [saiþ] of pouert merily	1192
The poor man whan he goþ by þe way	
Biform þe þeues he may singe and play	
Pouerte is hatel good and as y gesse	
A ful grete bringer out of bysynesse	1196
A grete amender eke of sapience	
To him þat lackeþ it in pacience	
Pouerte is þis al þough it seme alenge	
Possessiõ þat no wȝt wil chalenge	1200
Pouerte ful often whan a man is lowe	
Makeþ his god and eke him self to knowe	
Pouerte in spectacle is as þenkeþ me	
þorowe which he may his verrey frendes see	1204
And þerfor siþ þat I ȝou not greue	
Of my pouerte no more me repreue	
Now sire of elde ȝe repreue me	¶ <i>Nota de senectute.</i>
And certes sire þorowe noñ auctorite	1208

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Where in no boke 3e gentile in honour
 Seyn þat' mon shuld' an olde wif do fauour
 And clepe hur' modere for 3oure gentilnesse
 And auctours shal I fynde as I gesse 1212
 Now þere 3e seyn þat' I am foule *and* olde [leaf 146]
 Than drede 3ou not' to bene a kokewold'
 ffor filþe and helde¹ also mote I thee [1 at first helpe]
 Bene grete wardeyns vpon chastite 1216
 But' napeles siþ I knowe 3oure delite
 I shal fulfille 3oure worldly appetite
 Chese nowe quod she oon of þise þingges twey
 To han me foule *and* olde til þat' I dye 1220
 And be to 3ou a trewe humble wiff
 And neuere 3ou displese in al my lif
 Or ellis 3e wil haue me 3onge *and* faire
 And take 3oure auenture of þe repaire 1224
 That' shal come to 3oure hous bycause of me
 Or in some oþere place wel may be
 Nowe chese 3oure seluen wheþer 3ou likeþ
 This knyght' avised him and sor sikeþ 1228
 But' at' þe last' he seide in þis manere
 My lady. *and* my loue. *and* wif so dere
 I putte me in 3oure wise gouernaunce
 Geueþ 3oure self which may be most plesaunce 1232
 And most' honour to 3ou *and* me also
 I do no force þe wheþere of þe two
 ffor as 3ou likeþ it' suffiseþ me
 Than haue I gote of 3ou þ^e maistrie quod' she 1236
 Siþ I may chese and gouern as me list'
 3e certes wif quod he I holde it' for þe best'
 Kisse me quod she we be no lenger wroþe
 ffor by my trouþe I wil be to 3ou boþe 1240
 þis is to seine boþ faire and goode
 I prei to god þat' I mot' steruen woode
 But' I to 3ou be as sadde and trewe
 As euere was wiff syþ þat' þ^e world' was newe 1244

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And but I be to morow as fair' to sene
 As eny lady Emperesse or quene
 þat' is by-twene þe Est' and eke þ^e west'
 doþ wiþ my liff and deþe riȝt' as ȝou lest' 1248
 Cast' vp þe Curtyne loke how it' is [leaf 146, back]
 And whan þe knyȝt' sawe al þis
 þat' she so faire was and so yonge þerto
 ffor ioie he hent' her in his armes twoo 1252
 His herte bathed in a bath of blisse
 A *thousand*¹ tyme a rowe hire gan he kisse [1 MS M¹.]
 And she obeied him in euery þinge
 That' myght' done hym plesaunce or likinge 1256
 And þus þei lyued vnto her lyues ende
 In parfitt Ioye and Ihesus crist' vs sende
 Husbonde . yonge . meke *and* fresssh abedde
 And grace to ouerlede hem þat' we wedde 1260
 And eke I prei to Ihesu short' her lyues
 That' wil not' be gouerned by her wyues
 And olde and angry nygard^t *and* dispence
 God sende hem sone a verrey pestilence 1264

¶ Thus endep þe tale of þe wif of bath /

And here bygygneþ þe prologe of þe frere [on leaf 146, back]

This worþi lymytour þis noble frere ¶ þe prologe
 He made alway louring^r chere
 Vpon þe somnour . but^r for honeste
 No vyleyns word as 3it^r speke he 1268
 But^r at^r þe last he seide vnto þe wif
 Dame good god 3eue 3ou rizt^r good lyf^r
 3e han touched here also mote I the
 In scole matere grete difficulte 1272
 3e han seide mochel þing^r rizt^r wel I seie
 But^r dame here as we riden by þe weie
 Vs nedeþ not^r to speken but^r of game
 And late auctoritees a goddes name 1276
 To prechen *and* to scole eke of clergie
 But^r 3if it^r like vnto þis companye
 I wil 3ou of a somnour telle a game
 Parde I may wel knowe by þi name 1280
 That^r of no somnour may no good be seid^r
 I prey þat^r noon of 3ou be euel apeid^r
 A somnour is a romere vp and down [leaf 147]
 Wijþ a mendement of fornicacioun 1284
 And is ibete at^r euery townes ende
 Our^r hoost^r þoo spak^r a . sire 3e shuld beñ hende
 And Curteis as man of 3our^r astat^r
 In company we wil no debate 1288
 Telleþ 3oure tale and lat^r þ^e somnour be
 Nay quod þe somnour lat^r him say to me
 What^r so him lest^r . whan it^r commeþ to my lott
 Be god I . shal hym quyte euery grott 1292
 I shal him telle swiçh a grete honour
 It^r is to be a flaterynge lymytour^r
 And eke of ful mony an oþer crime
 Which nedeþ not^r rehersen at^r þis tyme 1296
 And his office I shal hym telle ywis
 Our^r hooste answerd^r pees no more of þis
 And afterward he seide vnto þe frere
 Telle forþ 3oure tale my owen maister^r dere 1300
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe frere.

And

here begynneþ þe ffreres tale.

Whilom þer was dwelling *in my contre* ¶ **The tale./**
 An Archedeken a man of hie degre
 That boldely did execusioñ
 In punysshing^t of fornicacioñ 1304
 Of which craft and eke of baudry
 Of diffamacioñ and avoutrye
 Of chirche reues *and* of testamentes
 Of contractes and of lak of sacramentes 1308
 Of vsure and symonye also
 But certes lecchours did he grettest^t woo
 þei shulden syngen if þei were hent^t
 And Smale Tythers weren foule shent 1312
 If eny person wold^t vpon hem pleyne
 þer myȝt^t astert^t him no pecunyal peyne
 ffor smale tyþes and eke smale offringe
 He made þe puple spitously to singe 1316
 ffor er the bisshope kauȝt^t hem wiþ his hoke [leaf 147, back]
 þei weren in þe Archedekens boke
 And þan had he þorowe his Iurisdiction
 Pouer to don on hem correccioñ 1320
 he had a somnour^t redy to his hand^t
 A sclyer boye was non in engelonð
 ffor sotilly he had his especiale
 That tauȝt^t hym where þat^t hym myȝt^t availe 1324
 He coude spare of lecchours on or twoo
 To techen hym to *four and twenty*¹ moo [1 MS xxiiiij]
 ffor þouȝe this somnour wode were as an hare
 To telle his harlotry I wil not^t spare 1328

ffor we bene out' of her correcciōn	
þei han of vs noñ Iurisdiction	
Ne neuere shullen teerme of al her lyues	
Peter' so bene þe wommen of þe stewes	1332
Quod this somnour yput' out' of our cure	
Pees wip meschaunce <i>and</i> wip misaunture	
Thus seide our hoost' <i>and</i> lat' hym telle his tale	
Now telleþ forþ and lat' þe somnour gale	1336
Ne spareth nouȝt' myn owne Maister' dere	
This fals þeef þis somnour quod þe frere	
Had alway baudes redy to his honde	
As eny hauke to lure in Engelonde	1340
That' telle him al þe secre þat thei knewe	
ffor hure a-queyntance was nat' come of newe	
þei weren his aprouers prively	
He toke hym silf a grete prophete þerby	1344
His maistere knewe not' al way what' he wan	
wip-uten maundement' of a lewde man	
He coude sommon vpeyn of cristes curs	
And þei were inly glad to fille his purs	1348
And made hym grete festes atte nale	
And rizt' as Iudas had purses smale	
And was a þeef rizt' such a þeef was he	
His maister' had but' half his dwete	1352
He was ȝif I shal ȝeuene hym his laude	[leaf 148]
A theef and eke a somnour <i>and</i> a bawde	
He had eke wenches of his retenue	
That' whedere þat' sir' Roberde or sir' hwe	1356
Or Iohā or rauf or who þat' it' were	
þat lay by hem þei tolde it' in his eere	
Thus was þe wenche and he of on assent'	
And he wolde focche a feyned maundement'	1360
And somne hem to þe chapitre boþ twoo	
And pille þe man and lat' þe wenche goo	
Than wold he sei frend I shal for þi sake	
To strike þe out' of oure letters blake	1364

þe ther no more as in þis caas travaile
 I am þi frende þer I þe may availe
 Certeyn he knewe of bribers moo
 þan possible is to telle þou vnto to/ 1368
 ffor in þis world is no dogge for no bowe
 þat knoweþ and hert' deer'. from an olde bete kowe
 þan þat' þis somnour knewe a sly lecchour
 Or auouter' or ellis a *paramour'* 1372
 And for þat' was þe fruyte of al þe rent'
 Therefore on hit' he sette al his entent'
 And so byfelle þat' ones on a day
 This somnour euer wayting' on his pray 1376
 Rode forto somne an old' wif a ribibe
 ffeynyng' a cause for he wold' haue a bribe
 And happed þat' he sawe to-fore hym ride
 A gey þeman vnder' a forest' side 1380
 A bowe he bare and Arowes brizt' *and* kene
 He had vpon a courtepie of grene
 An hatte vpon his hede wip stringges blake
 Sire quod þis somnour . haile *and* wel ytake 1384
 welcome quod he and euery good felawe
 whider' ridest' þowe vnder þis grene wood shawe
 Seide þis þeman wilt' thou fer to-day
 This somnour hym answerd *and* seide nay 1388
 Here fast' by quod he is myne entent' [leaf 148, back]
 To riden for to reisen vp a rent'
 It' longeþ to my lordes dewte
 Art þou þan a bailyf . 3e quod he 1392
 He durste not' for verrey filþe *and* shame
 Say þat' he was a somnour for þe name
Depar-dieux quod þis þeman dere broþer'
 þou art' a baillif and I am anoper' 1396
 I am vnknownen as in þis contre
 Of þine aqueyntaunce I wil prey þe
 And eke of breþerhede if þat' þou lest'
 I haue gold and siluer' in my chest' 1400

3if þat þe happed come into our shire
 Al shal be þine riȝt as þou wold desire
 Graunte mercy quod þis somnour by my feiþe
 Euerech in oþeres honde his trouþe leiþe 1404
 ffor to be swore breþeren to þei dye
 And wiþ þat word þei ride forþ her wey
 This somnour wiþ þat was as ful of Iangles
 As ful of venyme beñ þise waryangles 1408
 And euer enquiring vpon euery þinge
 Broþer quod he wher is 3our dwellinge
 Anoþer day if I shuld 3ou seche
 þis 3eman him answerd in softe spech 1412
 Broþer quod he ferre in þe north contre
 Wher as I hope somtyme I shal þe See
 Or we departe I shal þe so wel wisse
 þat of myn hous shalt þou neuere mysse 1416
 Now broþere quod þis somnour I 3ou pray
 Teche me while we riden by þe waye
 Siþ þat 3e bene a balif as am I
 Somme subtilite telle me feiþfully 1420
 In myn office howe þat I may most wyne
 And spareþ not for conscience ne synne
 But as my broþere telle me howe doo 3e .
 Nowe by my treuþe broþere dere seide he 1424
 As I shal tellen þe a feiþful tale [leaf 149]
 My wages be ful streit and smale
 My lorde is hard to me and daungerous
 And myn office ful laborous 1428
 And þefore by extorcions y lyue
 ffor soþ I [take] al þat men wil me 3eue
 Algate by scleyght or violence
 ffrom 3eer to 3eer I wyne al my dispence 1432
 I can no better tellen feiþfully
 Now certes quod þis somnour so fare I
 I spare not to take god it wote
 But 3if it be to hevy or to hote 1436

What I may gete in counseile prively
 No maner' conscience of þat' haue I
 Ner myn extorcioñ I myȝt' not' lyuen
 Of suche Iapes nyl I not' be shryuen 1440
 Stomake . ne for conscience ne knowe I noñ
 I schrewe þise shrift' faders euerechoñ
 Wel ben we mette by god and by seint' Iame
 But' leue broþer telle me þan þi name 1444
 Quop þis somnour in þis mene while
 þis ȝeman gan a litel forto smyle
 Broþer quod he wiltow þat' I þe telle
 I am a feende my dwellyng' is in helle 1448
 And here I ride aboute my purchasing'
 To wete where men wollen ȝeue me eny þing'
 My purchace is to fette of aȝ my rent'
 Loke how þou ridest' for þe same entent' 1452
 To wyne good þou recchest' not' howe
 Riȝt' so fare I for ride wold' I nowe
 Vnto þe worldes eende for a preye .
 A quod þis somnour benedicite what' ȝe scie 1456
 I wende ȝe were a ȝeman trewly
 ȝe han a mannes shappe as wel as I
 Han ȝe a figure þan determynate
 In helle þer ȝe bene in ȝour estate 1460
 Nay certeynly quop he þere haue we noon [leaf 149, back]
 But' whan vs likeþ we can take vs oon
 Or ellis make ȝou seme we bene shape
 Somtyme a man or like an ape 1464
 Or like an aungel can I ride or goo
 It' is no wonder' þing' þouȝe it' be so
 A lousy Iogelour can desceyue þe
 And parde ȝit' can I more craft' þan he 1468
 Why quop þis somnour ride ȝe þan or goñ
 In sondry shappe and not' alway in oon
 ffor we quod he wil vs in such forme make
 As most' able is our praies forto take . 1472

What' makeþ 3ou to han al þis labour
 fful mony a cause leue sir' somnour
 Seide þis feende but' al þing' hap tyme
 The day is short' and it' is passed prime 1476
 And 3it' ne wanne I no þinge in þis day
 I wil entende to wynnyng' 3if I may
 And nat' entende our wittes to declare
 ffor broþer myne þi witte is alto bare 1480
 To vnderstonde þou3e I tolde hem þe
 But' for þowe askest' whi labouren we
 ffor somtyme be we goddes instrumentes
 And menes to do his comaundementes 1484
 Whan þat' him list' vpon his creatures
 In dyuers actes and in dyuers figures
With-outen hym we han no my3t' certeyn
 3if þat' him list' to stonden þer a3ein 1488
 And some tyme at' our' pray han we leue
 Only þe body and nat' þe soule greue
 Witnessse on Iob whom þat' we diden woo
 And somtyme han we my3t' of boþ[e] two 1492
 þis is to seyn of soule and body eke
 And somtyme we bene suffered forto seke
 Vpon a man and do his soule vnrest'
 And nat' his body and al is for þe best' 1496
 Whan he *with*stondeþ our temptaciõ
 [leaf 150]
 It' is a cause of [his] saluaciõ
 Al be it' þat' it' was not' our entent'
 He shulde be sauf but' þat' we wold' hym hent' 1500
 And somtyme be we seruantes vnto man
 As þe erchbisshope seint' dunstan
 And to þe appostels *seruaunte* was I
 3it' telleþ me quod þe somnour feiþfully 1504
 Make 3e 3ou newe bodies þus alway
 Of elementz þe feende answerd' nay
 Somme tyme we feyne and somtyme we arise
 Wip-dede bodies in ful sondry wise 1508.

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And speke as resonably and faire weſt
 As to þe Phitonessa . did samueſt
 And 3it' wil somme men say it' was not' he
 I doo no fors of 3oure dyvynite 1512
 But' oon þing' warne I þe I wil not' Iape
 Thow wilt' algates witte howe we be shape
 þou shalt' here afterward' my broþer dere
 Come þer þe nedep' nat' of me to lere 1516
 ffor þou shalt' be þine owne experience
 Come into þe Chaiere rede þis sentence
 Bette þan virgil while he was a lyue
 Or Dante also now lat' vs ride blyue 1520
 ffor I wil hold company wiþ þe
 Til it' be so þat' þou forsake me
 Nay quod þis somnour þat' shal not' betide
 I am a 3eman knowe is ful wide 1524
 Mi troupe wil I holde to þe as in þis cas
 ffor þei þou were þe deuel Sathanas
 My troupe wil I holde to my broþer
 As I am sworn and eche of vs to oþer' 1528
 ffor to be trewe broþer in þis caas
 And broþer we goon to *our* purchas
 Take þou þi parte what' men wil þe 3eue
 And I shal myne þus may we boþ[e] lyue 1532
 And 3if þat' eny of vs haue more þan oþere [leaf 150, back]
 Lat' him be trewe and part' it' *with* his broþer
 I *graunte* quod þe deuel be my fay
 And wiþ þat' word þei ryden forth her way 1536
 And riȝt' at' þe enteringe of þe townes ende
 To which þe sompnour shope hym for to wende
 þei sey a cart' þat' charged was wiþ hay
 Which þat' a carter drooft' forþ on his way 1540
 Depe was þe way for which þe carte stooode
 This Carter smote and stroof as he were woode
 Haite broke haite scotte what' spare we for þ^e stonys
 þe feende quod he 3ou fecche boþ body *and* bcyns 1544

As ferforþly as euere were 3e foled/
 So moche woo as I haue for 3ou tholed
 þe deuel haue aH boþ hors and carte *and* hay
 þou3t' this somnour here shul we haue a play 1548
 And nere þe feende he drou3e as nau3t' ne were
 fful priueyly and rouned in his eere.
 Harken my broþer herken be þi feiþ
 Herestow nat' howe þe carter seiþ 1552
 Hent' it' anoñ for he haþ 3euen þe
 Boþ hey and carte and eke his caples þre
 Nay quod þe deuel god wote neuer a dele
 It' is not' his entent' trust' me wele 1556
 Aske hym þi silf 3if þou not' trestest me
 Or ellis stint' a while and þou shalt Se
 This Carter thakked his hors on þe croupe
 And þei bygonne to drowe and to stoupe 1560
 Haite nowe quod he þat' Ihesu crist' 3ou blisse
 And al his hond werk boþ more and lesse
 That was wel twite myn owne lyarde boy
 I prey god saue þe and seint' loye 1564
 Now is my carte out' of þe seloughi parde
 lo broþer quod þe feend. *and* what' told' I þe
 Here may 3e se myne owne dere broþere
 þe Carle spak' oo þinge but' he þou3t' anoþer 1568
 lat' vs go forþ abouten our viage
 [leaf 151]
 Here wynne I no þinge vpon cariage
 Whan þat' þei commen somewhat' out' of þe town
 This somnour to his broþer gan to roun 1572
 Broþer quod he here wonneþ an olde rebeke
 þat' had almost' as leef to lese her nekke
 As forto 3eue a peny of hire good.
 I wil haue xij. pans þou3e þat' she be wode 1576
 Or I wil somne hure to our office
 And 3it' good woote of hure knowe I no vice
 But' for þou canst' nat' as in þis contree
 Wynne þi cost' take here ensample of me 1580

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

This somnour knokkeþ at þe wydous gate	
Come out! he seide þou olde viritate	
I trowe þou hast somme frere or preest <i>with</i> þe	
Who clappeth þer seide þis wif benedicite	1584
God saue þou sir what is þoure swete wille	
I haue quod he to somme þe here a bille	
Vp peyne of cursinge loke þat þou be	
To-morowe by-forn our Archedeken kne	1588
To answe're to þe courte of certeyn þingges	
Now lord quod she <i>crist</i> Ihesu king of kingges	
So wisly helpe me as I ne may	
I haue be sik and þat ful mony a day	1592
I may not goo so ferre quod she ne ride	
But I be dede so prickeþ it in my side	
May I not axe a libeþ Sir somnour	
And answe're þere by my <i>procuratour</i>	1596
To suche a þinge as men wolden opposen me	
þis quof this somnour pay anoñ late See	
xij penys to me and I wil þe aquite	
I shal no profit han þerby but lite	1600
My maister hap þe <i>prophete and</i> nat I	
Come and lat me riden hastely	
þeue me .xij pans I may no lenger tarye	
xij. <i>quod</i> she lady seinte Marye	1604
So wisly helpe [me] out of care <i>and</i> synne	[leaf 151, back]
þis wide world þouze I shuld it wynne	
Ne haue I not xij pens wiþ-in my holde	
þe knowe wel þat I am poor <i>and</i> olde	1608
Kithe þoure almesse on me poor wrecche	
nay þan quof he þe foule fende me fecche	
þif I þe excuse þouze þou shulde be spilt	
Allas <i>quod</i> she god wote I haue no gilt	1612
Pay me quod he or by the swete Anne	
As I wil bere away þi newe panne	
ffor dette which þou owest me of olde	
Whan þat þou made þine husbond kukwold	1616

I paide at home for þi correctiōn
 þou lixte quod she be my saluaciōn
 Ne was I neuere or nowe widowe ne wiff
 Somned vnto þoure courte in al my liff 1620
 Ne neuere I nas but of my body trewe
 Vnto þe deuel blake & rowe of hwe
 ʒeue I þi body and my panne also
 And whan þe deuel herd her curse soo / 1624
 Vpon her knees he seide in þis manere
 Now mabely myn owne modere derē
 Is þis ʒou[r] wiþ in earnest þat ʒe seye
 þe deuel quod she fette hym er he deye 1628
 And pan and al but he wil hym repent
 Nay olde stott þat is not myn entent
 Quod þis somnour for to repente me
 ffor eny þing þat I haue had of þe 1632
 I wold I had þi smokke and euery cloþe
 Nowe broþer quod þe deuel be not wroth
 þi body and þis panne is myn by riȝt
 þou shalt wiþ me to helle ʒit to-nyȝt 1636
 Where þou shalt knowe of our priuete
 More þan a maister of diuinite
 And wiþ þat word þis foule fende hym hent
 Body and soule he with þe deuel went 1640
 Wher þat somnours han her heritage [leaf 152]
 And god þat made after his ymage
 Man-kinde saue and gyde vs al and some
 And lene þis somnour good man to bycome 1644
 Lordingges I couþe han told ʒou quod þis frere
 Had I had leisere for þis somnour here
 Aftere þe text . crist . paule and Ioħn
 And of oure opere doctours mony on 1648
 Which peynes þat ʒour hertes myȝt agrise
 Al be it so no tunge may deuise
 pouȝe þat I myȝt a .Mī. wynter telle
 þe peynes of þilk cursed hous of helle 1652

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

But^t forto kepe vs from þat^t cursed place
 Wakeþ and preieth Ihesu for his grace
 So kepe vs fro þe temptour sathanas
 Herkenþ þis word^t beþ ware as in þis cas 1656
 þe lyon sitte in his awaite alway
 To sclee þe Innocent^t 3if þat^t he may .
 Disposeþ ay 3oure hertes to wiþstond^t
 þe fende þat^t 3ou wold^t make þral *and* bond^t 1660
 He may not^t tempten 3ou ouer 3our^t myzt^t
 ffor crist wil be 3oure champion and knyzt^t
 And preieþ þat^t þis somnour hym repent^t
 Of his mysdede er þat^t þe fende hym hent^t 1664

¶ Thus endep þe frere his tale .

¶ And here bygyneþ þe prologe of þe somnour [on lf 152]

<p>This somnour in his stirop hiȝe stode Vpon þis frere his herte was so wode þat' like an aspen leef he quoke for Ire Lordingges quod he but' oo þinge I desire I ȝou biseche þat' of ȝour' curtesie Siþens ȝe han herde this fals frere lye As suffre me I may a tale telle þis frere boosteth þat' he knoweþ helle And god woote it' is litel wondere freres and feendes bene but' lite asonre ffor <i>parde</i> ȝe han oft' tyme herd telle How þat' a frere rauysshed was in helle In spirit' ones by A visioun And as an aungel lad him vp & down To shewen him the peynes þat' þer were In aȝ þe place segh he not' a frere Of oper folk' he segh ynow <i>in</i> woo Vnto þis aungel speke þe frere þoo Nowe sire quod he han freres suche <i>grace</i> þat' noon of hem shal come to þis place ȝis quop þis aungel mony a mylioun And vnto Sathanas he lad <i>hym</i> down And now haþ sathanas seiþ he a tale Bradder' þan of þe Carike is a saile hold vp þi taile þou sathanas quod he Showe forþ þine ers and lat' þe frere see Wher is þe nest' of freres in þis place And er þan half a forlonge wey of space</p>	<p>¶ þe prologe</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1668</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1672</p> <p style="text-align: right;">[leaf 152, back]</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1676</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1680</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1684</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1688</p> <p style="text-align: right;">1692</p>
---	---

GROUP D. § 5. FRIAR-SUMMONER LINK. **Petworth MS.**

Ryȝt^t as been swermen out^t of an hyve
 Out^t of þe deuels ers þei gon drive
 xx^{ti}. thousand^t freres on a route
 And þought^t helle swarme al aboute 1696
 And comen aȝein as fast^t as þei mowe goñ
 And in his ers þei crepten euerechoñ
 He clapte his taile aȝein and lay stille
 This frere whan he loked had his fille 1700
 Vpon þise turmentz of þis sory place
 His spiret^t god restored of his *grace*
 Vnto his body aȝein *and* he awoke
 But^t napelees for fere ȝit^t he quoke 1704
 So was þe deueles ers ay in his mynde
 which is his heritage of verrey kinde
 God saue you alle saue þis *cursed* frere
 My prologe wil I ende in þis manere 1708

¶ Thus endeþ þe *prologe* of þe *somnour*

And here bygynneþ þe somnour tale

L Ordyngges þer/ is in york-shire as I gesse [leaf 153]
 A mershy contray called holdernesse
 In which þere went a lymitour aboute
 To preche and eke to begge it' is no doute 1712
 And so byfelle þat' on a day þis frere
 Had preched atte chirch in þis manere
 And specialy abouen euery þinge
 Excited he þe puple in his prechinge 1716
 To trentales and [to zeue] for goddis sake
 Therwiþ men myzte holy howses make
 Ther as dyuyne seruyse is honoured
 Nouzt' þere as it' is waasted and deuoured 1720
 Ne þere it' nedep not' forto be zeue
 As to possessoures þat' may ellis lyue
 Thonked be god in wele *and* habundaunce
 Trentales seide he delyuereþ fro penaunce 1724
 Her frendes soules as wel olde as yonge
 3if þat' þei bene hastely ysonge
 Nouzt' forto holde a preest' Ioly *and* gay
 He syngþ not' but' oon masse on a day 1728
 Delyuereþ out' quod he anoñ þe soules
 fful hardt it' is wiþ flessshoke eiper *with* oulys
 Nul spede 3ou hastely for *cristes* sake 1732
 To kepe 3ou from peynes of fendes blake 1731
 And whan þe frere had seide al his entente
With qui cum *patre* forþ he wente
 Whan folk in chirche had zeue hym what' hem lest
 He went' his way no lenger woldt he rest' 1736

Wip scrippe and tipped staf tukked ful hie	
In euery hous he gan to pore and prie	
And beggeþ mele or chese or ellis corū	
His felawe had a staf tipped wip horn	1740
A paire of tables of yuorie	
And a poyntel polsshed fetisly	
And w[r]ote alway þe names þer he stode	
And alle folk þat' 3aue hym eny goode	1744
Ascaunce as he woldt for hem preye	[leaf 153, back]
3if vs a busshel whete . malt' or reye	
A goddys kechil or a trippe of chese	
A bosshel malt' or ellis of peese	1748
A goddys half peny or a masse peny	
Or 3eue vs of 3oure [bran] 3if ye haue enye	
A dagon of 3our blanket' leue dame	
Our suster deer loo here I write 3our' name	1752
Bacon or beef or such þinge as 3e finde	
A sturdy harlot' went' alway behinde	
þat was her hoostes man and here a sakt'	
And what' men 3aue hym leide it' on his bak'	1756
And whan he was out' of þe door anoñ	
He pleynd away [þe] names euerechoñ	
þat' he biforn had writen in his tables	
He serued [hem] wip nyfels and wip fables	1760
Nay þer-In þu lixt' somnour quod þe frere	
Pes quod oure hoost' for cristes modere dere	
Telle forþ þi tale and spare it' not' at aH	
ffor hym ne for noon oþere what so fah	1764
So longe he went' hous by hous til he	
Come to an hous þer he was wont' to be	
Refreshed more þan in an .C. places	
Seke lay þe good man þat' of the place es /	1768
Bedred vpon a couche lowe he lay	
Deus hic' quod he . o thomas frende good day	
Seide þis frere curtesly and soft'	
Thomas god 3eeldt 3ou wel oft	1772

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Haue I vpon þis benche faren ful wele
 Here haue I eten mony a mery mele
 And from þe benche he droof away þ^e catt'
 And leide a doune his potent' *and* his hatt' 1776
 And eke his scripture and sette hym soft adoun
 His felawe was go walked in to þe town
 fforþ wip his knaue into þat' hostelerye
 Where as he shope hym þilke ny3t' to lye 1780
 O dere Maister' quod þis sike man [leaf 154]
 How haue 3e farn siþ þat' march bygan
 I segñ 3ou nou3t' þis fourteny3t' day *and* more
 God wote' quod he labowred haue I ful sore 1784
 And specialy for þi saluaciõ
 Haue I seide mony a precious orison
 And for our oþer frendes god hem blesse
 I haue þis day ben at' 3our chirch at messe 1788
 And seide a sermon after' my symple witte
 Not' al aftere þe text' of holy writte
 ffor it' is hard' to 3ou as I suppose
 And þefore I wil teche 3ou al þe glose 1792
 Glosinge is glorious þing' certeyñ
 ffor letters sleþ so as we clerkes seyñ
 There haue I taught' hem to be charitable
 And spende her good þer it' is resonable 1796
 And þer I seghe *our* dame a where is she
 3ondere in þe 3erde I trowe she be
 Saide þis man and she wil come anoñ
 Ey maister' welcome be 3e be seint' Iohñ 1800
 Seide þis wiff how fare 3e hertely
 This frere riseþ vp wel curteisly
 And hure enbraseþ in his armes narowe
 And kisseþ hure swetely *and* chirkeþ as a sparowe 1804
 Wip his lippes . dame quod he rizt' wel
 As he þat' is 3our' *seruaunte* euery deñ
 Thonked be god þat' 3ou 3af soule *and* liff
 3it' sey I not' þis day so faire a wiff 1808

In al þe churche god so saue me
 3e god amende aH fautes sir' quod' she
 Algates welcome be 3e by my fay
 Graunt' mercy dame þis haue I fonde alway- 1812
 But' of 3oure grete goodnesse be 3our leue
 I wold prey 3ou þat' 3e nold' not' greue
 I wil wiþ thomas speke a litel throwe
 Thise Curatours bene ful necligent' and selowe 1816
 To grope tenderly a conscience [leaf 154, back]
 In shrift' in preching' is my diligence
 And stody in peter wordes and poules
 I walke and fische cristen mennys soules 1820
 To 3eelde Ihesu his propre rent'
 To speke his wordes is al myn entent'
 Nowe by 3oure feiþ dere maister' quod' she
 Chideþ him wel for seinte trinite 1824
 He is as angry as a pisse myre
 þou3e þat' he haue al þat' he can desire
 þou3e I wrie hym on nyzt' and make hym warme
 And on hym lay my legge or myn arme 1828
 He groneþ lich oure boor þat' lieþ in þe stie
 Oþer disport' of him non haue I
 I may not' plesse him in no manere cas
 O Thomas Ieo vous dye. thomas thomas 1832
 This makeþ þe fende this wil be amended.
 Ire is a þinge þat' hie god haþ defended
 And þerof wil I speke a word' or twoo
 Now maister quop þe wif er þat' I goo 1836
 What' wil 3e dyne I wil goo þeraboute
 Now dame quod' he Ieo vous dye sanz doute
 haue I of a Capon nouzt' but þe lyuere
 And of 3oure soft' brede but' a shyuere 1840
 And aftere þat' a rosted pigges hede
 But' þat' I nolde for me no beest' were dede
 þan had I wiþ 3ou homely suffisaunce
 I am a man of litel sustynaunce 1844

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

My spirit hap [his] fostring' in þe bible
 þe body is ay so redy *and* so penyble
 To wake þat' my stomak' is destroyed
 I prei þou dame be þe nouzt' anoyed 1848
 þouze I frendly to þou my counsail shewe
 By god I nold' not telle it' it' but' a fewe
 Nowe sire *quod* she but' oo word' er þe goo
 My childe is dede *with-in* þise wekes twoo 1852
 Sone after' þat' þe wenten out' of þis toun [leaf 155]
 His deþ I segħ by reuelacioun
 Seide þis frere at' home in our dortour
 I dar wel seyñ er þat' half an houre 1856
 Aftere his deþ I segħ hym born to blisse
 In myn avisiõ god me so wis
 So dyd our Sexten *and* our fermererø
 þat' han bene trewe freres .I. þere 1860
 þei may now god byþonke of his lone
 Maken hir Iuble and walken alone
 And vp I aroos and aħ *our* couent' eke
 Wiþ mony a tere trilling' vpon *our* cheke 1864
 Wiþ-oute noys of clateryng' of bellys
 Te *deum*. was our songe *and* no þing' ellys
 Saue þat' to crist I seide an orison
 Thonkinge hym of my reuelaciõ 1868
 ffor sir' and dame trestep' me riȝt' wel
 Our orisons bene more effectueħ
 And more we seen of *cristes* secre þingges
 þan borel folk' or þouze þei were kingges 1872
 We lyue in pouerte and in abstinence
 And burel folk' in richesse *and* in dispence
 In mete and drink' and her foule delite
 We han þis worldly lust' al in dispite 1876
 ¶ Lazarus and Diues. liveden dyuersly
 And dyuers guardon had þei þerby
 Who so wil prey most fast *and* be clene
 And fat' his soule and make his body lene 1880

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

We faren as seiþ þe apostel . cloþe <i>and</i> fode	
Suffiseþ vs þouze þei be not ^t ful goode	
The clannes and þe fasting ^t of vs freres	
Makeþ þat ^t criste accepteþ our preieres	1884
Loo Moyses fourty daies <i>and</i> fourty nyzt ^t	
ffast ^t or þe hie god of myzt ^t	
Spak ^t wiþ him <i>in</i> þe Mount ^t synay	
Wiþ empty woombe of fasting ^t mony a day	1888
Resceyued he þe law þat ^t was writen/	[leaf 155, back]
wiþ goddys fyngere and hely wil 3e witen	
In mount ^t Oreb er he had eny speche	
Wiþ hie god þat ^t is our saules leche	1892
he fast ^t longe and was in contemplançe	
Aaron þat ^t had þe temple in <i>gouernaunce</i>	
And eke þe oþer preestes euerechoñ	
Into þe temple whan þei shuld goñ	1896
To prey for þe puple <i>and</i> to do seruise	
þei nold drinke in no manere wise	
No drink ^t which þat ^t hem dronke myzt ^t make	
But ^t þer in abstinence prey and wake	1900
lest þat ^t þei diden take hede what ^t I saye	
But ^t þei be sobre þat ^t for þe puple praye	
war þat ^t I seie no more for it ^t suffiseþ /	
Our lorde Ihesu as holy writte deuyselþ	1904
3af vs ensample of fastinge <i>and</i> preiers	
Therefore we mendenauntz we sely freres	
Be wedde to pouerte <i>and</i> contynence	
To charite humblenesse and abstinence	1908
To persecucion for riȝtwisnesse	
To wepinge misericord ^t <i>and</i> clenness	
And þerfore may 3e see þat ^t <i>our</i> preiers	
I speke of vs we mendenauntz we freres	1912
Bene to þe hie god more acceptable	
þan 3oures <i>with</i> þe fest ^t at ^t þe table	
ffor paradis first ^t if I shal not ^t lye	
was man outchased for his glotenye	1916

And chaast ^t man was in <i>paradis</i> certeyn	
But ^t harken nowe Thomas wha[t] I wil seyn ^d	
I haue no tixte þerof as I suppose	
But ^t I shal fynde it ^t in a manere glose	1920
That ^t specialy our lorde swete <i>Ihesus</i>	
Spake by freres whan he seide þus	
Blessed be þei þat ^t poor in spirite be	
And so forþ al þe gospel may 3e se	1924
Wher ^t it ^t be like our profession	[leaf 156]
Or her þat ^t swymmen in possession	
fiye on her ^t pompe <i>and</i> on her glotenye	
And on her lewdenesse I ham defie	1928
Me þenkeþ þei ben like Iouynyan	
ffatte as a whale and walking ^t as a swan	
Al vinolent ^t as þe betel in þe spence	
Her preier is of ful grete reuerence	1932
Whan þei for soules seyn þe Psalme of davyd	
lo boþ þei seyn <i>Cor meum</i> eructauit ^t	
Who foloweþ cristes gospel <i>and</i> his lore	
But ^t we þat ^t humyle ben <i>and</i> chast ^t <i>and</i> pore	1936
Worchers of goddis word [not] auditours	
þerfore riz ^t as an hawke vp at ^t a sours	
Vp springeþ into þe eire . so preiers	
And charitable chastite of bysy freres	1940
Making ^t her soures to goddes eren too	
Thomas riz ^t so as mote I ride or goo	
And by þat ^t lord þat ^t cleped was seynt yve	
Ner þowe our broþer þou shuldest ^t not thryve	1944
In oure Chapitle prey we day <i>and</i> nyzt ^t	
To crist ^t þat ^t he þe sende hele <i>and</i> myzt ^t	
Thi body forto welden hastely	
God wote quop he no þing ^t þerof fele I	1948
As helpe crist ^t as I haue in fewe 3eres	
Spended vpon mony dyuers freres	
Wel mony a pounde zit ^t fare I ne þe bette	
Certeyn my good is almost ^t be-sette	1952

- ffare wele my good for it' is almost' agoo
 þe frere answerð o Thomas dost' þou so
 What' nedep þou diuers freres seche
 What' nedep hym þat' hap a perfit leche 1956
 To sechen oþer leches in þe town
 3our inconstaunce is 3our confusioñ
 Holde 3e me þan or ellis our couent'
 To prey for 3ou ben insufficient' 1960
 Thomas þat' Iape is not' worþ a myte [leaf 156, back]
 3oure Maladie is for we haue to lite
 A 3eue þat' Couent' half a quarter otys
 A 3eue þat' Couent' *four and twenti*¹ grotys [¹ MS 'xxiiijth'] 1964
 A 3eue þat' frere a peny *and* lat' hym goo
 Nay nay thomas it' may no þing' be so
 What' is a ferþing' parted in twelve
 Lo eche þing' is counted in hym selue 1968
 Is more stronge whan it' is so sclatered.
 Thomas of me þou shalt' not' be flatered /
 þou woldest' haue our labour al for nouzt'
 þe hie god þat' al þis world' hap wrouzt' 1972
 Seiþ þat' þe werkman is worþi his hire
 Thomas nouzt' for 3oure tresour I desire
 As for my silf but' þat' al our Couent
 To prey for 3ou is al our diligent' 1976
 And forto beelden cristes owne chirche
 Thomas if 3e wil lerne forto wirche
 Of beeldinge vp of churches may 3e finde
 If it be good in Thomas lif of ynde 1980
 3e ligge here ful of anger and of yre
 wiþ which þe deuel sette 3our hert' on fire
 And chiden here þis holy Innocent'
 3our wif þat' is so meke *and* pacient' 1984
 And þefore trow me 3if 3ou list'
 Ne strive not' wiþ þi wif as for þe best'
 And bere þis word' away now by þi feiþ
 Touchinge such þing' lo what' þe wise man seiþ 1988

Wiþ-Inne þi hous ne be þou no lyoñ	
To þi sogettes do þou noon oppressioñ	
Ne make þou nat' þine aqueyntaunce forto fle	
And 3it' Thomas eftsones charge I þe	1992
Be ware of yre þat' in þi bosom slepeþ	
ware þe for the serpent' þat' so scilyly crepeþ	
vnder þe gras and styngeþ sotilly	
Be war my sone and harken paciently	1996
That xx ^{ti} þousand men han lost' her lyues	[leaf 157]
ffor stryuyng' <i>with</i> her lemmanes <i>and</i> her wyues	
Now siþ 3e han so holy meke a wif	
What' nedeþ 3ou thomas to make strif	2000
Ther nys iwis no serpent' so cruel	
Whan men treden on his tale ne half so feþ	
As a womman is whan she haþ kau3t' an Ire	
Vengeaunce is þan al þat' þei desire	2004
Ire is an synne oon þe grete of seuene	
Abhominable vnto god in heuene	
And to hym self it' is distruccioñ	
Thus euery lewde vicar or parsoñ	2008
Can seie how Ire engendres homie[id]e	
Ire is in soþ executour of pride	
I coude of Ire seie so mochel sorowe	
My tale shuld' last' vnto to-morowe	2012
And þerfore I prei god boþ day <i>and</i> ny3t'	
An yrous man god sent' hym litel my3t'	
It is grete harme and eke gret' pite	
To sette an yrous man in hie degre	2016
¶ Whilom þer was an yrous potestate	
As seiþ senek þat' during' his estate	
Vpon a day oute riden kny3tes twoo	
And as fortune wolde it' shuld' be so/	2020
þat' oon of hem come home þat' opere nou3t'	
Anoñ þe kny3t' byfore þe Iuge was brou3t'	
þat' saide þus þou hast' þi felawe sclayñ	
ffor which I deme þe to deþ certeyñ	2024

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And to an oþer knyȝt^t *commañded* he
 Go lede him to deþe I charge þe
 And happed as þei went^t by þe way
 Toward^t þe place þer he shuld^t day 2028
 þe knyȝt^t come whichⁿ men wende had ben dede
 þan þouȝt^t þei it^t was þe best^t rede
 To lede hem boþ to þe Iuge agayn
 þei seiden lord^t þe knyȝt^t nys not^t slayn 2032
 His felawe here he stant^t hool a lyue [leaf 157, back]
 He shal be dede quod he so mot^t I thryue
 þat^t is to seyn boþ on two *and* þre
 And þoo to þe first^t knyȝt^t riȝt^t þus spoke he 2036
 I dampne þe þe most^t algate be dede
 And þou also most^t nedes lese þine hede
 ffor þou art^t cause of þi felawes deþe
 And to þe *thridde*¹ knyȝte þus he seiþe [MS iii.] 2040
 Thou hast^t not^t done þat^t I *commañded* þe
 And þus he did hem sleen al þre
 ¶ Irous Cambises was eke dronkenlewe
 And ay delited him to bene a shrewe 2044
 And so byfelle a lorde and his mayne
 That^t loued vertuous moralite
 Seide vpon a day bitwix hem two riȝt^t þus
 A lorde is lost^t if he be vicius 2048
 And dronkenesse eke is a foule record^t
 Of eny man and namely in a lord^t
 þer is wel mony an yre and mony an ere
 In waytinge and he note where 2052
 ffor goddes [loue] drynkeþ more attemperaly
 Wyne makeþ a man to lesen wrecchedly
 his mynde and his lymes euerechoñ
 þe reuerce shalt^t þou see quod he anoñ 2056
 And preue it^t by þine [owne] experience
 That^t wyne ne doþ to folk noñ suchⁿ offence
 þer nys no wyne byreueþ me my myȝt^t
 of honde ne of foote ne of myn eye sight^t 2060

And for despite he dronke mochel more
 An .C. part þan he had doñ byfore
 And riȝt anon þis yrous cursed wreche
 lete þise knyȝtes sones to-fore hym fecche 2064
 Comaundyng hem þei shuld to-fore hym stonde
 And sodeynly he toke his bowe on honde
 And vp the strenghe he pulled to his ere
 And wiþ an arowe he selowe þ^e childe riȝt þere. 2068
 Nowe wheþer haue I a siker hond or noñ
 [leaf 158]
 Quod he is al my myȝt and mynde agoñ
 Haþ wyne byreued me myn eye siȝt
 What shuld I telle answeere of þe knyȝt 2072
 His sone was sclayn þer nys no more to say
 Be ware þerfor wiþ lordes howe ȝe play
 Syng Placebo and I shal ȝif I can
 But if it be to a poor man 2076
 To poor man shuld he his vices telle
 But not to a lord þough he shuld goo to helle
 Lo Irous Arus þilk Percian
 how he distroied þe Ryuer of gysan 2080
 ffor þat an hors of his was dreynt þer Inne
 Whan he went babilonye to wynne
 He made þat þe Ryuer was so smal
 þat as men myȝt passed ouer al 2084
 lo þat he so wel teche can
 Ne be ȝe no felawe to non yrous man
 Ne wiþ no woode man þat walkeþ by þe way
 lasse þe repent I wil no ferþere say 2088
 Now Thomas leue broþer leue þine Ire
 þou shalt me fynde as Iuste as is a squyere
 Hold not þe deuels knyf ay in þine herte
 Thyne anger doþ þe al to sore smerte 2092
 But shewe it me al þi confessiõ
 Nay quod þe sik man by seint Symeõ
 I haue be shrive þis day at my curate
 I haue tolde hym allholy myne astate 2096

It nedep no more to speke of it seid he	
But if me list of myne humilite	
3eue me þan of 3oure gold to make our cloister	
Quod he for mony a muscle and mony an oyster	2100
Whan oper men han bene ful wel at ese	
Hap bene our fode our cloister forto rese	
And god wote vnneþ þe fundament	
Perfourmed is and of our payvement	2104
Is nouzt a tyle wip-Inne our wonys	[leaf 158, back]
By god we owen xl pounde for stonys	
Now helpe Thomas for hym þat harowed helle	
ffor ellis mote we our bokes selle	2108
And 3if 3ou lakke our predicacioñ	
Than god þis world al to distruccioñ	
ffor who so wold from þis world vs byreue	
So god me saue thomas by 3oure leue	2112
He wolde byreue out of þe world þe sonne	
ffor who can techen and worchen as we konne	
And þat is nouzt of litel tyme quod he	
But siþ Elie was or Elise	2116
Han freres be þat fynde I of record	
In charite þon-kidde be our lord	
Now thomas [helpe vs] for seint charite	
Haue done anoñ he sette hym on his kne	2120
This sik man wex nye woode for Ire	
He wolde þat þe frere had be a fire	
Wip his fals dissimulacioñ	
Such þing as is in my possession	2124
Quoþ he þat may I 3eue and non opere	
3e sein me thus hou þat I am 3our broþere	
3e certes quoþ þis frere trustep wel	
I toke our dame þe letter of our seel	2128
Nowe quoþ he wel and somewhat shal I 3eue	
Vnto 3oure holy Couent while I lyve	
And in þine honde þou shalt it haue anōn	
Vp þis condicioñ and oper noñ	2132

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

That þou departe it^a so my dere broþer
 þat^a euery frere haue as moçh as oþer
 This shalt þou swere on þi profession
 Wiþ-ouen fraude or cauellacioñ 2136
 I swere it^a quod þe frere by my faip
 And þerwipal his honde in his he laip
 lo here my feip in me shal be no lak^t
 Now þan put þine honde down by my bak^t 2140
 Seide þis man and grope wel behinde [leaf 159]
 Byneþ my buttoke þer þou shalt fynde
 A þinge þat I haue hidde in priuete
 A þouzt^a þe frere þat^a shal go wiþ me 2144
 A-doune his honde he launseþ to þe clift
 I hope for to fynde þer a zift
 And whan þis sik man felt^a þis frere
 About his trwel grope her *and* þere 2148
 A myddes his honde he lete þe frere a fart^a
 þer nys no capel drawing in a cart^a
 þat myzt han lete a fart^a of such a soun
 þe frere vp stert^a as doþ a [wood] lyoun 2152
 A fals cherle quod þe frere for goddis bonys
 This despite þou hast done for þe nonys
 þowe shal aby þis fart^a if I may
 His mayne þat^a harde þis affray 2156
 Come lepinge Inne *and* chased out^a þe frere
 And forþe he goþ *with* a ful angry chere
¹He ne had nat^a ellis for his sermoñ [*2159]
 To parten amonge his breþeren whan he come home [*2160]
 And þus is þis tale ydoñ }
 ffor we were almost^a at þe toñ } 2294

¶ Thus endep þe somnours tale.

[¹ *Spurious ending in the Petworth MS. For the genuine ending of the Tale, see the Appendix.*]

GROUP E. FRAGMENT VI.

§ 1. THE CLERK'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

Ande here

bygynneþ þe prologe of þ^e clerk of Oxenford^d [on leaf 159]

Sir Clerk of Oxenford^d our oost^t saide ¶ The prologe :/

3e ride as stille as Coy as doþ a maide

Were newe spoused sitting^t at þe borde

This day ne herd I of 3oure mouþ a word^t 4

I trowe þat^t 3e stodye about^t som sophyme

But^t Salomon seiþ al þinge haþ tyme

ffor goddes sake beþ of better^t chere

It^t is no tyme nowe to stody here 8

Telle vs some mery tale by 3our^t fay

ffor what^t man is entred into a play

he nedes mote into þat^t play assent^t

But^t pr[e]cheþ not^t as freres doñ *in* lent^t 12

To make vs for our^t olde synnes to wepe [leaf 159, back]

Ne þat^t þi tale ne make vs not^t to selepe

Telle vs somme mery þing^t of auentures

3oure termes. 3oure colours *and* figures 16

kepe hem in store til 3e hem endite

hiþe stele as whan men to kyngges write

Spekeþ so pleynt at^t þis tyme I 3ou prey

That^t we may vnder-stonde what^t 3e sey 20

This worþi clerk^t benygnely answered

Hoost^t quod he I am vndere 3our^t 3eerde

3e han as nowe of vs þe gouernaunce

And þerfor wil I do 3ou obeysaunce 24

GROUP E. § 1. CLERK'S HEAD-LINK. Petworth MS.

As fer as reson askeþ hardely
 I wil 3ou tel a tale which þat I
 lerned at Padowe of a worþi clerke
 As preued by his wordys and his werk^t 28
 He is nowe dede and nailed in his chest^t
 I prei to god so send his soule good rest^t
 ffraunceys Petrak þe laureol poetè
 Hight/ þis clerke whoos retorike swete 32
 Enlumyneþ al Itaile þorgh poetrie
 As lynyan did of Philosophye
 Or lawe or oþer art^t particulere
 But^t deþe þat^t nyl suffre no þing^t here 36
 But^t as it^t were a twynkelinge of an ye
 Boþ haþ he slayn and al shal we dye .
 But^t forto tellen of þis worþi man
 þat^t tau3t^t me þis tale as I first^t bygan 40
 I sey þat^t he first^t wiþ hygħ steel enditeþ
 Or he þe body of his tale writeþ
 A procheyn in þe which disseuereþ he
 þe Mounde and of Saluse þe contree 44
 And spekeþ of Appenyn þe hilles hye
 þat^t ben þe bondes of west lumbarlye
 And of Mount^t Resulus *in* special
 Wher as þe Poo out^t of a welle smal 48
 Takeþ his furst^t spryngginge *and* his sours [leaf 160]
 Wher as he holt^t euen strei3t^t way his cours
 To Emel ward^t to ferrare *and* to venyse
 The which a longe þinge were to devise 52
 And trewely as to my Iugement^t
 Mee thenkeþ it^t a þing^t impertinent^t
 Saue he wil conuey his matere
 But^t þis is þe tale which þat^t 3e shal here 56
 ¶ Thus endeþe þe prologe of þis tale .

And here bygynneþ þe clerk his tale

[on leaf 160]

Ther is at þe west side of ytayle

¶ The tale : /

Doune at þe rote of vesulus þe cold

A lusty pleyn abundant' of vitaile

wher mony a toune & tour¹ þou maist' bihold' [¹ & tour interlined by perhaps a later hand]

þat' founded were in tyme of elders olde

And mony anoþer delectable sizt'

And saluce þis noble cuntre hizt'

63

A Marquis whilom [lord] was in þat' lond'

64

As were his worþi elders hym bifore

And Obeisaunt' and redy to his hond'

Were alle his leeges boþ lasse *and* more

67

þus in delite he lyued and hap do 3ore

Be-loued and drad þourgh fauour of fortune

Boþ of his lordys *and* of his comune

70

Therwiþ he was as to speke of lynage

71

The gentelest y-born' of al lumbardy

A faire persone . stronge and zenge of age

And ful of honure and curteisie

74

Discrete ynouze his cuntrey forto gye

Sauē in some þingges he was to blame

And Water' was þis yonge lordes name

77

I blame him þus þat' he considered nouzt'

78

In tyme commynge what' myzt' betide

But' on his lust' present was al his þouzt'

[leaf 160, back]

And forto hauke and hunte on euery side

81

Wel nye al oþer cures lete he slide

And eke he ne wold' þat' was worst' of all

Wedde no wif for ouzt' þat' myzt' byfaff

84

Only þat' pointe his puple bere so sore	85
þat' flok-mele on a day þei [to him] went'	
And oon of hem þat' wisest' was of lore	
Or ellis þat' þe lorde wold best' assent'	88
þat' he schulde telle hym what' his puple ment'	
Or ellis coude he wel shewe such' matere	
He to þe Marquis seide as 3e mowe here	91
(6)	
O Noble Marquis 3oure humanitee	92
Assureþ vs <i>and</i> 3eueth vs hardynesse	
As ofte tyme as it' is necessite	
That' we 3ou mow telle our' heuynesse	95
Accepteþ lord of 3our' gentilnesse	
þat' we to 3owe wiþ pitous hert' compleyne	
And lat' 3oure eeres not' my vois disdeyne	98
(7)	
Al haue I nou3t' to done in þis matere	99
More þan anoþer haþ in þis place	
3it' for as moche as 3e my lord so dere	
Haue alway shewed [me] fauour <i>and</i> grace	102
I dare þe better aske of 3ou a space	
Of audience to shewen our request'	
And 3e my lord' to done ri3t' as 3ou lest'	105
(8)	
For certes lord so wel vs likeþ 3ou	106
And alle 3oure werkes <i>and</i> euer han do þat' we	
Ne cowde nat our owne silf devisen howe	
We my3t' more lyve in felicite	109
Saue oo þinge lord if it' 3our wille be	
That' to be a wedded man if 3ou list'	
Than were our' puple in souereyn hertes rest' [leaf 161]	112
(9)	
Boweþ 3oure nek' vndere þat' blisful 3ok'	113
Of souereynte nou3t' of <i>seruise</i>	
Which men clepe spousale or wedlok'	
And þenkeþ lord among' 3oure þou3tes wise	116

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

That of wedloke *commep* grete emprise
 ffor þouze we slepe or wake *rozne* or ride
 Ay fleep þe tyme it wil no man abide. 119

(10)

And þouze 3our' grene 3ouþe growe as 3it' 120
 In crepeþ age alway as stille as stone
 And deþe manaseþ euery age and smyt'
 In eche astate for þer ascaped noon 123
 And also certeyn as we knowe euerichoñ
 þat' we shul dye as vncerteyn we aþ
 Beñ of þat' day þat' deþ shal on vs falle 126

(11)

Accepteth þan of vs þe trewe entent' 127
 That' neuere 3it' refused your heest'
 And we wil al lord 3if 3e wil assent'
 Chese 3ou a wif in short' tyme at' the lest' 130
 Born of þe gentelest' and of þe mest'
 Of al þis londe so þat' it' out' seme
 Honure to god and 3ou. so as we con deme 133

(12)

Delyuere vs of al þis bysy drede 134
 And take a wif for hi3e goddis sake
 ffor 3if it' byfelle so as god forbede
 þat' þourgh deþ 3our' lynage shuld' slake 137
 And a straunge lynage shuld' take
 3our' heritage. oo woo were vs alyue
 Wherfore we prey 3ou hastely to wif 140

(13)

Her meke preier' & her pitous chere 141
 Made þ^e Marquis haue such pite
 Wil 3e quod he myne owne puple dere [leaf 161, back]
 To þat' I neuer erst' þou3t' constreyne me 144
 I me reioyse not' of my liberte
 þat' seelden tyme is found' in mariage
 Ther I was free I mot' bene in seruage 147

- But napelees I se 3oure trewe entent' 148
 And trust' vpon 3ou and haue doñ ay
 Wherfore of my fre wille I assent'
 To wedde me as sone as euer I may 151
 But þer as 3e han profered me to day
 To chese me a wif I 3ou relese
 That' choiſe & prei 3ou of 3our propher cese 154
 (15)
 For god it' wote þat' children oft' beñ 155
 Vnlike her worþi eldres hem bifore
 Bounte commep al of god not' of þ' strenne
 Of which þei ben engendred and ybore 158
 I Trust' in goddys bounte and þerfore
 My mariage and my astate and rest'
 I hym bitake he may do as hym lest' 161
 (16)
 Lat' me allone in chesing' of my wif 162
 That' charge vpon my bak' I wil endure
 But I 3ou prey and charge vpon 3our lif'
 þat' wif þat I take 3e me ensure 165
 To worship hur' whil our' lyf endure
 In worde and werke boþ here and ellys where
 As she an emperours douzter were 168
 (17)
 And ferþermore þis shullen 3e swere þat 3e 169
 A3einst' my chose shul neiþer grucche ne stryue
 ffor siþ I shal forgo my liberte
 At' 3oure request' as euer mot' I thryue 172
 Ther as myn hert' is sette þer wil I wyue
 And but' 3e wollen assent' in such' manere
 I prey 3ou spekeþ no more of þis matere [leat 162] 175
 (18)
 Wif harty wille þei sweren and assenten 176
 To al þis þinge þer seide no wizt' nay
 Bisechinge hym of grace er þei wenten
 That' he hem wold graunten a certeyn day 179

Of his spousale as sone as euer he may ffor 3it' alway þe puple somewhat' dredde Lesse þis Marquis wol no wif wedde	182
He graunted hem a day such̄ as hym lest' On which̄ he wolde be wedded sikerly And seide he did al þis at' her request' And þei wiþ humble entent' ful buxomly Knelinge vpon her knees ful reuerently Hym þonken alle and þus þei han an ende Of her entent' and home aȝein þei wende	183 186 189
And here vpon he toke his officers Commaundinge for þe fest' to purueye And to his priuey knyȝtes and sqwiers Such̄ charge ȝaf hem . as hym lust' on hem to leye And þei his comaundementz to obeye And eĉh̄ of hem doþ his diligence To done vnto þe fest reuerence	190 193 196

[PART THE SECOND.]

Nouȝt' fer from þilk' place honorable wher as þis Marquis shope his mariage þer stode a Thrope of siȝt' delectable In which̄ poor folk' of þat' vilage Hadden her beestes and her harbigage And of her labour toke her sustinaunce After' þe erþe hem ȝaue abundaunce	197 200 203
Among' þise poor folk þer dwelled a man which̄ þat' was holden porest' of hem all But' heȝh̄ god somtyme sende can His grace vnto a litel oxes staþ Ianicula men of þat' thrope hym calle A doughter' had he faire and ȝong' of siȝt' And Grisild' þis ȝonge maiden hiȝt'	204 [leaf 162, back] 207 210

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

- But** forto speke of vertuous bewte 211
 þan was she oon þe fairest' vnder sonne
 fful poorly yfostred was she
 No licorousnesse was on her lust' yronne 214
 Wel offer of þe weH þan of þe tunne
 She drank' / *and* for she wole vertue plese
 She knewe wel labour but' noñ ydel ese 217
 (24)
- But** þouze þis maide were tender' of age 218
 3it' in þe brest' of her virginite
 þere was enclosed ripe *and* sad corage
 And in grete reuerence *and* in grete charite 221
 Her olde poor fadere fostred shee
 A fewe shepe spynnyng' on þe felde she kept'
 She wolde not' ben ydel til she sclepte 224
 (25)
- And** whan she homward' come she wolde bringe 225
 wortes and herbes tymes ful oft'
 which she shradde *and* siþ for her lyuyng'
 And made her bedde ful hard' *and* no þing' soft 228
 And euere she kept' her faders lif on loft
 wiþ euery obeisaunce *and* diligence
 That' childe may do to faders reuerence 231
 (26)
- V**ppon Grisilde þe poor creature 232
 fful oft' haþ Marquis sette hys eye
 As he on hundyng'e rode perauenture
 And whan it' felle þat' he my3t' hir espye 235
 he not' wiþ wa[n]toñ lokinge of foly
 his eyen cast' vpon hur' but' *in* sad wise
 Vpon her chere he wold' hym oft' avise [leaf 163] 238
 (27)
- Commending'** in his hert' her wommanhede 239
 And eke her vertue passing' eny wi3t'
 Of so 3onge age as wel in chere as *in* dede
 ffor þouze þe puple haue no gret' insizt' 242

In vertue he considered ful riȝt'
 Her bewte and disposed þat' he wold'
 Hir' wedde if euer he wedde shuld' 245

(28)

The day of weddyng' come but' no wiȝt' can 246

Telle what' womman it' shuld' be
 ffor which mervaile wondred mony man
 And seiden whan þei weren in priuete 249

wil not' our lorde leue his vanyte
 wil he not' wedde alas alas þe while
 whi wil he hym self *and* vs þus begile 252

(29)

But' na-þe-lees þis marquis haþ do make 253

Of Gemmes sette in gold' *and* in asure
 Broches and ryngges for grisild' sake
 And of her cloþing' toke he þe mesure 256

Of a maide like to her stature
 And eke of oþer ornamentes aȝ
 þat' to such' a wedding' shul faȝ 259

(30)

The tyme of vndern þe same day 260

Approcheþ þat' þis wedding' shulde be
 And all þe paleys putt' was in aray
 Both halle *and* chambres eȝ in his degre 263

Houses of office . stuffed wiþ grete plente
 þer maist' þou see of deyteuous vitaile
 þat' may be found' as fer as lasteþ ytaile 266

(31)

This rial Marquis rially araied . 267

lordys and ladys in his companye
 þe which to þe feest' were preied / [leaf 163, back]
 And of his retenwe þe bachelerye 270

wiþ mony a sounne of sondry melodye
 vnto þe vilage [of þe] which I told'
 In þis aray þe riȝte way haþ hold' 273.

Griseld ^t god wote of þis ful Innocent ^t	274
þat ^t for hure was shape al þis aray	
To fecchen watere at þe welle is went ^t	
And <i>comme</i> þ home as sone as euer she may	277
ffor wel she herd say þat ^t ilk ^t day	
þat ^t Marquis shuld ^t wedde <i>and</i> if she myzt ^t	
She wold ^t fayn see somme of þat ^t sizt ^t	280
(33)	
She þouzt ^t I wil wiþ oþer maidens stonð	281
þat ^t bene my felawes in oure door <i>and</i> see	
The Marquis and þerfor wil I fonde	
To done at ^t home as sone as it ^t may be	284
þe laboure which þat ^t longēþ vnto me	
And þan may I at ^t leisere it ^t byhold ^t	
If she þis way to þe castel holde	287
(34)	
And as she wolde ouer ^t þe thresshold ^t goñ	288
The Marquis come and can hur ^t forto calle	
And she sette doune her water pot ^t anoñ	
beside þe thresshold ^t of þe oxes stalle	291
And doun vpon her knees she gan to falle	
And wiþ sadde countenaunce kneled stille	
Til she had herde what ^t was þe lordes wille	294
(35)	
This þouztful Marquys spake vnto þis maide	295
wel soberly and seide in þis manere	
where is 3oure fader Griseld ^t he seide	
And she wiþ reuerence and meke chere	298
Answered lord he is al redy here	
And Inne she gooþ wiþ-out ^t lenger lette	
And to þe Marquis she her fadere fette.	[leaf 164] 301
(36)	
He by þe honde þan toke þis olde man	302
And seide him þus whan he hym had a side	
Ianacula I neiþer may ne can	
lenger þe plesaunce of myn herte hide	305

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

If þat' 3e vouchesauf what' so be-tide
 þi douȝter wil I take er þat' I wende
 As for my wif to my lyues end 308

(37)

Thow louest' me I woot' wel certeyn 309
 And art' my feiþ-ful liege man ybore
 And al þat' likeþ me I dar wel seyñ
 It' likeþ þe and specialy þerfore 312
 Tel me þat' poynt' þat' I haue seide byfore
 If þat' þowe wolde vnto þat' purpoos drawe
 To take me as for þine sone in lawe 315

(38)

The sodeyn caas þe man astonyed soo / 316
 þat' rede he wexe al basshed and al quakinge
 He stood *and* vnneþes seide wordes moo
 But' only þus lord quod he my willinge 319
 Is as 3e wol not' aȝeinst' 3our' likinge
 I wil no þinge 3e be my lorde so dere
 Riȝt' as 3ou lest' gouerneþ þis matere 322

(39)

Than wil I do þus quod Marquis softly 323
 þat in to þe chambre I and þou. *and* she
 haue a collacioñ and woost' þou why
 ffor I wil aske hur' ȝif hir' wil be 326
 To be my wif and rewle hir' after me
 And al þis she shal done in þi presence
 I wil not' speke out' of þine audience 329

(40)

And in þe Chamberẽ while þei were aboute 330
 Her tretis which 3e shul after here
 þe puple come into þe hous *without*
 And wondred hem in howe honest' manere [leaf 164, back] 333
 And tentifly she kepte hur fadere dere
 But' vtterly grisild' wonder myȝt'
 ffor neuere erst' sey she shuch a siȝt' 336

No wonder is þouze she be astonyed	337
To se so grete a gest' come in þat' place	
She was neuere to suche gestys wonned	
ffor which she loked wiþ ful pale face	340
But' shortly fro þis matere forto pace	
Thise were þe wordes þat' þis marquis saide	
To þis benygne verrey feiþful mayde	343
(42)	
Grisyle he seide ze wol wel vnderstonde	344
It' likeþ vnto zoure fadere <i>and</i> me	
þat' I zou wedde <i>and</i> eke it' may so stonde	
As I suppose þat' ze wil it' so be	347
But' þis demaunde I axe furst' <i>quod</i> he	
That' sipeñ it' shal be doñ on hastif wise	
Wol ze assent' or ellis zouwe avise	350
(43)	
I seye þis be ze redy <i>with</i> good hert'	351
To al my lust' <i>and</i> þat' I frely may	
As me best' þenkeþ do zou lawgh or smert	
And ze neuer gruch nyzt' ne day	354
And eke whan I seie ze say ze not' nay	
Neiper be word' ne fraward countenance	
Swere þis and here I swere <i>our</i> aliañce	357
(44)	
Wondringe vpon þis worde quaking' for drede	358
She seide Indigne and vnworþi	
Am I to þat' [honour] þat' ze me bede	
But' rizt' as ye wil <i>your</i> self rizt' so wil I	361
And [here] I swere þat' neuer willingly	
In word' ne þouzt' I neuere zou disobeye	
ffor to be dede þouze me were loþe to deye	364
(45)	
This is ynowe Grisile myñ <i>quod</i> he	[leaf 165] 365
And forþ he goþ wiþ a sobre chere	
Out' at þe door after cam she	
And to þe puple he seide in þis manere	368

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

This is my wif quod he þat stondeþ here
 Honoureþ hir' and loueth [hire] I prey
 Who so loueþ me þer nys no more to seye 371

(46)

And for no þing^t of hure olde gere 372
 She shuld bring^t to his hous he bade
 þat wommen shulden spulen hir' riz^t þere
 Of which þe ladies were not' riz^t glade 375
 To handel her cloþes in which she was clad
 But' napeles þis maiden briz^t of hwe
 ffrom fote to hede ycloþed han al newe 378

(47)

Her heres han þei kembed þat lay vntressed 379
 wel rwdely with her fyngeres smale
 And a crowne on her hede þei han dressed^t
 Isette ful of owches grete and smal 382
 Of hir' aray what' shuld^t I make a tale
 Vnneþes þe puple hir' knewe for her fairnesse
 Whan she transformed was in such richesse 385

(48)

¶ This Marquis haþ hure spoused wiþ a ryng 386
 Bouz^t for þe same cause an þan hir' sette
 vppon an hors snowe white and wel amblyng
 And to his palaies er he lenger lette 389
 Wiþ Ioiful puple þat he lad *and* mette
 Conveied hir' and þus þe day þei spende
 In reuel to þe sonne canne descende 392

(49)

And shortely forþ þis tale forto chace 393
 I sey þat to þis newe Marquissesse
 God haþ ysent' such favour of his *grace*
 þat it' semed not' as by liknesse 396
 That' she was born and fedde in rudenesse [leaf 165, back]
 As in a Cote ar in an oxes stalle
 But' norshed in an Emperours halle 399

To euery w ³ t she woxen is so dere	400
And worshipful þat folk þer she was bore	
And from her birth knewe her fro 3ere to 3ere	
Vnneþ trowed þei but durst haue swore	403
þat to Ianicle of which I speke byfore	
She dou3tere ne were for as by coniecture	
hem þou3t she was a noþer creature	406
(51)	
ffor [þou3e] þat euere vertuous was she	407
She was encrested in such excellence	
Of thewe sette in high bounte	
And so discrete and faire of eloquence	410
So benygne and digne of reuerence	
And coude þe puples hertes so embrace	
þat eþ her loued þat loked on her face	413
(52)	
Nou3t only of saluce in þe toun	414
Publisshed was þe bounte of her name	
And eke be-side in mony a regiozn	
If oon seide wel anoþer seide þe same	417
So spradde of hure bounte þe fame	
That men and wommen boþ 3onge and olde	
Goon to saluse har' to be-holde	420
(53)	
This walter. lowly nay but ryally	421
weddeþ wiþ fortune honeste	
In goddes pees lyuen wel esely	
At hoom and outward grace yno3e had he	424
And for he sawe vnder lowe degre	
was oft vertue hid þe puple hym helde	
A prudent man and þat is sene wel selde	427
(54)	
Nou3t only Grisile þus þorgh her witte	428
Couþe al þe fete of wively humblenesse	[lea 166]
But eke whan þe cas required it	
The comon profite coude she redresse	431

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Ther nas no discord ^l rancour ne heynesse In al þe londe þat ^t she ne coude it ^t cese And bring ^t hem al wisely in rest ^t <i>and</i> ese	434
Thougħ þat ^t hur ^t husbon ^d present ^t were anoñ 3if Gentil men or oþer of her contre were wrooþ she cowde bringe hem at ^t oñ So wise and rype wordes had she	435 438
And Iuggement ^t of so grete equite That ^t she fro heuene was as men wende ¹ Puple to saue and euery wrong tamende.	[¹ <i>this line is re- peated in the MS.</i>] 441
Not longe tyme aftere þat ^t þis grisild Was wedded she a douzter haþ ybore Al had she leuer born a knaue ^t child ^t Glad was þe Marquis <i>and</i> his folk þefore ffor þouze a mayde childe come al byfore She may to a knaue childe atteyne By liklihede siþens she is not ^t bareyne	442 445 448

[THE THIRD PART.]

Therfor as it ^t falleþ tymes moo That ^t þis childe haþ sowked but ^t a thrawe This marquis in his hert ^t longep so To tempte his wif her sadnesse to knowe þat he ne myzt ^t fro his hert ^t throwe þis merveilous desire his wif tassay Naþe-lees god wote he þouzt ^t hir ^t to affray	449 452 455
He had assaied hir ^t ynouze to-fore And fonde hur ^t euer good what ^t nedeþ It ^t Hir ^t forto torment ^t and alway more <i>and</i> more þouze somme preise it ^t for a subtile witte But ^t as for me I saie þat ^t euel it ^t sitte To assaie a wif whan it ^t is no nede And putten hure in angwissħ <i>and</i> in drede	456 459 [leaf 166, back] 462

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

For which þis Marquis wrouzt ^t in þis ma[ne]re	463
He came a nyght ^t alon þer as she lay	
wiþ steerne face and trouble chere	
And seide þoo Griseld ^t quop he þat ^t day	466
þat ^t I 3ou toke out ^t of 3oure poor aray	
And putte 3ou in estate of hie noblesse	
3e han not ^t 3it ^t for3eten as I gesse	469
(60)	
I seye Griseld ^t þis present ^t dignite	470
In which I haue put ^t 3ou as I trowe	
Makeþ not ^t 3ou for3etful forto be	
þat ^t I 3ou toke in poor estate ful lowe	473
ffor eny þinge 3e mote 3oure seluen knowe	
Take hede of euery word þat ^t I 3ou seie	
ther is no wi3t ^t þat ^t hereþ þis but ^t we tweye	476
(61)	
3e wote 3our self wele howe þat ^t 3e come here	477
Into þis hous it ^t is not long ^t ago	
And þou3e to me 3e be leef <i>and</i> dere	
vnto my gentiles 3e be no þing ^t so	480
þei seyn to hem it ^t is grete shame <i>and</i> woo	
fforto be sogette and in seruage	
To þe þat ^t art ^t born of so lowe lynage	483
(62)	
And namely siþ þi dou3ter ^t was bore	484
þise wordes han þei spoke doutlees	
But ^t I desire as I haue don byfore	
To lyve my lif wiþ hem in rest ^t <i>and</i> pees	487
I may not ^t in þis cas bene rechelees	
I most ^t doñ wiþ [þi] dou3tere for þe best ^t	
nou3t ^t as I wold ^t but ^t as my gentils lest ^t	490
(63)	
And 3it ^t god woot ^t þis is ful loþ to me	491
But ^t napeles wiþ outen 3our wetynge	[leaf 167]
I nyl not ^t doo but ^t þis I wil quod he	
þat ^t 3e to me assent ^t as in þis þinge	494

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Shewep now 3oure pacience in 3our worchinge
 That 3e me bylyzt and swore in 3our vilage
 That day þat makid was our mariage 497

(64)

Whan she had herde al þis she was not amoued 498
 Neiper in word or chere or countenaunce
 ffor as it semed she was not agreued
 She seid lorde aH lith in 3oure plesaunce 501
 My childe and I wip hertely obeisance
 Bene 3oures aH and 3e may saue and spille
 3oure owne þing wheder þat 3e wille 504

(65)

Ther may no þinge so god my saule saue 505
 likinge to 3ou þat may displese me
 Ne I desire no þinge to haue
 Ne drede to lese saue only 3e 508
 This wille is my hert and ay shal be
 No length of tyme or deþ it may deface
 Neiþe chaunge my corage into oþer place 511

(66)

Glad was þe Marquis of hur answering 512
 But 3it he feyned as he were not so .
 Al drery was his chere and his lokinge
 whan she shuld out of þe chamber goo 515
 Sone after þis a forlong way or twoo
 he pleyonly hap told his entent
 Vnto a man which he to his wif sent 518

(67)

A maner sergeant was þis privey man 519
 þe which þat feithful fond yhad
 In þingges grete and eke such folk wel can
 Don execucion of þingges bad 522
 þe lord knewe wel þat he hym loued and drad .
 And whan þis sergeant wist his lordes wiff [leaf 167, back]
 Into þe chambere he stalked hym ful stiH 525

- Madame he seide 3e mote for3eue it' me 526
 pougħ I do þinge to which I am constreyned /
 3e bene so wise þat' wel knowe 3e
 þat' lordes heestes may not' be feyned 529
 þei mowen wel be wailed or compleyned
 But' men mote nede vnto her lust' obeye
 And so wil I þer nys no more to seye 532
 (69)
- That' childe I am commaunded to take 533
 And spake no more but' out' þ^e child he hent
 Despitously and gan a chere make
 As he wold' han slayn it' þer he went' 536
 Griseld' mot' al suffre and al consent'
 And as a lombe she sitteþ meke *and* stille
 And lete þis cruel Seriaunt' haue his wille 539
 (70)
- Suspecte was þe name of þis man 540
 Suspecte his face. suspecte his world' also
 Suspecte þe tyme þat' he þis bygan/
 ffor his douzter þat' she loued soo 543
 She wende he wold' haue slayn it' rizt' þoo
 But' napelees she neiþer wepte ne seide
 Confeermyng' hur' to þat' þe Marquis seide 546
 (71)
- And at' þe last' speke she bygan 547
 And nekely to þe sergeant' preide
 So as he was a worþi gentil man
 þat' she myzt' kisse her childe er þat' it deide 550
 And in her barme þis litel childe she leide
 wiþ ful sadde face and gan þe childe to blisse
 And lulled it' and after gan it' kisse 553
 (72)
- And þus she seide in her benigne voys 554
 fare wele my child' I shal þe neuere see
 But' siþ I haue Marked þe wiþ croys
 Of þilk' fadere yblessed mot' þou be [leaf 168] 557

þat' for vs deyed vpon þe rood tre.
 þi soule litel childe I hym bytake
 ffor þis nyȝt' shalt þou dyen for my sake 560

(73)

I trowe þat' to a norice in þis caas / 561

It' had ben hard' þis rewþe forto see

Wel myȝt' a modere þan cry alas /

But' napeles so sadde *and* stedfast' was she 564

þat' she endured al hur' aduersite

And to þe Sergeant' meke she seide

Hauē here aȝein my litel ȝonge maide 567

(74)

And goþ now quod she *and* doþ my lordes heest' 568

And oon þinge wold' I prei of ȝoure grace

That' but' my lorde forbede ȝou at' lest'

Burieþ þis litel body in som place 571

þat' no beestes no briddes it' to-race

But' he no word' to þo purpoos wold' saye

But' toke þe childe *and* went' vpon his way 574

(75)

This Sergeant' come to þe lord' ageyñ 575

And of Griseldes wordes *and* of her chere

He tolde hym poynt' by poynt' *in* short *and* pleyñ

And hym presented wiþ his douȝter dere 578

Somwhat' þis lord' had rawþe *in* his manere

But' napelees his purpoos helde he stille

As lordes doñ whan þei wil han her wille 581

(76)

And bad þis Sergeant' ful privelyly 582

he shuld ful soft' þis child' welde *and* wrappe

with al þe circumstance tenderly

And carie it' in a coffre or in a lappe 585

But' vp peyn his hede of for to swappe

þat' no man shuld' knowe of his entent'

Ne whens he come ne whidere he went' 588

¶ But at Bolyne to his suster' dere	[leaf 168, back]	589
þat þoo of Pavie was countesse		
He shuld her take <i>and</i> shew hir' þis matere		
Bisechinge hure to doñ her bysynesse		592
This childe to fostere in al gladnesse		
And whoos childe þat it' was he bad hir' hide		
ffrom euery wizt' for ouzt' þat' myzt' betide		595
This Sergeaunt' goþ and haþ fulfilled þis þinge		596
But' to þis marquis nowe retourne we		
ffor nowe goþ he wel oft' ymagynyng		
If by his wif' [chere] he myght' See		599
And by hir wordes perceyue þat' she		
Were chaunged but' he coude neuere fynde .		
But' euere in oon ylik' sad <i>and</i> kinde		602
As glad as humble as bysy in scruiſe		603
<i>and</i> Eke in loue as she was wont' to be		
Was she to hym in euery manere wise		
Ne of her douzter' oon worde speke she		606
Noon accident' for noon aduersite		
Was seen in hir' ne neuere her douzter' name		
Nempned she for earnest' ne for game		609

[THE FOURTH PART.]

In þis estate passed ben foure zere		610
Er she wip child' was but' as god wold'		
A knaue childe she bere by þis waltere		
flul gracious <i>and</i> faire to biholde		613
And whan folk' it' to hir fadere tolde		
Not' oonly he But' al þe contree mery		
Was for þe child' <i>and</i> god þei þonke <i>and</i> herye		616
Whan it' was two zere olde <i>and</i> from þe brest'		617
Departed from his norce vpon a day		
þis Marquis kaught' zit' anoth[er] lest'		

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

- To tempten his wif^t ofter if he may 620
 O nedeles was she tempted in assay [leaf 169]
 But^t wedded men knowen no mesure
 Whan þei fynde a pacient^t creature 623
 (82)
- Wyf quod þis Marquis 3e herd^t er þis 624
 My puple sekely bereþ our mariage
 And namely siþen my sone born is
 Now it^t is wors þan euer in our age 627
 þe murmur sleep myn. her[te] and my corage
 ffor to myn eres comeþ þe vois so smerte
 þat it^t wel nye destroieþ al my herte 630
 (83)
- Now seye men þus · whan walter is a goon. 631
 þan shal þe blood of Ianicle succede
 And bene our lord^t for oþer haue we nōn
 Such wordes seyn my puple it^t is no drede 634
 Wel ouzte I of such^t murmur taken hede
 ffor certeynly I drede such^t sentence
 þouze þei not^t pleynly speke in myn audience 637
 (84)
- I wold lyue in pees if þat I myzt^t 638
 Wherfore I am disposed vtterly
 As I his sustere serued by nyzt^t
 Rizt^t so I þenke to serue hym prively 641
 þus warne I 3ou þat^t 3e not^t sodeynly
 Out^t of 3oure self for no woo shuld^t outray
 Beþ patient^t and þerof I 3ou pray 644
 (85)
- I haue quod she seide [þus] and euere shaft 645
 I wil desire no þing^t certeyn
 But^t as 3ou lust^t not^t greueth me at all
 þouze þat^t my douztere *and* my sone be sclayn 648
 At 3oure comaundement^t þis is to sayn
 I haue had no parte of children tweyn
 But^t furst^t siknesse and after^t woo *and* peyn 651

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

- 3e be our lord doo *with* 3our' owe þinge . 652
 Ri3t' as 3ou lust' and askep no rede of me [leaf 169, back]
 ffor as I left' at' home al my cloþinge
 whan I come first' to 3ou ri3t' so quod she 655
 left I my wiþ and al my liberte
 And toke 3oure cloþing' wherfore I 3ou prey
 Do 3oure wille I wille to it obeye 658
 (87)
- And** certes 3if I had prescience 659
 3oure wiþ to knowe . or 3e 3oure lust' me told'
 I wold it' done wiþ oute necligence
 But' now I wote 3oure lust' *and* what' 3e wolde 662
 Al 3oure plesaunce feerme *and* stable I hold'
 ffor wist' I þat' my dep' wold do 3ou ese
 Gladly wil I suffre it' 3ou to plese 665
 (88)
- Deth** may make non *comparisoun* 666
 Vnto 3oure loue and whan þis Marquis say
 þe constance of his wif he cast' his hede adoun
 And his eyen two and wondred how she may 669
 In such' penaunce suffre al þis array
 And forþ he goþ wiþ drery countenance
 But' to his hert' it was ful grete plesannce / 672
 (89)
- This** ege sergeant' in þe same wise 673
 þat' he her douztere kaught' ri3t so he
 Or wors if he coude wors devise
 Hap' kaught' hire childe þat' was ful of bewte 676
 And euere in oon so pacient' was she
 þat' she no chere made of hevynesse
 But' kiseþ her sone and after can hym blesse 679
 (90)
- Saue** þis she preide him if þat' he my3t' 680
 hir' litel sone he wold on erþe graue
 his tendere lymmes delicat' to si3t'
 ffro fowles *and* beestes forto saue 683

But she noon answerē of hym myȝt haue
 He went his way as he no þing wrouȝt [leaf 170]
 But into boloyne tendrely it brouȝt 686

(91)

This Marquis wondreþ euere lenger þe more 687
 Vpon her pacience *and* if þat he
 Ne had sople knowe þefore
 þat partly her children loued she 690
 He wold haue wende þat of some sotilte
 And of malice or cruel corage
 That she had suffred þis *with* sad visage 693

(92)

Wut he knewe þat next hym self certayn 694
 She loued her children best in euery wise
 But nowe of wommen wold I aske fayn
 ȝif þise assaies myȝt not suffise 697
 what cowde a stordy husbond [more] devise
 To preue her wifhode *and* her stedfastnesse
 And be contynuyng in stordynesse 700

(93)

But þer ben folk of such condicioñ 701
 þat whan þei han a certeyn purpoos take
 þey con not stinte of her entencioñ
 But as þei were bounden to a stake 704
 þei wil not of þat purpoos slake
 Riȝt so þis marquis haþ fully purposed
 To tempten his wif as he was first disposed 707

(94)

He waiteþ if by woordes or countenance 708
 ȝif she to hym was changed of corage
 But neuere coude he fynde variance
 She was euere in hert & in visage 711
 And euer þe ferþer þat he was in age
 þe more trewer if it were possible
 She was to hym in loue *and* more penyble 714

For which it' semeþ þus þat' of hem twoo	715
Ther was but' oon wiþ for as walter lust'	
The same lust' was her plesaunce also	[leaf 170, back]
And god be þonked al felle for þe best'	718
She shewed wel for no worldly vnrest'	
A wif as of her self no þinge shuld'	
Willen in effecte but' as her husbond' wold'	721
(96)	
The sclaudere of waltere oft' wide sprad	722
That' a cruel hert' wickedly	
ffor he a poor womman wedded had .	
Hap morþered boþ his children priuely	725
which murmur was amonge heme comonly	
No wonder was for to þe puples eere	
þer come no worde but' þat' þei murþered were	728
(97)	
For swich as of his puple þer bifore	729
had loued hym wel desclaundred of his name	
Made hem þat' þei hated hym therfore	
To bene a murdere is an hatful name	732
But' napelees for ernest' ne for game	
He of his cruelte wold not' stynte	
To tempte his wif was al his entente	735
(98)	
Whan þis douztere xij zere was of age	736
he to þe courte of Rome in sotile wise	
Enformed of his wille sent' his massage	
Comaunding' hem such' billes to devise	739
As to his cruel purpoos may suffise	
howe þat' þe pope for his puples rest'	
Bad hym wedde anoþer wif if þat' hym lest'	742
(99)	
I sey he bad þat' þei shuld' counterfete	743
þe popes billes making' mencioñ	
þat' he hap leue his first' wif to lete	
As by þe popes dispensacioñ	746

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

To stinte rancoure *and* dissencion
 Bitwix þe puple *and* hym þus speke þe bulle
 The which þei han publisshed at þe fulle [leaf 171] 749

(100)

The rude puple as no wonder is 750
 Wende ful wel it had be riȝt soo
 But þise tydyngges *commen* to griseld is
 I deme þat her hert was ful woo 753
 But she was ylike sad euermoo
 Disposed was þis humble creature/
 Þe aduersite of fortune al to endure 756

(101)

Abydinge euer his lust *and* his plesance 757
 To whom she was zeuene hert *and* aȝ
 As to her worldely suffisaunce
 ffor certeynly for his story telle I shaft 760
 This Marquis ywriten hap *in* speciaȝ
 A *lettre* in which he sheweþ his entent
 And sikerly he it to bolyne sent 763

(102)

To þe Erle of Pavie which þat he had so , 764
 wedded his sustere he preide specialy
 To bringen him aȝein his children two
 In honourable estaat al openly 767
 Bot of on þing he hym preide al vtterly
 That he to [no] wiȝt þough men wolde enquere
 Shuld not telle whoos children þei were 770

(103)

But seide þat þe mayde shuld wedded be 771
 Vnto þe Marquis of Saluce anoȝ
 And as þe erle was preide so did he
 ffor at a day Isette he on his way is goȝ 774
 Toward Saluse *and* lordes mony oȝ
 In riche aray þis maide forto gyde
 Hir yonge broþer ridyng by hir side 777

Araied was towardes þis mariage	778
This mayde fressh ful of gemmys clere	
Hir' broþer that' vij. 3ere was of age.	
Araied eke was fresshly on his manere	[leaf 171, back] 781
And in grete noblesse <i>and</i> glad chere	
Toward Saluce shapinge her iournay	
ffrom day to day þei riden forþ her way	784

[THE FIFTH PART.]

Amonge al þis aftere his wikked vsage	785
This Marquys 3it' his wif to tempten more	
To þe vttrest' preef of his corage	
ffully to haue experience <i>and</i> lore	788
3if þat' she were as stedfast' as bifore	
he on a day in open audience	
wel boistously haþ seide hir' þis sentence	791
C Ertes Griseld' I had ynowe plesaunce	792
To han 3ou to my wif for 3oure goodnesse	
And for 3oure treuth <i>and</i> 3our obeysaunce	
Nou3t' for 3oure lynage ne for 3oure richesse	795
But' it' is now knowen in verray soþnesse	
þat' in grete lordship if I wil avise	
Ther is grete souereynte in sondry wise	798
I may not' done as euery plowe man may	799
My puple me constreynen forto take	
A noþer wiff and crien day by day	
And eke þe pope rancour forto sclake	802
Consenteþ it' þat' dar I vndertake	
And trewly þus moeh wil I 3ou say	
My newe wif is commyng' by þe way	805
B e stronge of hert' and voide anoñ her' place	806
And þilk' dowary þat' 3e brou3t' to me	
Take it' a3ein I graunte it' of my grace	

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Retourneþ to 3oure faders hous quod he 809
 No man may alway haue prosperite
 wiþ euene hert' I rede 3ou to endure
 þe stroke of fortune or of auenture 812

(109)

And she a3ein answerde in pacience [leaf 172] 813
 My lord quod she I wote and wist' alway
 howe þat' I swore 3ou magnificence
 And my pouert' no man can ne may 816

Maken noon comparison it' is no nay
 I helde me neuere digne in no manere
 To be 3oure wif ne 3it' your chambrere 819

(110)

And in þis hous þer 3e me lady made 820
 þe high god take I for my witesse

So wisly as he my soule glade
 I helde me neiþer lady ne maistresse 823

But' humble *seruaunte* to 3oure worþinesse
 And euere shal while my lif may endure
 Abouen euery worþi creature 826

(111)

That' 3e so longe of 3our benygnite 827
 haue holde me in honure *and in* nobleye
 where I was not' worþi forto be

þat' þonk' I god and 3ou [to] whom I prey 830
 ffor-3eelde it' 3ou þer nys no more to sey
 Vnto my fadere gladly wil I wende

And wiþ hym dwelle to my lyves ende 833

(112)

Ther as I was fostred a child ful smaht 834

Til I be dede my liff [þer] wil I lede
 A widowe clene in hert' body *and* aht
 ffor siþen I 3af to 3ou my maydenhede 837

And am 3oure trewe wif it' is no drede
 God shild' such a lordes wif to take
 Anoper man to husbonde or to make 840

- And of 3our' newe wif god of his grace 841
 So graunte 3ou welþe and prosperite
 ffor I wil gladly 3eeld' hir' my place
 In which I was blisful wont' to be 844
 ffor Sipeñ it' likeþ 3ou my lord' quod she [leaf 172, back]
 That' whilom weren al my hertes rest'
 That' I shal goon I wil goon whan 3ou lest' 847
 (114)
- But' þer 3e me profre such' dowarie 848
 As I furst' brou3t' it' is wel in my mynde
 It' were my wrecched cloþes no þing' faire
 þe which to me nowe were ful hard' to fynde 851
 How god howe gentile *and* how kinde
 3e semed by 3oure spech' *and* 3our' visage
 þe day þat' maked was oure mariage 854
 (115)
- But' soþ is seide algate I finde it' trewe 855
 ffor in effecte is proued nowe on me
 Lone is not' olde as whan it' is newe
 ffor certes lord' for noñ aduersite 858
 To dyen in þis cas it' shal not be
 That' in worde or werk' I shal repent'
 þat' I 3ou 3aue myn hert in good entent' 861
 (116)
- My lorde 3e wote þat' in my faders place 862
 3e diden me stripen out' of my poor wede
 And richely 3e cladden me of 3oure grace
 To 3ou brou3t' I not' ellis out' of drede 865
 But' fait' nakednesse *and* maidenhede
 But' here a3ein 3oure cloþing' I restore
 And eke my weddyng' ringe for euermore 868
 (117)
- The remenaunte of 3our Iwels redy be 869
 wiþ in 3our' chambre dare I it seyuely seye
 Naked out' of my faders hous quod she
 I come/ and naked I mote turne ageyne 872

Al þoure plesaunce wil I folowe feyne
 But if I hope it be not þoure entente
 þat I smoklees out of þoure paleis went 875

(118)

þe cowde not do so dishonest a þinge 876
 That ilk wombe in which our children lay [leaf 173]
 Shuld byfore þe puple in my walkinge
 Be seyn al bare wherfor I þou pray 879
 lat me not like a worm gon by þe way
 Remembre þou myn / owne lorde so dere
 I was þoure wif þouze I vnworþi were 882

(119)

Wherfore in guerdon of my maidenhede 883
 Which þat I wrouȝt and not aȝein bere
 As voucheþ sauf to ȝeue me to my mede
 But such a smokke as I was wont to were 886
 þat I þerwiþ may hille þe wombe of here
 þat was þoure wif *and* here I take my leue
 Of þowe myn owne lord lest I þou greue 889

(120)

The smokt quod he þat þou hast on þi bakt 890
 Lat it be stille and bere it forþ wiþ þe
 But wel vnneþ þat word he spakt
 But went his way for reuthe *and* pite 893
 Byfore þe folk hure self stripeþ she
 And in her smokt wiþ hede *and* fete al bare
 Toward her fadres hous forþ is she fare 896

(121)

The folk folowed weping in hir way 897
 And fortune euere þei cursed as þei gon
 But she from weping kept her eyen day
 Ne in þis tyme word spakt she noñ 900
 Her fader þat here of herd anoñ
 Cursed þe day *and* tyme þat nature
 Shope him to be a lyues creature 903

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

For out ^t of doute þis olde poor man	904
was euer ^t suspecte of her mariage	
ffor euer he demed siþen it bygan	
þat ^t whan þe lord yfyled had his corage	907
hym wold þenk ^t it ^t was a desparage	
To his astate so lowe to a liȝt ^t	[leaf 173, back]
And voiden hir ^t as sone as euere he myȝt ^t	910
(123)	
A geinst his douȝtere hastely goþ he	911
ffor he by þe noys of folk ^t knewe her <i>commyng^t</i>	
And wiþ her olde cote as it myȝt be	
He keuereþ hir ^t ful sorowfully wepinge	914
But ^t on hur ^t body myȝt ^t he it ^t not bringe	
ffor rude was þe cloþ and more of age	
By dayes fele þan hur ^t mariage	917
(124)	
T hus <i>wit^h</i> her fadere for a certeyn space	918
dwellleþ þis floure of wively pacience	
That ^t neuer by her wordes ne be her face	
Bifore þe folk ^t ne in her absence	921
Ne shewed she þat ^t to hir ^t was doñ offence	
Ne of hie astate in remembraunce	
Ne had she as by her countenaunce	924
(125)	
N o wonder is for in [her] grete estate	925
Her goost ^t was euere in pleyn humilite	
No tender mouþe ne hert ^t delicate	
Ne pompe ne semblant ^t of Rialte	928
But ^t ful of pacience and benygnite	
Discrete and pruydeles and euere honorable	
And to her husbonde euere meke <i>and</i> stable	931
(126)	
M en speke of Iob and most ^t of his humblesse	932
As clerkes whan hem lust ^t can wel endite	
Namely of men but ^t in soþfastnesse	
þouȝe clerkes preise wommen but ^t a lite	935

þer can no man in humblesse hem aquite
 As wommen can ne ben half so trewe
 As wommen bene but' it be fallen newe 938

[THE SIXTH PART.]

Fro babyloyne is þis Erle of Pavia come 939
 Of which þe word spronge to more *and* lesse
 And to þe pules eeres al *and* somme
 was coupe eke a newe Marquyssesse [leaf 174] 942
 He wiþ hym brouz't in pompe *and* such' richesse
 þat' was neuere sey wiþ mannys eye
 So noble aray in Westlombardye 945

The Marquis þat' Shope an knewe al þis 946
 Er þat' þis erle was *commen* sent' his massage
 ffor cely poor' Gryseldys
 And she *with* humble hert' *and* glad visage 949
 Nouz't wiþ swollen hert' in her corage
 Come at' his heest' and on here knees her sette
 And reuerently and wisely she hym grette 952

Griseld' quod he my wiþ is vtterly 953
 þis maide þat' shal wedded be vnto me
 Resceyued be to morowe as Really
 As it' is possible in my hous to be 956
 And eke þat' euery wiz't in his degre
 Haue his estate in sittyng' and *seruise*
 And also plesaunce as 3e can best' deuysel 959

I haue no womman suffisant' certayn 960
 þe Chambres to aray in ordynaunce
 After my lust' *and* þerfor wil I fayn
 þat' þine were al such' gouernaunce 963
 þou knowest' eke of olde al my plesaunce
 þou3e þine aray be bad and euel ysey
 Do þou þi deuoyre at' þe lest wey 966

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

- N**ouȝt only lord þat I am glad quod she 967
 To do ȝoure lust but I desire also
 ȝoure forto plesse and *serue* in my degre
Without fayntise and shal euermoo 970
 Ne neuer for no wele ne for no woo
 Ne shal þe goost *with*in my hert stynt
 To loue ȝou best *with* al my trewe entent 973
 (132)
- A**nd wiȝ þat word she gan þe hous to dizt [leaf 174, back]
 And tables to sette and beddys to make
 And peyned hure to doo al þat she myȝt
 Preying þe chambreres for goddis sake 977
 To hasten hem and fast swope *and* shake
 And she þe most seruisable at aȝ
 Haȝ euery ychambre araied *and* his halle 980
 (133)
- A**boute vndern gan þis Erle alizt 981
 That wiȝ him brouȝt þise noble childre tweie
 ffor which þe puple ranne to se þat sizt
 And hure araye so richely beseye 984
 And þan at arst amonges hem þei goȝ seye
 That walter was no foole þough hym lest
 To chaunge his wiff for it was for þe best 987
 (134)
- F**or she is fairrer as þei demen alle 988
 Than is Griseȝ and more tender of age
 And fairrer fruyte bytwene hem shuld falle
 And more plesaunt for hir hiȝe lynage 991
 Hir broȝer so faire was of his age
 þat hym to seen þe puple had kauȝt plesaunce
 Commendyng nowe ȝe Marquis gouernaunce 994
 (135)
- O** sterne puple vnsad and [vn]trewe 995
 Euere vndiscrete and chaungyng as a fane
 Delitinge euere in Rumour þat is newe
 ffor like þe mone euere wexe ȝe *and* wane 998

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Euere ful of clapping^t dere ynowe a Iane
 3our^t dome is fals 3our constañce euel preueþ
 A wel grete fool is he þat^t on 3ou leueþ 1001

(136)

Thus seiden sadde folk in þat^t Cite 1002

Whan þat^t þe puple gased vp *and* down
 ffor þei were glad riz^t for þe nouelte
 To make a newe lady of her town 1005

No more of þis make I mencoun [leaf 175]

But^t to griseld^t a3ein wil I me dresse
 And telle her constance *and* her bysynesse 1008

(137)

Wel bysy was gryselde in euery thinge 1009

þat^t to þe feest^t was pertinent^t
 Riz^t naught^t was she abashed of her cloþinge
 pouze þei were Rude and eke somdel to-rent^t 1012

But^t wiþ glad chere to þe gate is went^t
 wiþ oþer folk to greten þe Marquissesse
 And after doþ she forþ her bysynesse 1015

(138)

Wiþ ful glad chere þe gestes she receyueþ 1016

And Boxomly euerych in his degre
 That^t no man defawte þer perceyueþ
 But^t euere þei wondren what^t she myzt be 1019

That^t in so poor aray was forto se
 And cowde suchⁿ honure & reuerence
 And worþely þei preisen her prudence 1022

(139)

In al þis me[n]c while she ne stynte 1023

This maiden and eke her broþer to commend^t
 Wiþ al her hert^t and benigne entente
 So wel þat^t no man koude her prise amende 1026

But^t at^t þe last^t whan at^t þise lordes wende
 To sitten a down he gan to calle
 Griseld^t as she was bysy in þe halle 1029

- Griseld^t quod he as it^t were in play 1030
 How likeþ þe my wif^t in her bewte
 Riȝt^t wel quod she my lorde for in good fay
 A fairrer^t sawe I neuere non quod she 1033
 I prey to god so ȝeue ȝou prosperite.
 And so hope I he wil to ȝou sende
 Plesaunce ynouȝe to ȝoure lyues ende 1036
 (141)
- Sut^t oon þing^t I biseche *and* warne also ./ 1037
 þat^t ȝe prik^t wiþ no tormentynge [leaf 175, back]
 þis tendere mayden as ȝe han doñ moo
 ffor she is fostred in her norshynge 1040
 fful tenderly in her ȝong^t pleyynge
 She coude not^t aduersite endure
 As coude a poor fostred creature 1043
 (142)
- And whan þis Walter^t segh^t her pacience 1044
 her glad chere and no malice at^t aH
 And he so oft^t haþ done hir^t offence
 And she euer constant^t and sad as a waH 1047
 Contynuyng^t euer her innocence oueraH
 This stordy marquis gan his herte dresse
 To Rwe vpon hur^t wify stidfastnesse 1050
 (143)
- This is ynouȝe Griseld^t myñ quod he 1051
 Be no more agast^t ne cruel apayde
 I haue þi feiþ and þi benignyte
 As wel as euer womman was asaied 1054
 In gr[e]te astate and poorly araied
 Now knowe I dere wiff þi stedfastnesse
 And hure in armes toke *and* gan to kesse 1057
 (144)
- And she for wonder toke þerof no kepe 1058
 She herd not^t what^t þing^t þat^t he seide
 She ferde as she had stert^t out^t of her slepe
 Til she out^t of þe maisednesse abreide 1061

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Griseld^t quod he by god þat' for vs deyde
 þou art' my wif *and* noon oþer I haue
 Ne neuere had as god my soule saue 1064

(145)

This is þi douȝter which þou hast supposed 1065
 To bene my wif and noon oþer feiþfully
 shal bene myn heir' as I haue euere disposed
 Thowe bere hem in þi body trewly 1068
 At boyledn haue I kepte hem sikerly
 Take hem aȝein for þou myȝt' not' seyn [leaf 176]
 þat' þow hast lorn eny of þi children tweyn 1071

(146)

And folk þat' oþerwise han seide of me 1072
 I warne hem wel þat' I haue done þis dede
 ffor no malice ne for no cruelte
 But' forto assay þi wommanhede 1075
 And not' forto sle my children god forbede
 But' forto kepen hem prively *and* stille
 Til I þi purpoos knewe and al þi wille 1078

(147)

And whan she þis herd^t adoun *in* swowe she falleþ 1079
 ffor pitous ioying' and after hire swowinge
 She boþ her yōnge children to hure calleþ
 And in hure armes pitously wepinge 1082
 Enbrased boþ tenderly kissyng
 Wel like a modere wiþ her salt' teeres
 She baþed boþ her visage *and* her heeres 1085

(148)

O suchⁿ a pitous þinge it' was to see 1086
 Her sownyng' *and* her pitous vois to here'
 Gramercy my lord god y thank ȝou quod she
 þat' ȝe han saued me my children dere 1089
 Now rechⁿ I neuere to be dede riȝt' here
 Siþ I stonde in ȝour' loue *and* in ȝour' grace
 No force of deþ ne whan my spirit pace 1092

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

- A** tender' o dere .o. 3enge children myn) 1093
 3oure wooful modere wende stedfastly
 þat' cruel houndes or some vermyn)
 Had eten 3ou but' god of his mercy 1096
 And 3oure benigne fader' tenderly
 Haþ done 3ou kepte *and* þat' same stounde
 Al sodehynly she swapte down to þe grounde 1099
 (150)
- And** hin her swowne so sadly holdeþ she 1100
 her children two whan she gan hem`brace
 That' wiþ grete sleight' and difficulte [leaf 176, back]
 The children from her armes gan þei to rase 1103
 O mony a tere .o mony a pitous face
 Doun ranne of hem þat' stoden hyr beside
 Vnneþ aboute hur' myzt' þei abide 1106
 (151)
- Walter** hir' vptakeþ *and* her' sorowe gladeþ 1107
 She ariseþ vp al abashed from her trance
 And euery wizt' hir' Ioye and feest' makeþ
 To she haue kauzt' a3ein her countenance 1110
Walter her doþ so feiþfully plesaunce
 þat' it' was deynte for to se þe chere
 Bitwixe hem two nowe þei bene mette *in fere* 1113
 (152)
- Thise** ladys whan þei her tyme say 1114
 han taken hur' and into chambre gone
 And stripen hir' out' of her rude aray
 And in a cloþe of gold' þat' brighte shone 1117
 wiþ a crowne of mony a riche stone
 vpon hur' hede þei hir' into halle brouzt'
 And þer she was honoured as she ouzt' 1120
 (153)
- Thus** haþ þis pitous day a blisful ende 1121
 ffor euery man and womman doþ his myzt'
 This day in myrþe and reuel to dispende
 Til on þe welken shoon þe sterres brizt' 1124

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

ffor more solempne in euey mannys sizt
 This fest' was and gretter of costage
 þan was þe reuel of þe mariage 1127

(154)

fful mony a ȝeer in high prosperite 1128
 lyuen þise two in concord' and in rest'
 And richely his douȝter' maried he
 Vnto a lord on of þe worþiest' 1131
 Of aȝ ytaile and þan in pees *and* rest'
 His wifes fader' in his courte he kepeþ
 Til þat' his soule out' of his body crepeth [leaf 177] 1134

(155)

His sone entreþ into his heritage 1135
 In rest' and pees aftere his faders day
 And fortunate was eke in mariage
 Al putte he not' his wif in assay 1138
 This world' is not' [so] stronge it' is no nay
 As it' haþ bene in olde tymes ȝore
 And harkenep what' þe auctour seiþ þefore 1141

(156)

þis storie is seide not' þat' wifes shuld' 1142
 ffolowe Gryseld as in humilite
 ffor it' were importable þouȝe þei wold'
 But' þat' euery wizt' in hfs degre 1145
 Shulde be constant' in aduersite .
This storie which he wiþ high stile enditeþ
 Wiþ pacience Griseld' he qwiteþ 1148

(157)

ffor siþens a womman was so pacient' 1149
 Vnto a mortaȝ man moeh more we ouȝt'
 Resceyue alle in gree þat' god vs sent'
 ffor grete scelys he preueþ þat' he bouȝt' 1152
 Mankynde þe which þat' he wrouȝt'
 As seiþ seint' Iame if ȝe his pistol rede
 He preueþ folk al day it' is no drede 1155

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And suffreþ vs as for our exercise	1156
Wip sharpe shoures of aduersite	
Wel ofte to be leten in sondry wise	
Nowe forto knowe vs for certys he	1159
Er we were born knewe al our freelte	
And for our best ^t is al our ^t gouernaunce	
Lat ^t vs it ^t haue þan in vertuoussuffrance	1162

[Chaucer's addition to the Tale.]

But ^t oo witte harkenþ lordyngges er 3e goo /	1163
It were ful harde nowe adayes	
In al a toune fynde Griseldys þre or two	
ffor if þei were putte in such ^t assaies	1166
þe gold ^t of hem haþ nowe so hard ^t alaies	
Wip bras þat ^t þouze þe kynde be faire atte ye	
It ^t wot ^t raper brast ^t a two þan plye	1169

(160)

[ffor whiche hiere . for the wifes love of ^t bath	<small>[MS Reg. 17 D xv, leaf 175, back: not in Reg. 18 C II, Sloane 1685, or Harl. 1758.]</small>
whos lyf ^t and al hirs . swete god maynteigne ¹	
In high ^t maistrie . and ellis were it ^t skath ^t	
I wil with lusty hert ^t . fressh ^t and grene	1173
Say now a song ^t . to gladde yow I wene	
And late vs stynt ^t . of ^t Ernestful matiere	
Herknyth ^t my song ^t . that ^t saith in this manere]	1176

[¹ 1-line gap in the MS, after l. 1171.]

¶ **Le Voy De Chaucere** / [headline]

(161)

G Riseld ^t is dede and eke her pacience	<small>[leaf 177, back]</small>
And boþ at ^t onys yburied in Ytalie	
ffor which I cry in open audience	1179
No wedded man be hardy to assaile	
His wyves pacience in trust to fynde	
Griseldes for in certeyn he shal faile	1182

- O** noble wyues ful of hegh prudence
 lat' none humilite 3oure tonge nayle
 Ne lat' no clerk' haue cause ne diligence 1185
 To write of 3ou a storie of such meruaile
 As of griselde pacient' *and* kynde
 lest' Chychyuache 3ou swelowe in hir entraile 1188
- F**oloweþ ekko þat' holdeþ no silence
 But' euere answeþ at' þe countretale
 Beþ not' bydaffed for our Innocence 1191
 But' sharpely take on 3ou þe gouernaile
 Emprinteþ wel þis lessoñ in 3oure mynde
 ffor Comon profit' sith it' may auaille 1194
- N**E drede hem nouzt' dotñ hem no reuerence 1201
 ffor þouze þine husbonde araied be in maile
 þe arowes of þi crabbed eloquence 1203
 Shal perce his brest *and* eke his aduentale
 In Ialowsie I rede eke þou hym bynde
 And þat' þou shalt make hym couche as doþ a quale 1206
- I**f þou be faire þere folk bene *in* present'
 Shewe þou þi visage and þine apparaile
 If þowe be fowle be free of þi dispence 1209
 To gete þe freendes ay do þi travaile
 Be aye of chere as lizt' as leef on lynde
 And lat' hym care and wepe *and* wryng' *and* waile 1212
- 3**e Arche wiffes stondeþ at' 3our' defence 1195
 Siþ 3e bene stronge as is a grete camaile
 Ne Suffreþ not' þat' man do 3ou offence 1197
 And sclendere wyves feble as in bataile
 Beth egre as a tygre 3ende in Ynde
 Ay Clappeþ as a mylle I 3ou counsaile. 1200

[For the Squire's Prologue of the Petworth MS see the *Man-of-Law-Shipman Link*.]

¶ The prologe of þe fraunkeleyen. [headline of leaf
178, front]

EHY goddis mercy seide oure hoost þoo /
 Alle euel wyues god kepe vs fro 2420
 ffor mony sclciȝtes and sub[t]ilites
 Bene in wommen þat bene euere bisy as bees
 Vs foly men forto desceyue
 ffor from þe soþ euere wil þei weive 2424
 By mony ensamples it proueþ weH
 But doutelees as trewe as eny stele
 I haue a wiff þough she poor be
 But of her tunge a labbyng shrew is she 2428
 And she haþ an hepe of vices moo
 þerof no force lat al such þingges goo
 But wete ȝe what in counsaile be it saide
 Me reweþ sore þat I am to her teide 2432
 ffor and I shuld rekne eue[r]y vice
 Which þat she haþ ywis I were not wis
 And cause whi for it shuld reported be
 And tolde to hure of somme of þis mayne 2436
 Of whom it nedep not to declare
 Siþ wommen kon out such chaffare
 And eke my witte suffiseþ not þerto
 To telle alle þefore my tale is doo 2440

[No break in the MS.]

GROUP F. FRAGMENT VII.

§ 1. THE SQUIRE'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

Sir' ffrankeleyne come ner' if it' *zour* wille be [on leaf 1781]
And say vs a tale for sertys *ze*
Can þeron as moeh̄ as eny man
Nay sir' quod he I wil say as I can 4
With hertely wille for I nyl be rebelle
Azeinst' *zoure* wille . a tale nowe wil I telle
HAue me excused *þif* I sey amys .
My wille is good *and* loo my tale is þis ·/ 8

¶ Here endep þe prologe of þe ffrankeleyn̄

And here bygynneþ þe firannekeleys tale [on leaf 178]

[THE PROEM.]

Thise olde gentile bretoynes in her' daies
 Of dyuers auentures maden laies
 Rymeden in her furst' bretoyne tonge
 Which layes wiþ her instrumentes þei songe 712
 Oþer ellis radden hem for her plesañce [leaf 178, back]
 And oon of hem haue I in remembrance
 Which I shal seie wiþ as good wille as I can/
 But' sirs by cause þat' I am but' a burif' man 716
 At' my bygynnyng'e furst' I 3ou biseche
 Haue me excused of my rwde speche
 I lered neuere rethorike certeyne
 þinge þat' I speke it' mot' be bare *and* pleyne 720
 I slepte neuere on þe mounte of parnaso
 Ne I neuer lered. Marchus Tullius ne Cithero
 Colours of rethorike knewe I none *with-out'* drede
 But' such' coloures as growen in þe mede 724
 Or ellis such' as men dye or peynt'
 Colours of rethorike bene to me queynt'
 Mi spirit' feleþ not' of such' matiere
 But' if 3ou lust' my tale shul 3e here 728
[No break in the MS.]

[THE TALE.]

Ther was a knyght' þat' loued *and* did his peyne 730
 In armorike þat' cleped is breteyne 729
 To seruen a lady in his best' wise
 And mony a laboure & mony a grete emprise 732

He for his lady wrou3t ^t er she were wonne ffor she was oon þe fairest ^t vndere sonne And eke þerto come of so high kynrede þat ^t wel vnneþes durst ^t þis knyght ^t for drede	736
Telle hure his woo his peyne <i>and</i> his distresse But ^t at ^t þe last ^t she for his worþinesse And namely for his meke obeysañce Hap ^t suche a pite kau3t ^t of his penaunce	740
That ^t prively she felle of his acorde To take hym for hure husbond ^t <i>and</i> her lord ^t Of suche lordship as men han ouer her wyves And forto lede þe more in blisse her lyves	744
Of his fre wille he swore hure as a kny3t ^t þat ^t neuere in his wille by day ne ny3t ^t Ne shuld ^t vpon hym take no maistrie Azeinst ^t her wille ne kitñ hure Ialousie	748
But ^t hure obeye and folowe her wille in aH As eny louyere to his lady shaft Saue þat ^t þe name of souereynte That ^t wolde he han for shame of his degre	752
She þonkeþ hym and wiþ ful grete humblesse She seide sir ^t siþ of 3oure gentylnesse 3e profre me to han as large a reyne Ne wolde neuere god betwix vs tweyne	756
As in my gilt ^t were eiþer werre or striff ^t Sir ^t I wil be 3oure owne humble & trewe wiff ^t Haue here my troupe til þat ^t my hert ^t brest ^t Thus bene þei boþ in quiete <i>and</i> in rest ^t	760
ffor oon þinge sires sauffy dar I seie That ^t frendes euerich oþer most ^t obeie 3if þei wil longe holde companye loue wil not ^t bene constreyned be maistrye	764
whan maistrie commep ^t þe god of loue anōn Betep ^t on his wengges and fare-wele he is goñ loue is a þinge as eny spirite free Wommen of kynde desiren liberte	768

[leaf 179]

And nouȝt to be constreyned as a þraht	
And so done men ȝif I þe soþe seie shaft	
Loke who þat is most pacient in loue	
He is at his avantage aboute	772
Paciencie is an hie vertue certeyn	
ffor it venquyssheth as clerkes seyne	
Thingges þat rigoure shulde neuere ateyne	
ffor euery worde men may not chide ne pleyne	776
Lerneþ to suffre or ellis so mote I goñ	
ȝe Shul it lerne wheder ȝe wil or noñ	
ffor in þis world certeyne no wize nys	
þat he ne doþ or seiþ some tyme amys	780
Or oþer siknesse oþer constellacion	
Wyne. woo. or chaunchynge of complexioñ	
Causeþ ful oft to do amys eiper speken	
On euery wronge men may not be a-wreken	784
Aftere þe tyme most be temperaunce	[leaf 179, back]
To euery wize þat can no gouernaunce	
And þefore haþ þis worþi wise knyȝte	
To lyue in ease suffraunce hure bihiȝte	788
And she to hym ful wisely gan to swere	
þat neuere shuld þer be defaute in here	
Here may men seen an humble wif acord	
Thus haþ she take her seruante and her lord	792
Seruante nyl on and lord in mariage	
þan was he boþ in lordship and seruage	
Seruage nay but in lordschip allowe	
Sypens he haþ boþ his lady and his loue	796
His lady certys and his wif also	
The which þat lawe of loue accordeþ þerto	
And whan he was in þis prosperite	
Home wif his wif he goþ to his cuntre	800
Not fer fro Pedmarke þer as his dwelling was	
Where as he lyueþ in blisse and in solas	
Who couthe telle but he had wedded be	
The Ioie þe ease and þe prosperite	804

That is bitwix an husbond and his wiff
 A 3ere and more lasted þis blisful lif.
 Til þat þis knyzt of which I spake of þus
 That of kynrede was cleped Arueragus 808
 Shope hym to goon and dwelle a 3ere or tweyn
 In engelond þat cleped was breteyn ./
 To seche in arnes worship and eke honour
 ffor aȝ hit lust he sette in such labour 812
 And dwelleþ þere þe boke seiþ þus
 Now wil I stint of þis Arueragus
 And speken I wil of dorygen his wiff
 That loueþ her husbonde as his hertes lif 816
 And for his absence wepeþ she *and* sikeþe
 As done þise noble wyues whan hem likeþ .
 She mournep . wakeþ . waileþ . fastep & playnep
 Desire of his presence hure so destreynep 820
 That aȝ þis wide world she sette at nouzt
 [leaf 180]
 Her frendes which þat knewe her hevy þouzt
 In al þat euere þei myzt or may
 þei prechen hur þei tellen hur nyzt *and* day 824
 þat causelees she sleep her self alȝ
 And euery comfort possible in þis cas
 They doon to hure wiþ al her bysynesse
 And al forto make hure late her heuynesse 828
 By processe as 3e knowe wel euerechoñ
 Men may so longe grauen in þe stoñ
 Til some figure þer-Inne emprinted be
 So longe han þei conforted hure þat she 832
 Resceyued haþ by hope and by resoñ
 The emprintyng of hure *constellacioñ*
 Thorgh which here grete sorowe gan aswage
 She may not alway endure in such a rage 836
 And eke arueragus in al þis care
 Haþ sent her *lettres* home in al þis fare
 And þat he wold come hastely a3eiñ
 Oyþer ellis had þis sorowe hure hert sclayñ 840

Her frendes segħ hure hert' gan to slake
 And preiden hure on knees for goddys sake
 To come and to Rome hure in companye
 Away to dryve hure derk fantasie 844
 And fynaly she graunted þat' request'
 ffor wel she seghe it' was for þe best'
 Nowe stode hure castel fast' by þe see
 And oft wiþ hure frendes walked she 848
 Hire to disporte on þe See bank' on hēgħ
 Where as she mony shippe *and* barge segħ
 Seilynge her cours where hem lust' to goo
 But' 3it' was þer a parcelle of her woo . 852
 ffor to hure self ful ofte seide she
 Is þer no shippe of so mony as I see
 wil bringe home my lord' þan wold' ny herte
 Al warisshe of þise bittere peynes smerte . 856
 A-noper tyme þer wil she sitte *and* þenke [leaf 180, back]
 And cast' her yen downward' fro þe brinke
 But' whan she segħ þe grissly rokkes blake
 ffor verrey fere wold hure hert' quake 860
 þat' on her fete she my3t' not' hure sustene
 þan wold she sitte doune on þe grene
 And pitously into þe see she wolde biholde
 And seyn ri3t' þus with soroweful hert' cold' 864
 Eterne god þat' þourgh þi þurueaunce
 Ledest' þe worlde by certeyn gouernaunce
 In ydelnesse as men sayne ye no þinge make
 But' lorde þise grisly feendly rokkes blake 868
 That' semen raþer a foule confusiō
 Of werk' þan eny faire creacioñ
 Of which a parfit' god *and* a stable
 why han 3e wrou3t' þis werk vnresonable 872
 ffor by þis werk' souþe . norþ . eest' & west'
 Ther nis yfostred man ne bridde ne beest'
 It' dop no good to my witte but' anoyeþ
 Se 3e not' lorde how man-kynde it' destroieþ 876

An C. thousand bodies of man-kynde
 Han rokkes slayn al be þei nouzt in mynde
 Which mankynde is so faire part of þi werke
 þat þow it maigest like to þine honde werke 880
 þan semed it 3e had a grete cheerte
 Toward mankynde but how þan may it be
 þat 3e suche menes make it to destroien ./
 Which menes done no good but euer anoyen 884
 I wote wel clerkys wollen seyn as hem lest
 By argument þat al þing is for þe best
 þough I ne can þe causesse forsoþ knowe
 But þilk god þat made wynde to blowe 888
 As kepe my lorde þis is my conclusioñ
 To clerkes lete I al disputacioñ
 But wolde god þat aH þe rokkes blake
 Were sonken into helle for his sake 892
 These rokkes sceen myn hert for fere [leaf 181]
 Thus wold she sayn wiþ mony a pitous tere
 Hire frendes segþ þat [it] was no disport
 To Romen by þe see but discomfort 896
 And shopen for to pleyen somwher ellis
 They leden hure by ryuers and by wellys
 And eke in oþer places delitables
 Thei daunsen and pley atte chesse and tables 900
 So on a day rizt on þe morowe tyde
 Vnto a gardyne þat was þer beside
 In whiche þat þei had made her ordinaunce
 Of vitaille and of oþere purueaunce 904
 They goon and pleien hem al þe longe day
 And þis was on þe sext morowe of may
 Which may had peinted wiþ his soft shoures
 This gardeyn ful of leues and of floures 908
 And wiþ craft of mannys honde so curiously
 Araied had þis gardyne traily
 That neuere nas þer gardyne of such prise
 But 3if it were þe verrey paradyse 912

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

The odour of floures and þe fresshe siȝt'	
Wold haue made eny pensif hert' liȝt'	
That' euere was born̄ but' if to grete siknesse	
Oȝer to grete sorowe helde it' in distresse	916
And aftere dynere gan þei to daunce	918
So ful it' was of bewte wiȝ plesaunce	917
And syngen also but' dirigen song' allone	
And made alway her compleinte <i>and</i> her mone	920
ffor she ne seḡh him in þe daunce goo	
þat' was her husbonde <i>and</i> her loue also	
But' napelees she most' a tyme abide	
And wiȝ good hope lete she her sorowe glide	924
¶ Vpon þis daunce amonges oȝer men	
Daunsed a squier' afore Dorigen	
þat' fressher' was and Iolier of araye	
As to my dome þan is þe monȝe of may	928
He syngēþ and dounseþ passinge eny man	[leaf 181, back]
þat' is or was siȝens þis world' bygan	
þer-wiȝ he was if men shuld hym discriue	
On þe best' faring' man alyue	932
ȝong'. strong' riȝt' vertuous riche and wis	
And wel byloued and holden in grete pris	
And shortely if þe soȝ tellen I shal	
Vnwitting' of þis Dorigen at' aȝ	936
This lusty squyere seruauante to Venus	
Which þat' icleped was aurelius	
Had loued hure best' of eny creature	
Two ȝere and more as was his auenture	940
But' neuere durst' he telle of his greuaunce	
Wiȝ-out' cuppe he dronke al his penaunce	
He was despeired no þing' durst' he saye	
Sauf in his sawe somewhat' wold' he wreye	944
His woo as in generall compleynyng'	
He saide he loued and was byloued no þing'	
Of suche matere made he mony laies	
Songges compleyntes roundettes virrelaies	948

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

How þat' he durst' not' his sorowe telle
 þat' languysshēþ as a fuyre doþ in helle
 And deye he seide most I as did Ekko
 ffor Narsisus þat' durst' not' telle hure woo 952
 In oþere manere þan 3e here me saye
 Ne durst' he not' to hure his woo bywrey
 Saue *peraventure* somtyme at' daunces
 þere 3onge men kepen her obseruauces 956
 It' may wel be he loked on hure face
 In such a wise as man þat' askeþ grace
 But' no þinge wiste she of his entent'
 Napeles it' happed er þei þens went' 960
 Bycause þat' he was hure neighbour
 And was a mon of worship *and* honour
 And had yknowe hym oft' tymes 3ore
 þei fylle in speche more *and* more 964
 Vnto his *purpoos* drowe aurelius [leaf 182]
 And whan he segħ his tyme he saide þus
 Madame quod he by god þat' þis worldē made
 So þat' I wist' it' my3t' 3oure herte glade 968
 I wold þat' day þat' 3oure arueragus
 Went' to þe see þat' I Aurelius
 Had went' þat' I shuld neuere come a3ein
 ffor wel I wote my seruise is in veyñ 972
 My gwerdoñ is but' brestyng of myñ herte
 Madame rewep vpon my peynes smerte
 ffor as wiþ a swerde 3e may me scle or saue
 Here at 3oure fote god wolde I were in graue 976
 I haue as nowē no leisere forto seie
 Haue mercy on me swete or 3e wil do me die
 She gan to loke vpon Aurelius
 Is þis 3oure wille quod she and saye 3e þus 980
 Neuer erst' quod she ne wist' I what' 3e ment'
 But' nowē Aurely I knowe 3oure entent'
 By þilke god þat' 3af me soule *and* liff
 Ne shal I neuere be an vntrewe wiff 984

In worde ne werk as fer as I haue witte
 I wil bene his to whom þat I am knytte
 But aftere þat in pleyn þus seide she 988
 Take þis for fynal answeere as for me 987
 Aurely quod she by hiȝe god aboue
 ȝit wil I graunte ȝou to be ȝoure loue
 Sipþe I see ȝou so pitously compleyne
 Loke what day þat euenlong breteyne 992
 ȝe remeue alle þe Rokkes stoon by stoon
 þat þei lat shippe ne bote none
 I saye whan ȝe han made þise costes so clene
 Of Rokkes þat þer be no stone sene 996
 þan wil I loue ȝou best of eny man
 Haue here my troupe in al þat euere I can
 Is þere noon oþer grace quod he
 No by þat lorde quod she þat made me. 1000
 ffor wel I wote þat shal neuere betide [leaf 182, back]
 Lat such foly out of ȝoure hert glide
 What deynte shuld man haue be his lif
 fforto loue an oþere mannys wiff 1004
 þat haþ hure body whan þat hym likeþ
 Aurelius ful ofte sore sikeþ
 Woo was Aurelius whan he þis herde
 And wiþ a sorowful hert þus answerde 1008
 Madame quod he þis were an impossible
 þan mote I deye a sodeyne deþe horrible
 And wiþ þat worde he turned hym anõn
 Tho come hire oþer frendes mony oñ 1012
 And in the aleis romed vp *and* down
 And no þing wist of þis conclusioun
 But sodeynly bygonne to reuel newe
 Til þat þe briȝte sonne lost his hwe 1016
 ffor þorisonth haþ raft þe sonne his lizt
 This is as moche to say as it was nyȝt
 And home þei gone in Ioie and in solace
 Saue only wrecched Aurelius allas 1020

he to his hous is gone wiþ sorowful herte
 he seiþ he may not from his deþ asterte
 Hym semeþ he feleþ his hert' colde
 Vp to þe heuene his hondys gan he holde 1024
 And on his knees bare he sette hym down
 And in his raving' seide þis Orisoun
 ffor verrey woo out' of his witte he breide
 He nyst' not' what' he spake but' þus he seide 1028
 Wiþ pitous hert' haþ he compleynt' bygoñ
 Vnto þe goddesse and first vnto þe sonne
 He seide Appollo god and *gouernour*
 Of euery planete . herbe . tree *and* flour' 1032
 þat' zeuest' aftere þi declinacioñ
 To eñ of hem his tyme *and* his sesoñ
 And þine harborowe chaungeþ lowe *and* hie
 Lord Phebus cast' þi merciabile ye 1036
 On wrecched Aurely which þat' am but' lorne . [leaf 183]
 loo lord' my lady haþ my deþ sworne
 Wiþ-oute gilt' but' þi benignite
 Vpon my dedly herte haue somme pite 1040
 But' wel I wote lorde phebus if 3ou lest'
 3e may me helpe to haue my lady best'
 Now voucheþ sauf þat' I may 3ou devise
 How þat' I may be hulpe and in what' wise 1044
 3oure blisful sustre lucyna þe Shene
 þat' of the see is cheef goddes *and* quene
 þouze Neptynus haue deite in þe See
 3it' Emperesse abouen hem is she 1048
 3e knowen wel lord' ri3t' as hure desire
 Is to be qwykkened and liztned of 3our' fire
 ffor which she folweþ 3ou fu[1] bisily
 Ri3t' soo þe See desireþ naturelly 1052
 To folowen hure as she þat' is goddesse
 Boþe in þe See and in þe Ryuere more *and* lesse
 Wherfore lorde phebus þis is my requeste
 Do þis myracle or do myn herte to-brest' 1056

That nowe next at þis opposicioñ
 Whiche in þe signe shal be of þe lyoñ
 As preie hure so grete a floode to brynge
 þat .v. fathme at þe leest it ouere sprynge 1060
 þe hiest rokke in harmorike Bretaine
 And lat þis flode endure 3eres tweyne
 Than certis to my lady may I saye
 Holdeþ 3oure heeste þe rokkes ben awaye 1064
 Lord Phebus do þis miracle for me
 Preie hure she goo no faster cours þan 3e
 I seie þowe þus preie 3oure sustre þat she go .
 No fastere cours þan 3e þise 3eres two 1068
 þan shal she be euere at þe ful alway
 And springe floode lasteþ boþ nyzt *and* day
 And but she vouche-sauf in such manere
 To graunte me my lady souereyn dere 1072
 Preie hure to synken euery rokke adoun
 [leaf 183, back]
 Into hure owne derkt regioun
 Vndere þe grounde þer Pluto dwelleþ Inne
 Oþere neuere more shal I my lady wynne 1076
 Thi temple in Delphos wil I barefote seke
 Lorde Phebus biholde 3e þe teeres of my cheke
 And of my peyne haue compassioun
 And wiþ þat worde in swoun he fille adoun . 1080
 And longe tyme he lay in a traunce
 his broþer which þat knewe of his penaunce
 Vp kauzt hym and to bed hym brouzt
 Despeired in his torment *and* his þouzt 1084
 Loo I þis wooful creature lye
 May chese whedere to lyve or dye
 ¶ Arueragus wiþ hool and grete honour
 As he [that] was of chyualrie þe floure 1088
 Is comen home and oþer worþi men
 O blisful art þou Doregen
 þat hast þine lusty husbond in þine armes
 þat fresshe knyght þat worþi man of armes 1092

þat' loueþ þe as his owne hertys lif
 No þing' lest' he to be ymagynatiff
 þouze eny wizt' had spoke while he was oute
 To hure of loue he made þerof no doute 1096
 He nouzt' entendeþ to no such̄ matere
 But' daunseþ . Iusteþ . and makeþ good chere
 And þus in Ioye and blisse I lat' hem dwelle
 And of þe swete Aurelius ¹ wil I telle [*first, Aruelius, in the MS.*]
 In langour and in furious torment' þus
 Two 3ere and more lay wrecched aurelius .
 Or eny foote on erþe he myzte goñ
 No comfort' in þis tyme nad he noñ 1104
 Sauf of his broþere which þat was a clerke
 he knewe of aH þis woo and al þis werke
 ffor to noñ oþer creature certeyñ
 Of þis matere ne durste he no worde seyn 1108
 Vnderē his brest' he bere it' more secree [*leaf 184*]
 Than euere did phamphilus for galathe
 His brest' was hoole wiþ-uten for to sene
 But' in his herte was ay þe arowe kene 1112
 And wel to knowe þat' afore Sanure
 In Surgery ful perilous is þe cure
 But' men myzt' not' touche þe arowe þouze he come þerby
 His broþer wepeþ and weilleth priuely 1116
 Til at' þe last' hym felle in remembrañce
 That' whiles he was at' orliañce in france
 As 3onge clerkes þat' bene likerous
 To reden artes þat' bene curious 1120
 Seken in euery halke and euery herne
 Particulere sciences forto lerne
 He him remembreþ vpon a day
 At' Orliaunce in stody a boke he saie 1124
 Of magike naturel which̄ his felawe
 þat' was þat' tyme a bachilere of lawe
 Al were he þere to lerne anoþer craft'
 And priuely vpon his desk' he laft' 1128

- This boke which speke mochel of operaciõs
 Touchinge þe *eight and twenty*¹ manciõs [1 MS xxviiij]
- þat' longen to þe mone and such' foly
 As in our daies nys nat' worþ a flye 1132
 ffor holy church e seip in *our* bileue
 Ne suffreþ noon illusion vs to greue
 And whan þis booke was in remembraunce
 Anone for ioy he gan to daunce 1136
 And to hym self saide *prively*
 My broþer shal be warisshed hastely
 ffor I am siker þat' þer bene sciencis
 By which' men make dyuers apperences 1140
 whiche as þise subtile tregetours pleien
 ffor oft' at' feestes haue I herde seyen
 That' tregetours wiþ-in an halle large
 Han maden come water' in a barge. 1144
 And in the halle rowe vp and doune [leaf 184, back]
 Somtyme haþ semed [come] a grete lyoun
 [And somtyme flours spryng as in a mede [Add. MS 5140,
 leaf 190, back]]
 Somtyme a vyne/ and grapes whyt and reede] 1148
 Somtyme a castel al of lyme *and* stoñ
 And whan hen liked voide it' anoñ
 Thus semed it' to euery mannys sizt'
 Now þan conclude I þus if þat' I myzt'
 At' Orliaunce some olde felawe finde 1152
 þat' had þe moons manciõs in mynde
 Oiþer magike naturel aboue
 He shuld wel make my broþer han his loue 1156
 ffor wiþ apperens a man may make
 To mannys sizt' þat' alle þe Rokkes blake
 Of Bretoyne were ywent' euerechoñ
 And þat' shippes by þe brinkes myzt' *commen and* goñ 1160
 And in such' forme enduren a 3ere or twoo
 þan were my broþer warsshed of his woo
 þan moste she nedis knowe hure byhest'
 Or ellis he shal shamen hure at' þe lest' 1164

- What' shuld' I make a lenger tale of þis
 Vnto his broþer bedde *commen* he is
 And suche *comforte* he ȝaue hym forto goñ
 To orliaunce þat' he vpstert' anoñ 1168
 And on his way forþward' is he fare
 In hope to bene ylyssed of his care
 Whan þei were come almost' to þat' cite
 But' if it' were a two forlonge or þree 1172
 A ȝonge clerkt' romyng' by hemself þei mette
 Whiche þat' in latyn thriftely hym grette
 And aftere þat' he seide a wonder' þinge
 I knowe quod he þe cause of ȝoure *commynge* 1176
 And er þei forþer eny foote went'
 He tolde hem aH þat' was in her entent'
 þis bretoyne clerke hym asked of flawes
 þe whiche þat' he had knowe in olde daies 1180
 And he answered hym þat' þei dede were
 ffor whiche he wept' ful mony a tere
 Doune of' his hors Aurelius liȝt' anōn [leaf 185v]
 And forþ wiþ þis Magicien is he gōn 1184
 Home to his hous and made hem wel at' eese
 Ham lackeþ no vitaile þat' hem myȝt' plesē
 So wel an araied hous as ther was oñ
 Aurelius in his lif ne segñ none 1188
 He shewed hem ere [þei] went' to soperē
 fforestis and parkes ful of wilde dere
 [Ther sauhe he hertis / with̄ ther hornys hihe [Addit. MS 5140,
 leaf 191]
 The grettest / that evir wer seyne *with* eye 1192
 He sauhe of hem an hundred / slayne wyth houndes
 And som with̄ arwes / bleede of bytter woundes
 He sauhe whanne wyde were the wylde deer
 The fauconers vpon a fayr ryver] 1196
 And howe facouns han þe herowne selayñ
 þat' segñ he knyghtes iusten in a playñ
 And aftere þis he did hym such̄ plesaznce
 þat' he hym shewed his lady in a daunce 1200

- On which him self daused as *hym þouzt*
 And whan þis maistere þat þis magike wrouzt
 Segh it was tyme and clapped his hondys twoo
 A fare wele al oure reuel is ydoo 1204
 But 3it remeue þei neuere out of þis hous
 whiles þei seghe al þis sizt merveilous
 But in his stody þere as his bokes be
 þei sitten stille and no wizt but þei þre 1208
 To him þis maastere called þan a sqwiere
 And seide him þus is it redy oure sopere
 Almost an houre it is I vndertake
 Siþens I 3ou bad oure sopere to make 1212
 Whan þat þise worþi men wenten *with* me
 Vnto my stody þer as my bokes be
 Sir quod þis squiere whan it likeþ 3ou .
 It is al redy þou3e 3e wiH rizt nowe 1216
 Go we þan soupe quod he & for þe best
 þise Amerous folk somtyme mote haue rest
 And after sopere fille þei in trete
 What somme shulde þis maisters guerdon be 1220
 To rem[u]e alle þe Rokkes of breteyne
 And eke from geroñ to þe mouþe of Seyn
 He made it straunge & swore so god *hym* saue
 Lasse þan a þousand pounde he nolde not haue 1224
 Ne gladly for þat somme he nold not goon [leaf 185, back]
 Aurelius wiþ blisful hert anon
 Answered þus . fie on a thousand pounde
 This wide world þat men seyn is rounde 1228
 þat wold I 3eue if I were lord of it
 This bargayn is ful drive for we bene knyht
 3e shullen be paide trewly be my troupe
 But lokeþ nowe for no negligence ne sloupe 1232
 3e tary vs here no lenger þan to morowe
 Nay quod this clerke haue here my troupe to borowe
 To bedde is gone Aurelius whan *hym* list
 And welnygh al þat nyzt he had his rest 1236

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þat ^t for his laboure and for his hope of blisse His wooful herte of penaunce had a lisse Vpon þis morowe whan þat ^t it ^t was day To breteigne toke þei þe right ^t way	1240
Aurelius and þis magicien be side And bene descended <i>per</i> þei willen abide And þis was as þe bokes me remembre þe colde frosty seson of decembre	1244
Phebus wexe olde and hwed like latoñ That ^t in his hote declinaciõn Shoone as þe byrned cold ^t <i>with</i> stremes briȝt ^t But ^t nowe in scorpion a-doune he liȝt ^t	1248
Where as he shone ful pale I dar wel seyn þe bitter ^t frostes <i>with</i> þe selete <i>and</i> reyn Destroied haþ þe grene in euery ȝerde Ianus sitte by þe fuyr <i>with</i> double berde	1252
And drynkeþ of his bugle horn þe wyne Byforn hym stant ^t þe brawne of þe tusked swyne And a nowelþ criep ^t euery lusty man Aurelius in al þat ^t euere he can .	1256
Doth to his maister ^t chere <i>and</i> reuerence And preieþ him to doñ his diligence To bringgen him out ^t of his peynes smerte Oipere wiþ a swerde þat ^t he wold sclitte his herte	1260
That ^t subtile clerk ^t which ^t þat ^t rouþe had of þis man <small>[leaf 186]</small> þat ^t nyght ^t and day he him spedde þat ^t he ne lan To waite a tyme of his conclusiõn This to say to make illusion	1264
I ne can no termes of Astrologie By whiche an apparence of Iogelrie þat ^t she and euery wiȝt ^t shuld wene <i>and</i> seie That ^t of Breteyn þe rokkes bene away	1268
Oipere ellis þei were sonken vnder grounde So at ^t þe last ^t whan he his tyme founde To make his iapes and his wrecchednesse Of which ^t a supersticious cursednesse	1272

His tables colletanes forþ he brouzt'	
fful wel corrected for þer lacked nouzt	
Ne his collectis ne his expans 3eres	
Ne his rotes ne his oþer geres	1276
As bene his Centrys <i>and</i> his argumentz	
And his <i>proporcions</i> conuenientz	
ffor his equaciõns and euery þinge	
And by his viiiij spere in his wirkinge	1280
He knewe howe fer alnaþe was yshoue	
ffrom þe hede of þilk' fixe ariseþ aboue	
þat' in þe <i>ninthe</i> ¹ spere considered is	[¹ MS ix]
fful subtilly he cal[cu]leþ al þis /	1284
And whan he had founde his first' manciõn	
He knewe þe remynaunte by <i>proporeciõn</i>	
And knewe þe arising' of þe mone weþ	
And in whoos face and terme euery deþ	1288
And knewe ful wel þe monys manciõn	
Accordant' to his operaciõn	
And knewe also his oþer <i>obseruaunces</i>	
ffor such̄ illusions and such̄ meschaunces	1292
As heþen folk' vsed þilk' daies	
ffor which̄ no lenger maked he delaies	
But' þorgh̄ his magike for a weke or tway	
It' semed as al the Rockes were away	1296
Aurelius which̄ þat' despeired is	[leaf 186, back]
whedere he shal han his loue or fare amys	
Awaiteþ nyzt' and day of þis myracle	
And whan he knewe þer was noñ obstacle	1300
þat' voiden were þise rokkes euerchoñ	
Doune to þis maisters fete he fille anoñ	
And seide I woful wreche Aurelius	
Thonke 3ou lorde and lady myne Venus	1304
That' me han hulpe from my carys cold'	
And to þe temple forþ his way haþ hold'	
Where he knewe he shuld' þis lady se	
And whan he segh̄ his tyme anon rízt' he	1308

With dredful herte and humble chere
 Salwed haþ his souereyn lady dere
 My riȝtful lady quod þis wooful man .
 Whom I most drede and loue as I best can . 1312
 And loþest were of al þis world displese
 Nere it þat I for ȝou haue suche dissesse
 That I most dye here at ȝoure fote anoñ
 ¶ But not wolde I telle howe me is woo bygoñ 1316
 But certes eiþer most I deye or pleien .
 ȝe slee me giltelees for verrey peyne
 But of my deth þouȝe ye haue no rouþe
 Avise ȝou er þat ȝe lese ȝoure trouþe 1320
 Repentþ ȝou for þilke god aboute
 Er ȝe me sleen by cause þat I ȝou loue
 ffor madame wel ȝe wote þat ȝe han hiȝt
 Not þat I chalence eny þing of riȝt 1324
 Of ȝou souereyn lady but ȝour grace
 But in a gardyne ȝonde in such a place
 ȝe wote riȝt wel þat ȝe bihote me
 And in myn honde ȝoure trouþe bliȝt ȝe 1328
 To loue me best god wote ȝe saide so
 Al be þat I vnworþi am þerto .
 Madame I seie it for þe honure of ȝou .
 More þan to saue myn hertes lif riȝt now . 1332
 I haue done as ȝe comaunded me [leaf 187]
 And if ȝe vouchesauf ȝe may go see
 And as ȝou lust haueþ ȝoure bihest in mynde
 ffor qwikke or dede riȝt þus ȝe shullen me finde 1336
 In ȝou lif aȝ to do me lyve or deye
 But wel I woote þe rockes bene aweye
 He toke his leue and she astonyed stode
 In al her face þer nas on drope of blood 1340
 She wende neuere han commen in such a trappe
 Allas quod she þat this euere shuld happe
 ffor wende I neuere by possibilite
 þat such a meschaunce shuld euere be 1344

- It is azeinst' þe processe of nature ¹ [¹ These lines are trans-
posed in the MS.]
 And home she goþ a soriful creature ¹
 ffor verrey fere vnneþes may she goo /
 She wepeþ and weilleþ a day or twoo 1348
 And swowneþ þat' it' rauthe was to see
 But' whi it' was to no wizt' tolde she
 ffor out' of toune was goon Arueragus
 But' to hure self she seide and speke þus. 1352
 In hure compleynte as 3e shul aftere here
 With face pale *and* wiþ soriful chere
 Allas quod she on þe fortune I playn
 þat' vnware hast' wrapped me in þi chayn 1356
 ffor which þe eskape wote I. no socour'
 Saue only deþ eiper dishonour'
 Oon of þise two bihoueth me to chese
 But' napelees 3it' had I leuer' lese 1360
 My lif þan of my body to haue a shame
 Eiper knowe my self fals eiper lese my name
 And wiþ my deþ I may be quytte I-wis
 Han þer nat' mony a wif er þis 1364
 And mony a maiden slayn her self allas
 Raþer þan wiþ her bodies done trespas
 And certes loo þise stories beren witnesse
 Whan xxx.^{ti} tirauntz ful of cursednesse. 1368
 Had slayn Phidon in Athenes at' þe lest' [leaf 187, back]
 They commaunded his dou3ters to arest'
 And bringgen [hem] byforn hym in despit
 Al naked to fulfille her foule delite 1372
 And in her faders bloode þei made hem daunce
 Vppon þe pauement' god 3eue hem meschaunce
 ffor which þise wooful maidens ful of drede
 Raiþer þan þei wolde lese her maidenhede 1376
 þei prively bene sterte into a welle
 And dreinte hem self as þe bokes telle
 Thei of mesue lete enquere and seke
 Of lacedemye .i. maidens eke 1380

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

On which þei wolden doñ her lecherie	
But was þer none of al þat companye	
þat she nas slayn and wiþ a glad entent	
Chese þe rapere to die þan to assent	1384
To bene enpressed of her maidenhede	
Whi shuld I þan to dye bene in drede	
Lo eke þe tiraunte Austoclidis	
þat loued a maiden which hizt Symphalides	1388
Whan þat hure fadere slayn was on a nyzt	
Vnto Dianas temple goþ she anoñ rizt	
And hent þe ymage wiþ hure armes twoo /	
ffrom which ymage she nolde neuer goo	1392
No wizt myzt fro hit hure handis race	
Til she was slayn in þe self place	
Nowe siþens þat maidens had such despit	
To bene defouled wiþ mannys foule delite	1396
Wel ouzte a wiff rapere hure self slee	
þan ben defouled as þenkeþ me	
What shal I sayn of hasdrubaldys wif	
þat at Cartage biraftt herself hur liff	1400
ffor whan she segh þat Romayns wan þe town	
She toke her chuldren alle and sweptt adoun	
Into þe fuyre and ches rather to dye	
þan eny Romayn did hure vilenye	1404
Hap nott lucrez ysclayn hure self allas	[leaf 188]
At Rome þere she oppressed was	
Of Tarquyne for hure þouzt it was a shame	
To live whan þat she had lostt her name	1408
The .viij. maidens of Melesie also /	
Han slayn hem self for drede <i>and</i> woo /	
Raper þan folk of gaule shuld hem oppresse	
Moo þan a M ^l stories as I gesse	1412
Coupe I nowe telle as touchingt þis matere	
Whan habradas was slayn his wif so dere	
Her self sclowe and lete her blood to glide	
In Habradas woundes brood <i>and</i> wide	1416

- And saide my·body at þe leeste waye
 Ther shal no wizt defoile if þat I may
 What shuld I moo ensamples herof sayn
 Sipeþ þat so mony han hem self selayn 1420
 Wel raþer þan þei wolde defowled be
 I wil conclude what is best for me
 [Tho sleen my self. than be defouled thus [MS Reg. 17 D 15,
 I wilbe trewe. vnto Arueragus] leaf 188] 1424
 Eipeþ raþer slee my self in some manere
 As did Demyonycions douztere dere
 By cause þat she nolde defoiled be
 O Cedasus it is ful grete pite 1428
 To reden how þi douzters deiden allas
 þat sclowe hem self for suche manere cas
 As grete appetit was it or more
 The theban maiden þat for Nichasore 1432
 [Hir selfen slough right for suche a maner woo [MS Reg. 17 D 15,
 Another theban mayden dide right so] leaf 188]
 Hure had wedded and sore dressed. [spuriou:]
 For oon of Masidoigne had hure oppressed. 1435
 What shal I seyn of Nicharatyfs wiff
 þat for such caas biraft her self her lif
 Howe trewe was eke to Alcebiades
 His loue þat forto dyen [raþer] ches 1440
 þan forto suffre his body vmbreided be
 Loo which a wif was alcesteyn quod she
 What Emore of good Penoloþe
 Alle-Grece knoweþ of her chaastite 1444
 Parde of leodomya is written þus [leaf 188, back]
 That whan a Troy was selayn protheselayus
 No lenger nold she lyf aftere his day
 þe same of noble porcia telle I maye 1448
 Wip-outen brutus quod she not lyve
 To whom [s]he had alhole hure herte zeue
 The parfit wifhode of Archemesie
 Honoured is þorgh alle þe barberye 1452

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

O teuta quene in þi wisly chastite
 To alle wives may þou a mytour be
 [. . . no gap in the MS: these lines
 . . . known only in Ellesmere MS.] 1456

Thus playned Dorigen a day or tweye.
 Purposinge euere þat she wolde deye
 But napeles vpon þe þred nyȝt
 Home came Arueragus þe worthi knyȝt 1460

And asked hure whi þat she wepte so sore
 And she gan wepen euere þe lenger more
 Allas quod she þat euere was I borne
 Thus haue I seide quod she þus haue I sworū 1464

I tolde hym alle as ȝe han herde bifore
 It nedep not rehersen it here-of no more.
 This husbonde wiȝ glad chere in sondry wise
 Answerde and seide as I shal [ȝou] devise 1468

Is þer ouȝt ellis Dorigen but þis
 Nay nay quod she god helpe me so as wisse
 þis is to moche if it were goddes wille
 ȝe wiff quod he lat selepe þat is stille 1472

It may be wel ȝit peraventure to saye
 ȝe shullen ȝoure troupe holden be my fay
 ffor god so wisly helpe me
 I had wel leuere ystikked forto be 1476

ffor verrey loue which I to ȝou haue
 But ȝif ȝe shuldȝ ȝoure trouthe Saue
 Troupe is þe hiest þing þat man may kepe
 But wiȝ þat word he brast anōn to wepe 1480

And seide I ȝou forbede in peyn of deth
 That neuer whiles ȝou lastep lif & breth
 To no wiȝt telle of þis cure [leaf 189]

As I may I most my lif endure 1484

Ne make no countenaunce of heynesse
 þat folk of ȝou may deme harme or gesse
 And forþ he clepeþ a sqwiere and a mayde
 God forþ anoñ wiȝ Dorigen he saide 1488

And bringeþ hure to such a place anoñ	
Thei toke her leue and on her way þei goñ	
But þei ne wiste whi she thider went	
He nolde no wizt' telle hure entent'	1492
[.]	[<i>These lines known only</i>
.	<i>in the Ellesmere MS.</i>]
.	
.	1496
.	
. <i>no gap in the MS.</i>]	
This Sqwier which þat' hizt' Aurelius	
On dorigen which þat' was so amerous	1500
Of auenture happed hure to mete	
Amydde þe toune rizt in þe qwikke strete	
As she was boune to goo þe way forþ rizt'	
Toward the gardeyn þer as she had hizt'	1504
And he was to þe gardeyn ward' also	
ffor wel he aspied whan she wolde goo	
Out' of her hous to eny manere place	
But þus þei mette by auenture or grace	1508
And he salueþ her wiþ glad entent'	
And axed of hure whidere þat' she went'	
And she answerd' half as she were madde	
Vnto þe Gardyne as myn husbond' badde	1512
My troupe forto hold' allas allas	
Aurelius gan wondere of þis cas.	
And in his hert' had grete compassion	
Of hure and of her lamentacioñ	1516
And of Arueragus þe worþi knyzt'	
þat' bad hure holde al þat' she hight'	
So lope he was hys wiff sholde breke her troupe	
And in his hert' he cast' of þis grete routhe	1520
Consideringe þe best' on euery side	
þat' from his lust' hym were better abide	
Than done so high a cherles wrecchednesse	
Azeinst' fraunches and al gentilnesse	1524

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor which in fewe wordes seide he þus	[leaf 189, back]
Madame seip to 3oure lorde Arueragus .	
þat' siþen I se his grete gentilnesse	
To 3ou and eke I see wel 3oure distresse	1528
If 3e by me schulde breke 3oure troupe	1530
Certes me þenkeþ it' were grete roupe	[spurious 1529]
I haue wel leuer' euere to suffre woo	
þan I departe þe loue ytwix 3ou twoo	1532
I 3ou relese madame into 3oure honde	
Quite euery surement' and euery bonde	
That' 3e han made to me as here biforñ	
¶ Siþens þilk' tyme þat' 3e were borñ	1536
My troupe I pliz't I shal 3ou neuer' repreef' . . /	
Of no biheest' and here I take my leue	
As of þe trewest' & þe beste wiff	
þat' euere 3it' I knewe in al my liff	1540
And euery wiz't be ware of hure biheest'	
On Dorygen remembreþ at' þe leste	
Thus can a squyere doñ a gentile dede	
As wel as can a knyzt' wip-oute drede	1544
She þonked hym vpon hure knees al bare	
And home vnto hure husbonde is she fare	
And tolde hym alle as 3e han herd' me seide	
And be 3e siker he was ful wel apaide	1548
It' were impossible to write	
What' nedep' lenger in þis cas endite	
¶ Arueragus and Dorigen his wiff'	
In souereyn blisse leden forþ her lif	1552
Neuer aftere was þer anger hem bitwene	
He Shershed hure as þouze she were a quene	
And she was to hym trewe for euermore	
Of þise two folk' 3e gete of me no more	1556
¶ Aurelius þat' his cost' hap forlorñ	
Curseþ þe tyme þat' euere he was borñ	
Allas quod he alas þat' I bihizt'	
Of pured gold' a thousand' ponde of wiz't	1560

Vnto þis philosople how shal I doo	[leaf 190]
I se no more but þat I am fordoo	
Mine heritage most I selle	
And bene a begger here I may not dwelle	1564
And shamen al my kynrede in þis place	
But I of him may gete better grace	
But napelees I wil of hym assaie	
At certeyn dayes 3ere by 3ere to paie	1568
And þonke him of his grete curtesie	
My troupe wil I kepe I wil not lie	
Wiþ herte sore he goþ vnto his cofre	
And brou3te golde vnto þis philysophre	1572
þe value of .v. C. ponde I gesse	
And hym bisecheþ of his gentilnesse	
To graunte hym daies of þe remenaunte	
And saide maistere I dar wel make auaunte	1576
I failed neuere of my troupe 3it	
ffor sikerly my dette shal be quytt	
Towards 3ou how þat euere I fare	
To goon a begger in my kirtel bare	1580
But wolde 3e vouche sauf vpon swerte	
Two 3ere or þre forto respite me	
þan were I welle for ellis mote I selle	
¶ Myn heritage þer nys no more to telle	1584
This Philisophre soberly answerde	
And seide þus whan he þis word herde	
Haue I not holde conaunte vnto þe	
3is certes wel and trewly quod he	1588
hast þou not had þi lady as þe likeþ	
No no quod he and sorily he sikeþ	
What was þe cause telle me 3if þou can	
Aurelius his tale anoñ bygan	1592
And tolde hym alle as 3e han herd bifore	
It nedep not to rehercen it no more	
He saide Arueragus of gentilnesse	
Had leuere dey in sorowe and distresse	1596

Than his wif were of hure trowþe fals [leaf 190, back]
 The sorowe of dorigen he tolde hym als
 Howe loþe hire was to be a wicked wif
 And þat she leuere þat day lost hure liff 1600
 And þat hure trouþe she swore þourgh Innocence
 She neuere erst herde speke of apparence
 That made me han of hure so grete pite
 And riȝt as frely as he sent hire me 1604
 As freely sent I hire to hym aȝein
 This is alle and some þer nys no more to seyñ
 This Philisophre answerd leue broþer
 Euerich of ȝou did gentilich til oþer 1608
 Thou art a squyere and he a knyȝt
 But god forbede for his blisful myȝt
 But if a clerk couþe do a gentile dede
 As wel as eny of ȝou it is no drede 1612
 Sir I relece þe þi þousand ponde
 As þow riȝt nowe were copen out of þe grounde
 Ne neuere er nowe haddest þou knowe me
 ffor sir I nyl not take a peny of þe 1616
 ffor al my craft and my travaile
 þow hast ypaied wel for my vitaile
 It is ynowe and fare wele & haue good day
 And toke his hors and forþ he goþ his way 1620
 ¶ Lordingges þis question wil I aske nowe
 Which was þe most free as þenkeþ ȝou
 Nowe telleþ me er þat I forþer wende
 I Can no more my tale is at an ende 1624
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe ffrankleyn his tale

GROUP G. FRAGMENT VIII.

§ 1. THE SECOND NUN'S TALE.

PETWORTH MS.

[*THE PROEM.*]

[*on leaf 190, back*]

[*No breaks between the stanzas in the MS.*]

¶ And here byginneþ þ^e prologe of ij. nonne

(1)

T he mynystere and þe norice vnto vices	1
Which þat ^t men clepen in engliss ^h ydelnesse	
The porter of þe gate is of delices	
To eschewe and by her contrary hure oppresse	4
þat ^t is to sayn by leeful bysynesse	
Wel ouz ^t we to doñ our entent ^t	
Lest ^t þat ^t þe feend ^t þorgh ^h ydelnesse vs shent ^t	[leaf 191] 7

(2)

For he þat ^t wiþ his þousande cordes sclize	8
Continuelly vs waiteþ to be-clappe	
Whan he may man in ydelnesse aspie	
He can so liztly cacche him in his trappe	11
Til þat ^t a man be hent ^t riz ^t by þe lappe	
He nys nat ^t ware þe fende hap hym on hond ^t	
wel ouz ^t vs worch ^h and ydelnesse wiþstond ^t	14

(3)

And þouze men dradden neuere forto deye	15
zit ^t seen men wel by resoun doutelees	
That ^t ydelnesse is roten scloggardye	
Of whiche þer neuere commeth non encrees	18
And siþens þat ^t sclouth ^h hure holdeþ in a lees	
Only to selepe and forto ete and drinke	
And to devouren alle þat ^t oþere swynke	21

(4)

And forto putten vs from such̄ ydelnesse	22
That' cause is of þe grete confusiōn	
I haue here done my feipful bysynesse	
Aftere þe legende in translaciōn	25
Riȝt' of þi glorious lif <i>and</i> passiōn	
Thow wiȝ þi garlond' wrouȝt' of rooses <i>and</i> lilie	
The mene I maiden and marter' seint' Cicile	28

(5)

And þou þat' floure of virgyne art' alle	29
Of whom þat' Barnard' lust' so wel to write	
To þe at' my bygynnyng' furst' I calle	
Thou comforte of vs wrecches do me endite	32
þine maidens deȝ þat' was þorgh̄ þi merite	
þe <i>eternal</i> lif and of þe feende victorie	
Certes men may aftere reden <i>in</i> his storie	35

(6)

Thow maiden <i>and</i> modere douȝter' of þ' sone	36
Thow welle of mercy synful soules cure	
In whom þat' god for bounte chees to wone ¹	[¹ wone <i>later</i>]
Thowe humble and hegh̄ ouere euery creature	39
Thou nobledest' so ferre oure nature	
That' no desdeyn þe maker had of kynde	
His sone in blood and fless̄h to cloȝ <i>and</i> wynde	42

(7)

Wiȝ-Inne þe cloystere blisful of þi sidys	[leaf 191, back] 43
Toke mannys shappe þe eterne loue <i>and</i> pees	
þat' of þe trynie compas lorde and gide es	
Whom erȝe and see and heuene wiȝ out' relees	46
Ay heryen and þou virgyne wemlees	
Bare of þi body and dwellest' maiden pure	
þe creatour of euery creature	49

(8)

Assembled is in þe magnificence 50
 Wiþ mercy goodnesse *and* suchþ pite
 That þou arte þe sonne of excellence
 Nouzt only helpest hem þat preien þe 53
 But oftetyme of þi benignyte
 iful frely er þat men þine helpe biseche
 þow goost byforn and art her lyues leche 56

(9)

Now helpe þou meke and blisful faire maide 57
 Me flemed wrech in þis deserte of galle
 Thenk on þe womman Canane þat saide
 þat whelpes eten somme of þe crommes alle 60
 þat from her lordis table bene yfalle
 And þouze þat I þe vnworþi sone of Eue
 Be sinful 3it accepte my bileue 63

(10)

And for þat feiþ is dede wiþ-out werkes 64
 So for to worchen zeue me witte *and* space
 þat I be quytte from place þat most derk es
 O þou þat art so faire and so ful of grace 67
 Be myne aduocate in so high a place
 Ther as wiþ-out ende is songe Osanna
 þou cristes moder and douzter of Anna 70

(11)

And of þi list my soule in prison list 71
 þat troubled is by þe contagioñ
 Of my body and also by þe wizt
 Of erþly lust and fals affection 74
 O heuene o. refute .o saluacioñ
 Of hem þat bene in sorowe *and* in distresse
 Nowe helpe for to my werk I wil me dresse 77

(12)

3it prey I 3ou þat' reden þat' I write	78
fforyeueþ me þat' I doo no diligence	[leaf 192]
þis ilk storie subtely to endite	
ffor boþ haue I þe wordys <i>and</i> þe sentence	81
Of hem þat' at' sey[n]tes reuerence	
þe storie wroot' and folowen her legende	
And prei 3ou þat' 3e wil my werk amende	84

(13) [*THE TALE.*]

First' wolde I 3ou þe name of seint' Cicile	85
Expoune as men in her stories see	
It' is to saye in engelisshe heuenes lilie	
ffor pure chaastnesse of virginite	88
Oyþer for she witnessse had of honeste	
Of grene of consciens <i>and</i> of good fame	
The swote sauoure lilie was hure name	91

(14)

Oyþere Cicile is to say þe way to blynde	92
ffor she ensample was by good techinge	
Or ellis Cicile as I writen fynde	
Is ioyned by a manere conioynynge	95
Of heuene and lya <i>and</i> hier in figuryng	
þe heuene is sette for þou3t' of holynesse	
And lya for hure lastinge bisynesse	98

(15)

Cicile maye eke be seide <i>in</i> þis manere	99
Wantyng' of blyndenesse for hure grete lizt'	
Of sapience and of her thewes clere	
Oyþer ellis loo þis maidens name brizt'	102
Of heuene <i>and</i> leos <i>commeþ</i> for which by rizt'	
Men my3t' þe heuene of puple hure calle	
Ensample of good and wise werkes alle	105

(16)

For leos puple in englissh is to say	106
And riȝt ^t as men may in þe heuen see	
The sonne and mone <i>and</i> þe sterres euery way	
Riȝt so [men] goostly in þis maiden fre	109
Seen þe feiþ of magnificence	
And eke of helpe and of sapience	
And sondry werkes briȝt ^t of excellence	112

(17)

And riȝt ^t as þise philisophres write	113
þat ^t heuene is swift ^t rounde <i>and</i> brennynge	
Riȝt ^t so was faire Cicile þe white	[leaf 192, back]
fful swift ^t and bisy euere in werkinge	116
And rounde and hool in good perseuerynge	
And brenne euere in charite liȝt ^t	
Now haue I declared ȝou what ^t she hiȝt ^t	119

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe / & here bygynneþ þ^e.ij nonnes tale

(18)

T his maiden briȝt ^t Cicile as hure lif saiþ ¶ þe tale ./	
was comen of Romaynes <i>and</i> of noble kynde	
And so forþe fostred vp in þe faip	
Of <i>criste</i> and bare hys gospel in her mynde	123
She neuere sesed as I.writen fynde	
Of hure preiere and god to loue and drede	
Bisechinge hym to kepe her maidenhede	126

(19)

And whan þis maiden shuld ^t vnto a man	127
ywedded be þat ^t was ful ȝenge of age	
That ^t ycleped was valirian	
And þe day was comen of hure mariage	130
She fille deuoute and humble in her corage	
Vndere hure Robe of gold ^t þat ^t sat ^t ful faire	
And next ^t hure fless ^h yclad was in an haire	133

(20)

And while þe Orgels maden melodie	134
To god allone þus in hert' songe she	
O lorde my saule <i>and</i> eke my body gie	
Vnwemmed lest' þat' I confounded be	137
And for his loue þat' dyed on a tree	
Euery secoude or <i>thridde</i> ¹ day she fast'	[¹ MS. iij.]
Ay bidynge in here orisons ful fast'	140

(21)

The nyght' come and to bed she most' gooñ	141
Wiþ hure husbonde as aften is þe manere	
And priuely she seide anōn	
O swete and welbiloued spouse dere	144
þer is a counsaile <i>and</i> 3e wold' it' here	
Which þat' ri3t' fayn I wolde vnto 3ou seien	
So þat' 3e me assured it' nou3t' bywreien	147

(22)

Valeryan gan fast' vnto hure swere	148
þat' for no caas ne þinge þat' my3t' be	
He shold for no þinge neuere bewrien here	[leaf 193]
And þan at' arst' þus to hym seide she	151
I haue an aungeH which þat' loueþ me	
þat' wiþ grete loue whedere I wake or slepe	
Is redy ay my body forto kepe	154

(23)

And 3if þat' 3e may felen out' of drede	155
þat' 3e wil 3ou gouerne no þinge amys	
He wil 3ou saue and kepe to 3e be dede	
ffor 3oure clene lyuyng' & 3oure goodnesse	158
And bring' 3ou strei3te into heuene blesse	
He wol 3ou loue as me for 3oure clenness	
And schewen 3ou of his Ioye and his bri3tnesse	161

(24)

Valerian corrected as god wolde	162
Answerde aȝein if I shal trust to þe	
lat me þat aungel se and hym biholde	
And ȝif þat it a verrei aungel be	165
þan wil I done as þou hast preide me	
¶ And ȝif þou loue anoþer man þan me	
riȝt wiþ þis swerde I wil slee ȝou boþe	168

(25)

Cicile Answerde anone in þis wise	169
And if ȝou lust þat aungel shul ȝe see	
So þat ȝe trowe on criste and ȝou baptise	
God forþ to Via Apia quod she	172
þat from þis toune ne stant but myles þre	
And to þe pore folk þat þere dwelle	
Say hem riȝt þus as þat I shal ȝou telle	175

(26)

Say þat I Cicilie ȝou to hem sent	176
To shewe ȝou þe good vrbā þe olde	
ffor secre nedes and for good entent	
And whan þat ȝe seint Vrbā han byholde	179
Telle him þe wordes which I to ȝou tolde	
And whan þat he haþ purged ȝou fro synne	
þan shul ȝe seen þat aungel er ȝe twyrne	182

(27)

Valerian is to þat place ygōn	183
And riȝt as hym was tauȝt by his lurnyngē	
He fonde þis holy Vrbā anoñ ./	
Amonge þise seintes buriels lowtyngē	[leaf 193, tack] 186
And he anoñ wiþ-out tariyngē	
Did his massage and whan he had [it] tolde	
Vrbā for ioye gan his hondes vp holde	189

(28)

The teeres from his eien lete he falle	190
Almyzty god o Ihesu crist' quod he	
Sowere of chaast' counsaile & herde of vs alle	
The fruyte of pilke seede of chaastite	193
þat' þou haste sawe in cicile take to þee	
Loo like a bisy bee wiþ-out' gile	
þe serueth ay þine owne thralle Cicile	196

(29)

For pilk spouse þat' she toke but' nowe	197
fful like a ferce leon she sendeþ here	
As meke as eny lombe was to 3ou .	
And wiþ þat' worde anoñ þer gan apere	200
An olde man clad wiþ white cloþes clere	
And had a boke wiþ <i>lettres</i> of golde in honde	
And gan biforne Valerian stonde	203

(30)

Valerian as dede fille doune for drede	204
whan he hym segñ and hym vphent' þoo .	
And on his boke þus he gan to rede	
Oo lord oo feiþ oo god wiþ-oute moo	207
Of <i>cristendome</i> and fadere of aH also .	
Abouen alle <i>and</i> oueral euery where	
þise wordes al wiþ gold [y]writen were	210

(31)

Whan þis was radde þat' seide þis olde man	211
Leuest' þou þis þing' or no sai 3e or nay	
I leue al þis þin[g] / [quod Valerian <small>[Harl. 7335, leaf 93, back]</small>	
ffor sother thyng'] & ¹ þis I dar wel saye <small>[¹ than Harl.]</small>	214
Vndere þe heuene no wi3t' ne þenk may	
¶ The vanshed þat' olde man he nyst' wher	
And pope Vrban hym cristened ri3t' þere	217

(32)

Valerian goþ home to seint' Cicile	218
And <i>wit</i> Inne his chambre an Aungel he segħ stande	
þis aungel had of rose <i>and</i> of lilie	
Corownes two þe whiche he bare on hande	221
And first' to Cicile as I vnderstande	
Be 3af þat' oon and aftere gan he take	[leaf 194]
þat' oþer to Valerian her make	224

(33)

Wif body clene and wif vnwemmed þou3t'	225
kepeþ ay wel þise corownes quod he	
ffrom paradise to 3ou haue I hem brou3t'	
Ne neuere more shul þei roten be	228
Ne lese her swete sauoure tresteth me	
Ne neuere wi3t' shal seene hem wif his ye	
But' he be chaast' and hate vilenye	231

(34)

And þou valerian for þou so sone	232
Assentest' to good counsaile also	
fflay what' þe lust' and þou shalt' haue þi bone	
I haue a broþer quod Valerian þoo	235
þat' in þis world' I loue no man soo /	
I prey 3ou þat' my broþere may haue grace	
To knowe þe troupe as I do in þis place	238

(35)

The aungel answerde god likeþ 3our request'	239
And boþ wif þe palme of marterdome	
3e shul come vnto þe blisful fest'	
And wif þat' worde tiburce his broþere come	242
And whan þat' he þe sauoure vndernome	
Wif þat' þe roses and þe lilies caste	
Wif-Inne his herte he gan to wonder faste	245

(36)

And saide in þis tyme I wondere of þe zere	246
whennys þis swete sauoure <i>commenþ</i> soo /	
And roses and lilies þat I smelle here	
ffor þouze I had hem in myn hondes twoo	249
þe sauoure myzt in me no depper goo	
þe swete smelle þat in myn hert I fynde	
Hap changed me al in a noþer kinde	252

(37)

Valerian saide two coronnes haue we	253
Snowe white and rose rede þat shyneþ clere	
which þat þine eyen han no myzt to see	
And as þowe smellest hem þourze þi preiere	256
So Shalt þou sene hem leue broþer dere	
ʒif it so be þou wilt wip-oute sclouþe .	
Byleue a rizt and knowe þe verrey trouþe	[leaf 194, back]

(38)

Tyburce answerd seist þou þis to me	260
In soþnesse or in dreeme herken ze þis	
In dremes <i>quod</i> Valerian han we be	
Into þis tyme broþer myn ywis	263
But nowe at arst our trouþe dwelling is	
Howe woost þou quod Tiburce & in what wise	
Quod Valerian þat shal I þe devise	266

(39)

The Aungel of god hap me þe trouþe tauzt	267
Which þat þou shalt seen if þat þow wilt reneye	
The ydoles and be clene and ellis nauzt	
But of þe myracles of þise coronnes tweye	270
Seint Ambrose in his preface list to seie	
Solempnely this noble doctour dere	
Commendeþ it and seip in þis manere	273

(40)

The palme of marterdome forto receyue	274
Seint ^t Cicile fulfilled of goddys ʒift ^t	
þe worlde and [e]ke hure chambre gan she weyue	
Witnesse Tiburce and Cicilees shrift	277
To which god of his bountee wolde shift ^t	
Corownes two of flowres wel smellynge	
And made þe aungel hem þoo corownes bringe	280

(41)

This made hap brouz ^t þise men to blisse aboue	281
þe world ^t hap wist ^t what ^t it ^t is worþ certeyne	
Deuocion of chastite to loue	
Tho shewed hym Cicile open and pleyne	284
That ^t alle ydoles nys but ^t þing ^t in veyne	
ffor þei bene dombe and þerto þei bene defe	
And charged hym his ydols forto lef	287

(42)

Who þat ^t þis trouep nat ^t a beest ^t he is	288
Quod þoo tyburce if þat ^t I shal not ^t ly	
She gan þan kisse his brest ^t & pat ^t herd ^t þis	
And was ful glad he couþe trouþ aspie	291
This daye take I þe for myne alye	
Saide þis blesful maide faire & dere	
ffor aftere þat ^t she saide as ʒe may here ./	294

(43)

Loo ryz ^t so as þe loue of crist ^t quod She	[leaf 195] 295
Made me þi broþeres wif riz ^t in þat ^t wise	
Anoon for myn alie here take I þe	
Sipens þat ^t þou wolt ^t þine ydoles despise	298
Go wiþ þi broþer nowe and þe baptise	
And make þe clene so þat ^t þou maist ^t beholde	
þe Aungels face of which þi brother tolde	301

(44)

Tyburse answerd and seide broþer dere	302
ffurst telle me whidere I shal and to what man	
To whome quod he come forþ wiþ riȝt goode chere	
I wil þe lede vnto þe pope Vrban	305
To Vrban broþer myne Valerian	
Quod þoo Tiburce wilt þou me þidere lede	
Me þenkeþ þat it were a wondere dede	308

(45)

Remenest þou nat Vrban quod he þoo	309
That is so ofte dampned to be dede	
And wonneþ in halkes to and froo	
And dar nat onys put forþ his hede	312
Men shul hym brenne in a fire so rede	
If he were founde þat men myȝt hym spie	
And we also þat bere hym companye	315

(46)

And whiles we seken þilk Dyuinyte	316
þat is ihidde in heuene prive	
Algate ybrent in þis world shul we be .	
To whom Cicile answerd bodily	319
Men myȝt drede wel and skilfully	
This lif to lese myn owne dere broþer	
ȝif þis were lyuyng only and noñ oþer	322

(47)

But þer is better lif in oþer place	323
That neuere shal be lost drede þe nouȝt	
Which goddes sone vs tolde þourgh his grace	
[That fadres sone hath alle thynges wrought	
And al that wrought is with a skilful thoght	
The gost that fro the fader gan procede	
hath sowled hem with-uten ony drede	329

[Harl. 7335,
leaf 95, bk]

(48)

By word and by myracle he goddes sone	[Harl. 7335] 330
whan he was in this world declared here	
That ther was other lif ther men may wone	
Tho answerde Tiburce o. suster dere	333
Ne sei-destow right now in this manere	
Ther nys but o god lord in sothfastnesse	
And now of three how maisthow bere witnessse	336

(49)

That shal y telle quod she or y go]	[Harl. 7335 <i>extract ends</i>]
Ri3t as a man haþ sapiences þre	
Memorie engeyne and intellecte also	
So in oo beinge of diuinite	340
Thre persones ri3t wel þer may be	
Tho gan she hym bisily preche.	
Of cristes come and of his peynes teche	[leaf 195, back]

(50)

And mony poyntes of his passioñ	344
How goddys sonne in þis wiþ-holde	
To do mankynde pleyn remyssiõ	
That was ybounde in cares colde	347
Al þis þinge she vnto Tiburce tolde	
And after þis Tiburce in good entent	
To pope Vrban wiþ Valerian went	350

(51)

Which þonked god <i>and</i> wiþ glad hert <i>and</i> li3t	351
He Cristned hym and made hym in þat place	
Parfit in his lyuyngge goddys kny3t	
And after þis Tiburce gate such grace	354
þat every day he seie in tyme <i>and</i> space	
þe Aungel of god and euery maner bone	
þat he god asked it was spedde ful sone	357

(52)

It were ful harde by order forto seyne	358
Howe mony wonders Ihesu for hym wrou3t	
But atte last to telle short and pleyñ	
The sergeaunt of þe towne of Rome hem sou3t	361
And hem byforn Almachē þe prouost brou3t	
Whiche hem opposed and knewe al her entent	
And to þe ymage of Iubiter he hem sent	364

(53)

And saide who so wil not sacrifice	365
Swap of his heued þis is my sentence here	
Anone þise martees þat I 3ou deuse	
On maximius þat was an officere	368
Of þe prefectis and of Corniculere	
Hem hent and whan he forþe þe seyntes ladde	
Hym self he wepte for pite þat he hadde	371

(54)

Whan maximius had herde þe seintes lore	372
he gate hem of þe turmentours leue	
And had hem in his hous wiþ-out more	
And wiþ her preching er þat it were eue	375
þei gone from þe tormentours to reue	
And fro maximius and fro his folk echone	
þe fals feith to trowe in god allone.	378

(55)

Cicile come whan it was woxen ny3t	[leaf 196]	379
Wiþ prestes þat hem cristened al in fere		
And afterward whan day was waxen li3t		
Cicile hem seide wiþ a sobre chere		382
Now cristes owne kny3tes leef and dere		
Castē al away þe werkes of derknesse		
And armeþ 3ou in armure of li3tnesse		385

(56)

3e han forsoþe ydone grete bataille	386
Which is nowe done 3oure feiþ han 3e confermed	
Goþ to þe corowne of lif þat may not faile	
The Rizt Iuge which þat 3e han disserued	389
Tofore hym 3e bene feiþfulli preserued	
And whan þis þinge was seide as I deuise	
Men ladde hem forþe to done þe sacrificise	392

(57)

But whan þei were vnto þe place brouzt	393
To telle shortely þe conclusioun	
þei nolde ensence ne sacrificise rizt nouzt	
But on her knees þei setten hem adoun	396
Wiþ humble hert and sad deuocioun	
And losten boþ her hedes in þe place	
Her saules wenten to þe kinge of grace	399

(58)

This Maximius þat see þis þinge betide	400
wiþ pitous tales tolde it anoñ rizt	
That he her sawles seghe to heuene gl'ide	
Wiþ aungels ful of cleernesse and of lizt	403
And wiþ his worde conuerted mony a wizt	
ffor which Almachius did hym so to bete	
Wiþ whippe of lede til he his lif gan lete	406

(59)

Cicile hym toke and buried hym anōn	407
By Tiburce and Valerian softely	
Wiþ-Inne her heriyng place vnder þe stoñ	
And aftere þis Almachius hastely	410
Bad his mynystres fecchen opynly	
Cicile so she myzt in his presence	
Don sacrificise and Iubiter ensence	413

(60)

But ^t þei conuerted þorgh her wise lore	414
Wepten sore and 3af credence	[leaf 196, back]
Vnto her worde <i>and</i> criden more <i>and</i> more	
Crist ^t goddes sone wiþ-oute difference	417
Is Verrey god þis is all ^t oure sentence	
þat ^t haþ so good a <i>seruaunte</i> hym to serue	
Thus wiþ oo vois we trowe þou3e we sterue	420

(61)

Almachius þat ^t herde al this [doinge]	421
Bad foche Cicile þat ^t he my3 ^t hure se	
And alderfurst ^t loo þis was his askinge	
What ^t maner womman art ^t þou þo quod he	424
I am a gentile womman born quod she	
I aske quod he þou3e it ^t þe greue	
Of þi religioñ and of þi bileue	427

(62)

Whi þan bygan 3oure question ^t folily	428
Quod she þat ^t woldest ^t two answers <i>conclude</i>	
In oon demannde 3e asked lewedely	
Almacy answerde to þat ^t <i>similitude</i>	431
Of whennys [comth thyn answeyng ^t so rude [Harl. 7335, 1797]	
Of ^t whennys] quod she whan þat ^t she was refreyned ^t	
Of conscience and of good feiþ vnfeyned ^t	434

(63)

Almachius seide takest ^t þou non hede	435
Of þine answeze and she hym answerd ^t þus	
3oure my3 ^t quod she litel is to drede	
ffor euery mortel ^t mannys power nys	438
But ^t lich a bladdere ful of wynde ywis	
ffor wiþ a nedelys poynte whan þat ^t is blowe	
May al þe boost ^t of it ^t be laide ful lowe	441

(64)

Ful wron[g]fully bygonne þou quod he	442
And 3it ^t in wronge is þi perseueraunce	
Woost ^t þou nat ^t how oure myzty p ^r inces fre	
Ben þus comaunded <i>and</i> maken ordinaunce	445
þat ^t euery cristen wiz ^t shal han penaunce	
But ^t 3if þat ^t he his cristendome wiþseynd	
And goon al quite if he wil it ^t receyne	448

(65)

3oure p ^r inces aren as 3oure noblen doþ	449
Quod þoo Cicile and a woode sentence	
3e make vs gilty and it ^t nys nat ^t soth ^t	
ffor 3e þat ^t knowen wel our Innocence	452
ffor as moch ^t as we done Reuerence	
To criste and for we bere a cristen name	
3e put ^t on vs a cryme and eke a blame	455

(66)

But ^t we þat ^t knowen þilk ^t name soo	456
ffor vertuous we may it ^t not ^t say	
Almacy answerde chese on of þise twoo	
Do sacrificise or cristendome reney	459
þat ^t þowe may nowe scapen by þat ^t way	
At ^t which ^t þe holy blisful maide	
Gan forto lau3e and to þe Iuge she saide	462

(67)

O Iuge confuse in þi nycete	463
Wilt ^t þou þat ^t I reneye Innocence	
To maken me a wicked wiz ^t quod she	
loo he dissimuleþ here in audience	466
He stareþ and wodeþ in his aduertence	
To whom Almachius o vnsely wrecch ^t	
Ñe woost ^t þow not ^t howe ferre my myz ^t may strecc ^t	469

(68)

Hap nouȝt' our myȝty prince to me yȝouen	470
ȝe boȝ powere and auctoritee	
To make folk' to dien or to lyuen	
Whi spekest' þou so proudly þan to me	473
I ne speke but' stedfastly quod she	
Nouȝt' proudly for I saie as for my side	
I hate dedly þilke vice of pride	476

(69)

And ȝif þou drede nouȝt' a soȝe to here	477
þan wil I shewen al openly by riȝt'	
þat þou hast' made a ful grete lesinge here	
Thow seist þi p'inces han ȝeue þe myȝt'	480
Boȝ to sleene and forto quyk a wiȝt'	
Thowe þat' ne maist' but' only lif here by-reue	
Thow nast' þerto neiþere power ne leue	483

(70)

[But þou mayst sayn thi prynces han the maked]	[Harl. 7335, leaf 98]
Mynyster' of deȝ for ȝif þou speke of moo	
þow liest' for þi power' is ful naked	
Do way þi boldnesse saide Almachius þoo	487
And sacrificse to our goddys twoo .	
I ne recche nouȝt' what' wronge þat' þou me profre	[lf 197, bk]
ffor I can suffre it' as a filosofre	490

(71)

But' þilke wronges may I nat' endure	491
þat' þou spekest' of oure goddes here quod he	
Cicele answerde oo nyce creature	
þow seidest no word siȝ þou spekest' to me	494
þat' I ne knewe þerwiȝ þi nycete	
And þat' þowe were in euery maner' wise	
A lewde officere and a veyn Iustise	497

(72)

Ther lackeþ no þinge to þine vtter eyen	498
þat þou nart' blynde for þing' þat' we seen alle	
þat' is a stone þat' men may wel asprien	
That' ilke stoon a god þou wolt' it' calle	501
I rede þe lat' þine h[ond] vppon it' falle	
And taast' it' wel and stoon þou shalt' it' fynde	
Sipe þat' þou seest' it' nat' wiþ þine eyen blynde	504

(73)

It' is a shame þat' þe puple shal	505
So scorne þe and lauþe at' þi foly	
ffor comonly wommen wote it'. weþ oueraþ	
That' myzty god is in heuene hie	508
And þise ymages wel þan maist' þou spie	
To þe ne to hem self may þei nat' profite	
And in her effecte þei bene nat' worth a myte	511

(74)

Thise and such' oþer wordes saide She	512
And he wexe wrooþ and bad she shuld be lede	
home to her hous and in her hous quod he	
Brenne hure in a fuyre wiþ flawmes rede	515
And as he bad ryzt' so was done þe dede	
And in a bath. þei gan hure fast' shetten	
And nyght' and day grete fuyre vnder þei maden	518

(75)

Al þe longe nyzt' and eke þe day also	519
ffor al þe fuyre and eke þe baþes hete	
She satte al colde and felt' of it' no woo	
Ne made hure a drope nouzt' forto swete	522
But' in þat' bath her lif She most' lete	
ffor he Almachie wiþ ful wicked entent'	
To scleen hure in þe bath his sonde sent' /	[leaf 198]

(76)

Thre strokes in þe nekke he smote hure þoo 526
 The turmentour but for no manere chaunce
 He myzt not smyten al her necke a two
 And for þer was þat tyme an ordynaunce 529
 That none shuld to no man do such penaunce
 þe ferþe stroke to smyten soft or sore
 This turmentour ne durst do no more . 532

(77)

But half dede wiþ her necke ycoruen þere 533
 He laft hure lye and on his waye he went
 þe Cristen folk which aboute hure were
 Wiþ shetes home ful faire hure hente 536
 Thre daies lyued she in þis torment
 And neuere cesed hem þe feiþ to teche
 Whom she had fostred hem she gan to preche 539

(78)

And hem she gaf her meueables *and* her þinge 540
 And to þe pope Vrban bytoke hem þoo
 And saide þus I asked þis of heuene kynge
 To han respite . þre daies and no moo 543
 To recomaunde to þou er þat I goo
 Thise soules loo *and* þat I myzt to wirche
 Here of myn hous perpetuelly a chirche 546

(79)

SEynt Vrban wiþ his dekenes priuely 547
 The body fette and buried it by nyzt
 Amonge his oper seintes honestly
 Hure hous þe church of saint Cicile hizt 550
 Saint Vrban halawed it as he wel myzt
 In þe which into þis daye in noble wise
 Men done to crist and to his seinte servise . 553

¶ þus endeþ þe tale of þe seconnde nonne

[on leaf 198] ¶ The prologe .

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe chanouns ȝeman

Whan ended was þe lif of seinte Cecile
 Er we fully had ryden five myle
 An boghton vnder þe ble vs gan a take
 A man þat' cloþed was in cloþes blake 557
 And vnder þat' he had a white surplis .
 His hakeney þat' was so pomel gris [leaf 198, back]
 So swete þat' it' wondere was to see
 It' semed he had prikked myles þre 561
 þe hors eke þat' his ȝeman rode vpoñ
 So swette þat' vnneþes myȝt' he goñ
 Aboute þe peitreH stood þe foom ful hie
 He was of fome al flekked as a pie 565
 A male twifolde on his cropour laye
 It' semed þat' he caried litel araye
 Al liȝt' for somer roode þis worþi man /
 And in myn herte wondre I bygan 569
 What' þat' he was til I vnderstode
 How þat' his cloke was sewed to his hode
 ffor which whan I longe had avised me
 I demed hym some chanoñ forto be 573
 His hatte honge at' his bak' doune by a laas
 ffor he had ryden more þan trotte or paas
 He had aye prikked like as he were wood
 A clote leef he had vnder his hode 577
 ffor swote and forto kepe his hede from hete
 But' it' was ioye forto seen hym swete
 His forhede dropped as a Stillatorie
 Were ful of planteyne and of Pyritorie 581

And whan þat' he came he gan to crie	582
God saue quod he þis Ioly companye	
ffast' haue I prikked quod he for 3oure sake	
Because þat' I wolde 3ou ouertake	585
To ryden in þis mery company	
His 3eman eke was ful of curtesie	
And sirres now in þe morowe tide	
Out' of 3oure ostelrie I segh̄ 3o ⁿ ride	589
And warned here my lorde and my souereyn̄	
Which̄ þat' to ride wiþ 3ou is ful fayn̄	
ffor his disporte he loueþ daliaunce	
ffrende for þi warnyng' god 3eue þe good chaunce	593
Seide oure hoste certes it' wolde seme	
Thi lorde were wise and so I may wel deme	[leaf 199]
He is ful iocounde also dar I lay	
Can he ou3t' telle a mery tale or twaye	597
Wiþ which̄ he glade may þis company	
Who sir' my lord' : 3e 3e wiþ-outen lie	
He can of merth̄ and eke of Iolite	
And þat' ynou3e also sir' tresteth me	601
And 3e hym knewe as wel as do I	
3e wolde wonder howe wel and thriftelie	
He couþe worche and þat' in sondry wise	
He haþ take on hym mony sondry aprise	605
Which̄ were ful hard' for eny þat' is here	
To bringe aboute but' þei of hym it' lere	
As homely as he ritte amonge 3ou	
If 3e hym knewe it' wolde be 3our prowē	609
3e nolde nat' forgoñ his aqueyntaunce	
ffor mochel good I dar laie in balaunce	
AH þat' I haue in myn possession̄	
He is a man of hize discrecion̄	613
I warne 3owe wel he is a passing' man	
Wel kope our' hoost' I prey þe telle me þan	
Is he Clerk' or noon telle what' he is	
Nay he is gretter þan a clerk' ywis	617

Seide þe zeman and in woordes fewe	618
Oost' of his craft' somewhat' I wil 3ou shewe	
I saie my lorde can such' a sotilte	
But' aȝ his craft' 3e may not' wit' at me	621
And Somwhat' helpe I 3it' to his worchinge	
þat' al þis grounde which' þat' we ben on ridyngē	
Til þat' we come to caunterberye touñ	
He coude al clere turne vp so doun	625
And paue it' al of siluer' <i>and</i> of golde	
And whan þis zeman had þus ytolde	
Vnto oure hooste he seide Benedicite	
This þing' is wonder <i>mervelous</i> to me	629
Sipens þat' þi lord is of so hiȝe prudence	
Bycause of which' men shulde hym reuerence	[leaf 199, back]
þat' of his worship rekkeþ he so lite	
His ouerslope nys nat' worþ a myte	633
As in effecte to him as mot' I goo/	
It' is al baudy and to-tore also	
Whi is þi lord so scluttish' I þe prey	
And is of power' better cloþes to beye	637
If þat' his dede accorde wiþ þi speche	
Telle me þat' I þe biseche	
Whi quod þis zeman wherto aske 3e me	
God helpe me so for he shal neuere the	641
But' I wil nat' avowe þat' I say	
And þefore kepe it' secre I 3ou pray	
He is to wise in feiþ as I bileue	
That' þat' is ouerdone it' nyl not' preue	645
And riȝt' as clerkes seyn it' is a vice	
wherfore in þat' I holde hym lewde <i>and</i> nyce	
ffor whan a man haþ ouer grete a witte	
fful often it' haddeþ to misusen it'	649
So doþ my lord' and þat' me greueþ sore	
God it' amende I can seye now no more	
Therof no fors good zeman quod' <i>our</i> hoost'	
Syþ of þe konyng' of þi lord' þou wost'	653

Telle howe he doþ I prey þe hertely	654
Sippes þat he is so crafty and so sely	
Where dwellen 3e if it to telle be	
In þe Subarbes of a toune quod he	657
Lurkyng in hernes <i>and</i> in lanes blynde	
Where þise Robbers and þeues be kynde	
Holden her p ^r ve feerful residence	
As þei þat dar not shewen her presence	661
So fare we if I shal say þe soþe	
3it quod [our] oste lat me talke to the	
Why art þou discolowred on þi face	
Peter quod he god 3eue it harde <i>grace</i>	665
I am so vsed þe fire to blowe	
That it haþ chaunged my colour as I trowe	[leaf 200]
I ne am not wonte in no myroure to prie	
But swynke sore and lerne to multiplie	669
We Blundren euere <i>and</i> powren in þe fire	
And for alle þat we failen of our desire	
ffor euere we lacken our conclusioñ	
To moche folk we bene but illusion	673
And borowe golde be it a pound or twoo	
Or ten or twelue or mony <i>sommes</i> moo	
And make hem wenen at the leest wey	
þat of a pounde we cowde make twey	677
3it is it fals and ay we han good hope	
It forto doon and aftere it we grope	
But þat science is so fer vs biforne	
We mowe not alle þouze we had it sworne	681
It ouertake it slitt away so fast	
It wil vs make beggers at þe last	
þe whiles þis 3eman was þus in his talkyng	
This Chanoñ drowe hym nere <i>and</i> herd al þinge	685
Which þat þis 3em[an] spake for suspicioñ	
¶ Of mennys speche euere had þis chanoñ	
ffor Caton seiþ he þat gilty is	
Demeþ al þinge be spoke of hym ywis	689

By cause of þat^t he gan so ny3e to drawe 690
 His 3eman þat^t herd alle his sawe
 And þus he seide vnto his 3eman þoo
 Holde now þi pees and speke no wordes moo 693
 ffor if þowe doo þu shalt^t it^t dere aby
 þow sclauderest^t me here in þis company
 And eke diskeuerest þat^t þou shuldest^t hide
 3e quod oure hoost^t telle on what^t so betide 697
 Of al þis þretynge rechⁿ þe not^t a myte
 In feiþ quod he no moore I doo but^t lite
 And whan þis chanon seghⁿ it^t wold^t nat be
 But^t þat^t his 3eman wolde telle his priuete 701
 He fledde a-way for verrey sorowe *and* shame
 A quod the 3eman here shal arise a game [leaf 200, back]
 AH þat^t I can anoñ wil I telle
 Siþens he is goon þe foule fende hym quelle 705
 ffor neuere here after^t wil I wiþ hym mete
 ffor peny ne for pounde I 3ou bihete
 He þat^t me brou3t^t furst^t vnto þat^t game
 Er þat^t he dye sorowe haue he *and* shame 709
 ffor it^t it is earnest^t to me by my feiþe
 þat^t fele I wele what^t so eny man seiþe
 & 3it^t for all my smerte *and* al my greff
 ffor al my sorowe . labour *and* meschieff 713
 I kouþe neuere leue it^t in no wise
 Now wold god my wittes my3t^t suffise
 To tellen al þat^t longen to þat^t art^t
 But^t napeles 3it^t wil I telle 3owe part^t 717
 Siþens þat^t my lorde is goon I wil not^t spare
 Such þinge as I knowe I wil declare

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe chanons 3eman

[on leaf 200, back] & here bygynneþ þ^o tale

[THE PREAMBLE.]

With þis chanon [I] dwelt^t haue seuene ȝere ¶ The
 And of his science am I neuer þe nere tale ./
 Al þat I had I haue ylost^t þerby
 And god woo so han many moo þan I
 Ther I was wonte to be riz^t fressh *and* gay
 Of cloþinge and of good aray 725
 Now may I were an hose vpon myne heued
 And where my coloure was boþ fressh *and* rede
 Now is it^t wan and of a lewde hwe
 Who so it^t vseþ sore shal he rwe 729
 And of my swynk ȝit^t blered is myn ye
 Loo suche auantage it^t is to multiplie
 That^t slydinge science haþ me made so bale
 That^t I haue no good wher so euer y fare 733
 And ȝit^t am I endetted so þerby
 Of golde þat^t I haue borowed trewly
 That^t whil I lyve I shal it^t quite neuere
 Lat^t euery man be ware by me for euere 737
 What^t maner^t man þat^t casteþ hym þerto [leaf 201]
 If he contynue I holde his thrift^t ydo
 ffor so helpe me god þerby shal he nat^t wyne
 But^t empty his purs and make his wyttes þinne 741
 And whan he thorgh^t his madnesse *and* folye
 Haþ lost^t his owne good þorgh^t Iopardye
 þan he exciteþ oþer men þerto
 To lese her good as hym self haþ doo / 745
 ffor to shrewes Ioies it^t is an ese
 To haue her felawes in peyn and dissesse

Thus was I ones lerned of a clerk'
 Of þat' no charge I wil speke of our' werk' 749
 Whan we bene þere as we shul exercise
 Oure eluessh craft' we seme wonder' wise
 Our teermes bene so clerghal *and* so queynte
 I blowe þe fyre til þat' myn hert' feynte 753
 What' shuld' I telle eche *proporcioñ*
 Of þingges which þat we worchen vpon
 As on .v. or .vj. vnces may wel be
 Of Siluere or of som oþer *quantite* 757
 And bisy me to telle 3ou þe names
 Of Orpyment'. brent' bonys yren . squames
 Thatt into powdere grounden bene ful smaht
 And in an erthen pot' howe þat' pitte is alle 761
 And salt' ypitte In . and also paupere
 Byfore þise powdres þat' I speke of here
 And wel ykeuered wiþ a laumpe of glas
 And of moche oþer þinge what' þer was 765
 And of the potte and glas englutynge
 That' of þe eyre myzt' passe no þinge
 And of þe Esy fire and smert' also
 Which þat' was made *and* of the care *and* woo 769
 That' we had in our maters sublymynge
 And in amalgamyng and calcenyng
 Of quik siluere ycleped *Mercurie* crude
 ffor aþ oure sleightes we can not' *conclude* 773
 Our orpyment' and sublymed *Mercurye* [leaf 201, back]
 Our gronde litarge eke on þe porphirie
 Of eche of þise of vnces a certeyñ
 Nat' helpeþ vs oure labour is in veyñ 777
 Ne eke oure *spīrites* assencioun
 Ne eke our maters þat' lyen al fixe a-down
 Mowen in oure worchinge no þing' vs availe
 ffor lost' is al our laboure *and* *travaile* 781
 And aþ þe cost' on twenty deuel weye
 Is lost' also whiche we vpon it' laye

Ther is also mony a nother þing	
That' is to our craft' appertenynge	785
þouze I by ordere hem here ne reherce kan	
Because þat' I am a lewde man	
ʒit' wil I telle hem as þei come to mynde	
þouze I ne can sette hem in her kynde	789
As boole armonyak . verdegrees . boras	
And sondry vessels made of erþe <i>and</i> glas	
Our' vrynales and our' dyscensories	
Violles Creseletys . and sublimatories	793
Concurbites <i>and</i> alembykes eke	
And oþer suche dere ynowe a leke	
Nat' nedep it' to rehersen hem alle	
Waters rubyfyng <i>and</i> bolles galle .	797
Arsenyke sal armonyak <i>and</i> brymston	
And herbes coude I telle eke mony oñ	
As Egrymoyn Valerian <i>and</i> lunarie	
And oþer such ʒif þat' me list' tarie	801
Our' lampes brennyng' boþ nyʒt' <i>and</i> day	
To bringe about' our craft' ʒif þat' we may	
Our furnayes eke of Calcynacioñ	
And of waters albificacioñ	805
Vnslekke lyme . Chalk <i>and</i> gleire of an ey	
Powders divers . Ashes . dunge . pisse . <i>and</i> cley	
Sered pockettes . sal peter' . <i>and</i> vitriole	
And dyuers fires made of wode <i>and</i> Cole	809
Salt tartre . alcalie <i>and</i> salt' preparete	[leaf 202]
And combust' maters and coagulate	
Cley made wiþ horses or mannys here <i>and</i> oyle	
Of Tartere . alem glas berme wort' & argoille	813
Rysalgere and oþere mateers enbykinge	
And eke of oure mateers encorporinge	
And of [our] Siluer' citrinacioñ	
Our sementynge and fermentacioñ	817
Our ingotes testes <i>and</i> mony moo /	
I wil ʒou telle as was me tauʒt' also	

þe four spirites and þe bodies seuene
 By ordre oft' as I herd my lord *hem* neuene 821
 The first' spirit' quyk-siluere cleped is
 þe Secounde orpyment' þe *thrid'* ywis [1 MS iij]
 Sal Armonyak and þe ferþ bremstone
 þe bodies seuene eke lo hem here anoñ 825
 Sol gold is *and* luna siluer we threpe
 Mars. yren Mercurie quyksiluer' we clepe
 Saturnus lede. and Iubiter is tynne`
 And Venus Coper' be my fadere kynne 829
 This cursed craft' who so wil exercise
 He shal no good han þat' may hym suffise
 ffor al þe good he spendeþ þer-aboute
 He lese shal þerof haue I no doute 833
 Who so þat' list to outhen his foly
 Lat' hym come forþ *and* lerne forto multiplie
 And euery man þat' haþ ouzt' in his cofre
 Lat' [him] apere and wexe a filosofre 837
 Ascaunce þat' craft' is so lizt' to lere
 Nay nay god wote al be he monke or frere
 Preest' chanon or eny oþer wizt'
 þouze he sitte at' his boke boþ day *and* nyzt' 841
 In lernyng' of þis elvissñ nyce lore
 Al is in veyn and parde moche more
 Is to lere a lewde man þis sotille
 ffy speke nat' þerof for it' wil nat' be 845
 Al coude he lettrure or coude he none [leaf 202, back]
 As in effecte he shal fynde it' all one
 ffor boþ twoo be my saluacioñ
 Concluden in multiplicacioñ 849
 Iliche wel whan þei han al ydoo
 This is to seyn þei failen boþ two
 But' zit' for þat' I to moche rehersaille
 Of waters corosif and of lymaille 853
 And of bodyes mollificacioñ
 And also of her induracioñ

Oilles abluciōn & metal fusible
 To tellen alle wold passen eny bible 857
 þat' owhere is wher as for þe best'
 Of aH þise names now wil I me rest'.
 ffor as I trawe I haue 3ou tolde ynowe
 To reisen a feende loke he neuere so rowe 861
 A nay lat' be þi philosophres stone
 Elixir cleped we sechen fast' echone
 ffor had we hym þan were we siker ynou3e
 But' vnto god of heuene I make avowe 865
 ffor al our craft' whan we han al ydoo
 And al oure sclei3te he wil not' come vs too/
 He haþ vs made spende moche good
 ffor sorowe of which almost' we wexen wode 869
 But' þat' good hope crepeþ in our' hert'
 Supposinge euere þou3e we sore smert'
 To be releued by hym afterward'
 Supposinge þat' hope is sharpe *and* hard' 873
 I warne 3ou wele it' is to seken euere
 þat' future temps haþ made men disseuere
 In trest' þerof from alle þat' euere þei hadde
 3it' of þat' art' þei koude not' wexen sadde 877
 ffor vnto hem it' is a bitterswete
 So semeþ it' for ne had þei but' a shete
 Which þei my3t' wrap hem in a ny3t'
 And a bak' to walken In by day lizt' 881
 They wold hem Sellen and spenden on þis craft' [leaf 203]
 They can not stynt' til no þinge be laft'
 And euermore wher þat' euere þei gone
 Men may hem knowe by þe smelle of bremstone 885
 ffor al þe worlde þei stynken as a gote
 Her sauour is so rammyssh and so hote
 þat' þou3 a man fro hem a myle be
 þe Sauour' wil enfecte hym trestep me 889
 Lo Thus by smellyng' and be threde bare aray
 3if þat' men lust' þise folk' þei know may

And if a man wil aske *hym* prively
 Whi þei bene cloþed so vnthriftily 893
 Riztʳ anone þei wil rownen in his eere
 And seie if þey aspied were
 Men wolde hem slee by cause of her science
 Loo þus þise folkʳ bitraien Innocence 897
 Passe ouer þis I go my tale vnto
 Er þan þe potte be on þe fuyre ydoo
 Of metalles wiþ a certeyn quantite
 My lorde hem tempref and no man but he 901
 Now he is goon I dar saie boldely
 ffor as men seyne he can do craftely
 Algate I wote wel he haþ such a name
 And 3itʳ ful ofte he rennep in þe blame 905
 And wete 3e how ful ofte itʳ happeth soo /
 The potte to-brekeþ and fare-wel al is goo
 Thise metalles bene of so grete violence
 Our walles may notʳ maken *hem* resistence 909
 Butʳ 3if þei [weren] wrou3tʳ of lyme *and* stone
 þei persen so þatʳ þor3e þe waH þei gone
 And somme of *hym* synken into þe grounde
 Thus haue we lostʳ by tymes mony a poundʳ 913
 And somme are scatered al the flore aboute
 Somme lepen into þe Roof with-outʳ doute
 Thou3e þatʳ þe feende natʳ in our siztʳ *hym* shewe
 ¶ I trowe þatʳ he wiþ vs be þatʳ schrewe 917
 In helle wher þatʳ he is lordʳ *and* sire [leaf 203, back]
 Ne is þer no more woo angere ne Ire
 Whan þatʳ oure potʳ is broke as I haue saide
 Euery man chitte and haltʳ *hym* euel paide 921
 Som saide itʳ was longe on þe fire makinge
 Som saide nay itʳ was on þe blowynge
 Than was I aferde for þatʳ was myñ office
 Strawe quod þe þred 3e bene lewde *and* nyce 925
 Itʳ was natʳ tempred as itʳ au3t be
 Nay quod þe ferþe styntʳ *and* harken me

GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YEOM. PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

Be cause oure fire was not^t made of beche
 þat^t is þe cause noon oþere so theche . 929
 I can not^t telle wheron it^t is alonge
 But^t wel I woot^t gret^t strif is vs amonge
 What quod my lorde þer nys no more to done
 Of þise periles I wil be ware eft^t sone 933
 I am riȝt^t syker^t þat^t þe pot^t was craised
 Be as be may be ȝe no þinge amased^t
 As vsage is lat^t swepe þe flore as swithe
 Pluk vp ȝoure hert^t and be ȝe glad *and* blithe 937
 þe Mullok^t on an hepe yswoped was
 And on þe floore cast^t a canvas .
 And al this Mullok in a sif yth[r]owe
 And ysifted and yplukked many a throwe 941
 Parde quod oon somewhat^t of oure metaH
 ȝit^t is þer here þouȝe we haue nat^t aH
 And þouȝe þis þinge myshapped haþ as nowe
 Anoper tyme It^t may be wel ynowe 945
 Vs most^t putt^t our good in auenture
 A Marchaunte *parde* may not^t ay endure
 Trestep me wel in his *prosperite*
 Somtyme his good is drowned in þe see 949
 And somtyme *commeth* it^t sauf vnto þe londe
 Pees quod my lorċ þe next^t tyme I wil fonde
 To brynge our craft^t al in anoper plite
 And but^t I doo sirs lat^t me haue þe wite 953
 Ther was defaute in somewhat^t wel I wote [leaf 204]
 And oþer seide þe fire was ouere hote
 But^t be it^t hote or cold I dar saie þis
 þat^t we concluden euer more amys 957
 We failen of that^t which þat^t we wold^t haue
 And in oure madnesse euermore we raue
 And whan we bene to-gidere euerechoñ
 Euery man semeþ as wise as Salomoñ 961
 But^t al þinge which þat^t seineþ¹ as þe golde [1 or semeþ]
 Is nat^t golde as I haue herċ it^t tolde

Ne euery appel þat is faire at ye
 Ne is not god what so men clappe or crie 965
 Riȝt so loo fareþ it amonges vs /
 He¹ þat semeþ þe wisest by Ihesus [1 or Ho]
 Is moost foole whan it commeþ to þe preef
 And he þat semeþ trewest is a þeef 969
 That shul 3e knowe er þat I from 30^u wende
 Be þat I of my tale haue made an ende

[No break in the MS.]

[THE TALE.]

Ther is a chanon of Religioun	¶ 2 ^a pars. 1.
Amonges vs wolde enfecte al a town	973
Thouze it ^t as grete were as was Nyniue	
Rome . Alisaundre . Troie & oþer þre	
his sleightes and his infinite falsnesse	
Ther couþe no man writen as I gesse	977
Thouze þat ^t he myzt ^t lyuen a thousand zere	
In al þis world ^t of falsnesse nys his pere	
ffor in his teermes he wil hym so wynde	
And speke his wordes in so sleze a kynde	981
Whan he comune shal wiþ eny wízt ^t	
That ^t he wil make hym dote anoñ rízt ^t	
But ^t it ^t þe feende be as hym seluen is	
fful mony a man haþ he bygyled er þis	985
And wil if þat ^t he may lif a while	
And zít ^t men riden and goon ful mony a myle	
Hym forto seke and haue of a-queyntaunce	
Nat ^t knowing ^t of his fals gouernaunce	989
And zif ze lust ^t to zeue me audience	[leaf 204, back]
I wil it ^t tellen in wiþ zoure presence	
But ^t worshipful Chanoñ Religious	
Ne demep ^t not ^t I sclaudere zoure hous	993
Al-þouze my tale of a chanon be	
Of euery ordere som shrewe is parde	
And god forbede þat ^t aþ a companye	
Shulde rewe a syngule mannys foly	997
To sclaudere zou is nat ^t myn entent ^t	
But ^t to correcten þat ^t mys I-ment ^t	

This tale was not^t only told^t for 3ou
 But^t eke for oþer moo 3e wote wel howe 1001
 That^t amonges *cristes* apostels twelue
 þer ne was no *traitour* but^t Iudas selue
 Than whi shulde þe remenaunte aþt haue blame
 þat^t giltlees were be 3ou saye I þe same 1005
 Sauf only þis if 3e wil harken me
 If eny Iudas in 3oure couent^t be
 Remeueth *hym* be tyme I 3ou rede
 If shame or losse may causen eny drede 1009
 And beþ no þinge displeed I 3ou pray
 But^t in this caas herkneþ what^t I say
 In london was a preest^t an annuelere
 That^t þerInne dwelled had mony a 3ere 1013
 Whichⁱ was so plesaunt^t *and* so seruisable
 Vnto þe wiff where he was att table
 That^t she wolde suffre *hym* no þing^t forto paye
 ffor borde ne. cloþinge went^t he neuere so gay 1017
 And spending^t siluere had he riz^t ynowe
 Therof no force I wil procede as nowe
 And telle forþ my tale of þe chanoñ
 þat^t brouz^t þis preest^t to confusioñ 1021
 This fals chanoñ came vpon a day
 Vnto þe preestes chambere þer he lay
 Bysechinge *hym* to lene *hym* a certeyñ
 Of golde and he wolde quyte *hym* ageyñ 1025
 Leneþ me a marke quod he but^t daies þre
 [leaf 205]
 And at^t my day I wil it^t quite þe
 And it^t so be þow fynde me fals
 An oþer day honged me by þe hals 1029
 This prest^t him toke a marke and þat^t as swithe
 And þis chanon *hym* þonked ofte sithe
 And toke his leue and went^t forþ his way
 And at^t þe þred day brouz^t his monay 1033
 And to þis preest^t he toke his gold ageyñ
 Therof þis preest^t was glad and fayñ

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Certes quod he no þinge anoyeþ me
 To lene a man a noble or twoo or þree 1037
 Or what þinge were in my possession
 Whan he so trewe is of condicioñ
 That in no wise he breke wil his day
 To such a man I can neuere say nay 1041
 What quod þis chanon shuld I be vntrewe
 ¶ Nay þat were þinge fallen al of nwe
 Treuþe is a þing þat I wil euer kepe
 Vnto þe day in which þat I shal crepe 1045
 Into my graue and ellis god forbede
 Bileueþ þis as siker as is þoure crede
 God thonke I and in good tyme be it seide
 That þer was neuere man 3it euel apaide 1049
 ffor gold ne siluere þat he to me lent
 Ne neuere falshede to myne hert I ment
 And sire quod he nowe in my private
 Siþens 3e so goodly haue bene to me 1053
 And kyþed to me so grete gentilnesse
 Somwhat to quiten wiþ þour kyndenesse
 I wil þou shewe and 3if þou lust to lere
 I shal it shewe to þou anon riȝt here 1057
 How I can worchen in philosophie
 Takeþ good hede 3e shullen see wel at ye
 That I wil done a maistrie er I goo
 3e quod þe preest 3e sir and wil 3e so 1061
 Marie þerof I prei þou hertely [leaf 205, back]
 At þoure comaundement sir trewly
 Quod þe chanon and ellis god forbede
 Loo howe þis þeef kouþe his seruise bede 1065
 fful sop it is þat such þropferd seruise
 Stynkeþ as witnessen þise olde wise
 And þat ful sone I wil it verefie
 In þis chanon is rote of al trecherye 1069
 That euere more delite haþ and gladnesse
 Such feendly þouȝtes in his hert empresse

- How cristes puple he may to meschief bringe /
 God kepe vs from his fals dissimulynge 1073
 What' wist' þis preest wiþ whom þat' he delte
 Ne of his harme *commynge* no þing' he felte
 O sely preest' o. sely Innocent'
 Wiþ couetise anon þou shalt' be blent' 1077
 O gracelees ful blynde is þi conseite
 No þing' art' þow war of þe deceite
 Which þat' þis fox shapen haþ to þe.
 His wily wrenches þou maist not' flee 1081
 Wherefore to goo to þe conclusiō
 þat' referreþ to þe confusiō
 Vnhappy man anon I wil me hye
 To tellen þine vnwytte and þi foly 1085
 And eke þe falsnesse of þat' oþer wrecche
 As ferforþ as my conyng' wil strecche
 þis chanoñ was my lorde 3e wolde wene
 Sir' Oost' in feiþ and by þe Heuene quene 1089
 It was anoþer chanon and nat he
 þat' can an hundred fold more sotilte
 he haþ bytraied folk' mony tyme
 Of his falsnesse it' dulleþ me to ryme 1093
 Euere whan I speke of his falshede
 ffor shame of him my chekes wexen rede
 Algates þei bygonne forto glowe
 ffor redenesse haue I now riȝt wel I knowe 1097
 In my visage for fumes dyuers [leaf 206]
 Of metalles which 3e han herde me rehers
 Consumed and waasted han my Redenesse /
 Take nowe hede of þi[s] chanons cursednesse 1101
 Sir' quod he to þe preest' lat' 3our man gone
 ffor quyk siluere þat' we it' had anōn
 And lat' hym brynge vneces twoo or þre
 And whan he *commen*þ as fast' shul 3e se 1105
 A wonder þinge whiche 3e see neuere er þis
 Sir' quod þe preest' it' shal be done ywis

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

He bad his seruaunte fecchen him þis þinge
 And he al redy was at his biddyng 1109
 And went hym forþ and come anoñ ageyñ
 wiþ þis quyk siluere shortely forto seyñ
 And toke þise vnces þre to þe chanoun
 And he it laide faire and wel adoun 1113
 And bad þe seruaunte colys forto bryng
 þat he anoon myzt goo to his worchis
 The Colis rizt anoon weren sette
 And þis Chanon toke out a croslette 1117
 Of his besom and shewed it þe preest
 This instrument quod he which þat þou seest
 Take in þine hond and pitt þiself þerInne
 Of þis quyk siluer an vnce an here bygynne 1121
 In þe name of crist to wex a philosophre
 þer bene ful fewe whiche þat I wold profre
 To shewen hem þus mochel of my science
 ffor 3e shullen see here by experience 1125
 That þis quik siluer I wil mortefie
 Rizt in 3oure sizt anoon wiþ-out lye
 And made it as good siluer and as fyne
 As þer is eny in 3oure purs er myne 1129
 Or ellis where and make it malliable
 And ellis holde me fals and vnable
 Amonges folke euer to apere
 I haue a powder here þat cost me dere 1133
 Shal make al good for it is cause of aH
 [leaf 206, back]
 My konyng which þat I 3ou shewe shaft
 Voideþ 3our man and lat hym be þer out
 And schitte þe door þe whiles we bene aboute 1137
 Our private þat no man vs espie
 Whiles we worchen in þis philosophie
 Al as he bad fulfilled was in dede
 This ilke seruaunte anoon rizt out zede 1141
 And his maistere shitte þe dore anone
 And to her laboure spedely þei gone

This preest' at þis cursed chanons biddynge
 Vppon þe fure anon sette þis þinge 1145
 And blewe þe fire and busied hym ful fast'
 And this chanon into þis croslette cast'
 A powdere I note wherof it' was
 I-made eiper of chalk' or ellis of glasse 1149
 Or somewhat' ellis was not' worþ a flie
 To blynde wiþ þis preest' *and* bad hym hie
 These coles forto cowchen al aboue
 The crosselette: for in token þat' I þe loue 1153
 Quod þis Chanon þine hondes twoo
 Shal worche al þing' which as shal be doo
 Graunt' mercy quod þe preest' *and* was ful glad
 And cowched coles as þe chanoñ bad 1157
 And þe whilys he bisy was þis feendly wreche
 This fals chanon þe foule fende hym fecche
 Out' of his bosom toke a bechen cole
 In which ful sotilly was made an hole 1161
 And þer-in pitte was of siluere lymaille
 An vnce and stopped was wiþ-out' faille
 This hoole wiþ wex to kepe þe lymaille Inne
 And vnderstondeþ þat' þis fals gynne 1165
 was not' made þere but' it' was made bifore
 And oþer þingges I shal telle more
 Here-afterward' which þat' he wiþ hym brouzt'
 Ere he come þere to begile hym he þouzt' 1169
 And so did er þei went' atwynne [leaf 207]
 Til he had turned hym coupe he nat' blynne
 It' dulleþ me whan þat' I of hym speke
 On his falshede fayn wolde I be a-wreke 1173
 If I wist' howe but' he is here *and* there
 He is so variaunt' he bitte no where
 But' takeþ hede nowe sirs for goddys loue
 He toke his cole of whiche I speke aboue 1177
 And in his honde he bare it' prively
 And whiles þe preest' couched bisyly

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þe coles as I tolde 3ou er þis	
þis Chanon seide frende 3e done a-mys	1181
þis is not ^t couched as it ^t ou3t be	
But ^t sone I shal amende it ^t quod he	
Now lat ^t me medle þerwip but ^t a while	
ffor of 3ou haue I pite be seint ^t gyle	1185
3e bene rizt ^t hoothe I se wel howe 3e swete	
Haue here a cloþe and wipe away þe wete	
And whilys þe preest ^t his wy haas	
þis chanon toke his cole I shrewe his faas	1189
And laide it ^t vpon abouen þe mydward ^t	
Of þe Crosselette and blewe wel afterward ^t	
Til þat ^t þe Coles gonne fast ^t brenne	
Nowe 3eue vs drynk ^t quod þe chanoñ þen .	1193
As swith . al shal be wel I vndertake	
Sitte we a-doun and lat ^t vs mery make	
And whan þe chanons bechen cole	
Was brentte al þe lymaille out ^t of þe hole	1197
Into þe Crosselette anoñ fille adoorn	
And so it ^t most ^t nedes by resoun	
Sip it ^t so euen aboue couched was	
But ^t þerof wist ^t no þing ^t þe preste allas	1201
He demed al þe coles liche good	
ffor of þe scleizt ^t no þinge he vnderstood	
And whan this Alkamystere segh his tyme	
Riseþ vp sire preest ^t and stondeþ by me .	1205
And for I wote wele Ingot ^t haue 3e none	eaf 207, back]
Gop walkeþ forþ and bringeþ a chalk stone	
ffor I wil make it ^t of þe same shap	
That ^t is an Ingot ^t 3if I may haue happe	1209
And bringe wip 3ou a bolle or a panne	
fful of water and 3e shul see þan	
Howe þat ^t oure bysynesse shal happe and preue	
And 3it ^t for 3e shul haue no mysbileue	1213
Ne wronge conceite of me in 3oure absence	
I wil not ^t bene out ^t of 3oure presence	

But^t go wiþ ʒou and come wiþ ʒou agayn
 þe Chambere door shortely to sayn 1217
 They opned and shette *and* went^t forþ her way
 And forþ wiþ hem þei karied þe kay
 And *comme* ageyn wiþ-out^t eny delay
 What^t shuld I tary al þe longe day 1221
 He toke þe chalk^t and shope it^t in þe wise
 Of an Ingot^t as I shal ʒou deuysel
 I saie he toke out^t of his owne sleue
 A teyne of siluere euel mote he cheue 1225
 Whiche þat^t was but^t an vnce of weiȝt^t
 And takeþ hede nowe of þis cursed sleiȝt^t
 He shope his Ingot^t in length^t *and* in brede
 Of þe teyne wiþ-out^t eny drede 1229
 So selyȝly þat^t þe preest^t it^t not^t aspied
 And in his sleue agayn he gan it^t hide
 And from þe fire toke vp his matere
 And into þe Ingot^t it^t pitt *with* mery chere 1233
 And into þe water vessel he it^t cast^t
 whan þat^t him list^t *and* bad þe preest^t as fast^t
 Loke what^t þer is pitte in þine honde *and* grope
 Thow shalt^t fynde þere siluer as I hope 1237
 What^t deuel of helle shuld it^t ellis be
 Shavyng of siluere . siluere is *parde*
 He pitte In his honde and toke vp a teyne
 Of Syluere fyne and glad in euery veyne 1241
 was þis preest^t whan he segħ þat^t it^t was so [leaf 208]
 Goddys blessing^t and his moders also
 And alle halowes haue ʒe sir^t chanōn
 Saide þe preest^t and I her malysoñ 1245
 But^t and ʒe vouche-sauf to teche me
 This noble craft^t and þis sotilte
 I wil be ʒour in all þat^t euere I may
 Quod þe Chanoñ ʒit^t wil I make assay 1249
 The secounde tyme þat^t ʒe mow take hede
 And bene expert^t of þis and in ʒour nede

An^oper day [assaie] in myne absence
 This disciplyne and þis crafty science 1253
 ¶ Lat' take an^oper vnce quod he þoo
 Of quik siluer' wip-out' wordes moo /
 And doo þerwip as 3e han done er þis
 With þat' oþer which þat' now siluer' is 1257
 This preest' hym busieþ in al þat' he can
 To done as þis chanon þis cursed man
 Comaundeþ hym and fast' bloweþ þ^e fuyre
 fforto come to þe effecte of his desire 1261
 And þis chanon rizt' in þe mene while
 Al redy was þis preest' eft' to begile
 And for a countenance in his hand bare
 An holowe stik' take hede and be ware 1265
 In þe eende of which an vnce *and* no more
 Of syluere lymaille put' was al bifore
 was in his cole and stopped *with* wex wel
 fforto kepe in his lymaille euery deþ 1269
 And whilis þis preest' was in his bysynesse
 This Chanon wip his stik gan hym dresse
 To hym anon and' his powdere cast' Inne
 As he did eer þe deuel out' of his skynne 1273
 Hym turne I prey to god for his falshede
 ffor he was euer fals in oþe and dede
 And wip his stik' aboute þe crosselette
 That' was ordeyned wip þat' fals gette . 1277
 He stireþ þe coles til relente gan [leaf 208, back]
 The wex a-gayn þe fuyr as euery man
 But' it' a fool be wote wele & mote nede
 And alle þat' in þe hole was . out' 3ede 1281
 And into þe crosselette hastely it' felle
 The preest' supposed no þing' but' wel
 But' bisied him fast' and was wonder' fayn
 Supposing' nouzt' but' trouþe soþ to sayn 1285
 He was so glad I can not' expresse
 In no manere his myrth and his gladnesse

And to þe Chanon he *profred* eft' sone
 Body and good 3e quod þe chanon sone 1289
 þou3e poor I be crafty þow shalt me fynde
 I warne þe 3it' is þer more behinde
 Is þere eny copoure here In saide he
 3e sir' quod þe preest I trowe þer be 1293
 Ellis goo by some and þat' as swithe
 Now sir' go forþ þi way *and* hithe.
 And went' his way and *with* þis coper he cam
 And þis chanon it in his honde it' nam. 1297
 And of þat' copere weyed out' but' an vnce
 Al to symple is my tunge to pronunce
 His monstre as his witte þe doublenesse
 Of þis Chanon roote of cursednesse 1301
 He semed frendely to hem þat' knewe hym nou3t'
 Bot' he was feendly boþ in werk and þou3t'
 It' werieþ me to telle of his falsnesse
 And nathelees 3it' wil I it' expresse 1305
 To þat' entent' men may be ware þerby
 And for noon oþere cause trewly
 He putt þis vnce of copere into þe crosselette
 And on the fuyre as swithe he hap it' sette 1309
 And kest' In powdere and made þ^e preest' to blowe
 And in his worching' for to stoupe lowe
 As he did erst' and al nys but' a Iape
 Ri3t' as him list' þe preest' he made his Ape 1313
 And afterward' into the Ingot' he it' cast' [leaf 209]
 And in þe panne pitt' it' atte last'
 Of watere and in he pitte his owne honde
 And in his seleue as 3e to-fornhonde 1317
 Herd me telle he had a siluer' teyne
 He selily toke it' out' þis cursed heyne
 Vnwetinge þis preest' of his fals craft'
 And in þe pannes botme he hap it' laft'. 1321
 And in þe watere rombleþ too and froo /
 And wondere prively toke it' vp also

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- þe Copere teyne nat^t knowing^t þis preest^t
 And hid it^t and hente hym by þe breest^t 1325
 And to hym spake and þus seide in his game ./
 Stowpeþ a-downe by god 3e be to blame .
 Helpeþ me nowe as I did 3owe whilere
 Putte Inne 3oure honde and lokeþ what^t is þere 1329
 This preest^t toke vp þis siluere teyne anone
 And þan seide þe chanoñ lat^t vs gone
 Wip þise þre teynes whiche þat^t we han wrou3t^t
 To *somme* goldsmyth^t and wit^t 3if it^t be ou3t^t 1333
 ffor be my feiþe I nolde for myne hode
 But^t if þei were siluere fyne *and* goode
 And þat^t as swiþe proued shal it^t be
 Vnto þe goldsmythe wip þise teynes þre 1337
 went^t þei and pitte þise teynes *in* assay
 To fyre and hamere my3t^t no man say nay
 But^t þei were as hem ou3te to be
 This sotted preest^t who was glad but^t he 1341
 Was neuere bridde gladdere a3einst^t þe day
 Ne ny3tyngale in þe sesoñ of may .
 was neuere noon þat^t list^t better to synge
 Ne lady lustyer in Carolynges . . . 1345
 And forto speke of loue and wommanhede
 Ne knyght^t in armes done an hardy dede
 To stonden in grace of his lady dere .
 Than had þis preest^t þis craft^t to lere . 1349
 And to þe chanon þus he speke *and* saide
 ffor þe loue of god þat^t for vs deyde ./
 And as I may deserue it^t vnto yowe [leaf 209, back]
 What^t shal þis Receyte cost^t telleþ nowe 1353
 By oure lady quod þis chanon it^t is dere /
 I warne 3ou . for saaf I and a frere
 In Engelonde þer can no man it^t make
 No fors quod he nowe sir^t for goddys sake / 1357
 What^t shal I paye telle me I þe pray
 Iwis quod [he] it^t is ful dere I saie /

Sir' at' oon woord' if þat' þe lest' it' haue
 3e shul paye xl. ii. so god me saue. 1361
 And ne were þe frendship þat' 3e did er þis
 To me / 3e shuld paie more ywis ./
 This preest' þe some of fourty pounde anoñ
 Of nobles fette and toke hem euerechoñ 1365
 To þis Chanoñ for þis ilk receite
 AH his worchinge was strawe *and* deceite
 Sir' preest' he saide I kepe forto haue no loos
 Of my craft' for I wold it' were kept' cloos 1369
 And as 3e loue me kepeþ it' secre
 ffor and men knewe al my sotilte
 By god men wolde haue so grete envie
 To me by cause of my philosophie 1373
 I Shuld be dede þer nys noon oþer waye
 God it' for-bede quod þe preest' what' say 3e.
 3it' had I leuere spenden al þe good'
 Which þat' I haue and ellys wexe I wood / 1377
 Than þat' 3e shuld fallen in such meschief'
 ffor 3oure good wille sir' haue 3e ri3t' good preef'
 Quod þe Chanon. and sir'. of't graunt mercy
 He went' his way þat' neuere þe preest' hym sie 1381
 Aftere þat' day and whan þis preest' shulde
 Maken assay at' suche tyme as he wolde
 Of þis Receite. fare wel it' wold nat' be
 Loo þus byiaped and begiled was he 1385
 Thus makeþ he his Introducciōn
 To bringe folk to her destructiōn
 Considereþ surs howe þat' in eche astaat'
 Bytwix men and gold þer is debaat' 1389
 So fer forþ þat' vnneþes þer is oon
 This multiplyinge so blendeþ mony oñ
 That' in good faip I trowe þat' it' be
 The cause grettest' of þe grete scarcete 1393
 Thise philosophres speken so mystely
 In þis craft' þat' men can not' come þerby

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

ffor eny witte þat men han now adayes .
 þei may wel Chitere and iangle as doñ þise Iaies 1397
 And in her teemes sette lust *and* peyne
 But to her *purpoos* shul þei neuere atteyne
 A man may listly lerne zif he haue ouzte
 To multiplie and bringe his good to nouzte 1401
 Loo suche a lucre is in þis lusty game .
 A mannes merþe wil it turne al to grame
 And empty also grete and heuy purses .
 And make folk to purchasen curses 1405
 Of hem þat han þerto her good ylent
 O. fy for shame þei þat han be brent
 Allas can þei nat flee þe fires hete
 3e þat it losen I rede 3e it lete 1409
 lest 3e lesen aH. for bette þan neuere is late
 Neuere to þrive were to longe a date
 Thouze 3e prolle ay 3e shul it neuer fynde
 3e bene as bolde as is bayard þe blynde 1413
 That blundreþ forþ and perile casteþ noñ
 He was bolde to renne azeinst a stoñ
 As forto goo be sides in þe way
 ¶ Soo faren 3e þat multiplien I say 1417
 3if þat oure eyen can nat seen arizt
 Lokeþ þat 3oure mynde lak nat his sizt
 ffor þouze 3e loke neuere so brode and stare
 3e shul nat wynne a myte in þat chaffare 1421
 But waasten aH þat 3e may rappe *and* renne
 Wiþdrawe þe fuyre lest it so fast brenne
 Medleth no more wiþ þat art I mene .
 ffor zif 3e doon 3oure þrift is goon ful clene 1425 .
 And rizt as swiþe I wil 3ou telle here
 What þat þe philosophres seyn in þis matere
 Loo þus seiþ alnold of þe newe tounne [leaf 210, back]
 As his rosarie makeþ mencioun 1429
 He seiþ rizt þus wiþ-oute eny lie
 Ther may no man mercury mortefie

But^t 3if it^t be wij^þ his broþers knowleccheinge
 Howe þat^t he which^þ þat^t ferst^t seide þis þinge 1433
 Of philosophres fader was hermes
 He seiþ how þat^t þe dragon doutelees /
 Ne dyeþ nat^t but^t 3if he be sclayn
 Wij^þ his broþer and þat^t is forto sayne 1437
 By þe dragon mercurye and noon oþer
 He vnderstood þat^t bremstone were his broþer
 þat^t out^t of sol and luna were ydrawe
 And þerfore saide he take hede to my sawe 1441
 Lat^t no man bisie him þis arte forto seche .
 But^t he þat^t þe entenciõn and speche
 Of philosophres vnderstonde can
 And if he doo he is a lewde man . 1445
 ffor þis science and þis conyng^t *quod* he
 Is of þe secree of secrees parde
 Also þer was a disciple of plato
 þat^t on a tyme saide his maister^t too . 1449
 As his boke somere wil bere witnesse
 And þis was his demaunde en soþfastnesse
 Tel me þe name of a priue stoõn
 And plato answered vnto hym anoõn 1453
 Take þe stoon þat^t Titanos men name
 Which^þ is þat^t quod he magnasia is þe same
 His disciple seide 3e sire and is it^t þus
 þis is ignotum per ignocius 1457
 What^t is magnasia good sire I pray
 It^t is a watere þat^t is made I saye
 Of elementes foure quod Plato .
 Telle me þe roche good sire quod he þoo . 1461
 Of þat^t watere if it^t be 3oure wille
 Nay nay quod Plato certeyn þat^t I nyht
 The philosophres were sworn echoõn
 þat^t þei shulde diskeuere it^t to no moõn 1465
 Ne in no booke it^t write in no manere
 ffor vnto crist^t it^t is so leef and dere . [leaf 211]

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þat he wil nat þat it' diskeuered be
 But where it' likeþ to his deite 1469
 Man to enspire and eke forto defende
 Whan þat him likeþ loo þis is þe ende
 Than conclude I þus siþens þat' god of heuene
 Ne wil not' þat' þe philisophres neuene 1473
 How þat a man shal come vnto þis stone
 I rede as for the best' lat' it gone
 ffor who so makeþ god his aduersarye
 As forto worche eny þinge in contrarie 1477
 Vnto his wille certes neuere shal he thryve
 pouze þat' he multiplie teerme of his lyue
 And þer a poynt' for eended is my tale .
 God seende euery trewe man boote of his bale / 1481
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe chanons 3eman his tale

And here bigynneþ þe prologe of þe doctour of Phisike
[on leaf 211]

Whan þat þis zeman his tale ended hadde ¶ **The prolog.**
 Of þis fals Chanon which þat was so badde
 Our hoost gan say trewly & in certayn
 þis preest was begiled sople forto sayn 4
 He wenyng forto be a philosophre
 Til he lift rize nouzt in his Cophre
 And sople þis preest had a liþer Iape
 This cursed chanon put in his hode an ape 8
 But al þis passe I ouer as nowe
 Sir doctour of phisik I prey 3ou
 Telle vs a tale of some honest matere
 It shal be done 3if þat 3e wil it here 12
 Saide þis doctour and his tale bygan anon
 Now good men quod he harkenþ euerechon

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe doctour of phisik

My lorde and I bene fully atte acorde
 I made hir' to þe worship of my lorde
 So doo I alle myne oþer creatures
 Of what' coloure þei be or what' figures 28
 Thus semeþ me þat' nature wolde say
 This maide was of age .xij. 3ere *and* tway
 In whiche þat' nature haþ such delite
 ffor ri3t' as she can peynt' aþ lily white 32
 And roody as roose ri3t' wiþ such peynture
 She peynted haþ þis noble creature
 Er she was born vpon her lymes fre
 Were also bri3t' as such coloures my3t' be . 36
 And phebus died had her tresses grete
 Like to þe stremes of his boorned hete
 And 3if þat' excellent' was her bewte
 A thowsand folde more vertuouus was she 40
 In hur' ne lackeþ no condicioñ
 þat' is to preise as by discrecioñ .
 As wel in body as goost' chaast' was she [leaf 212]
 ffor which she flowred in virginite 44
 Wiþ al humilite and abstinence
 Wiþ alle attemperance and paciencie
 Wiþ mesure eke in beringe of araye .
 Discrete she was in answering' alwaye 48
 And she was wis as pallas dar I seyn
 Hir' facoñ eke ful womanly *and* pleyñ
 Noon counterfeted teermes had shee
 ¶ To seme wise but' after her degree . 52
 She spak and alle her wordes more *and* lasse
 Sownynge in vertue and in gentelnasse
 Shamefast' she was in maidens shamfastnesse
 Constant' in hert' and euere *in* bysynesse 56
 To drive hur' out' of her selloggardrie
 Bachus had of her mouþe no maistrie
 ffor wille and þou3t' done Venus encrece
 As men in fire wil casten oile or grece 60

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And of her owne vertue vnconstreyned .	
She haþe ful oft' tyme hur' seke feyned .	
ffor þat' she wolde flee þe companye	
where likly was to treten of folye	64
As is at' feestys . Reuels . and daunces	
Whiche bene occasioñ of daliaunces	
Suche þingges maken children forto be .	
To sone ripe and bolde as men may see	68
Which is ful <i>perilous</i> and haþ bene 3oure	
ffor al to sone may she lerne lore .	
Of boldnesse whan she is a wiff	
And 3e Maistresses in 3oure olde liff'	72
þat' lordes dou3ters han in <i>gouernaunce</i>	
Ne takeþ of my wordes no displeaunce	
Thingges þat' bene sette in <i>gouernyngges</i>	
Of lordys dou3ters oonly for two þingges	76
Oyþer for 3e han kepte 3oure honeste	
Oyþere ellis 3e han falle in freelte	
And knowen wel ynou3e þe olde daunce	
And konne for-sake fully [such] <i>meschaunce</i> .	80
ffor enermoo þerfor for cristes sake	[leaf 212, back]
kepeþ wel þoo þat' 3e vndertake	
A thief for venyson þat' hath forlaft'	
His likerousnesse and al his þeeues craft'	84
Can kepe a forest' best' of eny man .	
Now kepeþ hem wel for and 3e wil 3e can .	
lokeþ wel to no vice þat' 3e assente .	
Lest' 3e be dampned for 3oure euel entente .	88
ffor who so doþ a <i>traitoure</i> is certeyn .	
And takeþ [kepe] of þat' þat' I shal seyn .	
Of al treson suffreyñ pestilence .	
Is whan a wizt' bitraieþ innocence .	92
3e faders and 3e moders eke also .	
þou3e 3e han children be it' on or twoo .	
3oure is þe charge of al her <i>suffraunce</i> .	
Whiles þei bene vnder <i>gouernaunce</i>	96

Be ware þat' by ensample of 3our' lyuyngē
 Eþere by necligence in chaastisinge
 þat' þei ne perisshe for I dar wel saye
 3if þat' 3e done 3e shul ful sore abaye 100
 vndere a sheparde . soft' and negligent'
 þe wolf haþ mony a shepe and lomb to-rent'
 Suffiseþ oon ensample nowe as here
 ffor I mot/ turne a3ein to my matere 104
 ¶ This maide of which I telle my tale expresse .
 She kept' her self her neded no maistresse .
 ffor in her lyuyngē maidens my3t' rede
 As in a booke euery good woord and dede 108
 þat' longeþ to a maide vertuous
 She was so prudent' and so bounteuous .
 ffor whiche [þe fame] out' spronge on euery side .
 Both of her bewte and of her bounte wide . 112
 þat' þorowe þe londe þei praised hure echnō .
 þat' loued vertue sauf envie allone .
 þat' sorie is of oþer mennys wele
 ¶ And glad is of his sorowe and vnhele 116
 The doctoure makeþ þis descripcioun
 This maide went' on a day into þe town
 Toward' þe temple wiþ her modere dere [leaf 213]
 As is of yonge maidens þe manere 120
 Now was þer a Iustice in þe toune
 þat' gouernere was of þat' Region
 And so bifelle þis Iuge his eyen cast'
 Vppon þis mayde avisinge hir' ful fast' 124
 As she came forþe by þere þe Iuge stood .
 Anon his hert' chaungeþ *and* his mood' .
 So was he kau3t' wiþ þe bewte of þis maide
 And to him silf ful priuely he saide 128
 This maide shal be myn for eny man .
 Anoñ þe feende into his hert' ran
 And tau3t' him sodeynly by what' scli3t'
 The maide to his purpoos wyne he my3t' 132

ffor certis by no force ne by no mede
 Him pouzt he was not able forto spede .
 ffor he was stronge of freendes *and* eke she
 Confeirmed was in such souereyn bewte 136
 þat wel he wist he myzt her neuere wynne
 As forto make here wiþ hur' body synne
 ffor whiche wiþ grete deliberacioun
 He sent after a clerk into þe toune . 140
 þe whiche he knewe for subtile or for bold
 This Iuge vnto þis clerk his tale haþ told
 In secre wise and made him to assure
 He shulde telle it to no creature . 144
 And if he did he shulde lese his hede
 whan assented was þis cursed rede
 Glad was þe Iuge and made glad chere
 And 3aue hym 3iftes precious *and* dere 148
 whan shapen was all þis conspiracie
 ffrom poynt to poynt how þat þis lecherie
 Perfourmed shulde be ful sotelly
 And 3e shul here afterward openly 152
 Home goþ this clerk þat hizt Claudius
 This fals Iuge þat hizt apius
 So was his name for it is no fable
 But knowen for an historial þing notable . 156
 The sentence of hit soþ is out of dowte [leaf 213, back]
 This fals Iuge goþ nowe fast aboute
 To hasten his delit and þat he may
 And so bifelle sone after on a day . 160
 This fals Iuge as telleþ vs þe story
 As he was wonned in his consistorie
 And 3af his doomes vpon sondrie caas
 This fals Clerk came forþ a wel good paas . 164
 And saide lord if þat it be 3oure wille
 As doþ me rizt vpon þis pitous bille
 In whiche I pleyn vpon Virginius .
 And 3if þat he wol sayn it is nat þus 168

I wiþ proue it and fynde good wittnesse
 þat soþe is þat my bille wil expresse
 þe Iuge answerde of þis in his absence
 I may not 3eue diffinitif sentence 172
 Lat doon hym calle *and* I wiþ gladly here
 þou shalt haue ri3t and no wronge here
 Virginius came to witte þe Iuges wille
 And ri3t anoon was rad þis cursed bille 176
 ¶ The sentence of hit was as 3e shul here
 To 3owe my lord sir Apius so dere
 Sheweþ 3our poor *seruaunte* Claudius
 How þat a kny3t called Virginius 180
 A3einst þe lawe a3einst al equite
 Holdeþ expresse a3einst þe wille of me .
 My seruaunt which þat is þral be ri3t
 Which from myn hous was stolen on a ny3t 184
 þe whiles she was ful 3enge I wil it preue
 By wittnesse lord so þat 3e 3ou nat greue
 She is nat his dou3tere what so he saye
 wherfore my lord þe Iuge to 3ou I praye 188
 3eelde me my thraff if þat it be 3our wille
 loo þis was alle þe sentence of þe bille
 Virginius gan vpon þe clerk biholde
 ¶ But hastely er he his tale tolde 192
 he wold haue defended it as shuld a kny3t
 And by wittnesse of mony a trewe wi3t
 That al was fals þat saide his aduersarie [leaf 214]
 This cursed Iuge wold no lenger tarye 196
 Ne here oon woord more of Virgyneus
 But 3af his Iugement and saide þus .
 I deme anoon þis clerk his *seruaunte* haue
 Thow shalt no longer in þine hous hir saue 200
 Goo bringe hir forþ and put hur in our warde
 This Clerk shal haue his þraff þus I awarde
 And whan þis worþi kny3t Virgineus
 Thorgh þe assent of þe Iuge Apius 204

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Most^t by force his dere douztere zeuen
 Vnto the Iuge in lechery to lyuen .
 He goop hym home and sette hym *in* his halle
 And lete anon his deer douzter³ calle . 208
 And wiþ a face dede as asshen colde
 Vpon her humble face he can biholde
 Wiþ faders pite stikyng^t þorgh his herte
 Al wold he nat^t from his purpoos *conuerte* 212
 Doughtere *quod* he Virginea be þi name
 þer bene twoo weies . oiper deþ oiper shame
 þat^t thow most^t suffre allas þat^t I was bore
 ffor neuer þou deseruedest^t wherfore 216
 To dyen wiþ a sweerd or wiþ a knyft^t
 O dere douzter ender of my lif
 Which I haue fostred vp wiþ suchⁿ plesaunce
 þat^t þou ne were out^t of my remembraunce 220
 O doughtere which þat^t art^t my last^t woo .
 And in lif my last^t Ioie also
 O gemme of chastite *in* pacience
 Take þou þi deþ for þis is my sentence 224
 ffor loue and nat^t for hate þou most^t be dede
 My pitous honde mote smyten of þine hede
 Allas þat^t euer Apius þe say
 Thus hap he falsly Iuged þe to day 228
 And tolde hur^t al þe caas as ze bifore
 Haue herd it^t nedep telle it^t no more
 Mercy dere fadere *quod* þis maide
 And wit^t þat^t worð she boþ hure armes laide . 232
 Aboute his nek as she was wonned to doo
 þe teeres brosten out^t of her eyen twoo
 A[n]d saide good fadere shal I dye
 Is þere no grace is þer no remedye 236
 No certes dere douzter myn *quod* he .
 Than zeue me leue fader myn *quod* she .
 My deþ [for] to compleyn a litel space
 ffor parde Ieffa 3aue his douztere grace 240

[leaf 214, back]

fforto compleyn er he her sclouze alas .
 And god it' woot' no þing' was his *trespas*
 But' þan she ranne her fader first' to see
 To welcome him wiþ grete solempnite 244
 And wiþ þat' word' she felle a swoun anoñ
 And aftere whan her swownyng' was agoñ
 She riseþ vp and to her fadere saide
 Blessed be god þat' I shal die a maide 248
 3eue me my deef er þat I haue a shame
 Doþ wiþ 3oure childe 3our' wille a goddys name
 And wiþ þat' word she preieþ [him] ful oft'
 That' wiþ his swerde he shuld smyte her soft' 252
 And wiþ þat' woord' in swowne doune she felle
 Hur' fadere wiþ ful sorrowful hert' *and* felle
 Hure hede of smote and by þe top it' hent'
 And to the Iuge he 3aue it' to present' 256
 As he satte in his doome *in* consistorie
 And whan þe Iuge it' seie as seiþ þe storie
 He bad take him and honge hym also fast'
 But' rizt' anoon al þe puple in þrast' 260
 To saue þe knyzt' for rewþe *and* for pite
 ffor knowen was þe fooles iniquite
 The puple anoon had suspecte *in* þis þinge
 By manere of þis clerkes chalengynge 264
 þat' it' was by þassent' of Apius .
 þei wist' wel þat' he was lecherus
 ffor which vnto þis Apius þei goñ
 And casten hym in prison rizt' anōn 268
 Wher as he sclogh̄ hym self *and* Claudius
 þat' Seruaunte was vnto þis Apius
 Was demed forto honge vpon a tree [leaf 215]
 But' Virginius of his grete pite 272
 Preide for hym þat' he was exiled'
 And ellis certys he had be begiled'
 The remenant' were honged more *and* lesse
 þat' consented were to þis cursednesse / 276

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Here may men see howe synne hap his merite
 Be ware for no man woote how god wil smyte
 In no degree ne in which manere wise
 þe worme of conscience wil arise . 280
 Of wicked lif þough it so prive be
 þat no man woote of it. but god and hee
 Where he be lewde man or lered
 He note howe sone he may be afered . 284
 Therefore I rede 3ou this counsel take
 fforsakeþ synne er synne 3ou forsake

	The prologue of þe Pardoner.	
O ur hoost gan swere as he were wood	þe Pardoner.	288
Harowe quod he by nailles and by blood		
This was a cursed þeef a fals Iustise		
As shameful deef as herte can deuise .		
Come to þe Iustise and her aduocas .		
Aigates þis sely womman is sclayn alas .		292
Allas dere abouzte she bewtee .		
Wherfore I say alday þat man may se		
That gift of fortune or of nature		
Bene cause of deþ of mony a creature		296
[Hir' beaute was hir' deth I dar' well sayn .	<small>[Harl. 1758, on leaf 150, back]</small>	
Allas so pitously as sche was slayn .]		
As boþ giftes as I speke of nowe		
Men han ful oft' more harme þan prowē		300
But' trewly myne owne maister dere		
This is a pitous tale for to here		
But' napelees passe ouer is no fors		
I prey to god to saue þi gentile cors /		304
And þine vrynales and þi Iordans		
þine ypocras and eke þi Galyans		
And euery box ful of þi letwarye		
God blesse hem and our' lady seint' Marye		308
So mote I the þou art a propre man .		
And like a prelate by seynt' Runyan .		
Saue þat I can not speke wel in terme	<small>[leaf 215, back]</small>	
But' wel I woote þou doost' myn hert' eerme		312
That I haue almost' kaught' a Cardyacle		
By corps boones but' I haue triacle		
Or ellis a drauzt' of moist' or corny ale		
Or but' I here anon a mery tale		316

GROUP C. § 2. DOCTOR-PARDONER LINK. **Petworth MS.**

My hert' is lost' for pite of þis maide
 þowe belamy Iohñ pardonere he saide
 Telle vs some merþe or Iapes riȝt' anōn
 he shal be done quod he be seynt' Runyōn 320
 But' furst' quod he here at' þe next' ale stake
 I wil boþ drink' and ete of a cake
 But' riȝt' anoñ þise gentiles goñ to crye
 Nay lat' hym telle vs of no Rybaudrye. 324
 Telle vs some moral þing' þat' we may lere
 Somme witte and þan wil we gladly here
 I graunt' Iwis quod he but' I mote þink'
 Vpon som honest' þinge whiles þat' I drink' / 328

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe pardonere.

And here bygynneþ the tale.

[on leaf 215, back]

L oldingges quod he in church whan I preche	¶ The tale
I peyn me to haue an haütyn speche	
I ryngt it out as rounde as goþ a belle	
ffor I can al by roote þat I telle	332
My teeme is alway oon and euere was .	
Radix omnium malorum est cupiditas .	
ffirst I pronouns whennys þat I come	
And þan my bulles schewe aH and some /	336
Our liege lordes seel on my patent'	
þat shewe I furst' my body to warent'	
That' no man be so bolde preest' ne clerk'	
Me to distrowbe of cristes holy werk'	340
And after þat' telle I forþ my tales	
Bulles of popes and of Cardynales .	
Of patriarkes and bisshoppes I shewe .	
And in latyn I speke a wordys fewe	344
To sauer wiþ my predicacioñ	
And forto stirre men to deuocioñ	
Than shewe I forþ my longe cristal stones	[leaf 216]
Ycrommed ful of clowtes and of bones .	348
Relikes þei bene as wene men echoñ	
þan haue I in laton a sholdere bone	
Which þat' was an holy Iwes shepe	
Good men say I take at' my wordes kepe	352
3if þat' þis boon be wasshen in a welle	
3if kowe or calf . shepe or oxe swelle	
þat' eny worme hath ete or stonge	
About' þe hert' or ellis þe longe	356

GROUP C. § 3. PARDONER'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

It is hool anon and ferþermore
 Of pokkes and of scabbe *and* of euery sore
 Shal euery shepe be hool þat' of þis welle
 Drynkeþ a drauȝt take hede what' I telle 360
 Ȝif þat' þe good man þat' þe beest' oweþ
 Wil euery weke er þat' þe Cok hym croweþ
 ffastinge drink' of þis welle a drauȝte .
 As þilk' holy Iwe our' eldere tauȝte 364
 His beestees and his stoor shal multiplie
 And sirs also it' heleþ Ialowsie
 And þouȝe a man be fallen in a Ialous rage
 Lat' maken wiþ þis watere his potage 368
 And neuer shal he [more] his wif mystrust'
 þouȝe he þe soþ of hure defaute wost'
 Al had she taken · preestes tweyn · or þree
 Here is a myten eke þat' ȝe may see 372
 He þat' his honde wil putte in þis myteyn
 He shal haue multiplynge of his greyn
 Whan he haþ sawen be it' whete or otys
 So þat' he bringe me good' pans or ellis grotys . 376
 And men and wommen · oo þing' I warne ȝowe
 Ȝif eny wiȝt' be in þis churche nowe
 þat' haþ doo synne horrible [so] þat' he
 Dar not' for shame of it' shryuen be 380
 Or eny womman be she ȝong' or olde
 That' haþ made her husbonde Cukwold'
 Suche folk' shal haue no power ne no grace
 To offre to my relikes in þis place . 384
 And who so findeþ hym out' of such' blame [leaf 216, back]
 Thei wil come vp and offre in goddis name
 And I assoille hym by þe autorite
 Such' as my bulle was graunted to me 388
 By þis gaude haue I wonnen euery ȝeere
 An .C. Mark sipens I was pardonere .
 I stonde like a clerk' in my pulpitte
 And schewe lewde puples synne ysette 392

I preche so as I haue lered by-fore
 And telle an hundred Iapes more.
 Than peyne I me to streche forþ þe necke
 And eest^t and west^t vppon þe puple I bekke 396
 As doþ a dowue sitting^t vppon a beerne
 Myne hondes and my tunge goñ ful 3erne
 þat^t it^t is ioye to see my bysynesse
 Of auarice and suche cursednesse. 400
 Is al my prechinge for to make hem free
 To 3eue her pans and namely vnto me
 ffor myn entent^t is nat^t but^t forto wynne
 And noþinge for correctiõ of synne 404
 I rekke neuere whan þat^t þei bene buried
 þouze þat^t her saules goo o blakburied.
 ffor certes mony a predicaciõ
 Commeþ ofte tyme of euel entencioñ 408
 Somme of plesaunce of folk^t and of flaterye
 To bene auaunced by ypocresie
 And somme for veynglorie and for hate
 ffor whan I dar nat^t oþer waies debate 412
 Than wil I styngge hem wiþ my tunge smerte
 In prechinge so that^t he shal not^t sterte
 To bene defamed falsely so þat^t he
 haþ trespassed to my breþeren or to me 416
 ffor þouze I telle nat^t his propre name
 Men shal wel knowe þat^t it is þe same
 By somme signe and oþer circumstaunces
 Thus smyte I folk^t þat^t doñ vs displesaunces. 420
 Thus spitte I out^t my venyme vnder hwe
 Of holynesse to semen holy and trewe
 But^t shortely myne entent^t I wil devise ./ [leaf 217]
 I preche of no þinge but^t of Couetise ./ 424
 þerfore my teeme is 3it^t and euer was
 Radix omnium malorum est cupiditas
 Thus can I preche azeinst^t þe same vice
 Which þat^t I vse and þat^t is Auarice 428

But þouze my self be giltif in þat synne .
 3it can I make oþer folk to wyne
 ffrom auarice and soor hem repent
 But þat nys not my principal entent 432
 I preche nat but for coueityse
 Of þis matere it ouzt ynowe suffise
 Than telle I hem ensamples mony ooñ
 Of olde stories longe tyme agoñ 436
 ffor lewde puple louen tales olde
 which þingges þei conne report and hold
 What trow ze þe whiles I may preche
 And wyne gold and siluere forto teche 440
 þat I wil lyve in pouert wilfully
 Nay nay I þouzt it neuere trewly .
 ffor I wil preche and begge in sondry londys
 I nyl do no laboure wiþ my hondes . 444
 Ne make baskettes for to lyve þer-by
 Because I wil not lyuen ydelly
 I wil noon of þe apostels counterfete
 I wil haue money . malt chees and whete 448
 Al were it zeuen of þe poorest page
 Eyþere of þe poorest wydowe in a vilage
 Al shulde her children sterue or famyne
 And I wil drink þe licourest of þe wyne 452
 And haue a ioly wenche in euery toun
 But harkenþ lordes in conclusioun
 3oure liking is þat I shal telle a tale
 Now haue I dronken . a drauht of corny ale 456
 By god I hope I shal tel 3ou a þinge
 þat shal of reson be at 3oure likinge
 ffor þouze my self be a vicious man .
 I morale tale 3it I 3ou telle can . 460
 Whiche Iames went to preche forto wyne . [leaf 217, back]
 Now holdeþ 3oure pees my tale I wil bygynne .

In flannndres whilom was a companye [on leaf 217, back]
 Of yonge folk þat' haunted folye 464
 As hasard' Riot' / stewes . *and* tauernes .
 Harpes . Rubibes . lutes and giternes .
 þei dauncen and pleyen at' þe dys nyzt' *and* day
and Eten also ouer þat' her myzt' may 468
 Thorgh whiche þei do þe deuel sacrifice
 Wiþ-in þe deuels temple in sondry wise
 By superfluite abhominable
 Her opes bene so grete *and* damnable 472
 þat' it' is grisly forto here hem swere
 Our blessed lordys body þei to-tere
 Hem þouzt' þe Iwes rent' hym nat' ynowe
 And ilk' of hem at' oþer synne loowe 476
 And rizt' anoñ commen Inne þan tomblesters
 ffetys and smale and zong' fruters
 Syngers wiþ harpes . bawdes *and* waifrons
 Such' bene verrey þe deuels officers . 480
 To kyndel and blowe þe fyre of leccherye
 That' is annexed [vn]to glotenye
 The holy writt' take I to witesse
 þat' lecherie is in wyne *and* dronknesse 484
 ¶ Lo howe þat' dronken Lotli vnkindely ¶ nolite inebriari
 Lay by his douzters two vnwittyngly vino in quo est
 So dronken he was he nyst' what' he wrouzt' luxuria
 Herodes who so hap' þe stories souzt' 488
 [.
 *no spurious lines in this MS.*]

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

whan he of wyne was replete at ^t his feest ^t	489
Rizt ^t at ^t his owne table 3af his heest	
To sleen þe baptist ^t Iohñ ful giltelees	
Senec ^e saiþ a good word ^t doutelees .	¶ Seneca 492
He seiþ he can no difference fynde	
Betwix a man þat ^t is out ^t of his mynde	
And a man þat ^t is dronklewe	
But ^t þat ^t woodenesse is fallen in a shrewe	496
Perseuereþ lenger þan doþ dronknesse	
O glotený ful of Cursednesse .	
O cause furst ^t of our ^t confusioñ	[leaf 218]
Oryginal of our dampnacioñ	500
Til crist ^t had bouzt ^t vs wip his blood agayñ	
Lo how dere shortely forto sayne	
About ^t was þe Cursed vilanye	¶ Ieronymus contra Io-
Corrupte was as þis world ^t þorgh ^t glotenye	uinianum <i>Quamdiu ie-</i>
Adam oure fadere <i>and</i> his wif also	<i>imauit adam in para-</i>
ffrom <i>paradis</i> to labour and to woo	<i>diso . fuit . Cmedit &</i>
Were driven for þat ^t wise it ^t is no drede	<i>eiectus est statim</i>
ffor whiles þat ^t adam fasted as I rede	508
He was in <i>paradys</i> and whan þat ^t hee	
Ete of þe fruyte defended on þe tree .	
Anoon he was out ^t cast ^t to woo & peyne	
O glotenye on þe wel ouzt ^t vs pleyne	512
O wist ^t a man how mony maladyes	
ffoloweþ of excesse and of glotonyes	
He wolde bene þe more mesurable	
Of his diete sitting ^t at ^t his table	516
Allas þe short ^t þrote þe tender mouþe	
Makeþ þat ^t Est ^t and West ^t norþe & souþe	
In erthe in eire in watere men to synk ^t	
To geten a gloton deynte mete <i>and</i> drink ^t	520
Of þis matere o poule wel cast ^t þou trete	
Mete vnto wombe and wombe eke vnto mete	
Shal god distroie boþ as Powle seiþ	
Allas a foule þinge it ^t is be my feiþ .	524

To saie þis worde and foulere is þe dede
 Whan men so drinken of þe white *and* rede
 þat of his þrote he makeþ his priuce
 Thorgh þilk' cursed Superfluite 528
 þe Apostel wepinge seiþ ful pitously
 þer walken mony of which tolde haue I
 I saie it' nowe weping' wiþ pitous vois
 þer bene enemyes of cristes croys 532
 Of whiche þe eende is deþ. Wombe is her god
 O wombe o baly. o stynging' cod.
 ffulfilled of donge. and of corrupciõ
 At eiper eende of þe foule is þe sesoñ 536
 Howe grete cost' and labour is to fynde [leaf 218, back]
 These Cokes howe þei stampe streyne *and* grynde
 And turnen substañce into accident'
 To ffulfille alle þe likerous talent' 540
 Out' of þe hard bones knockke þei
 þe mary for þei cast' nat' away
 þat' may goo þorgh þe golett' sauf' *and* soote
 Of spicery of leeuves berk' and roote 544
 Shal bene his sause ymade be delite
 To maken hym zit' a newe appetite
 But' certes he þat' haunteþ suche delices
 Is dede whiles þat' he lyueþ in þoo vices 548
 A lecherous þinge is wyne *and* dronknesse
 It' is ful of strivinge and of wrecchednesse
 O dronken man disfigured in þi face
 ffoule is þi breeþ foule art' þou to embrace 552
 And þorgh þi dronken nose souneþ þ' soune
 As þouze þou seidest ay Sampson Sampson
 And zit' god woot sampson dronk neuere no wyne
 þow fallest' as it' were a dronken swyne 556
 þi tunge is lost' and alle þine honest' Cure
 ffor dronknesse is verray sepulture
 Of mannys witte and his discreciõ
 In whom þat' drink' haþ dominaciõ 560

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

He can no counsaile kepe it' is no drede
 Nowe kepe 3ou from þe white *and* fro þe rode
 Namely from þe white wyne of lepe
 þat' is to selle in fisshstrete *and* in chepe 564
 This wyne of spayn crepeþ subtilly
 In oþer wynes growinge faste by
 Of woche riseth suche fumosite
 þat' whan a man haþ dronke a drauzt' or þre 568
 And weneþ þat' he be at' home in chepe
 þan is he in spayn rizt' at' þe toune of lepe
 Nouzt' at' the rocheff ne at' burdeux town
 And þan wil þei say . Sampson sampson
 But' harkeneþ lordingges oo þing' I 3ou pray 572
 þat' alle þe souereyn actes dar I say
 Of victories in olde testament' [leaf 219]
 þat' þorghe verrey god þat' is omnipotent' 576
 Weren doon in abstinence *and* in preiere
 Lokeþ þe bible and þer 3e may it' lere
 Lokeþ Attila þe grete conquerour'
 Deide in his slepe wiþ shame *and* dishonour 580
 Bleding at' his nose in dronknesse
 A Captayn shuld live in sobrenesse
 And ouer al þise avise 3ow rizt' weff
 What' was comaunded vnto lamueff 584
 Not' Samuel but' lamuel say .I. ¶ *Noli vinum dare*
 Redeþ þe bible and fyndeþ it' expresly
 Of wyne 3euynge of hem þat' aren Iustise
 No more of þis for it' may suffise 588
 And now þat' I haue spoken of glotenye
 Nowe wil I defende 3ou hasardye
 ¶ *Hasard' is verrey modere of lesingges* ¶ *Policratici* [Jo.
 And of disceite cursed forswerynges *Sarisburiensis*] *li-*
 Blaspheme of crist' manslaughter and waast' also/ *bro i. mendaciorum*
 Of bataile and of tyme and of ferþermoo *& peruriarum mater*
 It' is reproof' and contrarie to honoure *est alea*
 fforto be holden a comon hasardoure 596

And euer þe hier he is of estate
 The more he is holden desolate
 3if þat a prince vse hasardie
 In al gouernance and polecye 600
 He is as by comon opinioñ
 Holde þe lasse in reputacioñ
 ¶ Stilboon þat was holde a wise embassatour ¶ Stilboon .i.
 Was sent into Corinth with grete honour. Me,curius.
 fro Calidoyne to make hem alliañce
 And whan he came happed þis chañce
 And al þe grettest þat were of þat lond
 Pleiying at þe hasard he hem fond 608
 ffor which as sone as þat myzt be
 He stale hym home azein to his cuntre
 And saide þere I wold not lese my name
 I wold nat take on me so gret diffame. 612
 fforto allye 3ou to noon hasardours / [leaf 219, back]
 Sendeþ oþer wiser embassatours ./
 ffor by my troupe me were leuere dye
 þan I shuld. 3ow to hasardours allie 616
 But 3e þat bene so glorious in honoures.
 Shal not allie 3ou wiþ hasardoures .
 As by my wille ne as by my trete
 This wis philisophre þus seide hee 620
 Loke eeke þat to þe kinge Demetreus
 The kyng of partes as þe booke seiþ þus
 Sent hym a paire of golden dys in scorne
 ffor he had vsed hasardrie þer byforne 624
 ffor whiche he heelde his glorie and his renown
 ffor no value of reputacioun
 lordes myght fynde oþer manere playe
 Honest ynowe to dryue þe day awaye 628
 Now wil I speke of oþes fals and grete
 A worde or twoo as oþer bookes entrete .
 Grete sweringe is a þing abhominable
 And fals sweringe is moche more reproveable 632

The highe god forbere sweryng^t at^t alle ¶ *Nolite omnino iurare*
 Witnesse of mathewe but^t *in* specia^l
 Of swerynge [seip] þe holy Ieremye. ¶ *Ieremie .4^o Iu-*
 Thowe shalt^t swere soþe þine oþes *and* not^t lie *veritate in iu-*
 And swere in doome and eke in riȝtwisnesse *dicio & iusticia*
 But^t ydel sweringe is a cursednesse
 Biholde and see þat^t in þe first table . 640
 Of hie goddes heestes honorable
 How þat^t twoo heestes of hym is þis
 Take not^t my tale in ydelnes amys
 Loo raþer he forbedeþ such swerynge
 Than homicide or eny oþer þinge . 644
 I saie as þus by order it^t stondeþ
 This knowen þat^t heestes vnderstondeþ
 How þat^t þe Secounde heest of god is þat
 And ferþer ouer I wil þe telle al þat^t 648
 þat^t vengeance shal not^t part^t from his hous
 þat^t of his oþes is so outrageous .
 By goddys precious hert^t and his nailles [leaf 220]
 And by his blood þat^t is in hailles 652
 Seuen is my chaunce and his .v. *and* thre
 By goddys armes ȝif þou falsly plaie me
 This daggard shal þorgh^h þine hert^t goo .
 This fruite *comme*þ of þilk bones twoo . 656
 ffor-sweringe Ire falsnesse homyside
 Now for þe loue of crist^t þat^t for vs dyde
 Leueþ ȝoure oþes bothe grete and smale
 ffor I shal telle ȝou a meruelous tale / 660
 Thise Riotours of which^h I telle .
 Longe erste er prime . ronge eny belle
 Were sette in a tauerne for to drynke
 And as þei satte þei herd a belle chink^t 664
 Byforn a corps was caried to his graue
 þat^t oon of hem can calle to his knaue /
 Goo bette quod he and aske redely
 What^t coors is þat^t þat^t passeþ forþ by 668

And loke þat þou report his name weH
 Sire quod þis [knaue] it nedep neuer a deH
 It was me tolde eer 3e came heer two houres
 He was parde an olde felawe of 3oures 672
 Al sodeynly was he sclayn to-nyzt
 ffor-dronken as he satte vpon his bench vprizt
 Ther come a prive þeef men clepen deþe
 þat in his contray al þe puple scleep 676
 And wiþ his speer he smote his hert atwoo
 And went his way wiþ-oute wordes moo
 He haþ a thousand sclayn þis Pestilence
 And maistere er 3e come in his presence 680
 Me þenkeþ þat it were necessarie
 ffor to be war of such an aduersarie
 Beeþ redy forto mete hym euermore
 Thus tauzt me my dame I saye no more 684
 ¶ By seint marye saide þis tauernere
 þe Childe seiþ sooþ for he haþ sclayn to 3ere
 hens ouer a myle wiþ-Inne a grete vilage
 Both man and womman childe *and* page. 688
 I trowe his habitacioun be þere [leaf 220, back]
 To bene avised grete wisdom e it were
 Er þat he did a man dishonoure
 3e goddes arnes quod þis Riatoure 692
 Is it suche perile wiþ hym forto mete
 I shal hym sechen by stie and by strete
 I. make a vowe by goddys digne bones.
 Harkenep felawes we þre bene al ones. 696
 Lat eche of vs holde vp his honde to oþere
 And eche of vs bycome oþers broþer
 And we wil slee þis fals traitour deþe
 He shal be slayne he þat so monye sleeþe 700
 By goddys dignite er it be nyzt
 To-gidere han þise þre her hertes plizt.
 To lif and to dye ilk of hem wiþ oþer
 As þouze he were his owne born broþer 704

And vp þei sterten and dronken in þis rage.
 And forþ þei goon towardes þat vilage
 Of which þe tauernere haþ spoke byforne
 And mony a grisly ooþe han þei sworne 708
 And cristes blessed body þei to-rent'
 þat' deeth shal be dede if we may hym hent'
 Whan þei han goon nat' fully a myle
 Riȝt' as þei wold' haue troden ouer a stile 712
 An olde and a poor man wiþ hem mette
 This olde man ful mekely hem grette
 And saide þus nowe lordes god ȝou see
 þe Prowdest' of þise Riatours thre 716
 Answerde aȝein what' cherlde wiþ harde grace
 Why art' þou al forwrapped sauf þi face
 Whi luyest' þou so longe in so grete age
 This olde man gan loke in his visage 720
 And seide þus for I can nat' fynde
 A man þouȝe I walked into Ynde
 Neiper in Cite ne in noon vilage
 þat' wil chaungen his ȝouþe for myñ age 724
 And þefore mote I haue myn age stille
 As longe tyme as it is goddys wille /
 Ne deth' allas nyl not' haue my lif' [leaf 221]
 Thus walk I like a restlees catif 728
 And on þe grounde which is my moder' gate
 I knobbe wiþ my staf erly and late
 And saie leue moder lat' me Inne
 Loo' howe I vanyssh' fless'h blood *and* skynne 732
 Allas whan shul my bones bene at' reste
 Modere with ȝou wold I chaunge my chest'
 That' in my chambere longe tyme haþ be .
 ȝe for an heeren cloute to wrappe me 736
 But' ȝit' to me she wil nat' do þat' grace .
 ffor whiche ful welked is my face
 And sirs to ȝou it' is no curtesie
 To speken vntil an olde man vilany 740

- But^t he trespase in word or ellis *in dede*
 In holy writte 3e may 3oure self wel rede
 ¶ A3einst an oolde man hoor vpon his hede ¶ Coram canuto
capite conurge.
744
 3e shuld arise þerfor I 3eue 3ou rede
 Ne doþ vnto and olde man harme as nowe
 No more þan 3e wolde a man did 3owe
 In age if þat^t 3e so longe abide
 And god be wiþ 3ow wheder 3e goo or ride 748
 I mote goo þidere as I haue to goo
 We nay olde cherle by god þou shalt^t nat^t soo .
 Seyde þise oþer hasardours anone
 Thow partest^t nat^t so liztly be seynt^t Iohn 752
 Thow spak^t riz^t now of þilk^t tratour deþe
 þat^t in þis cuntre alle our frendes sleeþe
 Haue here my trouþe as þou art^t his asprie
 Telle wher he is or ellis þou shalt^t dye 756
 By god and by þe holy sacrament^t
 ffor soþly þou art^t [on] of his assent^t
 To scleen vs 3enge folk^t þou fals þeef
 Nowe sirres if it^t be to 3ou so leef 760
 To fynde deþ turne vp þis croked way
 ffor in þat^t groue I left^t hym be my fay
 Vnder a tree and þere he wil abide
 Ne for 3oure boost^t he nyl hym no þinge hide 764
 See 3e þat^t ooke riz^t þere 3e shul hym fynde [leaf 221, back]
 God saue 3ou þat^t bouz^t a3ein mankynde
 And 3ou amende þus saide þis olde man
 And euery of þise Riatours ranne 768
 Til þei come to þe tree *and* þer þei fonde
 ffloreyne of gold^d fyne . ykoyned rounde
 Wel nyghe a seuen bussshells as hem þouz^t
 No lenger than aftere deþ þei souz^t 772
 But^t eche of hem so glad was of þat^t syz^t
 ffor þat^t þe ffloreyne so faire be and briz^t
 That^t doune þei sette hem by þe precious hoorde
 The worst^t of hem he spak^t þe furst word 776

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Breþeren quod he take hede what I say My witte is grete þough I bourde <i>and</i> play This tresour hap fortune to vs zeuen In myrþe and iolite our lyf to lyuen	780
And lightly so as it <i>commeþ</i> so wil we spende Ey precious goddys hert' who wende To-day þat' we shulde haue so faire a grace But' myz't þis gold be caried fro þis place	784
Home into myne hous or ellis to zoures ffor wel I woote þat' aþ þis gold is oures/ Than were we in high ffelicite . But' trewly by day it' may nat' be	788
Men wold say þat' we were þeues stronge And for oure owne tresour' done vs honge As wisely and as selizly as it' myz't This tresour most' yearied be be nyz't	792
Wherfore I rede lat' loke among' vs alle To drawe and lat' see where þe Cut wil falle he þat' hap þe curt' wijþ herte blith Shal renne to toune and þat' ful swith	796
To bringe vs brede and drink' ful priuely And two of vs shal kepen sotilly This tresour wel and if he wil not' tarie Whan it' is nyz't we wil þis tresor carie	800
By oon assent' where as vs likeþ best' That' oon of ham broz't gras <i>in</i> his fest' And bad hem drawe and loke wher it wolde falle	[leaf 222]
And it' felle on the 3ongest' of hem alle And forþ toward' þe towne he went' anoon And also sone as that he was goone That' oon of hem spak' vnto þat' opere	804
Thowe woost' wel þou art' myn owne sworn broþere Thi prophite wil I telle þe anon Thowe woost' wel þat' our' felawe is goon And here is gold' and þat' grete plente þat' shal departed be amonges vs þree	808 812

But' naþeles if I can shape it' soo
 þat' it' departed were amonges vs twoo
 Had I not' done a frendes turne to þe
 þat' oþer Answered I not' howe þat' myzt' be 816
 I wold wel þat' þe gold were oures twoo .
 What' shuld' wee doo þat' it' myzt' be soo .
 Shal it' be counsaile said þe first' schrewe
 And I shal telle [þe] in wordes fewe 820
 What' we shul' doon and bringe it' aboute
 I graunt' quod þat' oþer out' of doute
 That' by my troupe I nyl þe nat' bywreien
 Now quod the furst' þou woote wel we be tweyen 824
 And twoo of vs shul' strengre be þan oõn
 loke whan he is sette and þat' anõn
 Arise as þouze þou woldest' wiþ hym play
 And I shal ryuen hym þorgh þe sides twey 828
 Whiles þat' þow strogelest' with hym as in game
 And wiþ þi daggere loke þou doo þe same
 And þan shal al þis golde departed be
 My dere freende bytwixe þe and me 832
 Than may we boop our lustes fulfille
 And play at' þe dice at' our owne wille
 And þus accorded bene þise shrewes tway
 To scleen þe þred as ze han herd me say 836
 ¶ This zongest' which þat' went' to þe toune
 fful oft' in his hert' rolled vp and doune
 þe bewte of þise floreyne faire and brizt'
 O lord' quod he zif it' so were I myzt'
 840
 Haue al þis tresour' to myself alone [leaf 222, back]
 Ther nys no man þat' lyueþ vnder trone
 Of golde þat' shuld' lyve so mery as I
 And at' þe last' þe feende oure enemye 844
 Put' in his þouzt' þat' he shuld' poysen bey
 wiþ which he myzt' scleen his felawes twey
 ffor whi þe feende fonde him in such liuyng
 That' he had leue hym to sorowe bringe 848

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor þis was vtterly his entent^t
 To scleen hem boþe and neuere to repent^t
 And forþ he goþ no lenger wold^t he tarye
 Into þe towne vnto apotecarye 852
 And preide hym þat^t he hym wolde selle
 Somme poysen þat^t he my3t^t his rattes kelle
 And eke þer was a polcat^t in his hawe
 þat^t as he seide his capons had Isclawe 856
 And seide he wolk wreke hym 3if he my3t^t
 On vermyn þat^t destroyen hem by ny3t^t
 The appoticarie answerd^t þou shalt^t haue
 A þinge þat^t as god my saule saue 860
 In al þis worlde þer nys no creature
 þat^t ete or drink^t of þis confecture
 Nou3t^t but^t þe mounance of a corn of whete
 þat^t he ne shal his lif anoon forlete 864
 3e sterue he shal and þat^t in lasse while
 þan þow wilt^t goon a pace nat^t but^t a myle
 This poysen þat^t is so hard^t and violent^t
 This cursed man haþ in his honde it^t hent^t 868
 This poysen in a boxe and sipens he ranne
 Into þe nexte strete vnto a man
 And borowed hym large botelles þre
 And to his felawes a3ein repaireþ he 872
 The iij. he kepte clene for his drinke
 ffor alle þe ny3t^t he shope hym forto swynk^t
 In caryng^t of þat^t gold^t out^t of þat^t place
 And whan þis riotour wiþ sory grace 876
 Had filled wiþ him his grete botels þre
 To his felawes a3ein repaireþ he ./
 What^t nedep^t it^t to sermon þerof more [leaf 223]
 ffor rizt^t as þei had cast^t his deep^t byfore 880
 Rizt^t so þei han hym selayn and þat^t anoñ
 And whan þat^t þis was doon þan speke þat^t oñ
 Now lat^t vs sitte and drink^t and make vs mery
 And afterward^t we wil his body bery 884

And after þat hit happed hem percas
 To taken a botelh wher-in the poyson was
 And drank and ȝaue his felawe drink alsoþe
 þorghe whiche anon þei steruen bothe 888
 But certes I suppose þat Auicen
 Wroote neuer in no canon ne in no fen
 Moo wondere sorowes of empoyseyng
 Thus had þise wrecches two her endinge 892
 Thus eended be þise homycydes twoo
 And eke þis false empoysoner alsoo
 O . cursed synne ful of al cursednesse
 O . traterous homycides .o. Wickednesse 896
 O . gloteny luxurye and hasardrye
 Thow blasphemour of crist wiþ vileny
 And oþes grete of vsage and of pride
 Allas mankinde howe may it betide 900
 That to þi creatour which þat þe wrouzt
 And wiþ his precious blood þe bouzt
 Thowe art so fals and so vnkynde allas
 Now good men god forȝeue ȝou ȝour trespas 904
 And kepe ȝou from þe synne of auarice
 Myne holy pardoñ may ȝou aȝ wariſshe
 So that ȝe offer nobles or sterlyngges
 Oiþer ellis Siluere . spoones . broches . or ryngges 908
 Boweþ ȝoure hede vnder þis bulle
 Commeþ vp ȝe Wyues offreþ ȝour wille
 ȝoure name I entre here in my rolle anoñ
 In to þe blisse of heuene shul ȝe al goon 912
 I ȝou assoille be my highe powere
 ȝe þat wollen offre as clene and eke as cleere
 As ȝe were born and loo sirs þus I preche
 And Ihesu crist þat is our saules leche . 916
 So graunte ȝou his pardon to receyue ./ [leaf 223, back]
 ffor þat is best I wil ȝou not deceyue
 ¶ But sirs oon word forgate I in my tale
 I haue relikes and pardon in my male 920

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

As faire as eny man in engelond ^t	
Whiche were zeue me by þe popes hond ^t	
3if eny of 3ow wol of deuociõn	
Offre and han myn absolucioñ	924
Commeþ forþ anon and kneleþ here adoun	
þat ^t ze may haue part ^t of my pardoun	
Or ellis takeþ pardon as ze wende	
Al newe and fressh at ^t euery tounes ende	928
So þat ^t ze offre alway newe <i>and</i> newe	
Nobles and pans which ^h þat ^t bene good and trewe	
It ^t is an honure to euery þat ^t bene here	
þat ^t ze may haue a suffisañt ^t pardonere	932
To assoile 3ou in contree as ze ride	
ffor auentures which ^h þat ^t may be-tide	
ffor <i>para</i> uenture þer may falle oon or twoo	
Doune of her hors and breke her nek ^t atwoo	936
Looke swiche a swerte it ^t is to 3ou alle	
That ^t I am in 3oure felawship yfalle	
þat ^t may assoile 3ou boþ more <i>and</i> lasse	
Whan þat ^t þe soule shal fro þe body passe	940
I rede þat ^t hour [hooste] shal bygynne	
ffor he is most ^t enuolupte of synne	
Come forþ sire hoost ^t and offre first ^t anoñ	
And þou shalt ^t kysse þe relikes euerchoñ	944
3e for a groot ^t vnbokel anoñ þi purs	
Nay nay quod he þan haue I cristes curs	
lat ^t be quod he it ^t shal nat ^t be so theche	
þow woldest ^t make me kissen þine olde breche	948
And swere it ^t were þe relike of a seynt ^t	
þouze it ^t were wiþ þi fundament ^t depeynt ^t	
But ^t by þe crosse which ^h seint ^t Elyne fonde	
I wold I had þi culyons in myne honde	952
In stede of relikes of seint ^t -wary	
Lat ^t kitte hem of <i>and</i> I wil helpe hem cary	
They shulde be schryned in an hogges toord ^t	[leaf 224]
This Pardonere answered nat ^t a woord ^t	956

So wroþ he was he wolde no word say
 Nowe quod our oost I nyl no lenger play
 Wiþ þe ne wiþ noon oþer angry man
 But riȝt anoon þe worþi knyȝt bygan 960
 Whan þat he seegh þat alle þe puple louȝe
 No more of þis for it is riȝt ynoghe
 Sir Pardonere be mery and glad of chere
 And ȝee sir Hoost þat bene to me so dere 964
 I prei ȝou þat ȝe kisse þe Pardonere
 And pardonere I prei ȝou drawe ȝe nere
 And as we did lat vs lauȝe and play
 And anoñ þei kissed and riden forþ her way 968

¶ Thus endep þe pardoners tale.

And here bygynnep

The prologe of Thoppas

¶ The prologe

[on leaf 224]

WHan saide was þis tale euery man
 As sober was þat wonder was to see
 Til þat our oost Iape byganne
 And þan at erst he loket vpon me i. chaucers. 1884
 And saide þus what man art þou quod he
 Thow lokest as þow woldest fynde an hare
 ffor euer vpon þe grounde I se þe stare 1887

¶ Approche nere and loke meryly
 Now war 3ou sirs and lat þis man han plas
 He in þe waast is shape as wel as I
 This were a popet in armes to embrace 1891
 ffor eny womman smal and faire of faice
 He semeþ Elynssþ be his cuntenance
 ffor vnto no wize doþ he daliaunce 1894

Say nowe somewhat sipens opere folk han saide
 Telle vs a tale of merrþ and þat anoñ
 Oost quod I ne be nat euel paide .
 ffor opere tale certes can I noon. 1898
 But of a ryme I lered longe agoñ
 3e þat is good quod he shul we it here
 Som deynte þing me semeþ by his chere. 1901

[No break in the MS, and no spaces between the stanzas
 above and after.]

¶ Here bygynneþ be tale of chaucere by Sire Thopace.

¶ Capitulum xix^m ¶ Sire Thopace.

[*Fitte I.*]

<p>L Estneth lordes in good entent^t And I wiþ telle verrement^t Of myrth¹ and of solace Of a knyzt^t was faire and gent^t In bataile and in tornament^t His name was sir thopace .</p>	<p>[leaf 224, back]</p> <p>[¹ in a later hand] 1904</p> <p>1907</p>
<p>I-born he was in fer cuntree In fflaunders al byzonde þe see Att^t Poperinge in þe place His fader was a man ful free And lorde he was of þat^t cuntre As it^t was goddes grace</p>	<p>1910</p> <p>1913</p>
<p>Sir^t Thopas was a doughty swayñ White was his face as payndemayñ His lippes rede as Roos . His rudde is like scarlett^t in grayñ And I 3ow telle in good certayñ He had a semely nose</p>	<p>1916</p> <p>1919</p>
<p>His heer his beerd was lik saffron þat^t to his girdel kauzt^t adoune His shoon of Cordewayne/ Of brugges were his hosen broun His Roobe was of Ciclatoun That^t cost^t mony a rayñ</p>	<p>1922</p> <p>1925</p>

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. **Petworth MS.**

He coupe hunte at wylde dere
 And Ride on hawkyng^t for þe Ryuer
 Wiþ grey goshauke on honde 1928
 Therto he was a good archere
 To wrastling^t was þer noon his peer
 Ther eny ram shulde stonde 1931

fful mony a maide brizt^t in boure
 þei morn for him *Paramoure*
 Whan þei were bette to slepe . 1934
 But^t he was chaast^t *and* no lecchoure
 And swete as is þe bremble floure
 That^t bereþ þe reede heppe 1937

And so byfelle vppon a day
 ff^ror soþþe as I 3owe telle may
 Sire Thopaas wold out^t ride [leaf 225] 1940
 He worþ vp on his stede gray
 And in his honde a launce gay
 A longe swerde be his side 1943

He prikkeþ þorowe a faire forest^t
 Ther-in is mony a wilde beest^t
 3a boþ bukke and hare 1946
 And as he prikkeþ norþ and eest^t
 I telle 3owe hym had alмест^t
 By-tidde a sory care 1949

There springen herbes grete *and* smale
 þe lykorice and þe Setuale
 And mony a clowe gyloffre 1952
 And notemuges to put^t in ale
 Wheþere it^t be moyst^t or stale
 Or forto lay in Coffre 1955

þe birdes syngen it' is no nay
 þe sparhauke and þe popeniay
 þat' Ioie it' was to here 1958
 The þrostel cok' made eke his lay
 The woode douve vpon þe spray
 She songe ful loude *and clere!* 1961

Sire Thopas felle in loue longynge
 And whan he hard' þe þrostel synge.
 He prikkes as he were woode 1964
 His faire stede in his prikkinge
 So swette þat' men myȝt' hym wringe
 His sides were al blood' 1967

Sire Thopas eke so wery was
 ffor prikkinge on þe soft' gras
 So feers was his corage 1970
 That' doune he laide hym in þat' plas
 To maken his stede som solas
 ffor he was so Sauage 1973

O seint' Marie Benedicite
 What' aileþ þis loue at' mee
 To bynde me so sore 1976
 Me dremed al þis nyȝt' parde
 An Elfe quene shal my lemman be [leaf 225, back]
 And slepe vndere my gore 1979

And elf quene wil I loue ywis
 ffor in þis world' no womman is
 Worþi to be my make 1982
 in toun
 Al oper wommen I forsake
 And to an elfe quene I me take
 By dale *and* eke by doune 1986

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. Petworth MS.

Into his sadel he came anone
 And prikkeþ ouere stile *and* stone
 An helf quene forto asprie 1989
 Til he so longe haþ riden and goon
 That he fonde in a privee wooñ
 þe Cuntry of fary. 1992

¶ so wild

ffor in þat cuntre nas þer noon
 [. *no gap in the MS.*]
 Neiper wif ne child 1996

Til him þer come a Ioly geaunt
 His name was clepede Sir Olyfaunte
 A perilous man of dede 1999
 He seide childe by tirmagaunt
 But þif þou prik out of myn haunt
 Anoon I sclee þi stede. 2002

¶ wiþ mace

Here is þe quene of fairie
 Wiþ harpe wiþ pipe and Simphony
 Dwelling in þis place 2006

The Childe saide so mot I þee
 To morowe wil I meten þee
 Whan I haue myn Armure 2009
 And þit I hope *par* ma faye
 þat þou shalt wiþ þis launcelay
 Abien it ful sore 2012

¶ Thorgh þi mawe

Shal I perce þif I may
 Er it be fully prime of day
 ffor here þow shalt be sclawe 2016

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. Petworth MS.

Sire Thopas drogh a-bak ful fast
 This Geaunt' at' him stones cast'
 Out' of a felle staf sclynge 2019
 But' faire eskapeþ child' thopa
 And al it' was þorgh' goddes *grace* [leaf 226]
 And þorgh' his faire beringe 2022

3it' listneþ lordes to my tale
 Murier þan þe ny3tingale
 ffor now I wil 3ou rowne 2025
 Howe Sire Thopas wiþ sides smale
 Prickinge ouer doune *and* dale
 Is come a3ein to toune 2026

His mery men *commaunded* he
 To make hym boþ game and glee
 ffor nedes most' he fizt' 2031
 Wiþ oon geaunt' wiþ hedes þre
 ffor *paramoure* and Iolite
 Of oon þat' shoon ful brizt' 2034

Do come he seide myn menstralles
 And geestours for to telle vs tales
 Anon in myn armynge 2037
 Of Romance þat' bene reales
 Of popes and of cardynales
 And eke of loue likyng 2040

þei fatte hym first' þe swete wyne
 [.
 2043
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 And licorice *and* eke comyne
 Wiþ sugre þat' is cree 2046

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. Petworth MS.

He did next^t his white leer
 Of cloþ of lake fyne *and* clere
 A breche and eke a sherte 2049
 And next^t his shert^t an aketon
 And ouer þat^t an haberion
 for peercyng^t of an herte 2052

And ouer þat^t a fyne hawberk
 Was al ywroug^t of Iwes werk^t
 fful stronge it^t was of plate 2055
 And ouer þat^t his cote armour^m
 As white as is þe lily flour^t
 In which he wil debate 2058

His sheeld was of gold so rede
 A þer-in was a bores hede
 A charbocle by his side 2061
 And þere he swore on ale *and* brede [leaf 226, back]
 Howe þat^t þe geaunt^t shal be dede
 Betide what^t bytide 2064

His Iaumbeuxe were of ^lquirboile [1? *soniarboile*]
 His sweerde scheep^t of yuory
 His helme of laton brizt^t 2067
 His sadel was of Rowel bone
 His bridel as þe sonne shone
 Or as þe moon lizt^t 2070

His spere was of fyne Cipres
 That^t bodeþ werre & no þing^t pees
 The hede ful sharpe ygrounde 2073
 His stede was al dapple grey
 It^t goþ an aumble by þe wey
 fful softely and rounde 2076

¶ In londe

Loo lordys myne here is a fitte
 If 3e wil eny more of it'
 To telle it' wil I fonde 2080

[Fitte II.]

Now holde 3oure mouth for charite
 Boþ knyzt' and lady fre
 And harkneþ to my spelle 2083
 Of BateH and of Chivalrie
 And of ladies loue drurye
 Anoon I wil 3ou telle 2086

Men speken of romances of price
 Of horn childe and of ypotice
 Of Befes and of sire gie 2089
 Of Sy le boyx and Pleyndamour
 But' sire Thopace he bereþ þe flour'
 Of royal chyualrie 2092

His good stede he bystrode
 And forþ vppon his way glode
 As sparke out' of þe brond 2095
 Vpon his creest' he bere a tour'
 And þer-Inne stiked a lilye flour'
 God shilde his corps fro shonde 2098

And for he was a knyzt' auntrous
 He nolde sclepen in non hous /
 But' ligge in his hode [leaf 227]
 His brizt' helme was his wongere
 And by hym baite his deistrere
 Of eërbes fyne and good. 2104

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. **Petworth MS.**

Hym self drank watere of þe welle

As did þe knyȝt sire percyvelle

So worþely vnder wede

[. *no gap in the MS.*]

2108

NO more of þis for goddys dygnite
 Quod our hoost' for þou makest' me
 So wery of þi verrey lewdenesse
 That' also wisly god my soule blesse 2112
 Myn eeres aken of þi drasty speche
 Now such' a ryme þe deuel I byteche
 ¶ This may wel be cleped ryme dogrel quod he
 Whi so quod he whi wilt' þou lette me . 2116
 More of my tale þan an oþer man
 Siþ þat' it' is þe best' ryme þat' I can
 By god quod he for pleyntly at' a worde
 Thi drasty rymyng' nys nat' worþ a torde 2120
 Thow dost' not' ellis but' spendest' tyme
 Sire atte oon worde þou shalt' no lenger ryme
 Lat' see wher þou canst tellen ouzt' in geeste
 Or ellis in prose somewhat' at' þe leest' 2124
 In whiche þer be somme merth' or doctrine
 Gladly quod I by goddys swete pyne
 I wil þow telle a litel þinge in prose
 þat' auzt' like þou as I suppose 2128
 Or ellis certes þe bene to daungerous
 It' is a moral tale vertuous
 Al be it' tolde somtyme in sondry wise
 Of sondry folk' as I shal þou devise 2132
 As þus þe woote þat' euery euaungelist'
 That' tellen vs þe peyn of Ihesu crist'
 Ne seiþ al þing as his felawe doop
 But' napeles her sentence is aff' soop . 2136
 And al accorden as in her sentence
 Al be þer in her tellyng' difference

ffor somme of hem seyn more and somme lesse	[leaf 227, back]
Whan þei his pitous passioun expresse	2140
I mene of mark ^t mathewe luke <i>and</i> Iohn	
But ^t doutelees her sentence is al oñ	
Therefore lordynggs al I 3ou biseche	
3if þat ^t 3e þenk ^t I vary as <i>in</i> my spech	2144
As þus þou3e þat ^t I telle somewhat ^t more	
Of prouerbes þat ^t 3e han herd byfore	
Comprehended in þis litel ^t tretys here	
To enforsen wiþ þe effecte of my matere	2148
And þou3e I not ^t þe same wordes say	
As 3e han herde 3it to 3o ⁿ aH I pray	
Blameþ me nat ^t for in my sentence	
Shul 3e nowhere fynde difference	2152
fro þe sentence of þis tretys lite	
Aftere þe which þis mery tale I write	
And þerfor harkenep what ^t I shal say	
And lat ^t me telle al my tale I pray	2156

¶ Here endeþ þe tale of Sir Thopas

[*No break in the MS.*]

[*There are no line-numbers or breaks between the paragraphs in the MS. Tyrwhitt's breaks are kept here to prevent slight differences in the Six Texts throwing out many lines. Some of the omissions in the MS are supplied from the print of the French original in Le Ménagier de Paris, ed. 1847, i. 186, as that proves the omissions to be such.*]

[*Petworth MS, on leaf 227, back.*]

And here bygnneþ þe tale of Melebius & þe prudence.

[2157]

A þongt man called Melebius myzty and riche bygate vpon his wif þat called was Prudence a doughter which þat called was Sophie.

[2158] Vpon a day byfelle þat he for his disporte is went into þe felde. him to play. [2159] his wif and his doughtere he haþ bylaft in-witk his hous. of which þe doores weren fast shette. [2160] Ther of his olde foen had espied. and satten ladders to þe walles of his hous. and by þe wyndowes bene entred. [2161] and bete his wif and wounded his douzter wif .v. mortal woundes in .v. sondry places. [2162] This is to sayn in her feete. in her hondes. in her eeres. in her nose. and in her mouþe. and laften her for dede. and wenten her way

[2163] Whan Melebius retourned was into his hous and segh al þis meschief. He like a mad man reending his cloþes gan to wepe and crie.

[2164] ¶ Prudence his wif as ferforþ as she durst. bysouzt hym of his weping for to stynt. [2165] but not forþi. he gan wepe and crye euere lenger þe more.

[2166] This noble wif prudence remembred her vpon þe sentence of Ovide in his booke þat cleped is þe remedy of loue. 'De remedio Amoris. Where as he seip. [2167] He is a foole þat distroubeþ þe modere to weepe in þe deef of her childe. til she haue wepte her fulle. as for a certeyn tyme. [2168] And þan shal man / doon his dyligence wif amyable chere hir to recomforte and prei hyr of

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

her wepinge forto stynt'. [2169] ffor which reson þis noble wiff Prudence suffred her husbonde forto wepe and crie as for a certeyn space. [2170] ¶ And whan she seggh her tyme she saide to him in þis wise ¶ Allas my lord quod she whi maken 3e 3our' self forto [*sembler fol?* [2171] *Il n'appartient pas à sage homme de*] maken such a sorowe. [2172] 3oure dou3tere with þe grace of god shal warisshe and scape. [2173] And al were is so? þat' she rizt' nowe were dede. 3e ne au3t' not' as for her deth 3our self destroie. [2174] ¶ Senec' seiþ / þe wise man shal not' take to gret' discomfort' for þee deep of his children. [2175] but' certes he shuld suffre it' in pacience / as wel as he abideþ þe deep of his owne *propre persone*.

[2176] ¶ This Melebius answerd' anoñ and sayde. What' man quod he shulde of his weping' stent'. þat' haþ so grete a cause as I haue. [2177] .Ihesu our lord him self wepte for þe deep of lazarus his frende ¶ *Qualiter Ihesus christus fleuit propter mortem Lazari*. [2178] ¶ Prudence answerde. Certes wel I woot' attempre wepinge is no þinge defended to him þat' soroweful is. amonges folk in sorowe. but' it' is rather *graunted hym* to wepe. [2179] The Appostel paul vnto þe Romayns. *Apostolus a Romanos writeþ*. Man shal reioyse wiþ hem þat' maken Ioie. and wepe *with* suche folk as wepen: [2180] But' þou3e attempre wepinge be *graunted*. certes outrage wepinge is defended. [2181] ¶ *Mesure of wepinge shulde be considered aftere þe loor þat' techep vs senec'* [2182] ¶ Whan þat' þi frende is dede seiþ he. lat' not' þine eyen to moist' bene of teeres. *commynge to þine eyen. lat' hem nat falle*. [2183] And whan þowe hast' forgoon þi frende. Do diligence to geten anoþer. and þis is more wisdomen þan forto wepe for þi frende which þat' þow hast' lorne. for þer-in nys no boote. [2184] And þer-fore 3if 3e gouerne 3ou by sapience. putte away sorowe from 3oure hertes. [2185] Remembreþ þat' *Ihesus Sirak seiþ*.

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

A man þat' is Ioious and glad in hert' it' conserueþ
 hym florsshyng' in his age But' soly sorowful hert'
 makeþ his bonys drie. [2186] He seiþ eke þus.
 þat' sorowe in hert' scleeþ ful mony a man. [2187] Sa-
 lomon seiþ: þat' rizt' as mothes in þe shepes fleese
 annoyen to þe cloþes. and þe smale wormes to þe tree.
 Rizt' so annoieþ sorowe to þ^e herte [2188] ¹Wherfore
 vs auzt' as wel in þe deef of' oure children as in þe
 losse of our goodes temporeles haue pacience.

[2189] Remembreþ zowe vpon pacient' Iob.
 Whan he had lost' his childere and his temporell sub-
 stance and in his body endured mony a
 greuous tribulacion 3it' saide he þus. [2190] Our
 lorde haþ [zeue it me / our lorde haþ] byraft' it me
 Rizt' so as our lord' wolde rizt' so is it' done. yblessed
 be þe name of our' lord' [2191] ¶ To þise forseide
 þingges answered Melebius vnto his wif Prudence
 AH þise wordes quod he bene trewe. and þerto pro-
 fitable. But' trewly myn hert' is troubled soo. wiþ þis sorowe.
 so grisly þat I note what' to doon. [2192] Lat' calle
 quod prudence þi trewe frendes alle. and þine lynage
 which þat' bene wise. telleþ zour caas and herkeneþ
 what' þei say in counsailinge And zou gouerne aftere her
 sentence. [2193] Salomon seiþ wirk al þi þing'
 by counsail and þou shalt' neuere repent'

[2194] ¶ Than by þe counsaile of [his wif Pru-
 dence] [*Melibée appella moult de*] folk'. [2195] as
 Sirurgyens. Phisiciens. olde folk' and zonge. and som
 of his olde enemyes reconciled as by her countenance
 to his loue and into his grace. [2196] And þerwiþal
 þer commen somme of his neizboures þat' didden him
 reuerence. more for drede þan for loue as it' happeþ
 oft' [2197] ¶ Ther commen also ful mony subtile flaterers
 and wise aduocates lered in þe lawe.

[2198] And whan þise folk' to-gydere were assembled.
 this Melebius in sorowful wise shewed hem his caas.

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

[2199] And by þe manere of his speche it^t semed þat^t in his hert^t he bere a cruel yre. rely to do vengeance vpon his foon. And sodeynly þan desired þat^t þe werre shuld bygynne [2200] But^t napelees 3it^t axed he her counsaile vpon þis matere./ [2201] ¶ A Sirurgien by licence and assent^t of such^t as were wise vp aroos and vnto melebius saide as 3e shul here

[2202] ¶ Sir *quod* he as to vs Syrurgience appentep þat^t we doo to euery wight^t þe best^t þat^t we can · wher as we bene wipholden. and to our pacience þat^t we do no damage. [2203] Wherfore it^t happeþ mony tyme and oft^t þat^t whan þat^t twey men had euerich wounded oþere oon Sirurgien heleþ hem boþe. [2204] Wherfore vnto our art^t it^t is not^t appertenent^t to norsshe werre ne parties to supporte / [2205] But^t certes as to þe warisshing^t of 3oure doghtere al be it^t so þat^t she perilously be wounded we shullen do so ententif bysynes fro day to nyght^t That^t wip þe grace of god she shal be hool and sounde as sone as is possible [2206] ¶ Almost^t ri3t^t in þe same wise þe Phisicien answerd saue þat^t þei seiden a fewe woordes moore. [2207] That^t ri3t^t as maladies ¹bene by hure contraries saued Ri3t^t soo shal man warisshhe werre by vengeance. [2208] His neighbours ful of envie his feyned frendes þat^t semeden reconsiled his flaterers [2209] made semblant^t of wepinge and enpeiren and engreggen mochel of þis matere in preisng^t gretely meleby of my3t^t. of power. of Richesse *and* of frendes. Dispisinge þe power of his aduersaries / [2210] and seiden vtirely þat^t he anoon shuld wreke hym. on his foes and bygynne werre.

[2211] ¶ Vp roos þan an aduocate þat^t was wise. by leue and by counsaile of oþere þat^t were wise. and saide. [2212] ¶ Lordingges þe nede for þe which^t we bene assembled in þis place is ful heuy þinge. and a grete matere [2213] by cause of þe wronge and of þe wikkednesse þat^t hap^t bene doon. and eke by resoñ of a grete damage þat^t

in tyme *commynge* is possible to fallen. for þe same. [2214] and eke by resoñ of þe grete riches and power¹ of þe parties boþe. [2215] ffor þe which resons it¹ were a ful grete *perile* to erren in þis matere. [2216] Wherfore melebius þis is oure sentence. we counsaile 3ou abouen al þinge. þat riȝt¹ anon 3e do diligence in þe kepinge of 3oure *propre persone* in such a wise þat 3e ne wante noon espie ne wacche. 3oure body forto saue. [2217] And after þat¹ we counsaile þat¹ in 3oure hous 3e sette suffisant¹ harnays. so þat¹ þei mowe as wel 3oure body as 3our hous defende [2218] But certes forto moue werre. or sodeynly to doo vengeance we mowe not¹ deme in so litel tyme þat¹ were profitable [2219] wherfore we axen leisere and space to haue deliberacioñ in þis caas to deme. [2220]. ffor þe Comon prouerbe seiþ þus. He þat¹ sone demep¹ sone shal repent¹. [2221] And eke men sayñ þat¹ þilk Iuge is wis þat¹ sone vnderstondep¹ a matere. and Iuggeþ by leisere. [2222] ffor al be it¹ soo þat¹ tarynge be noyful. algate it¹ is nat¹ to repreue in 3euyng of Iuggement¹ ne in Vengeance takinge whan it¹ is so suffisaunt¹ and resonable. [2223] & swed oure lorde Ihesu crist¹ by en-sample. ffor whan þe womman þat¹ was taken in avoutrie / was brouȝt¹ in his presence to knowen what shulde be doon of her persone. al be it¹ þat¹ he wist¹ wel him self what¹ he wold answere [*toutesvoies il ne respondi pas*] sodeynly. but he wolde haue deliberacioñ. And in þe grounde he wroot¹ threse. [2224] and by þise causes we axe deliberacioñ. And we shul þan by grace of good counsaile doo þinge that¹ shal be profitable

[2225] ¶ Vp sterten þen þe 3onge folk at onys¹ and þe moost¹ partie of þat¹ companye han scorne of þis wise olde man and bygonnen to make noyse and saide. [2226] Riȝt¹ soo þe while þat¹ yren is hoote. men shulde smyte. Riȝt¹ soo shuld¹ men wreken her harmes and wrogges.

þe while þei bene fresshe and newe. And wiþ lowde voice þei criden werre .

[2227] .Vp roos þoo oon of þise olde wise and wiþ his hondes made countenaunce þat men shulde holden hem stille and 3euen hym audience. [2228] ¶ Lordingges quod he þer is ful mony a man / þat crien werre werre þat woten ful litel what werre amounteþ. [2229] Werre at his bygynnynges haþ so grete an entre *and* so large þat euery wize may entre whan him likeþ and listly fynde werre. [2230] But certes what ende shal falle it is nat list to knowe. [2231] ffor soþely whan þat werre is onys bygonne. þer is ful mony a childe vnborn of his modere. þat steruen. 3onge by cause of pilk werre or ellys lye in swowe and dye in wrecchednesse. [2232] And þerfore er þat eny werre be bygonne: men most han grete counsaile and grete deliberacion [2233] And whan þis olde man had wende to enforsen his tale by resons. wel nygh aþ at onys bygonne to rise forto breken his tale. and beden hym ful oft his wordes forto abrigge. [2234] ffor soþly he þat precheþ to hem þat list nat here his wordes his sermon availeþ not. [2235] ffor Ihesus Sirak. seiþ. þat musike in wepinge is noyous þinge. This is to saien as moch availeþ to speke to-fore folk to which his speche availleþ not. as it is to synge byfore hym þat wepeþ. [2236] And whan þis wise man seggh þat hym wanted audience al shamefast he sette hym doune ageyne. [2237] ffor Salomon seiþ. Ther as þou ne maist not haue audience. enforce þe nat to speke [2238] ¶ I se wel quod þis wise man þat þe comon prouerbe is soþe. þat good counsaile whan it is most nede availleþ

[2239] ¶ 3it had þis Melebius in his counsaile moche folk þat priuely in his eere counsailed hym moche þinge *and* counsailed hym þe contrarye in general audience

[2240] ¶ Whan Melebius had herd þe grettest

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

partye of his counsaile were acorded þat he shuld make werre. Anon consented to her counsellinge and fully affermed her sentence [2241] ¶ Than dame Prudence whan þat she seye howe þat her husbonde shope forto wreke hym on his foon and bygynne werre. she in ful vnble wise whan she segh her tyme saide hym þise ¹wordes [2242] ¶ My lord quod she I 3ow biseche as hertely as I dare *and* can no hast 3ou nat to fast. and for aH guerdons as 3eue me audience. [2243] ffor Pirus Alfons. seiþ þus. who so þat doþ þe good or harme. hast þe nat to qwiten it. ffor in þis wise þi frende wil abide and þine enemye shal þe lenger lyve in drede. / [2244] ¶ The prouerbe seiþ. He hastep wel þat wisely can abide. And in wicked haast nys no profit

[2245] ¶ This Meleby answerd to his wif Prudence I. purpoos not quod he to wirken after þi counsaile ffor mony causes and resons. ffor certes euery wizt wolde holde me þan a fooH [2246] ¶ This is to sayne If I for þi counsailingt wold chaunge þingges þat aren affermed by so mony wise men. [2247] Secoundly I saye þat alle wommen bene wicke. and non good of hem aH. for of a thowsande men seiþ Salomon .I. foond oon good man. But certes of alle wommen good womman fonde I neuer one. [2248] And also certys 3if I gouerned me by þi counsaile it shuld seme þat I had 3eue þe euere þe maistrie as god forbede þat it so were. [2249] ffor Syrak seiþ þat if þe wif haue þe maistrie she is contrarious [*à son mary*]. [2250] And Salomon seiþ Neuere in þi lif to þi wif ne to þi childe ne to þi frende ne 3eue no power ouer þi self. ffor bettere it were þat þi children asken of þi persone þinge þat hem nedeþ þan þou sese þi self in þe hondes of þi children [2251] ¶ And also 3if I wolde wyrkt by þi counsaillinge. Certes my counsaile most somtyme be secree. til it were tyme þat it most be

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

knowe and þis ne may not be [2252. For it is written, 'þe Iangelarie of women can hide þingges þat þei woote nouȝt' [2253] Furthermore, the philosopher saith, 'In wicked counsaile wommen venquissȝ men;' and for these reasons I ought not to make use of thy counsel. (*See l. 2274, 2280, p. 209, 210, below.*)

[2254] ¶ Dame Prudence ful debonairly and wiþ grete pacience had harde aȝ þat her husbonde liked to say. þan axed she of hym licence forto speke and saide in þis wise. [2255] ¶ My lord quod she as to ȝoure furst^t resoñ certes it^t may listly be answerde. for I say þat it^t nys no foly to chaunge counsaile whan þe þinge is chaunged. ffor ellis whan þe þinge semeþ oþer wise þan it^t was byforn [2256 *Après, je dy encores plus, car se tu avoies promis et juré de faire*] ȝoure emprise. And naþelees ȝe wayn to [per]foreme þilk^t same emprise. by iust^t cause. Men shuld^t not^t seyn þat ȝe were a lyer or forsworne. [2257] ffor þe booke seiþ The while man makeþ no lesinge: whan he turneþ his corage to þe better'. [2258] And al be it^t soo þat ȝoure emprise be estabed and ordeyned by grete multitude of folk. ȝit ther ȝou not^t acomplise þilk^t same ordynaunce but^t ȝou like. [2259] ffor þe troupe of þingges and þe profite bene raper founden. in fewe ¹folk^t þat^t bene wise and ful of resoñ þan by grete multitude of folk^t þer euery man criep and clatereþ what^t hym likeþ. Sooply such^t multitude nys not^t honest^t [2260] And to þe secoude resoñ wher as ȝe seyn þat^t wommen bene wicked. saue ȝoure grace Certes ȝe dispise aȝ wommen in þis wise. and [he] þat^t al dispiseth. [al displeseth]. as seiþ þe boke. [2261] And Senec^t seiþ. Who-so wil haue sapience shal no man dispreise. but^t he shal gladly teche þat^t he can. wiþ[out] presumpeioun or pride. [2262] and suche þinge as he nouȝt^t ne can he shal not^t bene ashamed to lerne hem / and enquere of lasse

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

folk' þan hym self. [2263] And þat' þer haþ bene ful mony good wommen. [*l'en le puet prouuer légièrement*. [2264] *Premièrement, car nostre Seigneur Ihésu-Crist ne se fust oncques daigné descendre en femme*] 3if alle wommen had be wikke. [2265] but' for þat' grete bounte þat' is in wommen: our lorde *Ihesus crist'* whan he was risen from deþe to lyf appered rap'er to a womman þan to his apostels. [2266] And þouze þat' Salomon say. þat' he ne fonde neuer no good womman: It' foloweþ not' þefore þat' alle wommen bene wikke. [2267] ffor þouze. þat' he ne foonde noon good Certes mony an oþere man haþ founde mony a womman ful good and trewe. [2268] Or ellis *peraventure þe entent' of Salomon þis*. as in souereyn bounte he saide no womman. [2269] This to sayn þat' þer is no wizt' þat' haþ souereyne bounte sauf god allone. as he hym self recordeþ in his euangely. [2270] ffor þer nys no creature so good þat' hym ne wanteþ somewhat' of þe perfeccioun of god þat' is his [maker] [2271] ¶ 3oure iij. resoñ is þis. 3e seyne þat' if 3e gouerned 3ou by counsaile of me it' shulde seme þat' 3e had 3eue me þe maistrie *and þe lordship Ouer 3oure person*. [2272] sire saue 3oure grace: it' is not' soo. ffor 3if it' so were þat' man shulde be counsailed but' only of hem þat' had maistrie and lordship ouer his persone. men wold nat' be counsailed so oft'. [2273] ¶ ffor sopleþ þilk man þat' axeþ counsaile of a *purpoos*. 3it' haþ he free chois wheþer he wil wirk' by þat' counsaile or nōn. [2274] ¶ And as to 3oure ferþe resoñ þer as 3e sayn þat' þe Iangelarie of wommen can hide þingges þat' þei woote nouzt' as who seiþ. þat' a womman can not' hide. [2275] Sire These woordes bene vnderstonde of wommen þat' bene Iangelers and wicked [2276] of which womme men seiyn þat' þre þingges dryuen a man out' of his hous. That' is to seyn Smoke. dropping' of Reyn/ and wicked wyues [2277] ¶ And

suchi womman seith Salomon . þat it were better a man were
 in desert by hym self . þan wiþ a womman at home þat is
 riotours . [2278] And Sire by 3oure leue ¹þat am nat I .
 [2279] ffor 3e haue ful oft assaied my grete silence and my
 grete pacience . and eke how wel I can hiden and hele jinges
 þat men ouzten secrely to hyde [2280] ¶ And sople as to
 3oure .v. resoñ . where as 3e sayn þat in wicked coun-
 saille wommen venquissþ men / god woote þilk is no reson
 in no stede . [2281] ffor vnderstondeth nowe . 3e
 axen counsaile forto doo wikkednesse . [2282] and if 3e wilt
 wirk wikkednesse and 3oure wiff restreyn þilk
 wikkednesse & ouercommeth 3ou by reson and by
 good counsaile / [2283] certis 3oure wiff ouzt raþer to be
 preysed þan yblamed [2284] ¶ Thus shuld 3e vnder-
 stonde þe philosophre þat saip . In wikked counsaile
 wommen venquyssh her husbondes [2285] And þer
 as 3e blamen alle wommen *and* her resons I shal shewe
 3ou by mony ensamples þat mony a womman haþ
 bene ful good an 3it bene . and her counsaile hoolsom
 and profitable [2286] Eke somme men han saide þat þe
 counsail of wommen is eiþer do dere or to
 litel of price [2287] But al be it soo þat ful mony
 womman is badde and her counsaile vile and not worþe /
 3it han men founden ful mony a good womman and ful
 discrete and wise in counsailynge [2288] ¶ Loo Iacobe by
 counsaile of his modere Rebekka wan þe benyson of
 Isaak his fadere *and* þe lordship of al his //
 [2289] Iudith by her good counsaile delyuered þe Cite of
 Bethulye in which she dwelled out of þe hondes of
 Olyfernes þat had it biseched and wolde it destroye
 [2290] abigaille deliuered Nabell her husbonde from
 dauid þe [*roy qui le voloit occire, et appaisa*]
 þe kinge by her witte and by þe good counsail-
 inge [2291] ¶ Hester By hure good consaile enhaused
 gretly þe puple of god in þe regne of Assuerus . The kinge
 [2292] and þe same bunte in good counsailynge of

mony a good womman may men telle / [2293] and more-
ouer whan our lorde had create Adam our forme fadere
he saide in þis wise [2294] ¶ It is nat' good to be a
man allone. make we to hym an helpe s[e]mblable to him
self [2295] ¶ Here may 3e see þat' 3if womman
were nat' good and her counsaile good and profitable
[2296] Oure lord god of heuen wolde neiþer haue wrou3t'
hem. ne called hem helpe of man. but' raþer confusion to
man. [2297] And þat' seide onys a clerk in twoo vers.
What' is bette þan gold. Iasper. And what' is better þan
Iaspe. Wisdome. [2298] And what' is better þan
wisdom Womman. and what' is better þan good
womman no þinge. [2299] And sire by mony oþer
resons may 3e see þat' wommen bene good
[*et leur conseil bon*] and profitable. [2300] And þerfore
3if 3e wil trest' to my counsaile I shal restore 3ou
3oure dou3tere hool¹ and sounde. [2301] And eke I wil do
to 3ou so moche þat' 3e haue honure in þis caas

[2302] ¶ Whan meleby harde þe wordes of his
wif' Prudence he saide þus. [2303] I see wel þat' þe
wordes of Salomon bene soþe. He seiþ þat' wordes þat'
bene spoken discretely by ordinaunce. bene hony combes
for þei 3euen swetnesse to þe soule and hoolsomnesse
to þe body [2304] And wif by cause of þi swete
wordes and eke for I haue assaied and preued þi grete
sapience and þi grete trouþe I wil gouerne me by þi
counsaile in al þinge

[2305] ¶ Now sire quod dame prudence and siþen 3e
vouche sauf to be gouerned by my counsaile I wol
enforme 3owe howe 3e shul gouerne 3oure selfe in chesing'
of 3oure counsaile. [2306] 3e shal first' in al 3oure
werkes mekely bysechen to þe hi3e god þat' he wil
be 3oure counseilour [2307] and shapeþ as to such'
entent' þat' he 3eue 3ou counsaile and comforte as tau3t'
Thebye his sone. [2308] At' al tymes þow shalt' blesso

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

god and prey hym dresse þi waies. and loke alle þi counsailes bene in hym for euermore [2309] ¶ Seint Iame eke saiþ. If eny of 3owe haue nede of Sapience. axe it of god. [2310] and afterward þan shal 3e take counsaile in 3oure self. and examyne wel 3oure pouztes of such þingges as 3ou þenkeþ þat is best for 3oure profit. [2311] And þan shal 3e driue from 3oure hert þoo þat bene contrarious to good counsaile. [2312] þat is to sayn Ire. Couetise and hastinesse.

[2313] ffurst he þat askep counsaile of hym self certys he most bene wiþ-out Ire. for many causes [2314] ¶ þe furst is þis. He þat hap grete Ire and wreþe in hym self he weneþ alway þat he may doo þat he may nat doo [2315] ¶ And secoundly he þat is Irous and wroth. he ne may nat wel deme. [2316] [and he þat] may nat wel [deme may nat wel] counsaile [2317] ¶ The iij. is this þat he þat is Irous and wroþe as saiþ Senec ne may nat speke but blameful þingges / [2318] and wiþ his vicious wordes he stireþ oþer folk to angre and to Ire. [2319] And eke *sir* 3e most dryue Coueitise out of 3oure hert. [2320] ffor þe appostel seiþ þat Coueitise is roote of alle harmes. [2321] And trusteþ wel þat a couetous man ne can nat deme [ne thinke] but only to fulfille þe eende of his couetise [2322] and certes þat may neuer ben accompliced. ffor euer more þe habundance þat he hap of Ricchesse þe more he desireþ. [2323] ¶ And sire 3ou most also dryue ¹away from 3oure hert hastynesse [2324] for certes 3e may not deme for þe best a sodeyn þouzte þat falleþ in 3oure hert. ¶ but 3e most averse 3ou on it ful oft. [2325] ffor as 3e herde he[re]-to-form þe comon prouerbe. It is þis þat he þat sone demep. sone repentep.

[2326] Sire 3e bene not alway in like disposicion [2327] for certes some þinge þat semep somtyme to 3ou good to do. An oþer tyme it semep to 3ou þe contrarie

[2328] ¶ Whan ȝe han taken counsaile in ȝoure self and so han demed by good deliberaciōn such þingges as ȝou semed best / [2329] þan rede I ȝou þat ȝe kepe it Secre [2330] Bywrey nat ȝoure counsaile to no persone. but if so be þat ȝe wenen þat sikerly þat þorgh ȝoure bewreyngt ȝoure condiciōn shal be þe more profitable. [2331] ffor Ihesus Cirak seiþ. neiþere to þi ffoo ne to þi freende diskeuere not þi secre ne þi folye [2332] for þei wil ȝeue þe audience and lokinge and supportaciōn in þi presence *and* scorne þe in þine absence [2333] ¶ Anoper clerk seiþ þat scarcely shalt þow fynden eny persone þat may kepe counsaile secrely. [2334] þe boke seiþ. Whilst þat þou kepest þi counsaile in þine herte þou kepest it in þi prison. [2335] And whan þou bywreyst þi counsaile to eny wight he holdeþ þe in his snare [2336] And þefore it is better hide þi counsaile in þine hert. þan preien hym to whom ȝe han bywreieþ ȝoure counsaile þat he wil kepen it clooce and stille [2337] ¶ ffor Senec seiþ. If so be þat þou ne may þine owne counsaile hide. how maist þou preien eny oþer wigt þi secree counsaile to kepe [2338] ¶ But napeles ȝif þou wene sikerly þat þi bewryngt of þi counsaile to a persone wil make þi condicion stonden in a better plite. þan shalt þou telle him þi counsaile in þis wise [2339] ¶ ffurst þou shalt make no semblant whedere þe were leuer pees or werre. or þis or þat. ne schewe hym not þi wille and þine entent. [2340] ffor trest wel þat comonly þise counsailours bene flaterers [2341] and namely þe counseilours of grete lordys. [2342] ffor þei enformen hem alway raper to speke plesannt wordys enclynunge to þe lordes lust þan woordes þat bene trewe and profitable [2343] ¶ And þefore men sayne þat þe riche man haþ seelden good counsaile. but ȝif he haue it of hym self [2344] And aftere þat þow shalt considere þi freendes and þine enemyes. [2345] and as touchinge þi freendes þou shalt con-

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

sidere ¶ which of hem bene most feiþfuH. and most wyse and eldest 'and most approued in counseillynge / [2346] of hem shalt þowe axe þi counsaile as þe caas requireþ

[2347] I say not furst 3e shul clepe to 3oure counsaile 3oure frendes þat bene trewe [2348] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ. þat ri3t as þe hert of a man deliteþ in Sauour þat is swete. ri3t so þe counsaile of trewe frendes 3eueþ swetnesse to þe sowle. [2349] He seiþ also þat þer may no þing be likned to þe trewe frende. [2350] ffor certes gold ne siluer bene not so mochi worþ as þe good wille of a trewe frende. [2351] ¶ And eke he saiþ þat a trewe frende is a grete defence / who so þat it fyndeþ. certis he fyndeþ a grete tresoure. [2352] Than shul 3e eke considere if þat 3oure trewe frendes bene discrete and wise. for þe boke seiþ Aske alway þi counsaile of hem þat bene wise. [2353] And by þis same reson shulde 3e clepen to 3oure counsaile of 3oure frendys þat bene of age such as han sayn mochi and bene expert in mony þingges and bene approued in counsailinge. [2354] ffor þe boke seiþ þat in olde men is þe sapience [*et en moult de temps est prudence*] [2355] ¶ And Tullius saiþ þat grete þingges ne ben not accomplised by strenght ne by delyuernesse of body but by good counsaile By auctorite of persones and be science þe which iij. þinges ne bene not feble by age but certes þei enforsen and encreasen day by day. [2356] And þan shal 3e kepe þis for a general rewle ¶ ffurst shal 3e kepe to 3oure counsaile a fewe of 3oure frendes þat especial bene [2357] ffor Salomon seiþ Mony frendes haue þowe but among a thousand chese þe oon to be þi counsellour. [2358] ffor al be it soo þat þowe furst ne telle þi counsaile but to a fewe. þou maist afterward telle it to more folk. 3if it be nede. [2359] But loke alway þat þi counsailers haue þilk thre condiciouns þat I haue saide

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

byfore. þat^t is to say þat^t þei bene trewe and wise *and* of olde experience. [2360] and wirk^t not^t alway in euery nede by oon counsailere alloñ. for some it^t byhouep be counsailed by mony [2361] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ [salvation] of þingges: is wher þer bene mony counselours

[2362] ¶ Nowe seeþ what^t I haue tolde 3ou of which folk^t 3e shuld^t be counsailed. Now wil I telle 3ou which counsaile 3e au3t^t eschewe [2363] ¶ ffirst^t 3e shul eschewe þe counsaile of foolis. So seiþ Salomon. Take no counsaile of a foole ffor he can no counsaile. but^t aftere his owne affeccioñ [2364] ¶ The boke saiþ. þat^t þe proprete of a fool is þis. He troweth listly harme of euery wi3t^t. and listly trowep aH bounte ¹in hym self^t [2365] Thow eke shal eschewe þe Counsaillunge of aH flaterers suche as enforsen hem rap^rer to preise þe persone by flaterye þan forto telle 3ou þe sobfastnesse of þingges./

[2366] ¶ Therefore Tullius seiþ ¶ Amonge alle þe pestilences þat^t beñ in frendship þe grettest^t is flaterye. And þerfore is moor nede. þat^t þowe eschewe and drede and flee from þe swete wordes of flaterers þan of eny oþer puple [2367] ¶ The booke seiþ. Thow shalt^t rap^rer drede and flee from þe swete wordes of flaterers and preisers þan fro þe eger wordes of þi frende þat^t saiþ þe þi soþes. [2368] ¶ Salomon seiþ: That^t þe wordes of a flaterer is a snare to cacchen innocentes wiþe. [2369] He seiþ also þat^t he þat^t spekep to his frende. wordes of swetnesse and of plesaunce setteþ a nett^t byfore his foote to cacchen him [2370] And þerfore seiþ Tullius ¶ Encline nat^t þine eeres to fflaterers. ne take no counsaile to wordes of flaterye [2371] And Caton seiþ ¶ Auise þe wel and eschewe wordes of swetnesse and of plesaunce. [2372] And eke þou shalt^t eschwe þe counsaile of þine olde enemyes [*qui. sont reconciliés,* [2373] *car il est escript: nul ne retourne seurement en la*

grâce de son ennemy.] [2374] ¶ And Isope seiþ. Ne trest' not' to hem to þe which þow hast' hadde somtyme werre or enemyte. ne telle not' hem þi counsaile [2375] ¶ And senec' telleþ · þe cause whi · it' may nat' be. He seiþ where þat' grete fuyre haþ longe endured. þat' þer dwelleþ somme vapour of warmnesse [2376] ¶ And þerfore seiþ Salomon./ In þine olde foo trest' neuere. [2377] ffor sikerly þouze þine enemye be reconsiled and makeþ þe chere of humilite. and lowteþ to þe his hede. ne trust' him neuere. [2378] for certes he makeþ þilk fayned humilite more for his profite þan for eny loue. of þi persone. [*afin qu'il puisse avoir victoire de toi*] by swiçh feyned countenance. þe which victory he myzt' not' haue wiþ stryf or werre [2379] ¶ And Peter Alfons seiþ ¶ Make noon felawship wiþ þine olde enemyes. for 3if þowe doo hem bounte. þei wil peruerten it' into wykkednesse [2380] ¶ And eke þou most' eschwe þe counsaile of ham þat' beñ þi se[r]uauntes. and beren þe grete reuerence. for peraenture þei sayñ it' more for drede þan for loue [2381] ¶ And þerfore seiþ a Philosophre in þis wise: Ther nys no wizt' perfitylly trwe to hym þat' he to fore dredeþ [2382] ¶ And Tullius saiþ ¶ Ther is noo myzt' so grete of noon Emperour that' longe may endure but' 3if he haue more loue of þe puple þan drede [2383] ¶ Thow shalt' also e[s]cheu þe counsailynge of folk þat' bene dronklewe. for þei ne can no counsaile hide [2384] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ ¶ Ther is no counsaile þer as regneþ dronknesse [2385] ¶ 3e shul also haue in suspecte þe counsaile of such folk' as counsaile 3owe prively. oon. and þe contrarie openly [2386] ffor Cassiodorie seiþ./ That' it' is a manere sleiçt' to hindere. whan he sweweth to doon oon þinge openly and werkeþ þe contrarie prively. [2387] ¶ Thow shalt' also haue in suspecte the counsailing' wiþ wickeþ folke ffor þe boke saiþ The counsailynge of wicked folk' is alway ful

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

of fraude [2388] And *dauid seip* Blessed is þat man
þat hap not folowed þe counsaillingt of wikked men or
schrewen [2389] ¶ Thow shalt also eschewe þe counsaile
of zonge folk. for her counsaile is not ripe

[2390] ¶ Now Sire sip I haue shewde zou of such
folk ze shuld take zoure counsaile And of which folk ze
shul take zoure counsaile. and of which folk ze shul
folowe þe counsaile [2391] ¶ Now shal I telle zou howe ze
shul examyne zoure counsaile. after þe doctrine of Tullius
[2392] in examynyng. þan of zoure counsellour.
ze shul considere mony þingges [2393] ¶ Alþer furst ze
shul considere þat in þilk þinge þat þowe purposest.
and vppon what þinge þow wolt haue counsaile þat verrey
troupe be saide and considered. This is to sayn telle
trewly þi tale. [2394] for he þat seip fals may not
wel be counsailed in þat tale [in which he lyeth] [2395]
And after This þou shalt considere þoo þingges þat
accorden to þat þou purposest forto doo by þi counsail-
lours. 3if reson. accorde þerto. [2396] & eke 3if þi
myght may atteyne þerto. And 3if þe more party and þe
better part of þi counsailours accorde þerto anon.
[2397] þan shalt þou considere þat þinge þat shal
folowe of þat counsaillengt. as. pees. werre.
grace. profite or damage and mony oþer þingges.
[2398] [*et en toutes ces choses*] þow shalt chese þe
best and wayue all oþer. [2399] ¶ Than
shalt þow considere of what roote is engendred þi matere
of þi counsaile and whatt fruyte may be conseyued and
engendred þer-of [2400] ¶ Thow shalt also considere all þise
cases from whannes þei bene sprongen [2401] And
whan ze han examyned zoure counsaile as I haue saide.
which parte is þe better *and* more profitable and
haue approued it by mony wise folk and eelde. [2402]
Than shalt þow considere if þow maist performe it and
make of it a good ende. [2403] ffor reson wil not
þat eny man shuld bygynne a þinge but 3if he myght
performe it as hym lest or au3t [2404] Ne no wi3t shuld

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

take vpon him so heuy a charge þat he myzt not bere it. [2405] ffor þe prouerbe seiþ. He þat to moche embraiseth: destraynþ litel . [2406] And Caton saiþ ¶ Assaie to doo such þingges as þow hast pouer to doo . lest þat þi charge oppresse þe so soor þat þe byhoueþ to wayue . þinge þat þou hast bygonne [2407] ¶ And 3if so be ¹þat þowe be in doute whedere þou maist performe a þinge or noon . chese raþer to suffre þan bygynne [2408] **And Petrus Alfons** / saiþ: If þou hast myght to done a þinge of which þe most repent . it is bettere nay þan 3ee . [2409] This is to sayn þat þe is bettere to holde þi tunge stille . þan forto speke . [2410] Than may 3e vnderstonde by strengre resons . þat 3if þou hast powere to perfourme a warke of which þou shalt repent . þan is it better þat þowe suffre þan bygynne [2411] ¶ Wel sayne þei þat defenden euery wízt to assay a þing of which he is in doute whedere he may performe it or noon . [2412] And after whan 3e han examyned 3oure counsaile as I haue saide biforn . and knowen wel 3e may perfourme 3oure emprise . conforme it þan sadly til it be at an eend

[2413] ¶ Nowe is it reson and tyme . þat I shewe when and wherfore þat 3e may chaunge 3oure counsailours wíþ-out reпреef [2414] ¶ Sopely a man may change his counsaile . and his purpoos if þe cause seseþ . or whan a newe cause byndeþ . [2415] ffor þe lawe seiþ þat vpon þingges þat newly betiden byhoueþ newe counsaile . [2416] **And Senec** seiþ / 3if þi counsaile be comen to þe eeres of myñ enemye: chaunge þi counsaile [2417] ¶ Thow maist also chaunge þi counsaile . 3if so be þat þou fynde þat by errour or by oþer cause harme or damage may be-tide [2418] ¶ Also 3if þi counsaile be dishonest . or ellis comen of dishonest cause chaunge þi counsaile [2419] **ffor þe lawes sayn** . þat al byheestes þat bene dishonest bene of no valewe .

[2420] And eke ȝif it' so be þat' it' be impossible or may not' goodly be performed or kept'.

[2421] And take þis for a general rewle þat' euery counsaile þat' is affermed so strongly þat' it' may nat' be chaunged for no condicioñ þat' may be-tide I saye þat' þilk' counsaile is wikked

[2422] ¶ This Melebius whan he had herde þis doctrine of his wiff Dame Prudence: Answerde in þis wise.

[2423] ¶ Dame quod he as. ȝit' into þis tyme ȝe han wel and connably tauȝt' me. as in generall howe I shal gouerne as in chesinge and in wiþholding' of my counsaillours [2424] But' nowe wolde I fayn þat' ȝe wolden condescenden in especiañ. [2425] and tel me howe likeþ. or what' semeþ ȝowe by our counsaillours þat' we haue chosen in our present' nede

[2426] ¶ My lord' quod she I biseche ȝowe in alle humblesse þat' ȝe wil not' wilfully replie aȝeinst' my resons / and mystemper nat' ȝour hert' þouȝe I¹ say or speke þinge þat' ȝou displeseþ. [2427] ffor god woote þat' as þat' as in myn entent' I speke it' for ȝoure best' for ȝoure honure and ȝoure profite. [2428] and soþly. I hope þat' ȝoure benignite wil taken in pacience. [2429] Trestep' me wel quod she þan þat' ȝoure counsaile as in þis caas ne shuld nat' as forto speke proprely. be called a consaillinge. but' a mocioñ or mouynge of foly. [2430] in which' counsaile ȝe han erred [*en moult de manières*]

[2431] [*Premièrement, tu as erré*] in þe assembling' of ȝoure counsaillers. [2432] ffor ȝe shuld' first' haue cleped a fewe folk' [*et puis après plusieurs*] ȝif it' had bene nede. [2433] But' certes ȝe han sodeynly cleped to ȝoure counsaile a grete multitude of puple. fful chargeant' and ful noyous forto here [2434] Also ȝe han erred. for þere as ȝe shuld' oonly haue cleped to ȝoure counsaile ȝoure trewe freendes olde and wise [2435] ȝe haue ycleped straunge folk'. ȝonge folk'. fals flaterers and enemyes

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

reconsiled and folk^t þat^t done 3ou reuerence without
loue [2436] ¶ Also 3e haue erred. for 3e haue
brou3t^t wip 3ou to 3oure counsaile. Ire. Coueityse.
and hastynesse [2437] þe which þre þingges [*sont*
contraires à conseil, et] [2438] 3e han not^t
avyncesed or destroyed hem / neiþer in 3oure
self ne in 3oure counsaillours as 3e ou3t [2439]
¶ 3e haue erred also for 3e han shewed to 3oure
counsaillers 3oure talent^t and 3oure affection to make
werre anon and forto do vengeance. [2440] þei han
espied by 3oure wordes to what^t þing^t 3e bene enclined.
[2441] & þefore han þei counsailled 3ou rapþer to
3oure talent^t þan to 3oure prophete [2442] ¶ 3e haue erred
also. ffor it semed þat^t 3ou suffised to haue bene coun-
sailled by þise counsailloures oonly & with þat^t litel avice./
[2443] Where as in so grete and so highe a nede it^t had
ben necessarie moo counsaillours and more deliberacioñ to
performe 3oure emprise [2444] ¶ 3e haue erred also. for
3e haue nat^t examened 3oure counsaile in þe forseide
matere ne in dwe manere. as þe cace requireþ [2445] ¶ 3e
han erred also for 3e han maked no dyuysioñ bytwix
3oure counsaillours. þis is to sayñ bytwix 3oure
frendes & 3oure fayned counsaillours [2446] ne 3e han
not^t knowe þe wille of 3oure trewe frendes. olde and wise
[2447] But 3e han cast^t aH her wordes in an hochepote
and enclyned 3oure herte to þe more parte and to þe
gretter nombre and þer by 3e condescended. [2448]
And siþ 3e wote vele þat^t men shal fynde a
gretter multitude of fooles þan of wise men. [2449] and
þerfor þe counsaillours þat^t ben at congregacions and mul-
titudes of folk^t þer as men take more reward^t to þe
nombre þan to þe sapience of persones [2450] ¶ 3e se wel
þat^t ¹in such counsaillyngges fooles haue þe maistrie [2451]
. Melebius answerd^t ageyn and saide ¶ I graunte wel þat^t
I haue erred. [2452] but^t þer as þowe saist^t me here
bifore þat^t he nys nat^t to blame þat^t changeþ his coun-

saillours in certeyn cases and for certeyn iust' causes [2453] I am al redy to chaunge my counsailours rizt' as þowe wolt' devise [2454] ¶ The prouerbe seiþ. þat' forto do synne is mannyssh But certes forto perseuere longe in synne is werke of þe deueñ

[2455] ¶ To þis sentence anon answered dame prudence and saide [2456] Examyneþ quod þan she 3oure counsaile. and lat vs see whiche of hem haþ spoken moost' resonable & taught' 3ou best' counsaile. [2457] And for as moche as þat' þe examynacioñ is necessarie lat' vs bygynne at' Cirurgiens and at' þe phisiciencie þat' first' speken in þis matere. [2458] I say 3ou þat' þe Cirurgiens and þe phisiciens haue seiden 3ou in 3oure counsaile discretly as hem auzte. [2459] and in her speche seiden ful wisely as to þe office þat' hem appentep to done to euery wight' honoure and profite and no wigt' to anoye [2460] and aftere her craft' to doon grete diligence vnto þe cure of hem which þat' þei han in gouernance. [2461] And sir' rizt' as þei han answered wisely and discretly [2462] rizt' so rede I þat' þei bene heghly and souereynly guerdoned for her noble speche. [2463] and eke for þei shuld do þe more ententif bysynes in þe Curacioñ of 3oure douzter' / [2464] ffor al be it' soo þat' þei bene 3oure freendes perfore shal 3e not' suffre þat' þei serue 3ou for nouzt' [2465] But' 3e auzt' þe raper to gerdone hem and shewe hem 3our largesse. [2466] And as tochinge þe propositioñ þe which þe phisiciens encresden in þis caas. þis is to sayn [2467] þat' in maladies. þat' oon contrarieþ is warshed by anoþer contrarie [2468] .I wold fayn knowe how þei vnderstonde þilk' text' And what' is her sentence [2469] ¶ Certes quod Melebius vnderstonden it' in þis wise. [2470] þat' rizt' as þei han [m'(ont) fait un contraire, que je leur face un autre, [2471] et pour ce qu'ils (se) sont] venged ham on me and done me wronge Rizt' so shal I venge me vpon hem.

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

and done hem wronge [2472] and þan haue I cured oon contrary by a noþer

[2473] ¶ lo lo quod dame Prudence. how listly is euery man enclyned to his owne desire and to his awne plesaunce [2474] Certes *quod* she. wordes of þe phisiciens ne shulden nat^t haue bene vnderstonden in þis wise. [2475] ffor certys wikkednesse is nat^t contrarie to wicknesse. ne vengeance to vengeaunce. ne wrong^t to wronge. but^t þei bene semblable [2476] and þerfor on vengeaunce is not^t warissed by anoþer vengeaunce. ne oon wrong^t by a noþer ¹wronge. [2477] but^t euer-yeh of hem encreseþ and angreþ and greggeþ oþer. [2478] But certes þe wordes of þe phisicien shuld ben vnderstonden in þis wise. [2479] ffor goodnesse and wikkednesse ben two contraries and pees and werre *and* vengeaunce and suffrance. discord^t and accorde and mony oþer þingges. [2480] But^t certes wikkednesse shal be warsshed by goodnesse. discord^t by accord^t. werre by pees. *and* so forþ of oþer þingges. [2481] And also to hem accordeþ [*saint Pol*] þe appostel in mony places [2482] He seiþ. ne zeldeþ nouzt^t harme for harme ne wikked speche for wikked speche. [2483] but^t doþ wel to hem þat^t don 3ou harme. and blesse hem þat^t sayn to þe harme [2484] *and* in mony oþer places he amonesteþ pees and accorde. [2485] ¶ But^t now wil I speke to 3ou of þe counsaile which þat^t was 3euen to 3ou by þe men of lawe and þe wise folk^t [2486] þat^t seiden aH by oon acorde as 3e han herd^t bifore. [2487] That^t ouer alle þingges 3e shal do 3oure diligence to kepe 3oure persones and to warnestore 3oure hous [2488] and saiden also. þat^t in þis 3e ouzt^t forto worchen ful wisely and bisily and wiþ grete deliberacion [2489] And sire as to þe furst^t poynt^t þat^t toucheþ to þe keping^t of 3our persone [2490] 3e shul vnderstonde þat^t he þat^t haþ werre shal euermore deuoutely and mekely preien by-forn alle þingges [2491] þat^t Ihesu crist of his mercy. wol

haue hym in his protection and bene his souereyn helpinge
 at his nede. [2492] ffor certes in þis world per nys no
 wizt þat may be counsailled or kepte sufficiently wip-
 out þe kepinge of our lord Ihesu crist. [2493] To þis
 sentence accordeþ þe profete Dauid þat seiþ. [2494]
 3if god ne kepe þe Citee in ydel waiteþ he þat it kepeþ.
 [2495] Now sire þan shul 3e committe [*la garde*] of
 3oure persone to 3oure trewe frendes þat bene appreued
 and yknowe [2496] and of hem shul 3e asken helpe 3oure
 body forto kepe ffor caton seiþ ¶ 3if þou hast
 nede of helpe aske it of þi frendes [2497] ffor þer is
 noon so good a phisicien as þi trewe frende [2498]
 ¶ After þis þan shal 3e kepe 3ou from al
 straunge folk and fro leers and haue alway in suspecte
 her companye [2499] ¶ ffor Pers Alfons seiþ þus ne
 take no company by þe waye of a straunge mon. but 3if
 so be þat þowe knowe him of a lenger tyme. [2500]
 And 3if so be þat he falle to þi companye per-
 aventure wip-outen þine assent [2501] enquere þan
 as sotilly as euer þou maist of his conuersacion and of his
 lyf byfore and feyne þi way. Say þow wolt goo þidere
 as þou wilt not goo. [2502] and 3if he bere a spere
 holde þe on þe ri3t side. And 3if he bere ¹a swerde
 holde þe on þe lift side [2503] and so after þis
 þan shal 3e kepe 3ou wisely from al such manere
 puple as I haue saide byfore and hem and her counsaile
 eschewe. [2504] And þan after þat shal 3e kepe 3ou
 in such a manere [2505] þat for eny presumpcion of 3oure
 strength. þat 3e ne despise nat þe myzt of 3oure
 enemye and of 3our aduersarie. so lite þat 3e lete þe
 kepinge of 3oure persone for 3oure presumpcion. [2506]
 ffor euery wise man dredeþ his enemye. [2507]
 Salomon saip. wakeful is he þat oft hap drede.
 [2508] ffor certes he þat þorowe hardynesse of his
 hert and þorowe þe hardynesse of hym self hap to
 grete presumpcion him shal euel betide [2509] ¶ Than

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

shal 3e euermore countrewaite enbusshmentys and al
 specials. [2510] ffor Senec^e saiþ. þat^t þe wise man
 þat^t dredeþ harmes: escheweþ harmes. [2511] he ne
 falleþ not^t into periles: þat^t periles escheweþ [2512] ¶ And al
 be it^t so þat^t it^t seme þat^t þou art^t in siker place 3it^t
 shaltowe alway doo þi diligence in kepinge of þi persone.
 [2513] þis is to sayn be not^t necligent^t to kepe þi
 persone not^t oonly from þi grettest^t enemyes: but^t fro þi
 leest^t enemyes. [2514] Senec^e saiþ. A man þat^t is wel
 avised he dredeþ his leest^t enemye [2515] Ovide. saiþ.
 þat^t þe litel weseþ wil slee þe grete Owle and þe
 wilde hert^t [2516] And þe boke seiþ: A litel þorne
 may prik^t a kinge ful sore. And an hounde wil
 holde þe wilde bore. [2517] But^t naþelees I say. ¶ not^t
 þou shalt^t be so moch^t cowarde þat^t þou doute þer as it^t is no
 drede [2518] ¶ The boke saiþ / þat^t some folk^t han
 grete lest^t to desceyue. but^t 3it^t þei dreden hem to be de-
 sceyued. [2519] 3it^t shalt^t þou drede to be empoysened^t
 and kepe þe from þe company of scorners [2520]
 ¶ ffor þe booke seiþ: Wiþ scorners make no companye.
 but^t flee hem and her wordes as venyme.

[2521] Now as to þe secounde poynt^t when as 3oure
 wise counsailours counsailed 3ow to warnstore 3oure hous
 wiþ grete diligence. [2522] I wold fayn knowe how þat^t
 3e vnderstonden þilk^t wordys and what^t is 3oure Sentence.

[2523] Melebius Answerd^t and saide. Certes I vnder-
 stonde it^t in þis wise þat^t I shal warnstore myn hous
 wiþ towres such^t as haue castels and oþer manere
 edifices and armure and arcelries [2524] by such^t
 þingges as I may my persone and my hous kepe and
 defende. þat^t myn enemyes shul be in drede myn
 hous to approche.

[2525] To þis sentence anon answerd^t Dame Prudence
 ¶ Warnstoringe quod she of hegh^t toures and grete
 edifices [appertaineth sometimes to pride [2526] Men
 make towers and great edifices] with grete

costages and wip grete travaile. and whan þat þei be accomplished. 3it bene þei nat worþ a stree. but 3if þei ben deffended by trewe frendes þat bene olde and wise. / [2527] ¹And vnderstonde wel þat þe strengest and þe grettest garisoñ þat þe riche man may haue as wel to kepe his persone as his goodes. is [2528] þat he be beloued wip his subiectys. and wip his nei3bours [2529] ffor þus saip Tullius ¶ That þer is a maner garnesoñ þat no man may venquyssñ ne discomfett. And þat is [2530] a lord to be byloued wip his Citesains and of his puple

[2531] Now sir as to þe iij. poynt where as 3oure olde and wise counsaillours. seiden þat 3owe ne au3t not sodeynly ne hastely proceden in þis nede. [2532] but þat 3ou au3t purveien and apparailen 3ou in þis caas wip grete diligence and grete deliberaciõ. [2533] trewly I trowe þat þei seiden ri3t wisely and ri3t soþe. [2534] ffor Tullius seip ¶ In euery nede er þow bygynne it apparaille þe wip grete diligence [2535] Than say I þat in vengeance takinge in werre in bataile and in warne-storinge. [2536] er þan þou bygynne. I rede þat þou apparaile þe þerto. and do it with grete deliberaciõ. [2537] ffor Tullius saip: ¶ That longe apparaylinge to-forn þe bataile: makeþ shorte victorie. [2538] And so Cassidorus saip. ¶ The garneson is strengre whan it is longe tyme avised.

[2539] But now lat vs speke more of þe counsaile. þat was accorded by 3oure neighbours which as doon 3ou reuerence wip-out loue [2540] 3oure olde enemyes reconsiled. 3oure flaterers [2541] þat counsailden 3ou certeyn þingges prively. and openly counsailden 3ou þe contrarie [2542] ¶ The 3onge folk also þat counsailed 3ou to venge 3ou / and make werre anoõ [2543] ¶ And certes sire as I haue saide byforñ 3e haue gretly erred to han cleped Such manere folk to 3oure counsaile. [2544] which counsaillours bene nowe repreued. by þe resons tofore saide. [2545] But napelees lat nowe descende to

þe speciaH. ¶ 3e shullen furst^t proceden aftere þe doctrine of Tullius [2546] ¶ Certes þe troupe of þis or þis counsaile nedep nat^t diligently enquire. [2547] for it is wel wist^t which þei bene þat^t done to 3ou þis trespace and vilanye [2548] and how mony trespasours. and in what^t manere þei han to 3ou done. Aft þis wronge and al þis vylanye [2549] And aftere þis þan shal 3e examyne þe .ij. condicions whiche þat^t þe same Tullius addeþ in þis matere. [2550] ffor Tullius put^t to a þinge. þe which he clepeþ consentinge. þis is to sayn [2551] ¶ Who ben þei and which bene þei. and how mony. þat^t consenten to þi counsaile in þi wilfulnesse to doo hastely ¶ vengeaunce. [2552] And lat^t vs considere also. Who bene þei and howe mony & which bene þei þat^t consenten to 3oure aduersaries. [2553] And certys as to þe ¹furst^t poynt^t it^t is wel knowen which folk^t bene þei þat^t consenten to 3oure hastif wilfulness. [2554] ffor trewly al þoo þat^t counsailden 3ou to make sodeyn werre ne bene nat^t 3oure frendes [2555] [*Or véons doncques qui tu es et qui sont ceulx que tu tiens tant à ennemis.*] as to 3oure persone. [2556] ffor al be it^t soo þat^t 3e bene myghty and riche. certes 3e bene but^t alloon. [2557] for certes 3e ne haue no childe but^t a dou3tere. [2558] ne 3e ne haue no breþeren ne Cosyns Germaynns ne noon oþer nygh^t kynrede./ [2559] wherfore þat^t 3oure enemyes for drede shulden stent^t to plede with 3owe ne destroye 3oure persone [2560] ¶ 3e knowe also þat^t 3oure richesces mosten be dalt^t in diuers parties. [2561] and whan þat^t euery wigt^t hap his parte þei ne wol not^t take but^t litel reward^t to venge þi deeth. [2562] but^t þine enemyes bene þre. And þei han mony children. breþeren Cosynes and oþer nygh^t kinrede. [2563] And þou3e it^t so were þow haddest sclayn^t of hem twoo or þree. 3it^t dwellen þer ynowe to wreke her deeth. and to slee þi persone [2564] And þou3e so were þat^t 3oure kynrede were more siker and stedfast^t þan

þe kyn of 3oure aduersaries. [2565] 3it^t naþelees 3oure kynrede nys but^t litel kynrede. and litel sibbe to 3owe. [2566] And þe kynne of 3oure enemyes ben nygh^t sibbe to hem. And certis as to þat^t. Her condicione is bett^t þat^t 3owres. [2567] Than lat^t vs considere also. 3if þe counsaillinge of hem þat^t counsailed 3owe to take sodeyn vengeaunce whedere it^t accorde to resoñ. [2568] Certys 3e knowe wel nay. [2569] ffor as by riz^t and resoñ þer may no man take vengeaunce on no wiz^t but^t þe Iuge þat^t haþ þe Iurisdiction of it^t [2570] whan it^t is ygraunted hym to take þilk^t vengeaunce hastely or attemperally as þe lawe requireþ. [2571] And 3it^t moreouere of þilk^t word^t þat^t Tullius clepeþ consentynge. [2572] Thow shalt^t considere 3it^t þow myz^t and þi power myz^t consent^t and suffice to þi wilfulnesse and to þi counsaillours. [2573] ¶ And certes þou maist^t wel say nay. [2574] for sikerly as forto speke proprely. we may do no þinge. but^t oonly þing^t as we may done riz^tfully. [2575] And certes riz^tfully ne mowe 3e take no vengeaunce as of 3oure propre auctorite [2576] þan mowe 3e sene þat^t 3oure power consenteþ nat^t ne accordeþ not^t to 3oure wilfulnesse [2577] ¶ lat^t vs nowe examyne þe iij poynt^t þat^t Tullius clepeþ consequent^t [2578] [*Tu dois doneques savoir que à vengeance que tu veulx faire, est conséquent*] [2579] And þerof foloweþ a-noþer vengeaunce perile and werre. and oþer damages wiþ-out^t nombre of which we bene litel warre as at þis tyme. / [2580] ¶ And as touþing^t þe fourte poynt^t þat^t Tullius clepeþ engendringe [2581] þou shalt^t considere þis wronge which þat^t is done to þe is engendred of þe hate of þine enemyes [2582] and of þe ¹vengeance takinge vpon þat^t wolde engendre a-noþere vengeaunce And mochel sorowe and waastinge of Richesse as I saide eerst^t.

[2583] ¶ Now sire as þan touchinge to þe poynt^t. That^t Tullius causes which þat^t is þe last^t poynte [2584] þou

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

shalt vnderstonde þat þe wronge þat þou hast receyued
 haþ certeyne causes. [2585] whiche þat clerkes clepen
 orience. And officience. And *causa longinqua* and *causa*
propinqua. This is say þe fer cause and þe nyze
 cause. [2586] The fer cause is almyzty god þat is
 cause of al þingges. [2587] The nere cause is by
 þre enemyes [2588] ¶ The cause *accidentale* was late.
 [2589] þe cause *materiall* beþ .v. woundes of
 þi douztere [2590] The cause *formal* is þe maner of
 her worching þat brouzten ladders and clomben Inne at
 þi wyndowes. [2591] The cause *ffynal* was. for to sele þi
 doughtere. It letted nouzt in as moçh as in hem was / [2592]
 Than to speke of þe ferþe cause as to what ende þei
 shal come or what shal fynaly bytide of hem in þis
 caas. ne can I not deme but by countyng and by
 supposinge [2593] ¶ ffor we shul suppose. þat þei shul
 come to a wikked ende. [2594] by cause þat þe booke
 of Decrees seiþ ¶ Seeldome or wiþ grete peyne bene causes
 ybrouzt to good ende whan þei bene bodely begonne.

[2595] ¶ Now sire 3if men wold aske me whi þat
 3e suffred men to doo 3ou þis wronge and vilenye. Certes I
 can nat wel answere as for no soþfastnesse. [2596] ffor
 þe aposteH saiþ. þat þe sciences and þe Iugementes of
 our lord god almyzty. bene ful depe. [2597] þer may
 no man conprehende ne Serchen hem suffisantly [2598]
 ¶ Napeles by certeyne *presumpcionis* of coniectyngges
 I holde and bileue [2599] þat god which þat is ful of
 iustice. and of ríztwísnesse haþ suffred þis bitidde by
 Iustise ¶ cause resonable

[2600] ¶ Thi name is Melebye ¶ This is to sayne a man
 þat drynkeþ hony. [2601] thow hast ydronke so moche
 hony of which swete temporeH riches / and delicious hon-
 oures of þis world [2602] þat þou art dronken. and
 hast forzeten Ihesu crist þine creature [2603] Thow ne
 hast not doon to hym such honoure and reuerence as þe
 auzt [2604] ne þou ne hast nat wel taken kepe to

þe wordes of O ¶ Ovide þat seip̄. [2605] Vndere þe hony of þe goddes of þi body. is hidde þe venyme þat seleeþ þi soule [2606] ¶ And Salomon saiþ. 3if þou hast found̄ hony. eete of it̄ þat suffiseþ the. [2607] ffor 3if þou ete of it̄ out̄ of mesure. þou shalt̄ spewe and be nedý and poore. [2608] and *peraventure* criste haue þe in despite. and haþ turned away from þe his face and his ceres of mysericord̄ [2609] And also he haþ suffred þat þou hast be ¹punshed in þe manere þat þou hast̄ trespassed. [2610] Thou hast̄ doon synne azeinst̄ our lord̄ crist̄ [2611] ffor certes iij. enemyes of mankynde þat̄ is to seyne þe fless̄h. þe feende. and þe worlde [2612] thowe hast̄ suffred hem entred into þine hous wilfully by þe wyndowe of þi body. [2613] And hast̄ nat̄ defended þi self sufficiently azeinst̄ her assawtes and her temptacions so þat̄ þei han wounded þe saule in .v. places. [2614] þis is to sayn þe dedly synnes þat̄ bene entred into þine hert̄ by þi .v. wyndowes [2615] and in þe same manere our lord̄ *crist* haþ suffred and willed þat̄ þise iij. enemyes bene entred into þi hous by þi wyndowes [2616] and haue ywounded þi douztere in þe forsaide manre

[2617] ¶ Certes *quod* Melebius I se wel þat̄ 3e enforce 3ou moche by wordis to ouercome me in suche a manere þat̄ I shal not̄ venge me on myn enemyes. [2618] shewinḡ me þe periles *and* þe eueles þat̄ myghten falle of þis vengeaunce [2619] But̄ who so wold̄ considere in aȝ vengeances þe periles and euels þat̄ myzten swe of vengeaunce takinge [2620] a mon wold̄ neuere take vengeaunce and þat̄ were harme [2621] ffor by þe vengeaunce takinge. bene þe wikked men disseuered from þe good men. [2622] And þei þat̄ han wille to do wikkednesse restreyne her wikked purpoos whan they sene þe punshynge and chastisinḡ of trespasoures.

[2623] [And to this answered dame Prudence : ‘ Certes,’ said she, ‘ I grant you that from vengeaunce come many

advantages as well as many evils ; [2624] yet vengeance belongeth not to a "senglere persone," but only to the judges, and to those who have jurisdiction over evil-doers.'] [2625] And 3it' say I more þat' as ri3t' as so senglere persone synneþ in takinge vengeance of a noþer man [2626] Ri3t' so synneþ þe Iuge 3if he dco no vengeance on hem þat' it' haue deserued [2627] ¶ ffor Senec' seiþ þus ¶ þat' maister he saiþ is good þat' repreueþ shrewes [2628] ¶ And as Cassiodorie seiþ. A man dredeþ to do outrage whan he woote and knoweþ þat' it displeseþ to þe Iugges and þe souereyns. [2629] And anoþer seiþ ¶ The Iuge þat' dredeþ to do ri3t'. makeþ men schrewes [2630] ¶ And seint' Paule þe appostel seiþ in his epistel whan he writeþ to þe Romayns þat' þe Iuge berent' not' þe spere wiþ-uten cause. [2631] but' þei beren it' to punshe þe schrewes and mysdoers and forto defende þe good men. [2632] 3if 3e wil þan take vengeance of 3oure enemyes 3e shal retourne or haue 3oure recours to þe Iuge þat' haþ þe Iurisdiction vpon him [2633] and he shal punsshe hem as þe lawe askeþ and requereþ

[2634] ¶ A quod Melebies þis vengeance likeþ me no þinge [2635] I by-þenk me nowe and take hede. howe fortune haþ norshed me fro my childhode. and haþ hulpen me to passe mony a stronge paas [2636] ¶ Now wil I assaien her trowinge wiþ goddes helpe þat' he shal helpe me my shame forto 'venge

[2637] ¶ Certes quod Prudence 3if 3e wil wirk' by my counsaill 3e shul not' assaien fortune by no way [2638] ne 3e shul not' lene ne bowe vnto hire. after þe wordes of Senec'. [2639] ffor þingges þat' bene folily done. and þat' bene in hope of fortune shullen neuere come to good eende. [2640] ¶ And as þe same senc' saiþ. þe more clere and þe more shynynges þat' fortune is. þe more brotel and þe sonner brekeþ she. [2641] tresteþ not' on her for she nys nat' stedfast'. [2642] ffor whan þowe wenest' or trowest' to be more swre or siker of her

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

helpe. she wil faile þee. [2643] ¶ And þer as 3e sayn þat fortune haþ norsshed 3ou from 3oure childhode. [2644] I say þat in so mochel shal 3e þe lasse trest in her. and in her witt [2645] ¶ ffor Senec saip. what man þat is norsshed by fortune: she makeþ him to grete a foole [2646] ¶ Now þan siþ 3e desire and aske vengeance. and þe vengeance þat is done [*selon l'ordre de droit et devant le juge ne te plaiet*, [2647] *et la vengeance qui se fait*] in hope of fortune is perilous and vncerteyn. [2648] þen haue noon oþer remedy. but forto haue 3oure cours vnto þe souereyn Iuge þan vengeþ all vilanyes and wrongges. [2649] and he shal venge 3ou. After hym self witnesseth: where as he saip [2650] ¶ leueþ þe vengeance to me. / & I shal doo it

[2651] ¶ Melebius answered. 3if I ne venge me no3t of þe vilanye þat men han done to me. [2652] I shal somne or warne hem þat han do to me þoo vilanyes and al oþer to doo me anoþer vilanye. [2653] ¶ ffor it is writen. 3if þou take no vengeance of an olde vilanye / þow somnest þine aduersaries to doo an newe vilanye. [2654] And also for my suffraunce men wolden doo me so moche vilanye þat I my3t neiþer bere it ne susteyne it. [2655] And so þan I shulde be kept ouer lawe [2656] ¶ ffor men sayn In mochel suffringe shul mony þingges vnto þe which þow shalt not mow suffre

[2657] ¶ Certes quod prudence I graunte 3ow þat ouer mochel suffraunce is not good [2658] But 3it ne foloweth it not þer-of. That euery persone to whome men doo vilany take of it vengeance. [2659] ffor þat apperteneþ & longeþ oonly to the Iuges. ffor þei shul venge vilanyes and Iniuries. [2660] And herfore þoo two autoritees þat 3e han saide aboue ben oonly vnderstonden in þe Iuges [2661] for whan þei suffre ouer ¶ mykel þe wrongges and vilenyes to be done

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

wip-out^t ponshinge. [2662] þei sommone nat^t a man al only forto doo newe wrongges but^t þei commaunden it^t [2663] ¶ Also a wise man seiþ þat^t þe Iuge þat^t correcteþ not^t þe synner. Commaundeþ and biddeþ hym to synne [2664] and þe Iuges *and* ¹souereynes myzten in her londe so moche suffre of þe Shrewes and mysdoers [2665] þat^t þei shulden bye suchⁿ suffraunce by processe of tyme wexen of suchⁿ power and myzt^t. þat^t þei shuld putte out^t þe Iuges and souereynes from her places. [2666] and at^t þe last^t do hem lose her lordshippes

[2667] ¶ I put^t caas rizt^t nowe 3e had leue to venge 3ou. [2668] I say þat^t 3e ben nouzt^t of myght^t ne power^t as nowe to venge 3ou. [2669] ffor 3if we wil make comparisoñ vnto þe myzt^t of 3our aduersaries. 3e shul fynde in many þingges þat^t I haue shewed 3o^u er þis þat^t her condicioñ is better þan 3oure. [2670] And þerfore say I þat^t it^t is good as nowe þat^t 3e suffre and be pacient^t

[2671] ¶ fferþer more 3e knowen wel þat^t after þe comon Sawe it^t is a woodenesse a man to stryue wip a strenger. or wip a more myzty man þan hym self. [2672] And forto stryue wip a man of euen strengtli þat^t is to say wip as stronge a man as he is it^t is perile. [2673] And forto stryue wip a waikere man it^t is foly [2674] And þerfore shuld^t a man flee stryuynges as mochel as he myzt^t [2675] ¶ ffor Salomon saiþ. It is a grete worship a man to kepe hym from noyse and stryf. [2676] And 3if it^t so byfalle or happe þat^t a man of gretter myzt^t and strenger þan þou art^t do þe greuaunce. [2677] stody and byse þe raper to stille þe same greuaunce þan forto venge þe [2678] ¶ ffor Senec^e saiþ That^t he putteþ hym in grete perile. þat^t stryueþ wip a gretter man þan he is him self [2679] And Caton saiþ. 3if a man of hier astate or of degre or more myzty þan þou. do þe an oþer greuaunce suffre hym [2680] for he þat^t onys haþ greued þe

may anoþer tyme releue þe. and helpe þe. [2681] 3it sette I caas 3e haue boþ myzt and licence forto venge 3ou. [2682] I saie þat þer bene ful mony þingges þat shuld restreyn 3ou of vengeance takinge [2683] and make 3ou forto enclyne to suffre and forto haue pacience in þe wrongges þat bene done to 3ou. [2684] ffurst and forward 3if 3e wil considere þe defautes þat bene in 3oure persone. [2685] for which defautes god haþ suffred 3ou to haue tribulaciō as I haue saide byfore [2686] ¶ ffor þe Poete seiþ. þat we ouzten paciently þe tribulacions to take þat comen to vs whan þat we þenken and consideren þat we han deserued to haue hem [2687] ¶ And seint Gregor seiþ. That whan a man considereþ wel þe nombre of his defautes and of his synnes [2688] þan peynes and þe tribulaciōs þat he suffreþ semen þe lasse vnto him [2689] And in as moche as him þenk- eþ his synnes more hevie and greuous [2690] in so moche his peyne is þe lizter / and þe lesier vnto hym [2691] ¶ Also 3e owen to enclyne and bowe 3oure herte to take þe pacience of our lorde Ihesu crist. As seiþ seint Petre in his episteH [2692] Ihesu crist he seiþ haþ suffred for vs and 3euen ensample to eüery man to folowe and to swee hym [2693] for he did neuere ¶ synne ne neuere cam a vileyns worde out of his mouþe [2694] whan men cursed hym he cursed hem nouzt [. no gap] [2695] Also þe grete pacience ¶ which þat seintes þat bene in paradis han had in tribulacions þat þei han suffred wiþ-outen her desert or gilt. [2696] aught moçh stire 3ou to pacience [2697] ¶ fferþer- more 3e shal conforte 3ou to haue pacience [2698] consideringe þat þe tribulaciōs of þis worlde. but litel ¶ while enduren. and soon bene ypassed and goon [2699] And þe Loye þat a man secheþ to haue by pacience in tribulacions is perdurable. after þat þe

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

apostel seiþ . in his Epistel [2700] ¶ The Ioie of god he seiþ is perdurable . þat is to saye euerlastinge . [2701] Also troueþ and bileueþ stedfastly þat he nys nat wel norsshed ne wel ytauzt þat cannot haue pacience ne wil not receyue pacience [2702] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ . That þe doctrine and þe witte of man is knowe by pacience . [2703] And in anoþere place he seiþ . þat he þat kepeþ hym by pacience ¶ gouerneþ him by grete prudence [2704] ¶ And þe Same Salomon seiþ The angre and þe wretful man makeþ noyses . and þe pacient man attempreþ and stilleþ him self [2705] ¶ he saiþ also it is more worth to be pacient þan for to be rizt stronge . [2706] And he þat may haue lordship of his owne hert is more to preise þan he þat by his fors takeþ grete Citees and townes [2707] Therefore seiþ seint Iame in his Epistle. þat pacience in a grete vertue of perfection .

[2708] [*Certes, dit Mellibée, je vous ottroye, dame Prudence, que patience est une grant vertu,*] [2709] But euery man may nat haue þe perfection þat we seken . [2710] ne I. am not of þe nombre of rizt perfit men . [2711] for myn hert may neuer be in pees vnto þe tyme it be venged [2712] ¶ And al be it so þat it was grete perile to myne ¶ ennemyes to done me a vilanye in takinge vengeance vpon me . [2713] 3it token þei noon hede vpon þe perile . but fulfilleden her wikked wille and her corage [2714] And þer-for me þenkeþ men ouzt not repreue me þouze I putte me in a litel perile to venge me . [2715] and þouze I doo a grete excesse . þat is to say þouze I venge oon outrage by a noþere

[2716] ¶ O quod dame prudence 3e say 3oure wille . and as 3ou likeþ . [2717] But in no caas of þe world a man shuld not do outrage ne excesse forto venge hym [2718] ¶ ffor Cassidore seiþ þat as euel doþ he þat auengeþ him by outrage . as he þat doþ þe

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

outrage. [2719] And þer-for 3e shul venge 3ou after þe ordere of ry3t þat' is to saiñ¹ by þe lawe and by noon excesse ne noon outrage. [2720] And also if 3e wil venge 3ou of þe outrage of 3oure aduersaries in oþer manere þan ri3t' comaundeþ 3e synnen [2721] ¶ And þerfore saiþ Senec'. þat' a man shal neuere venge schrewdenesse by schrewdenesse / [2722] And if 3e say þat' ri3t' axeþ a man to defende violence by violence. and fi3tynge by fi3tinge. [2723] certes 3e say soth. whan þe defence is done anoon with-uten interuaHe or wiþ-out' tarynge or delay. [2724] for to defenden hym and not' forto vengen hym. [2725] And it' bilhoueþ þat' a man put' such' attemperance in his defence [2726] þat' men haue no cause no matere to repreuen hym þat' defendeþ hym of excesse and of outrage. [*car autrement ce seroit contre droit et contre raison* (Le Mén.)] [2727] ¶ Parde 3e knowen weH þat' 3e maken noon defence as nowe forto defende 3ou but' forto venge 3ou [2728] And so sweþ it' þat' 3e han no wille to doo 3oure dede attemperally. [2729] and þerfore me þenkeþ þat' pacience is goode ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: þat' he þat' is nat' pacient' shal haue grete harme

[2730] ¶ Certes quod meleby I graunte 3ou þat' whan a man is impacient' and wroop of þat' þat' toucheþ hym nat' and of þat' þat' perteneþ not' to hym. þouze it' harme him it' is no wondere [2731] ¶ ffor þe lawe saiþ. þat' he is coupable. þat' entermeteþ hym or melleþ hym wiþ suche þinge as apperteyneþ nat' to hym [2732] ¶ And Salomon saiþ. That' he þat' entermeteþ hym of þe noise or of þe strif of an oþer man is like to hym. þat' takeþ þe hounde by þe eeres [2733] and [*aussi comme celui qui prent le chien par les oreilles*] is oþer while biten wiþ þe hounde. [2734] ¶ Ri3t' in þe same wise is it' reson þat' he haue harme þat' by his impacience medleþ him of þe noise of an oþer man. wher þat' it' apperteneþ not' to him [2735] ¶ But' 3e knowe wel þat' þis dede and

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

þis greef *and* þis dissese toucheþ me riȝt
nyȝh. [2736] And þerfore þouze I be wroþe and im-
patient' it' is no mervaille. [2737] and sauynge þoure
grace I can not' see þat' it' myȝt' gretlich harme me.
þouze I toke vengeaunce [2738] ffor I am Riccher and
more myȝty þan myn enemyes bene. [2739] And wel
known ȝee þat' by money and by hauyng' grete posses-
sionis bene aȝ þingges of þis world' ygouerned [2740]
¶ And Salomon seiþ. þat' aȝ þingges obeyen to
monay.

[2741] [*Prudence, quant elle oy son mary vanter de sa
richesse et de sa puissance, et soy esjouir, et*] dispreis-
ing' þe poor of his aduersaries. Tho she spak and seide in
þis wise. [2742] Certes dere sire I graunt' þou þat'
ȝe bene riche and myȝty. [2743] and þat' riches ben
good to hem þat' han wel gotten hem. and þat'
wel can vsen hem [2744] ffor riȝt' as þe body of a
man: may not' lyue wiþ-out' þe saule. no more may it'
live wiþ-out' temporal goodes. [2745] And by rich-
esse may a man gete hym grete worship [2746] ¶ And
þerfore seiþ Pamphilles. ȝif an neterdes douȝtere he seiþ
be riche she may chese of a thowsand' men [*lequel
qu'elle veult pour son mary* [2747] *car* (Le Ménagier, tome i)]
[. . . no gap in the MS.] oon wil not' forsake her ne refuse
her. [2748] And þus Pamphilles seiþ also ¶ ȝif þou be
riȝt' happy þat' is to say riȝt' riche þow
shalt' fynde a grete nombre of felawes and frendes. [2749]
And ȝif þi fortune that' þou wexe poor. fare
wel frendship and felawship. [2750] for þou shalt bene
allone wiþ-oute eny companye. but' ȝif it' be þe
company of poor folk' [2751] // And ȝit seiþ þis
Pamphilles more ouer þat' þei þat' bene thral and
bonde of lynage. shullen be made worþi and noble by
richesses [2752] And riȝt' so as by riches þer
commen mony goodes. Riȝt' so by pouert' þer commen
mony harmes and euels. [2753] ffor grete pouerte con-

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

streyneth a man to doo many euels [2754] ¶ And þerefore clepþ Cassidore pouert'. þe modere ruyne. [2755] That' is to say þe modere of ouerþrowinge or falling' downe [2756] ¶ And þerefore Pers Alfons saip. Oon of þe grettest' aduersitees of þis world' is [2757] whan a free [man] by kinde is constreynd by pouert' to eten þe almesse of his enemye [2758] ¶ And þe Same Seip Innocent' in oon of his bokes. He seip þat' soriful and vnhappy is þe condition' of a poor begger. [2759] ffor 3if he askep not' his mete he dyep for hungere. [2760] [*et se ils demandent, ils meurent de honte;*] Necessite constreyneþ hym to aske. [2761] And þerefore seip Salomon. That' better is to dye þan forto haue suche pouerte [2762] ¶ And as þe Same Salomon seip Better is to dye a bitter deef þan forto lyuen in swich wise [2763] ¶ By þise resons þat' .I haue seide vnto 3owe and by mony resons þat' I coude saie [2764] I graunte þat' richesesses bene good to hem þat' geten hem weþ And vsen hem wel. [2765] And þerefore wil I shewe 3ow how 3e shul haue 3ou. and howe 3e shal bere 3ou in gaderinge of richesesses. and in what' manere 3e shul vsen hem

[2766] ffirst' 3e shul geten hem with-out grete desire. by good leisere sokingly. and not' ouerhastely. [2767] ffor a man þat' is to desiringe to geten richesse. abandoneþ hym to þeft' and to aþt oþer evels [2768] ¶ And þerefore seip Salomon ¶ he þat' hastep hym to bysily to wexe ricche' shal be noon Innocent' [2769] ¶ He saip also þat' þe Richesse þat' hastely commep to a man. sone and liztly goop and passeþ from hym [2770] ¶ But' þat' richesse þat' commep alway litel and litel. wexeþ alway and multipliþ [2771] ¶ And sire 3e shul gete richesse by 3oure witte. and by 3oure trauaile. vnto 3oure profite [2772] and þat' wiþ-uten wronge or harme doynge to eny oþere persone. [2773] ffor þe lawe

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

seip ¶ That he ne makeþ nat' hym self riche. 3if he do harme to a noþer wight' [2774] ¶ This is to say þat' nature defendeþ and forbedeþ by ryght'. þat' ¹no man make him self riche wiþ þe harme of a noþere persoñ. [2775] ¶ And Tullius saip. þat' no sorowe ne no drede of deth ne of þou3t' þat' may falle to a man [2776] is so mochel azeinst' nature as a man to encrees his owne profite to þe harme of anoþer man [2777] ¶ And þouze þe grete men and þe riche men geten rychesses more liztly þan þou. [2778] 3it' shalt' þou nat' be ydel ne sclowe to þi prophete. ffor þou shalt' in al þinge and in al wise fle ydelnesse [2779] ¶ ffor Salomon seip'. That' ydelnesse techeþ a man to do many eueles [2780] ¶ And þe Same Salomon seip'. þat' he þat' travailleþ and bysieþ him to tille his londe shal ete þe brede. [2781] But' he þat' is ydel and casteþ him to doo no bysynesse ne occupaciõ shal falle into pouert' and dye for hungere. [2782] And he þat' is ydel and sclowe. can neuer fynde conable tyme forto do his profite [2783] ¶ ffor þer is a versifour þat' saip. That' þe ydel man excuseþ hym in wyntere. be cause of þe grete colde. And in somer by enchesoñ of þe grete hete [2784] ¶ ffor þise causes seip' Catoñ ¶ Wakeþ and enclyneþ 3ou not' ouer moche forto slepe. for ouer moche rest norssheþ and causeþ mony vyces [2785] ¶ And þefore seip' seint' Ierom ¶ Doþ somme good dedys þat' þe deuel which is oure enemye ne fynde 3ou nat' vnocupied. [2786] ffor þe deuel ne takeþ not' liztly vnto his worch- inge such as he fyndeþ occupied in goode werkes

[2787] ¶ Than þus in geting' of Richesse 3e moten flee ydelnesse / [2788] ¶ and afterward' 3e shul vse þe richesse which 3e han geten by 3oure witte and by 3oure travaile [2789] in such a manere þat' men holde 3ou nat' to scarce. ne to sparinge. ne to fool large. þat' is to sayn ouer large a spendere [2790] ¶ ffor rizt' as men blamen an Auarous man by cause of his scarsete and chyncherie [2791] In þe same manere is he blamed

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

þat' spendeþ ouer largely. [2792] ¶ And þefore seiþ
 Catoñ. vse he saiþ þe Richesse þat' þou hast' ygeten.
 [2793] in such' a manere. þat' þer be no matere ne
 cause to calle þe neiþer wrecche ne chynche. [2794]
 ffor it' is grete shame a man to haue a poor hert'
 and a rich' purs [2795] ¶ He seiþ also þe goodes þat'
 thow hast' geten vse hem by mesure þat' is to say.
 spende mesurably [2796] ffor þei þat' folyly waasten
 and dispenden þe goodes þat' þei haue. [2797] whan
 þei han no more propre of her owne þei shape hem
 to take þe goodes of a noþer man. [2798] ¶ I say þan
 þat' 3e shal flee Auarice / [2799] vsinge 3oure richesse
 as in such' manere þat' men say not' þat' 3oure goodes
 bene yburied. [2800] but' þat' 3e haue hem in 3oure
 myght' and in 3oure weldinge [2801] ffor þe wise
 repreueþ þe Auerous man and seiþ in two
 versus. [2802] Wherto and whi bereþ a man his
 goodes by his Auarice and knoweþ wel þat' nedes
 he most' deye. [2803] for deþ is þe ende of euery man
 as in þis present' lif [2804] and for what' cause or
 enchesoñ ioyneþ he him or knytteþ he hym so fast'
 vnto his goodes [2805] þat' aþ his wites mowe not'
 disseuere hym or departen hym fro his goodes.
 [2806] and knoweþ wel or aught' knowe þat' whan he
 is dede he shal no þinge bere wiþ him out' of þis
 world [2807] ¶ And þefore seiþ seynt' Austyne. That'
 þe Auerous man is likned into helle. [2808] þat' þe
 more it' swoloweþ. þe more desire it' haþ to swalowe and
 deuowre [2809] And as wel as 3e wolde eschwe to be
 cleped an Auarous man or chynche [2810] as wel
 shul 3e kepe 3ou and gouerne 3ou so and in such' a wise
 so þat' men ne cleped 3ou not' fool large [2811] ¶ Therefore
 seiþ Tullius The goodes he seiþ of þine hous shuld
 nat' bene hidde ne kept' so cloos but' þat' þei myzt'
 be opned by Pite and by bonairte [2812] þat' is to
 sayn to 3eue hem parte þat' han grete nede [2813]

Ne þi goodes shuld not' bene so open to be euery
mannys goodes [2814] ¶ Afterward in getinge of 3oure
ricchesse & in vsyng' of hem 3e shul alway haue þre
þingges in 3oure hert'. [2815] þat' is to sayn. our lorde
god. conscience and good name [2816] ¶ ffirst' 3e shul
haue god in 3oure hert' [2817] and for no ricchesse 3e
shul doo no þinge which may in eny manere displese
crisť þat' is youre creatour' and 3our' maker' [2818] ¶ ffor after
þe worde of Salomon. it' is better to haue a litel good
with þe loue of god [2819] þan to haue moche good
and tresour' and lese þe loue of' his lorde god [2820]
¶ And þe prophet' seiþ. þat' better it' is to bene a
good man. and haue a litel good and tresour'. [2821] þan to
be holden a shrewe and haue grete Ricchesse. [2822]
And 3it' say I ferþermore þat' 3e shulden alway
doon 3our' bisynesse to gete 3ou richesses [2823] so þat'
3e gete hem wiþ good conscience [2824] ¶ And þe Appostel
seiþ. Ther nys no þinge in this world' of which we
shuld haue so grete Ioye as whan our conscience bereþ
vs witnesse of good [2825] ¶ And þe wise man seiþ. The
substañce of a man is ful good whan synne nys nat' in
his coscience [2826] ¶ Afterward in getinge of 3oure
richesses / and in vsing' of hem [2827] þe most' haue
grete bysynesse and grete diligence þat' 3oure 'good
name be alway kept' and conserued [2828] ¶ ffor Salo-
mon seiþ That' better it' is and more auailleþ a man
to haue good name þan to haue grete ricchesse
[2829] ¶ And þerfore he seiþ in a noþer place Doo grete
diligence seiþ Salomon in kepinge of þi frend' and of
þi good name. [2830] ffor it' shal lenger abide wiþ
þe þan eny tresour' be it' neuere so precious. [2831]
And certes he shuld not' be cleped a gentil man. þat'
after god and good conscience aH þingges left' ne dop
his dyligence and bysynesse to kepen his good name
[2832] ¶ And Cassidore seiþ: þat' it' is signe of a gentiH
hert' whan a man desireþ and loueþ to haue a goode name. /

[2833] ¶ And þerfore seiþ seint Austyne. Ther bene two þingges þat are necessarye and nedefull. [2834] & þat is good conscience and good loos. [2835] that is to sayn good conscience to þine owne persone inward. And good loos for þi neighbour outward. [2836] And he þat tresteþ him so moche in his good conscience [2837] þat he displese and setteþ at nouzt his good name or loos. *and* rekkeþ not þouze he kepe not his good name. he nys but a crueH cherle

[2838] ¶ Sire now haue I schewed zou how ze shuld doo in kepinge rychesse and howe ze shuld vsen hem [2839] ¶ I see wel þat for þe trust þat ze haue in zoure richesse. ze wil meuen werre and bataille [2840] I counsaile þat ze bygynne no werre. in trest of zoure Richesse. ffor þei ne suffisen not werres to Mayntene [2841] ¶ And þerfore saiþ a Philosophre. That man þat desireþ *and* wil algates haue werre. shal neuere haue suffisaunt. [2842] ffor þe Richer þat he is þe gretter dispence mote he make zif he wil haue worship or victorie [2843] ¶ And Salomon saiþ þat þe gretter richesse þat a man hath. þe gretter dispendours he haþ. [2844] And dere sir al be it soo. þat for zoure richesse ze mowe haue mochel folk. [2845] zit byhoueþ it not. ne it is not good to bygynne werre. þer as ze may in oþer manere haue pees vnto zoure worship and profite [2846] ¶ ffor þe victorie of batailles þat bene in þis world lith not in grete nombre or multitude of puple. ne in vertue of man. [2847] but it lith in þe wille and in þe hand of our lord god almyzty [2848] ¶ And þerfore Iudas makabeus which was goddys knyzt [2849] whan he shuld fizt azeinst his aduersarie þat had a gretter nombre and a gretter multitude of folk And strengre þan was þis puple of Makabe. [2850] zit he recomforte his lytel 'companye and saide rizt in þis wise [2851] ¶ Also litzly quod he may our lord god almyzty zeue victorie to fewe folk

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

as to monye [2852] ffor þe victory of bataille *commeþ* not' by þe grete nombre of puple [2853] but' it' *commeth* fro our lord of heuene. [2854] And dere sire for as mochi As þer nys no man certeyn 3if it' be worþ þat' god 3eue hym victorie [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] or nou3t'. aftere þat' Salomon seiþ. [2855] Therefore euery man shulde gretly drede werrus to bygynne [2856] And by cause þat' [in] batailles [are] many *periles* [2857] & [it may] happen oþer while þat' as sone is þe grete man sclayn as þe litel man [2858] ¶ And as it is ywritte in þe secoñd' book' of kingges The dedes of batailles bene auenturous and no þinge certeyn. [2859] for as lityly is ooñ hurt' wiþ a spere as a noþer [2860] And þerfore it' is grete perile in werre. Therefore shuld a man flee and eschewe werre in as mochel as a man may goodly ./ [2861] ffor Salomon seiþ: He þat' loueþ perile shal falle in perile

[2862] After þat' dame prudence had spoken in þis manere Melebius answerd' and saide. [2863] I see wel dame þat' by 3oure faire wordes and by 3oure resons þat' ye han schewed me. þat' þe werre likeþ 3ou no þinge. [2864] But' I haue not' 3it' herde 3oure counsaile howe I shal doo in þis nede .

[2865] Certes quod she I counsaile 3o^u þat' 3e acorde wiþ 3oure aduersaries *and* þat' 3e haue pees *with* hem [2866] ¶ ffor seint' Iame seiþ in his Episteh ¶ That' by concord' and pees þe smale riches wexen grete [2867] And by debate and discord' þe grete richesse fallen down. [2868] And 3e knowe wel þat' oon of þe grettest' and most' souereyn þinge þat' is in þis world' is vnite and pees [2869] And þerfore saiþ our lord Ihesu crist' to his apostel in þis wise [2870] ¶ Wel happy and blessed bene þei þat' louen and pu[r]chasen pees for þei bene called children of god [2871] ¶ A quod Meleby nowe se I wel þat' 3e loue not' myn h[o]noure and my worship. [2872] 3e knowen wel þat' myne

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

aduersaries haue bygonnen þis debate and brigge by her outrage [2873] And 3e See wel þat þei ne requiren ne preien me nat' of pees ne þei asken not' to be recounsailed. [2874] wil 3e þan þat I goo meke and obeye me to hem . and crye hem merceye . [2875] ffor soth þat were not' my worship . [2876] ffor riȝt' as men sayñ þat ouer grete humblesse engendreþ dispisinge . so fareþ it' by to grete humilite & mekenesse

[2877] ¶ Than bygan dame prudence to make semblaunt' of wreth and saide . [2878] Certes sire sauf 3oure grace I loue 3our honoure and 3oure profite as I doo myn owne and euere ha'ue done [2879] ne 3e ne mowen not' sayn þe contrarie . [2880] And 3it' 3if I had saide þat 3e shulde haue purchased þe pees *and* þe reconsiliacion I ne had not' moche mystake me ne saide amys [2881] ffor þe Wise man seiþ . The disencion bygyneþ by a noþer man . *and* þe reconsilyngē by þi silf . [2882] And þe prophete seiþ . flce schrewdenesse and doo goodnesse [2883] ¶ Seke pees and folowe it' in as moche as in þe is . [2884] ¶ 3it' seiþ he not' þat 3e shul Swe raper to 3oure aduersaries for pees þan þei shullen to 3ou . [2885] ffor I knowe wel þat 3e bene so hard' herted . þat 3e wil do no þing' for mee [2886] ¶ And Salomon seiþ' þat he þat hap ouer harde an hert' . at' þe last' shal myshappe and mystide

[2887] ¶ Whan Melebius had seye dame prudence make semblaunt' of wreth he saide in þis wise [2888] ¶ Dame I prey 3ou þat 3e be not' displesed of þingges þat I saye . [2889] ffor 3e knowe wel þat I am angry and wrooþ and þat is no wondere . [2890] and þei þat bene wrooþ . weten not' wel what' þei doon ne what' þei seyn [2891] ¶ And þefore the prophete seiþ . That trowbled eyen haue no clere siȝt' . [2892] But' seiþ on and counsaile me as 3e likeþ . for I am redy to doo riȝt' as 3e wil desire . [2893] and if 3e repreue me of my foly .I am þe more holden to loue 3ou and to praise

3ou [2894] ¶ ffor Salomon saith That he þat reproveþ
hym þat doop foly. [2895] he shal finde gretter grace
þat he þat deceyueþ hym wiþ swete wordes

[2896] Than said Dame prudence. I make no
semblant of wreþe ne of anger but for 3oure grete profite
[2897] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: he is more wroop þat re-
preueth or chideþ a foole for his folye schewing him
semblant of wreþe [2898] þan he þat supporteþ hym
or preiseþ him in his mysdoynge at laugeþ at his
foly [2899] ¶ And þis same Salomon seiþ afterward
þat by þe soriful vese of a man þat is to sayn by
sory and heuy countenaunce of a man [2900] þe foole
correcteþ and amendeþ him self

[2901] ¶ Than sayde Meleby I shal not conne an-
swere to so mony resons as 3e putten to me and
shewen / [2902] saiþ shortely 3oure wille. and 3oure coun-
saile and I am al redy to fulfille and performe it

[2903] ¶ Than Dame prudence diskeuered al her wille
vnto hym and saide [2904] I counsaile 3ou þat 3e
abouen al þinge maken pees bytwene god and
3owe [2905] and beþ recoñsailled vnto him and to his
grace. [2906] ffor I haue seið 3ow here byfore ¶ God
haþ suffred 3ou to haue þis tribulaciõ and dissesse for
3oure synnes. [2907] And if 3e doo as I say 3owe ¹god wil
sende 3oure aduersaries vnto 3ou [2908] and make hem
to falle at 3oure fete redy to 3oure wille and 3oure com-
aundement [2909] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: Whan þe con-
dicion of man is plesaunte and likinge to god [2910] he
chaungeth þe hertes of þe mannes aduersaries and con-
streyneth hem to bysechen him of pees and of grace
[2911] ¶ And I prei 3ou lat me speke wiþ 3oure aduersaries
in privy place. [2912] for þei shal not knowe it
be 3oure wille ne 3oure assent. [2913] And þan when
I knowe her wiþ and assent: I may counsaile 3ou
þe more suerly

[2914] ¶ Dame quod Meleby doþ 3our wiþ and

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

3oure lyking^t [2915] ffor I putte me fulli in 3oure
disposicioñ and 3oure ordynaunce

[2916] ¶ Than dame prudence whan [she] seg^hi þe
wille of her husbonde and she delyuered her and toke avice
by hure self [2917] þenkinge by her self^t how she my3^t bringe
þis nede vnto a goode conclusioñ and a good eende
[2918] ¶ And whan she see3e her tyme she sent^t for þise
aduersaries to come vnto her into a pryvy place
[2919] and schewed wisely vnto hem þe greet^t goodnesse
þat^t *commeþ* of pees. [2920] and þe grete harmes *and*
periles þat^t ben in werre. [2921] and saide to hem in
a goo[d]ly manere howe þat^t hem ou3ten to haue grete re-
pentance [2922] of þe Iniurie and wronge þat^t þei
hadden ydone. to Meleby her lorde and vnto her and vnto
her dou3ter^l.

[2923] And whan þei herden þe goodly wordes of
dame Prudence [2924] þei weren so supprised and
rauissed and hadden so gret Ioie of her^l þat^t wondere
was to telle [2925] ¶ O lady quod þei 3e ¶ han schewed
vnto vs þe blissinge of swetnesse aftere þe Sawe of
dauid þe *prophete*. [2926] ffor þe reconsilinge which
we ne bene not^t worþi to haue in no manere. [2927] but^t we
ou3^t to requiren it^t wiþ grete contricioñ and humilite
[2928] 3e as 3oure grete goodnesse haþ presented vnto us
[2929] Now se we wel þe science and þe konyng^t
of Salomoñ is ful trewe [2930] for he seiþ þat^t
swete wordes multiplien and encreesen freendes. and
maken schrewes to be debonayre and meke

[2931] Certes quod þei we putten oure dede and
al our matere. *and* cause alhoolly in 3oure good wille
[2932] and bene redy to obeye to þe speche and þe comaunde-
ment^t of my lord Melebye [2933] ¶ And þefore our dere
and benigne lady we preien 3ou and bysechen 3ou as
mekely as we conne or mowen [2934] ¶ þat^t li^t like vnto
3oure grete goodnesse to fulfille in dede 3oure good-
ly wordes [2935] ffor we consideren and knowen

þat we han offended and greued my lorde Melebie out^t of
 mesure [2936] so fer forþ þat we bene nat^a a power to
 maken his a[men]dys. [2937] and þefore we oblie and
 bynde vs and our frendes forto doo al his wille and his
 comaundement^t [2938] But^t perauenture he haþ such
 hevynesse and such^h wreth^h to vs ward^t by cause of our
 defence [2939] þat he wil enioyne vs suche peyne
 as we may not^t bere ne susteyne [2940] ¶ And þefore
 noble lady we biseke to 3oure wommanly pite.
 [2941] takeþ such^h avisement^t in þis nede þat we ne our
 frendes ben not^t disherited ne distroied þorgh^h oure
 foly

[2942] *Certis quod* Prudence it^t is an harde þinge and
 ri3^t perilous [2943] þat man put him al vtterly
 in þe arbitracioⁿ and Iugement^t and in þe myght^t and
 power of his enemyes [2944] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ Leueþ
 and 3eueþ credence to þat I shal sayn ¶ I say
quod he 3if puple and gouernours of holy chureh^h.
 [2945] to þi sone. to þi wif and þi frende. ne to
 þi broþer. [2946] ne 3eue þou neuere my3^t ne
 maistrie of þi body while þou lyuest^t [2947] ¶ Nowe
 sith þat he forfendeþ. þat man shuld not^t 3eue to his
 broþer ne to his frende þe my3^t of his body [2948]
 Than by a strengre reson he forfendeþ and forbedeþ. a
 man to 3eue hym self vnto his enemye [2949] ¶ And nape-
 les I counsaile 3owe þat 3e ne mystrest^t not^t my lorde
 [2950] for I woote wel and knowe verrely þat he is
 debonaire and meke. large *and* curtays. [2951] *and* no
 þinge desirous ne coueitous of good ne richesse. [2952]
 ffor nys no þinge in þis world^t þat he desireþ.
 saue oonly worship and honour [2953] ¶ fferþermore
 I knowe wel and I am ri3^t swre þat he wil no þinge
 doo in þis nede wiþ-out^t counsaile of me. [2954] And I
 shal so worche in þis cause þat by þe grace of *our* lorde
 god 3e shul be recounsailed vnto vs.

[2955][†] Than seide þei wiþ oon vois. Worshipful

lady we putten vs and oure ¶ goodes al fully in 3oure wille and in 3oure disposicioñ [2956] and bene redy forto come what day þat it likeþ vnto 3oure noblenesse to lymyte vs or asigne vs [2957] forto make oure obligacioñ and be bounde as stronge as it likeþ vnto 3oure goodnesse [2958] þat we may fulfille þe will of 3ow *and* of my lord Melebye.

[2959] And whan dame prudence had ¶ ¹herde þe answers of þise men she bad hem go ageyn prively [2960] And she retorned to her lord Meleby and told hym how she fand his aduersaries ful repentaunte [2961] knowlechyng^t ful lowly her synnes and trespasses / and howe þei weren redy to suffren al peyne. [2962] requiryng^t and preying^t hym of *mercye and pite*

[2963] ¶ þan saide Meleby he is wel worþ to haue pardone and for3euenesse of his synne. þat excuseþ nat his synne. [2964] but knowleccheþ and repentep hym asking^t Indulgence [2965] ¶ ffor Senec^t say. There is þe remyssiõ and for3euenes^t: wher as þe confession is. [2966] ffor confession is neighbour to Innocence. [2967] ¶ And he saþ in an oþer place: þat he þat haþ shame of his synne and knowleccheþ it: is worþi remyssiõ. And þerefor^t I assent^t and conferme me to haue pees. [2968] But it is good þat we doo it not wip-out þassent^t of oure frendes

[2969] Than was prudence rizt^t glad and Ioyful and saide þis [2970] ¶ Certes sire quod she ye han wel and goodly answerd. [2971] ffor rizt^t as by the counsaile of assent^t and helpe of 3oure frendes 3e haue beñ stired to venge 3ou. and make werre. [2972] Rizt^t so wip-outen her counsaile shal 3e not accorde 3ou ne haue pees wip 3oure aduersaries [2973] ¶ ffor þe lawe saþ. Ther nys no þing^t so good by way of kyng^e as þinge to bene vnbounde by hym þat it was ybounde

[2974] And þan Dame prudence wip-outen delay or tarynge sent^t anon Massagers for her kynne and for her olde frendes which þat were trewe *and* wise [2975]

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. **Petworth MS.**

and tolde hem by order in þe presence of Me[le]bye al þis matere as it is aboue expressed and declared. [2976] and preyed hem þat þai wolde ȝeuen her avise *and* counsaile what best were to doo in þis nede [2977] ¶ And whan Melibies frendes had taken her avise and deliberacion of þis forseide matere [2978] and hadden examyned it by grete bysynesse and grete diligence. [2979] þei ȝaf ful counsaile forto haue pees *and* rest. [2980] And þat Melebius shuld receyuen wiþ good hert his aduersaries to forȝeuenesse and Mercy.

[2981] ¶ And whan dame prudence had herd passent of her lord Melebius and þe counsaile of his frendes [2982] accorde wiþ her wille and her entencion [2983] she was wonderly glad in hert and saide [2984] Ther is and olde prouerbe quod She seiþ: þat þe goo[d]nesse þat thou maist doo þis day do it [2985] and abyde nat til [*le soir ne*] to morowe. [2986] And þerfor¹ I counsaile ȝou þat ye sende ȝoure massagers which þat bene discrete and wise. [2987] vnto ȝoure aduersaries Telling hem in ȝour bihalf [2988] þat ȝif þei wil trete of pees and accorde. [2989] þat þei shapen hem wiþ-out delay or taryng to come vnto vs. [2990] Which þinge was *perfourmed* in dede. [2991] And whan þise trespasours and repentyng folk of her folies þat is to say þe aduersaries of melebye [2992] hadden herd what þe massagers saiden vnto hem. [2993] þei were riȝt glad and Ioiful and answerden ful mekely and benygnely [2994] ȝeeldinge graces and thonkingges to her lorde Melebie and to al his companye [2995] and shopen hem wiþ-out lay to goo wiþ þe massagers and obey to þe Comaundement of her lorde Melebius

[2996] ¶ And riȝt anoon þei token her way to þe courte of Meleby [2997] and token to hem some of her trewe frendys to make feiþ for hem and forto bene her borowes [2998] ¶ And whan þei were comen to

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

þe presence of melebius he seide hem þise wordes [2999] It stondeþ þus quod Melebie and soþ it is þat ze [3000] causelees and wiþ-out skille and reson [3001] haue done grete iniuries and wronges to me and to my wif Prudence And to my ¶ douztere also . [3002] ffor ze han entred into myn hous by violence [3003] and haue done such outrage þat alle men knowe wel þat ze han deserued þe deep [3004] And þerfore wil I knowe and witt of zou [3005] wheþere ze putte þe punsshment and þe chastisement and þe vengeaunce of þis outrage in þe witt of me and of my wif Dame Prudence or ze wil not

[3006] Than þe wisest of hem þre answerd for hem alle and seide [3007] ¶ Sire quod he we knowe wel þat we bene vnworþi to come vnto þe Suerte vnto so grete [a lord] and so worþi as ze bene. [3008] ffor we han so gretely mystaken vs and haue offended and giltyd in such a wise . ageyn zoure hegh lordship. [3009] þat trewly we han deserued þe deep. [3010] But þit for þe grete goodnesse and debonairte þat all men don witnesse of zoure persone / [3011] We submytten vs to your excellence and benygnyte of zoure gracious lordship . [3012] for we bene redy to obey to all zoure comaundementes [3013] bysekinge zou þat of zoure merciable pite ze wil considere our grete repentaunce and lowe submyssion [3014] and graunt us forzeuenesse of oure outrageous trespas and offence . [3015] ffor wel we knowen þat zoure liberaht grace and mercie streccheþ forþere into goodnesse þan doþ our outrageous trespas into wikkednesse . [3016] 1al be it þat cursedly and dampnably we han ygilt azeinst zoure grete lordship

[3017] ¶ Than Melebye toke hem vp fro þe grounde ful benygnelly [3018] and receyued her oblacion and her londes by her oþes vpon her plegges and borowes . [3019] And assigned hem a certeyn day to retourne vnto his courte [3020] forto accepte and to receyue þe sentence and

Iuggement^t of þat^t Melebye wil comaunde to be done to hem by þise causes to-fore seide . [3021] which þingges ordeyned / euery man · retourned home to his hous

[3022] ¶ And^t whan þat^t Dame Prudence segh^t her tyme . she f[r]ayned and asked her lorde [3023] what^t vengeance he þou3t^t to take on his aduersaries

[3024] To which Melebius answerd^t and saide . Certys quod I I thenkt^t and purpoos me fully [3025] to disherite hem and al þat^t euere þei haue and forto putte hem in exile for euere moo

[3026] ¶ Certis quod dame Prudence þis were a cruel sentence and mochel azeinst resoñ . [3027] ffor 3e bene riche ynou3e and haue no nede of oþer mennys good / [3028] and 3e my3ten lightly gete 3ou a coueitous name [3029] Whiche is a vicious þinge and ou3te to bene eschewed^t of euery man [3030] ¶ ffor aftere þe sawe of þe word^t of þe apostel Coueityse is roote of alle harmes [3031] And þefore it^t were better^t to 3ou to lese so mochel good of 3oure owne . þan forto take of her good in þis manere . [3032] ffor bettere it is to lese good with Worship þan it^t is to wyne good wiþ vileny and shame . / [3033] And euery man ou3t^t to doo his diligence of his bysynesse to geten hym a good name . [3034] And 3it^t shal he not oonly bysyen him in kepinge his good name [3035] But he shal also enforsen him alway to doon somme þinge by which he may renouelle his good name [3036] ¶ ffor it^t is written ¶ The olde good lose or good name of a man · is sone done or goon or passed whan it^t is not^t newed ne renouelled [3037] And as touching^t þat^t 3e sayn 3e wil exile 3oure aduersaries [3038] þat^t þenkeþ me moch^t azeinst^t resoñ . and out^t of mesure [3039] considered . þe power þat^t þei han 3euen 3ou vpon hem self [3040] ¶ And it^t is writen ¶ that^t he is worþi to lesen his privelegge þat^t mysyseþ þe my3t^t and þe power þat^t is 3euen hym [3041] And I sette caas 3e my3t^t enioyne hem þat^t peyne by ri3t^t and lawe [3042] which I

trowe 3e mowe not doo [3043] I say 3e myȝt not put it to execucioñ peraventure / [3044] and þan were it likly to retourne to þe werre as it was byforne [3045] And þerfore ȝif 3e þan wol þat men doñ ȝou obeisance 3e most deme more curtaily [3046] This is to sayn 3e most ȝeue more esy sentences and Iuggementys. [3047] ffor it is writen þat he þat most curteisly comaundeþ to hym men most obeyen [3048] ¶ And þerfore I prey ȝou þat in þis necessite and in þis nede 3e cast ȝou to oouercome ȝoure hert. [3049] ffor Senec saip. He þat ouercommep his hert ouercommep twies. / [3050] ¶ And Tullius saip. Ther nys no þing so comendable in a grete lord as whan he is debonaire and meke and apaiseth hym self lightly. [3052] And I prey ȝou þat ye wil forbere nowe to do vengeaunce [3053] in such a maner þat ȝour good name may be kept and conserued [3054] and þat men mow han a cause and matere to preise ȝou of pite and of mercy [3055] and þat 3e haue no cause to repent ȝou of þinge þat 3e doñ [3056] ¶ ffor Senec saip. He ouercommep in an euel manere þat repentep hym of his victorie. [3057] Wherefore I prey ȝou lat mercy be in ȝoure hert [3058] to þe effecte and entent þat god almyȝty haue mercy on ȝou in his last Iuggement [3059] ¶ ffor seint Iame seip in his Epistel ¶ Iuggement wipoute mercy shal be do to hym þat hap no mercy on another wȝt

[3060] Whan Melebius had herd þe grete skilles and resons of dame Prudence and her wise enformaciōn and techinge. [3061] His hert gan encline to þe wille of his wif. considerynge her trewe entent. [3062] Confirmed. hym anōn and contened fully to worchen aftere her counsaile [3063] and þonked god of whome procedep al goodnesse þat hym sent a ¶ wif of so grete discreciōn [3064] And whan þe day come þat his aduersaries shuld apperen in his presence [3065] he speke

to hem ful goodely And saide in þis wise. [3066] Al be
 it̄ soo þat̄ of 3oure pride and hegh̄ presumpciōn and foly.
 and of 3oure negligence and vnkonynḡ [3067] 3e han
 mysborn 3ou. and trespased vnto me [3068] 3it̄ for as
 moche as I See and byholde 3oure grete humilite
 [3069] and þat̄ 3e bene sory and repentaunte of 3oure giltes.
 [3070] It̄ constreyneth me to do 3ou grace./ and mercy
 [3071] and wherfore I receyue 3ou to my *grace*. [3072] And
 for3eue 3ou vtterly al þe offences Iniuries and wrongges
 þat̄ 3e have done a3einst̄ me and myne [3073] to þis
 effecte and to þis eende þat̄ god of his endeles mercye
 [3074] wil at̄ þe tyme of our deyinge for3eue vs our
 giltes þat̄ we han trespased vnto hym in þis wrecched
 world̄. [3075] ffor douteles 3if we bene sory and repentaunte
 of þe synnes and giltes in þe which̄ we han trespased in þe
 siz̄t̄ of oure lorde god. [3076] he is so free and so merci-
 able. [3077] þat̄ he 'wil for3eue vs oure giltes [3078]
 and brynge vs to þe blisse þat̄ neuere haþ eende .AmeN.

¶ Here endep̄ chaucers tale of melebye

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe Monke. / [on leaf
246, back]

Whan ended was my tale of Meleby
 And of Prudence and her benygnyte 3080
 Our hoost' saide as I am feiþful man
 And by þe corps precious Matrrian
 I had leuer þan a barel of ale .
 That' good loue my wif had herd' þis tale 3084
 ffor she nys no þinge of such' pacience
 As was þilk Melebies Dame Prudence
 By goddes bones whan I bete my knaues
 She bringeþ me forþ þe grete clubbed staues 3088
 And crieth Slee þoo dogges euerychoñ
 And breke of hem boþ bak and boon
 And 3if þat' eny neighbour of myne
 Wil nat' to my wif in church' enclyne 3092
 Or be so hardy to hure do trespas
 Whan she *commeþ* hoom she rampeþ in my face
 And crieþ fals coward' kepe and wreke þi wiff
 By goddes bonys I wil haue þi knyff 3096
 And þow shalt' haue my distaff and go spynne
 ffrom day to nyght' þus she wil bygynne
 Allas she seiþ þat' euer I was yshape
 To wedde a Milksop or a coward' ape 3100
 That' wil be ouercome wiþ euery wizt'
 Thow darst' not' stonde by þi wyues rizt'
 þis is my lif but' 3if þat' I wil fizt'
 Out' at þe door anoon I mot' me dizt' 3104
 Or ellys I am lest' but' 3if þat' I.
 Be like a wilde lyoñ fool hardy .
 I wote wele she wil do me selee som day
 Somme neighoure of myne and þennes renne away 3108
 ffor I am perilous wiþ knyf in honde
 Al be it' I dar nat' her withstonde

GROUP B. § 11. MELIBE-MONK LINK. Petworth MS.

ffor she is bigge in Armes be my faith
 þat shal he fynde þat hir mysdoþ or saip 3112
 But lat vs passe away fro þis matere
 My lorde þe Monke quod he be mery of chiere [leaf 247]
 ffor 3e shul telle a tale trewly
 Loo. Rouchester' stant' here fast' by 3116
 Ride forþ myn owne lord breke not' 3oure game
 But' by my trouþe I knowe nou3t' 3oure name
 Whedere shal I calle 3ou my lord dan Iohn
 Or danne Thomas or danñ Alboñ 3120
 Of what' hous be 3e by 3oure fader' kyn
 It' is a gentile pasture þat' 3e goon In
 Thow art' not' like a penante or a goost'
 Thus to þe Monke seide oure oste 3124
 Vppon my faiþe þou art' some officere
 Som worþi Sexteyñ or som selerere
 ffor by my fadere saule as to my dome
 Thow art' a maistere whan þou art' at' home 3128
 No poor cloistrere ne no novise
 But' governour boþ wily and wise
 And þer-wiþ-al of braune and of bouys
 A wel farynge persone for þe nonys 3132
 I pray god 3eue hym confusioñ
 That' þe furst' brou3t' to Religioñ
 ffor þou woldest' haue bene a tredeforþ ari3t'
 Haddest' thou as grete leue as þou hast my3t' 3136
 To performe al þi lust' in engendrure
 Thow haddest' ygete mony a creature
 Allas whi werest' þow so wide a cope
 God 3eue sorowe to me and I were pope 3140
 Not' oonly þou but' euery my3ty man .
 Thou3e he were shore brode vpon þe pan .
 Shuld haue a wiff for al þe world' is lorñ
 Religion haþ take vp al þe cōrn 3144
 Of tredyng' and we burile men bēñ but' shrympes .
 Of feble trees þer comen symple ympes .

This makeþ þat oure heires bene so sclendere
 And feble þat þei may not wel engendere 3148
 This makeþ þat our wyues wil assay
 Relygious folk for þei may bettere paye
 Of Venes payment þan may we
 God woot no lasshebourues pay 3e [leaf 247, back] 3152
 Be nat wroþe my lorde þouze I play
 ffor ofte in game a soþe I haue herd say
 This worþi monke toke aþ in pacienèe
 And saide I wil doon al my diligence 3156
 As fer as sowneth unto honeste
 To telle 3ou a tale or two or þre
 And 3if þe list to herken hiderwarde
 I wil 3ou say þe lif of seint Edward 3160
 Or elles furst tregedies wil I 3ou telle
 Of which I haue an hundred in my Selle
 Tregedie is forto seyn a certeyn storie
 As olde bookes make vs memorie 3164
 Of hem þat stood in grete prosperite
 And is falle out of hie degree
 Into Miserye and endeþ wrechedly
 And þei bene versiefed comonly 3168
 Of sex fete of which men callen exámetroñ
 In proose eke bene endited mony oñ
 In metere eke and in sondry wise
 loo þis claringt au3t ynow suffise 3172
 Now herkenep 3if 3ou like to here
 But furst I 3ou biseche in þis manere
 þouze I be ordred tel not þise þingges
 Be it of Popes Emperours or kyngges 3176
 After her Age as men may writen fynde
 But telle hem som byfore and some behynde
 As it commep nowe in my remembraunce
 Haue me excused of myn ignorauncé 3180

¶ Here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe monke

[No breaks between the stanzas in the MS, except for
the red headings.]

And here bygynneþ þe monkes tale

[on leaf 247, back]

Iwol by-waile in ma[ne]re of tregedie ¶ **þe tale**
 þe harme of hem þat stonden in hie degrie
 And fallen so þat þer nys no remedye
 To bringe hem out of her aduersite 3184
 ffor certeynly whan fortune list to flee
 þer may no man of hir þe cours wipholde
 Lat no man trest on blynde prosperite
 Beþ ware of þise ensamples trewe and olde [leaf 248] 3188

¶ **Primo de Lucifero :**
At lucifere þouze he an aungel were
 And nat a man . but at hym I wil bygynne
 ffor þouze fortune may noon aungel dere
 ffroo high degre þer felle he for hys synne 3192
 Downe into helle wwere he 3it is Inne
 O lucifer briztest of aungels alle
 Now art þou Sathanas þat maist nat twynne
 Out of myserie in which þat þou art falle 3196

¶ **De Adam . /**
Loo Adam in þe feelde of Damysene
 Wip goddes oune fyngers wrouzt was he
 And nouzt bygeten of mannes sperme vuclene
 And wolt al Paradys sauynge oon tree 3200
 Had neuere worldly man so hie degre
 As Adam vnto he wyþ nyce gouernañce
 Was dryue out of his high prosperite
 To laboure and to helle and to meschañce 3204

¶ De Sampson

Lo sampson þat^t was annunciate
 By þe Aungel longe er his natiuite
 And was to god almyȝty consecrate
 And stode in noblesse while þat he myȝt see 3208
 Was neuer such a noþer as was he
 To speke of strengþh, and þerto hardynesse
 But^t to his wyues tolde he his secree
 Thourgh which he selouȝe hym self for wrecchednesse 3212

¶ Sampson þis noble and myȝty champion
 Wip^o-oute wepen saaf his hondes tway
 He selouȝh and also to-rent^t þe lyoñ
 Toward^t his weddyng^t walking^t by þe way 3216
 His fals wif coude hym so wel plese *and* pray
 Til she his counsaile knewe *and* she vntrewe
 To his foos his counsaile gan to wrye
 And hym forsoke and toke anoþer newe 3220

Thre hundred foxes toke Sampson for Ire
 And alle her tailles he to-gyder bonde .
 And Sette þe foxes tailles a fire [leaf 248, back]
 ffor he in euery taile had knytte a bronde 3224
 And þei brent^t al þe cornes of þat^t londe
 And al her oliuerus an vynes eke
 A thowsand he selouȝh eke wip his honde
 And had no wepen but^t an asses cheke 3228

Whan þei were slayn so þrested hym þat he
 was wel nye lorn wherfor he gan to preye
 þat^t god wolde of his peyne haue som pite
 And sende hym drynke or ellys most^t he deye 3232
 And out of his asses cheke þat^t was so dreye
 Out^t of a wonge toth spronge anoñ a welle
 Of whiche he dronk^t ynouȝe shortly to [. . .
 no gap in the MS.] telle 3236

By verray force at Algason vpon a nyzt
 Maugre the philistiens of þat Cite
 þe gatys of þat toune he haþ vp plizt
 And on his bak caried hem haþ he 3240
 Hie vpon an hille þat men myzt See
 O noble almyzty sampson leef and dere
 Haddest þou nat to wommen told þi secre
 In al þis world ne had þu þi pere 3244

This Sampson neiþer Sither dronk ne wyne
 Ne on his hede come neiþere rasour ne Shere
 [. no gap in the MS.]
 ffor al þe strengþ in his heres were 3248
 And fully xx^{ti} wynter 3eer by 3ere
 He had of Israel þe gouernaunce .
 But he shal wepe mony a tere
 ffor wommen men bryngen to meschaunce 3252

To his lemmon his Dalyaunce he told
 That in his herus al his strengthe lay
 And falsly to his foomen she hym sold
 And sclepinge in her barme vpon a day 3256
 She made to clippe or shere his heer away
 And made his foomen aH his craft to aspyen
 And whan þat þei fooñde hym in þis aray
 þei bounde hym fast and put out his yen 3260

But er his heer was yclipped or shaue
 Ther was no boonde wiþ which men myzt hym bynde
 But now he is in prison put in a kaue [leaf 249]
 Where as þei made hym at þe querne grynde 3264
 O noble Sampson strengest of mankynde
 O whilom Iuge in glorie & richesse
 Now maist þow wepe wiþ þine eyen blynde
 Siþens þow art from wele falle into wrecchednesse 3268

The ende of þise catyfs was as I shal say
 His ffoomen made a feest' vpon a day
 And made hym as her foole to-forn hem play
 And þis was [in] a temple of a grete aray 3272
 But' at' þe last' he made a foule afray
 ffor he two postes shoke and made hem falle
 And downe fitt temple and al þer it' lay
 And sclough̄ hym self and eke his ffoomen alle 3276

This is to say þe princes euerechoñ
 And eke a thowsand bodyes were þere slayñ
 Wiþ falling' of þe grete temple of stoñ
 Of Sampson ne wil I no more sayñ 3280
 Be ware of þise ensamples olde *and* playn
 þat' no man telle her counsaile to her wyves
 Of suche þinge as þei wolde haue secre fayn
 3it' þat' it' touche her lymmes or hir lyues . 3284

O ¶ De Hercule ./
 f Hercule this souereyn conquerour
 Syngen his werkes lewde and high renou .
 ffor in his tyme of strength̄ he bere þe flour
 He slowe and raft' þe skyn fro þe lyoun 3288
 He of Sentawres laide þe boost' a down
 He Arpies slowe þe cruel briddes felle
 He golden apples byraft' þe dragoun
 He drowe out' Serbyrois þe hound of helle 3292

He slowe þe cruel tyraunt' Buserus
 And made his hors to frete hym fless̄h *and* boñ
 He sclough̄ þe verrey serpent' venomous
 Of Achilles two hornes breke he oñ 3296
 An he slowgh̄ Cacus in a kaue of stoñ
 He slowgh̄ þe geaunte Anteus þe strong'
 He slowe þe grisly boore and þat' anoñ
 And bare þe hede vpon his nek' longe [leaf 249, back] 3300

Was neuer wīz^t siþen þe world^l bygan
 þat^t sclowe so mony monstres as did he
 þorgh^h-out^t þis wide world^l his name ran
 What^t for his strengþ^h and for his bounte 3304
 And euery Rewme went^t he forto See
 He was so stronge no man myz^t hym lette
 And boþ þe worldes ende saiþ trophe
 In stede of bondes he a piler^l sette 3308

A lemman had þis noble Campiõn
 That^t hight^t Dianyre fressh as may
 And as þe clerkes maken mencion
 She hap^t hym sent^t a shert^t fressh *and* gay 3312
 Allas þis shert^t and welaway
 Evenymed was subtilly wīp-ah
 That^t ere þat^t he had wered it^t half a day
 It^t made his bones from his flesshe falle 3316

But^t napeles some clerkes her excusen
 By oõn þat^t hight^t Nessus þat^t it^t maked .
 Be as be may I wil her not accusen .
 But^t on his bakke þe shert^t he weres al naked . 3320
 Til þat^t his fless^h was for þe venyme blaked
 And whan he segh noon oþer remedye
 In hote cool^les he hap^t hym-self raked
 ffor wīp no venyme deyned he to dye 3324

Thus sterf þis worþi myghty Ercules
 Lo who may trust^t on fortune eny throwe
 ffor hym þat^t foloweþ al þis world^l of prees
 Er he be ware is oft yleide ful lowe 3328
 fful wise is he þat^t hym self can knowe
 Beþ ware for whan þat^t fortune lest^t to glose
 þan waiteþ she her man down to throwe
 By suche a way as he wold leest^t suppose 3332

¶ De rege Nabugodonosor. /

The myzty trone þe precious tresour
 The glorious sceptre and real mageste
 þat had þe kyng Nabugodonosor
 Wiþ tunge vnneþ may / discribed be 3336
 He twyes nam *Ierusalem* þe Cite [leaf 250]
 The VesseH of þe temple he wiþ hym lad
 At Babiloyne was his souereyn See
 In which his glorie and his delit he had. 3340

The fairest children of þe blood Royal
 Of *Ierusalem* he ded do gilde anonon
 And-maked eche of hem to bene his cherle
 Amon[ge] all oþer Danyel was oon 3344
 þat was þe wysest childe of euerychoñ
 ffor he þe dremes of þe kyng expowned
 Wher as in Caldey clerk was þer noon
 þat wist to what fyne his dremes sowned 3348

This prowde kyng lete make a stature of gold
 Sixty cubites longe and Seuē in brede
 To whiche ymage boþ zonge and olde
 Comaunded he to loute and haue in drede 3352
 Or in a fornays ful of flawmes rede.
 He shal be brent þat wold nat obeye
 But neuere wold assent vnto þat dede
 Danyel ne his zonge felawes tweye 3356

This kyng of kyngges prowde was and elate
 He wende god þat sitte in maieste
 Ne myght hym nat byreue of his estate
 But sodeynly he lost his dignyte 3360
 And like a beest hym semed forto be
 And ete hay as an oxe and lay þerout
 In reyue wiþ wilde beestes walked he
 Til a certeyn tyme was come aboute 3364

And like an Egles fetheres was his heeres
 His nailes like briddes clawes were
 [Til] God releued hym a certeyn 3eres
 And 3af hym witte and þan wiþ mony a tere 3368
 He þonked god and euere his lyf in fere
 was he to doon amys in more trespas
 And or þat tyme ylaide was on his bere
 He knewe wel þat god was ful of my3t^t and *grace* 3372

De Baltazar dicti Regis Nabugodonosor filio.

His soñe which þat^t hi3t^t Baltazar
 That^t heelde þe regne aftere his faders day [leaf 250, back]
 He by his fadere coupe not^t be war
 ffor proude he was of hert^t and of aray 3376
 And eke an ydolater was he ay
 His high^h astate assured hym in pride
 But^t fortune cast^t hym doune *and* þer he lay
 And sodeynly his regne gan deuide 3380

A feest^t he made vnto his lordes alle
 Vppon a tyme and made hem bliþe be
 And þan his officers can he calle
 Goop bryngeþ forþ þe vessels *quod* he 3384
 Which þat^t my fader in his prosperite
 Out^t of þe temple of Ierusalem byraft^t
 And to oure heghe goddes þonke wee
 Of honur^t þat^t our elders wiþ vs laft^t 3388

His wif his lordes and his concubynes
 Ay dronken þe whiles her appetite last^t
 Out^t of þise noble vessels sondry wyne
 And on a wal þis kyng^t his eyen cast^t 3392
 And sawe an honde armelees þat^t wrote ful fast
 ffor fere of which he quoke and sighed sore
 This honde þat^t baltazar made so soor agast^t
 Wrote mane techel phares *and* no more 3396

In al þat londe Magytien was þer noon
 þat coupe expoune what þis *lettre* ment'
 But Danyel expounded it anoon
 And saide king' god þi fader sent' 3400
 Glorie and honour' Regne tresour and rent'
 And he was proude and god no þing' dradde
 And þefore god grete wreth̄ vpon hym Sent
 And hym by-raft' þe regne þat' he hadde 3404

He was out' cast' of mannys companye
 Wip asses was his habitaciō
 And ete hay as a beest' in wete *and* drye
 Til þat' he knewe by grace *and* by resoñ 3408
 That' god of heuene haþ domynaciañ
 Ouer euery regne and euery creature
 And þan had god of hym compassion
 And hym restored his regne and his figure [leaf 251] 3412

Eke þou þat' art' his sone art' proude also
 And knowest' aH þise þingges prively
 And art' rebel to god and art' his foo
 Thow drank' eke of his vessels boldly 3416
 Thi wif eke and þi wenches synfully
 Drank' of þe same vessels sondry wynes
 And heried fals goddys cursedly
 þefore to þe shapen grete peyn es 3420

This hand was sent' fro god þat' on þe waft
 wrote mane techel phares trest' me
 Thy regne is done þou waiest' not' at aH
 Devided is þi regne and it' shal be 3424
 To Medes and to *perses* zeuen quod he
 And þilk' same nyzt' þe kyng' was sclawe
 And Darius occupieþ his degre
 They he þerto nad neiþer riȝt' ne lawe 3428

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Lordyngges her-by ensamples mowe 3e take
 How þat' in lordship is no sikernesse
 ffor whan fortune wil a man forsake
 He bereþ away his regne and his richesse 3432
 And eke his frendes boþ more and lesse
 And what' man haþ frendes þorowe fortune
 Mishappe wil make hem enemyes I gesse
 This prouerbe is ful soþe and ful commune 3436

¶ **De Cenobia**:/

CEnobia of Palamere þe quene
 As writen *Persiens* of her noblesse
 So worþi was in Armes and so kene
 þat' no wiȝt' passed hure in hardynesse 3440
 Ne in lynage ne in oþer gentilnesse
 Of þe kyngges blood of percy is she descended.
 I say þat' she nad not' moost' fairenesse
 But' of hure Shap she myȝt' not' be amended 3444

Fro childhode I fynde þat' she fledde
 Office of wommen and into woode she went'
 And Mony a wilde hertes blode she shedde
 wiþ arowes brode þat' she to hym sent' 3448
 She was so swift þat' she anoon hem hent'
 [leaf 251, back]
 And whan þat' she was elder she wold' kille
 Lyoñs . lybardes and beres alto-rent'
 And in hure armes weelde hem at' her wille 3452

She durst' wilde beestes dennes seke
 And renne in þe mountayn al þe nyght'
 And selepe vndere a bussñ she coude eke
 Wrastelen by verray force and myght' 3456
 Wiþ eny yong' man were he neuer so wiȝt'
 Ther myght' no þinge in her Armes stonde
 She kepte her maidenhode from euery wiȝt'
 To no man deyned hure to be bonde 3460

But at þe last her frendes han hure maried
 To Odonak a prince of þat Cite
 Al were it so þat she hem longe taried
 And 3e shal vnderstonde how þat he 3464
 Hap suche fantasies as had she
 But napelees whan þei were knyht in fere
 þei lyueden in Ioie and in felicite
 ffor eche of hem had oper leef *and* dere 3468

Sauf oon þinge that 3e nolde neuere assent
 By no way þat he shulde by hire lye
 But onys for it was her pleyn entent
 To haue a childe þe world to multiplie 3472
 And also sone as she myzt aspie .
 That she was nouzt wip child *with* þat dede
 þan wil she suffre hym doon his fantasie
 Eftsonen and not but onys out of drede 3476

And 3if she were wip childe at þilke cast
 No more shulde he playe þilke game
 Till xlth daies were past.
 Than wolde she onys suffre hym doo þe same 3480
 Al were this Odenake wilde or tame
 He gate no more of hure. for þus she saide
 It was to wyues lechery an shame
 In oper caas if þat men wip hem plaide 3484

Two sones by þis odynak had She
 The whiche she kepte in vertue and in letture
 But nowen vnto oure tale turne wee [leaf 252]
 I say þat worshipful creature 3488
 And wise þer-wip and large *with* mesure
 So penyble in þe werre and curteyse eke
 No more labour myzt in werre endure
 was noon þou3e in al þis world men shuld seke 3492

Hire Riche aray myȝt' not' be tolde
 As wel in vessel as in cloþinge
 She was al clad in perry and in gold
 And eke she laft' not' for noon huntynge 3496
 To haue of sondry tungges folk' knowing'
 whan þat' she leisere had and forto entende
 To lerne bookes was al hure likyng
 How she in vertue myȝt' her lyf dispende 3500

And shortely of þis storie forto entrete
 So dughty was her husbonde as she
 That' þei conquered mony regnes grete
 In þe Orient' wiþ mony a faire Cite 3504
 Appertenent' vnto þe mageste
 Of Rome and wiþ stronge hond helde hem fast'
 Ne neuer myȝt' her foomen doon hem flee
 Ay whiles þat' Odenake dayes last' 3508

Her batailles who so lest' hem forto rede
 Ageyn sopere þe kyng' and oþer moo
 And howe þat' all þe processe felle in dede
 whi she conquered and what' titel had þerto. 3512
 And after of her mescheef' and of her woo
 Howe þat' she was byseged and Itake
 Lat' hym vnto my maister Petrarke goo.
 þat' writte Inowe of þis I vndertake. 3516

Whan Odenak' was dede she myȝtily
 þe Regnes heelde and wiþ hur propre honde
 Aȝeinst' her foos she fauȝt' trewly
 þat' þer nas kyng no prince in al þat' londe 3520
 þat' he nas glad ȝif he þat' grace fonde
 þat' she ne wolde vpon his lond' werreye
 wiþ hire þei made alliance by bonde
 To bene in pees and lat' hure ride and pleye / 3524

[leaf 252, back]

The Emperour of Rome Claudius
 Ne hym byforn þe Romayne galiene
 Ne durst' neuer be so coragius
 Ne noon ermyne ne noon Egipcienne 3528
 Ne Surryene ne noon Arabiene
 Wiþ-in þe feelde þat' durst' wiþ hire fiȝt'
 Lest' þat' she wolde wiþ hure hondes hym scleen
 Or wiþ her mayne putten hem to fiȝt' 3532

In kyngges habite went' her sonys twoo
 As heires of her regnes atte
 And hermanno and Tymalao
 Her names were as *perciens* hem calle 3536
 But' ay fortune haþ in her hony galle
 This myȝty qwene may not' longe endure
 ffortune out' of her regne made her falle
 To wrecchednesse and to mysauenture 3540

Aurelion whan þat' þe gouernaunce
 Of Rome come into his hondes tweye
 He shope vpon þis quene to do vengeaunce
 And wiþ his legyons he toke his waye 3544
 Toward' Cenoby and shortly forto seye
 He made hur flee and at' þe last' her hent'
 And fettred hure and eke her children tweye
 And wan þe londe and home to Rome is went' 3548

Amonge þise oþer þingges þat' he wan
 her chare þat' wrouȝt' was *with* gold' and perre
 This grete Romayn þis Aurelian.
 haþ wiþ hym lad for þat' men shuld see 3552
 Byforn hys trihumphe walkeþ she
 Wiþ Gilt' cheynes in her nek' hongynge
 Corowned she was as after her degre
 And ful of Perry charged her cloþinge 3556

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Allas fortune she þat' whilom was
 Dreedful to kyngges and to emperours
 Now gaureþ alle þe puple on hir allas
 And she þat' helmed was in stronge stoures 3560
 [. *no gap in the MS.*]
 Shal on her hede bere a Vitremyte
 And she þat' bare þe sceptre ful of floures
 Shal bye a dystaf her coste forto quite [leaf 253] 3564

[*Peter the Cruel, of Spain.*]

O noble o worþi peter glory of Spayn
 Whoom fortune helde so hiȝe in maieste
 Wel ouȝt' men þi pitous deep complayn
 Thi bastard' broþer made þe to flee 3568
 And aftere at' a sieg by subtilte
 Thowe were bytraied and lad to his tent'
 Wher as he wiþ his owne honde selogh þe
 Suceedyng in þi regne and in þi rent' 3572

The felde of snowe wiþ þe Egle blak' þer-Inne [Bertrand du Guesclin.]
 Caught' wiþ þe lyme rodde colours as þe glede
 He brewe þis cursednesse and al þe synne
 þe wicked nest' was werker of þis nede . 3576
 Nouȝt' charles Olyfere þat' ay toke good hede
 Of troupe of honore but' Armorekke [Oliver de Mauny of Brittany.]
 Geniloñ Olyuer corrupte for nede
 Brouȝtest' þis worþi king' in such'e brekke 3580

[*Peter of Cyprus.*]

¶ worþi Petre kyng of Cipre alsoo .
 That' Alisaunder wan by high maistrie
 fful mony a hepen wrouȝtest' þou for woo .
 Of which þine owne leeges had enuye 3584
 And for no þing' but' for þi chyualrie
 They in þi bed han slayn þe by þe morue
 Thus gan fortune gouerne and gie
 And out' of Ioie bringe into sorowe 3588

[*Bernabo Visconti, of Milan.*]

Of Melane grete Barnabo Viscounte
 God of delite and scourge of lumbardie
 Whi shuld^t not^t I þi fortune acounte
 Siþ in estaat^t þou clomben were so hie 3592
 Thy broþer sone þat^t was þi double alie
 ffor he þi Neuewe was *and* sone in lawe
 Wiþ-in his prison made þe to die
 But^t whi ne howe wote I þat^t þou wære sclawe 3596

[*Ugolino, Count of Pisa.*]

Of the Erle Hugelyne of pise þe languour
 Ther may no tunge telle for pite
 But^t litel out^t of Pise stant^t a tour'
 In whiche towre in prison put^t was he 3600
 And wiþ hym bene his litel children þre
 þe eldest^t scarcely .v. ȝere was of age [leaf 253, back]
 Allas fortune it^t was grete crueltee
 Suchⁿ briddes forto putte into a cage 3604

¶ Dampned he was to dye in þat^t prison
 ffor Roger whichⁿ þat^t bisshop was of pise
 Had on hym made a fals suggestioñ
 Thorgh whichⁿ þe puple gan on hym arise 3608
 And putten him in prison in suchⁿ a wise
 As ȝe han herd and mete and drinke he had.
 So smal þat^t vnneþes it may suffise
 And þerwiþal it^t was ful poor and bad 3612

In a day byfelle þat^t in þat^t houre
 Whan þat^t his [mete] was wonte to be wrouzt^t
 þe Gailour^t shette þe doores of þe toure
 He herde it^t wel but^t he seeghⁿ it nouzt^t 3616
 And in his hert^t anon þer felle a þouzt^t
 þat^t þei for hunder^t wolde done hym dyen
 Allas quod he allas þat^t I was wrouzt^t
 þer-wiþ þe teeres felle from his eyen . 3620

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

His 3onge sones þre þer were of age
 Vnto hym seide fadere whi do 3e wepe
 whan wil þe Gailoure brynge our potage
 Is þer no morsel brede þat' [ye] doo kepe 3624
 I am so hungry þat' I may nat' selepe
 Nowe wolde god þat' I my3t' selepen euere
 þan shuld noon hungre in myn herte crepe
 þer nys no þinge sauf brede þat' me were leuere 3628

Thus day by day þis childe gan to erie
 Til in his faders barne adoune it lay
 And saide fare wel fadere I mote dye
 And kissed his fadere and dyed þe same day 3632
 And whan þe wooful fadere did hym say
 ffor woo his arnes two he gan to bite
 And saide allas fortune and welaway
 Thy fals whele my woo I may al wite 3636

His childer [wende] þat' hit' for hunger was
 þat' he his arnes gnowe *and* nou3t' for woo.
 þei seiden fadere do not' so allas
 But' rap'er ete þe flessĥ vpon vs twoo . [leaf 254] 3640
 Our flesshe þou 3af vs take our flessĥ vs froo
 And ete ynou3e ri3t' þus to hym þei saide
 And after þat' wiþ-Inne a day or twoo
 þei leide hem doune in his lappe *and* dayde 3644

Hym self dispeirede eke and for hu[n]ger starf'
 Thus ended is þe my3ty erle of pise
 ffor highe astate fortune fro hym carf
 Of his tregetrie it' ou te ynou3e suffise 3648
 Who so wil here it' in a lenger wise
 Redeþ þe grete poete of ytaile
 þat' hi3te Daunte, for he can it' devise
 ffrom poynt' to poynte for no þing' wil he faile. 3652

¶ De nerone Imperatore .

Al þouze þat Nero were as vicious
 As eny feende þat lieth ful lowe adoune
 3it he as telleþ vs swetheneus
 This wide world had in subieccioñ 3656
 Both eest and west and Septemptrioñ
 Of Rubies Saphires and peerles white
 Were al his [cloþes] browd[ed] vp and doune
 ffor he [in] gemmes grete gan delite 3660

More delicate more pompous of araye
 More proude was neuere Emperour þan he
 þat ilke cloþe þat he had wered a day
 Aftere þat tyme he nolde it neuer see 3664
 Nettes of gold threde had he grete plente
 To fisshen in Tibre whan hym list to pleye
 His lustes [were] as lawe in his degre
 ffor fortune as his frende wold hym obeye 3668

He Rome brent for his delicacie
 The Senatoures he sclouze vpon a day
 To here howe þat men wolde wepe *and* crie
 And sclouze his broþer and by his sustere [lay] 3672
 His modere made he in pitous aray
 ffor he her wombe sclitte to byhold
 wher he conceyued was so welaway
 That he so litel of his moder tolde. 3676

No teer out of his eyen for þat sizt [leaf 254, back]
 Ne came but saide a faire womman was she
 Grete wondere is þat he cowde or myzt
 Be Domes man of her dede bewte. 3680
 The wyne to brynge comaunded he
 And dronke anoon noon oþer woo he made
 Whan myzt is Ioyned vnto cruelte
 Alas to depe wil þe venyme wade 3684

In 3outhe a maister had þis *emperour*
 To teche hym letture and curtesye
 ffor of moralite he was þe floure
 As in his tyme but 3if bokes lye 3688
 And whiles his maister' had of hym maistrie
 He made hym so conynge *and* so souple
 That' longe tyme it' was or tyrannye
 Or eny vice in hym durst' vncouple 3692

This Seneca of which [that] I devise
 By cause Nero had of hym such drede
 ffor he for vices wold hym chastise
 Discretely as by worde and nat' by dede 3696
 Sire wolde he sayne an *Emperour* mot' nede
 Be vertuous and hate tyrannye
 ffor which he hym in bathe made to blede
 On boop his Armes til he most' dye 3700

This Nero had eke of a custumance
 In 3ouþe azeinst' his maister' forto rise
 Which afterward' hym þou3t' a grete greuance
 Therfore he made hym dye in þis wise 3704
 But' nathelees þis Senec' þe wise
 Chees in a bathe to dye in þis manere
 Raper þan han a noþer tormentri[s]e
 And þus hap Nero slayn his maister dere 3708

Now felle it' so þat' fortune lest' no lenger'
 þe highe Pride of Nero to cherice
 ffor þou3e he were stronge 3it' was she strenger'
 She þou3te þus by god I am to nyce 3712
 To sette a man þat' is fulfild' in vice
 In heghe degre and *Emperour* hym calle.
 By god out' of his sete I wil him trice. [leaf 255]
 whan he leest' weneþ sonnest' shal he falle. 3716

The puple roos vp on hym on a nyzt
 ffor his defaute and whan he it' aspied .
 Out' of his doores anoon he hap hym dizt'
 Allone and þer he wende haue bene alied. 3720
 He knocked fast' and ay þe more he cried
 The faster schitten þei þe doores alle
 þo wist' he wel he had hym self mysgied.
 And went' his way no lenger dorst' he calle 3724

The puple cried and rombled vp and down
 That' wip' his eeres herde he what' þei seide
 Where is þis fals traitour þis Neroun
 ffor fere almost' out' of his witte he breide 3728
 And to his goddes pitously he seide
 ffor socoure but' it' myzt' nat' be-tyde
 ffor drede of þis him þouzt' þat' he dyde
 And ranne into a gardeyne hym to hyde 3732

And in þis gardyne foude he cherles tweye
 That' sitten by a fuyre ful gret *and* rede
 And to þe cherles tweye he gan to preie
 To scleen hym and to girden of his hede 3736
 That' to his body whan þat' he were dede
 Were no despite ydon for his diffame
 Hym self he sclowþe he coude no better rede
 Of which fortune lough and made a game 3740

[*Holofernes.*]

Was neuere Captayne vnder a kinge ¶ De Olyferno./
 þat' regneþ more putte in subiectioun
 Ne strengre was in feelde of al þinge
 As in his tyme ne gretter of renown 3744
 Ne more pompous in high presumpeioun
 Than olyferne which that fortune ay kest'
 So lycorously and lad hym vp and down
 Til þat' his hede was of er þat' he wist' 3748

Not oonly þat' this world' haþ of hym awe
 ffor lesinge of Richesse and of liberte
 But' he made euery man renaye his lawe
 Nabugodonosor was lord' saide he. 3752
 Noon oþer god shulde honoured be [leaf 255, back]
 Azeinst' his heest' no wizt' dar trespace
 Saue in Betulia a stronge Cite
 Wher Eliachym a preest' was of þat' place 3756

But' take kepe of þe deth of Olyferne
 Amydde þe hooste he dronke lay al nyzt'
 Wip' Inne his tente large as is a beerne
 And zit' for al his pompe and al his myzt' 3760
 Iudith a womman as he lay vprizt'.
 Sclepinge his hede of smote *and* fro his tent'
 flul prively she stale from euery wizt'
 [. no gap in the MS.] 3764

[*Antiochus.*]

What' nedep' it' of kyng Antiochus ¶ **De Antiocho Rege**
 To telle his high and Ryal maieste
 His hie pride his werke venymus
 ffor suche anoþer was neuer noon as he 3768
 Redep' which þat' he was in machabe
 And redeþ þe proude wordes þat' he seide
 And whi he felle fro his prosperite
 And in an halle how wrechedly he deide 3772

Fortune hym had enhaunsed so in pride
 That' verrelly he wende he myzt' atteyne
 Vnto þe sterres vppon euery side
 And in a balaunce to wey þe mounteyne 3776
 And alle þe floodes of the See Restreyne
 And goddes puple had he most' in hate
 Hem wolde he sclee in torment' *and* [in] peyn
 wenyng þat' god ne myzt' his pride abate 3780

And for þat Nichamour and thymothe
 wiþ Iwes were venquysshed myztely
 Vnto þe Iwes such an hate had he
 That he bad graped his chare ful hastily 3784
 And swore and saide ful dispitously
 Vnto Ierusalem he wolde eftson
 To wreke his Ire on it ful cruelly
 But of his purpos he was lette ful sone 3788

God of his manace hym so sore smote
 Wiþ vnyvisible wounde ay vncurable
 That in his guttes carf soo and bote
 That his peynes were importable [leaf 256] 3792
 And certainly þe wreth was resonable
 ffor many mannys guttes did he peyne
 But fro his purpos cursed and dampneable
 ffor al his smerte he nolde hym restreyne 3796

But bad anoon apparaile his Ooste
 And sodeynly er he was of it ware
 God daunted al his pride and al his boost
 ffor he so sore felle out of his chare 3800
 That hurte his lymmes and his skyn to-tare
 Soo þat he ne myzt goo ne ride
 But in a chaier men about hym bare
 Al for-brused boþ bak and side 3804

The wreth of god hym smote so cruelly
 That in his body wikked wormes crepte
 And þer wiþ al he stonke so horryblye
 That noon of alle his mayne þat hym kepte 3808
 whedere þat he woke or ellis sclepte
 Ne myght not þe stynk of hym endure
 In þis meschief he wailed and eke wepte.
 And knewe god lorde of euery creature 3812

To alle his hooste and to hym self also
 fful wlatson was þe stynk' of his careyne
 No man myȝt' hym bere to ne froo .
 And in his stynk' and in his horrible peyne 3816
 He starfe ful wrechedly in a mounteyne
 Thus haþ þis robbour and homycide
 That' mony a man made to wepe and pleyne
 Such' guerdon as by-longeþ vnto pride 3820

[*Alexander the Great.*]

The Storie of Alisaundre is so comune . ¶ **De Alex-**
 That' euary wȝt' þat' haþ discrecioun **andro Rege**
 Haþ herd' somewhat' or aH of his fortune
 This wide world' as in conclusioun 3824
 He wanne by strengþ' or for his hie renoun
 They weren glad for pees vnto hym sende
 þe pride of man and beest' he laid adoun
 Wher so he come vnto þe worldes ende 3828

Comparison myȝt' neuere be maked .
 Bytwix hym and anoþer conquerour [leaf 256, back]
 ffor al þis world for drede of hym Haþ quaked .
 He was of knyghthode and of fredom flour' 3832
 ffortune him made þe heir' of hur' honour'
 Saue wyne and wommen no þing' myȝt' a-swage
 His hegþ' entente in armes and laboure
 So was he ful of louying' corage 3836

What' pite were it' to hym þouȝe I ȝou tolde
 Of Darius and an hundred thowsand moo .
 Of kyngges Princes. and Erles bold'
 Which' he conquered and brouȝt' into woo 3840
 I say as fer as man may ride and goo .
 The worlde was his what' shuld' I more devise
 ffor þouȝe I write and told' ȝou euer moo .
 Of his kinghode it' myȝt' not' suffise 3844

Twelue ȝere he reigned as saip Machabe
 Philippes sone of Macedoyne he was
 That furst was kinge of Grece þe cuntree
 O worþi gentile Alisaunder' alas 3848
 That euer shuld [thee] falle Such a caas
 Enpoysoned of þi folk þou were
 Thine . sise . fortune haþ turned into an aas
 And ȝit for þe ne weppe she neuere a tere 3852

Who shal ȝeue teeres men to compleyne
 The deep of gentilnesse and of ffraunchise
 That al þe worlde wekled in his demeyne
 And ȝit him þouȝt hit myȝt not suffise 3856
 So fiul was his corage of high emprise
 Allas who shal me helpe to endite
 ffals fortune and poyson to despise
 The which twoo of al this woo I wite 3860

[*Julius Cesar.*]

By wisdome manhode and by labour ¶ **Iulius Cesar** /
 ffro humblehede and fro Roial Maieste
 Vp roos he Iulius þe Conquerour
 That aþ þe Occident by londe and See 3864
 By strength of honde or ellis by trete
 And vnto Roome made hem tributarie .
 And Sithens of Rome þe Emperour was he /
 Til þat fortune wexe his aduersarie [leaf 257] 3868

A Mighty Cesar þat in Tessalye .
 Aȝeinst Pompeius fader þine in lawe
 That of þe Orient had al þe chyualrie
 As fer as þat þe day bygynneþ dawe 3872
 Thogh þou þorgh þi knyghthode haþ hem take and sclawe
 Sauf fewe folk þat wiþ Pompeius fledde
 Thorghe which þou puttest al þe orient in awe
 Thonke fortune þat so wel þe spedde 3876

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But now a litel while I wil bywaile
 This Pompeus þis noble gouernour
 Of Roome which þat fleigh at this bataille
 I saye oon of his men a fals traitour' 3880
 His hede of smote to wynne hym fauour'
 Of Iulius and hym þe hede brouzt'
 Allas Pompey of the Orient conquerour
 That fortune vnto such a funte brouzt' 3884

TO Rome azeine repeireþ Iulius.

Wij triumphe laureat' ful high
 But on a tyme Brutus Cassius
 þat euer had of his astate Envie 3888
 fful priuely had made Conspiracie
 Azeinst þis Iulius in subtile wise /
 And cast þe place in which he shuld dye
 With boydekyns as I shal zou · devise 3892

This Iulius to þe Capithole went
 Vppon a day as he was wonte to goon
 And in þe Capitele anoon hym hente
 This fals Brutus and his foule fooñ 3896
 And stiked hym wij boydekyns anoñ
 Wij mony a wounde and þus þei lete hym lye
 But neuere grunte he at no stroke but oon
 Or ellis at twoo but 3if his storie lye 3900

So manly was þis Iulius of herte
 And so wel loued estately honeste
 That þouze his dedly woundes so sore smerte
 His mantel ouer his hippes cast he 3904
 ffor no man shuld se his private
 And as he lay on dyinge in a traunce [leaf 257, back]
 And wist verrely þat dede was he
 Of honeste 3it had he remembraunce 3908

¶ Lucane to þis storie I recomende
 And to Sweton and Valerius also.
 That of His storie writeþ word *and* ende
 How þat þise grete conquerours twoo 3912
 ffortune was furst frende and siben a foo/
 No man ne trust vpon his fauour longe
 But haue hure in a-waite euermoo
 Witnes on alle þise conquerours stronge 3916

[*Cresus.*]

This riche Cresus whilom kyng of lyde
 O which Cresus Cyquus sore hym dradde
 3it was he kauzt amonges al his pride
 And to be brent men to þe fure hym ladde 3920
 But suche a Reyne doune fro þe walken shadde
 þat sclouze þe fuyre and made hym to eskape
 But to be war 3it no grace he hadde
 Til fortune on þe galous made hym gape 3924

Whan he askaped was he can not stent
 ffor to bygyne a newe reyne azeine
 He wende wele for þat fortune hym sente
 Suche happe þat he askaped þorze þe reyne 3928
 þat of his foos he myzt not be sclayn
 And Suche a sweuen vpon a nyzt he mette
 Of which he was so proude and so fayn
 That in vengeance he al his hert sette 3932

Vpon a tree he was as hym þouzt
 Ther Iubiter hym wassh boþ hals *and* Side
 And Phebus eke a faire towale hym brouzt
 To drye hym wiþ an þerfore wex his pride 3936
 And to his douztere þat stood hym beside
 Which þat he knewe in his sentence habounde
 He bad hure telle hym what it signyfied
 And she his dremes byganne rizt þus expounde 3940

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- The tree quod she þe galous is to mene
 And Iubiter bitokeneþ snowe and reyne
 And Phebus wiþ his towale so clene .
 Thoo bene the sone stremes forto sayn [leaf 258] 3944
 Thow shalt an honged be fadere certayn
 Rayn shal þe wassh and sonne shal þe drye
 Thus warned she hym ful plat and ful playn
 His douȝter [which] þat called was Phanye 3948
- An honged was Cresus þe proude kinge
 His Roial trone myȝt hym not availe
 Tregedie is noon oþer maner þinge
 Ne can in synnyng cry ne bywaile 3952
 But þat fortune alway wil assaile
 wiþ vnware stroke þe regnes þat bene proude
 ffor whan men trusten hir þan wil she faile
 And keuere her briȝt face wiþ a clowde 3956
- ¶ Thus endeþ þe monke his tale

And here bygynneþ þe nonpreest^t his prologe

¶ The prologe:
 [on leaf 258]

Ho quod þe knyzt^t no more good of þis
 That 3e han said is ri3t^t ynowe ywis
 And mochel more for litel heuynesse
 Is ri3t^t ynough to mochel folk^t I gesse [no gap in Petworth] 3960
 [I sey for me / hit is a gret disese [Addit. MS 5140,
 on leaf 272 and
 back]
 Wher as men haue ben / in gret welth and ese
 To here of her sodeyn falle allas
 And the contrarye / is Ioye and gret solas 3964
 And whan a man hath be / in poor estat
 And clymbeth vp / and waxeth fortunat
 And ther abidith / in prosperite
 Such^h thyng is gladsom / as thynketh me 3968
 And of such^h thyng / were goodly for to telle
 ya quod our hoost / bi seynt poules belle
 ye sey soth / this monk hath clappid lowd
 He spak how fortune / couered was with a clowd 3972
 I nat nere what / and also tragedie
 Riht now ye herde / and parde no remedie
 I[t i]s forto be wailyng and compleyne
 ffor that that is don / and also it is a peyne 3976
 As ye han seid to heer^t of heuynesse
 Sir monk nomore of this / so god you blesse
 [You]^r tale anoyeth^h / alle this companye
 Such thyng / is nat worth / a bottirflye] [Addit. MS 5140,
 extract stops]
 3oure tales done vs no sporte ne game
 Wherefore sir^t monke or daun pers by 3our name
 I prey 3ou hertely telle vs somewhat^t ellys
 ffor sikerly ne were þe Clynkyng^t of 3our^t bellis 3984

That on 3oure bridel honge on euery side
 By heuene kynge þat for vs alle deyde
 I shuld er þis haue falle down for slepe
 Al þough [þe] sclouþe had neuer be so depe 3988
 Than had 3oure tale ben told in veyn
 ffor certeynly as al þise clerkes seyñ
 wher as a [man] may haue non audience
 Nou3t helpeþ it to telle his sentence 3992
 And wel I woote þe substaunce is in me
 3if eny þinge shal wel reported be
 Sir' say somewhat of huntynge I 3ou preie
 Nay quod þis monke I haue no lust to pleie 3996
 Now lat anoper telle as I haue told
 þan spak our hoost with rude spech and bold
 And saide vnto þe nonnes preest anon
 Come nere sir' preest Come hider' Sire Ioññ [leaf 258, back]
 Telle vs such þingges as may our hertis glade 4001
 Be bliþ þou3e þou ride vpon a Iade
 What þou3e þine hors be boþ foule and lene
 3if he wil serue þe rek' nat' a bene 4004
 Loke þat þi hert' be mery euermoo.
 3is sir' quod he 3is hoost' so mote I goo
 But' I be mery Iwis I wil be blamed.
 And Rizt' anoon his tale he hap atamed. 4008
 And þus seide to vs euerychoñ
 My tale I wil bygynne anon [spurious]

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe nonnes preste

And here bygyneþ þe nonne preest' his tale

[on leaf 258, Lark]

A poor wydowe somdel stope in age
 was whilom dwelling' in a narowe cotage 4012
 Besides a groue standing' in a dale
 This widowe of which I telle 3ou my tale
 Siþens þilk day þat' she was last' a wiff
 In paciens lad a ful sympul liff' 4016
 ffor litel was hur' Catel and hur' rent'
 By Husbondry of such as god her sent'
 She fonde hure self and eke her doughtred twoo
 Thre large sowes had she *and* no moo . 4020
 Thre kyen and eke a shepe þat' hight' malle
 fful soty was hur' boure *and* eke her halle
 In whiche she ete mony a sclender mele
 Of poynant' sause hir' neded neuer a dele 4024
 No deynte morsel passed hur' þrote
 Hir' diete was acordant' to her cote
 Replecio ne made her neuer seke
 Attemper diete was all her' phisike 4028
 And exercise and hert' sufficiãnce
 The goute letted hur' no þing' to daunce
 Ne poplexie shent' not' her hede
 Noo wyne dronke she neiþer white ne rede 4032
 Her boord was serued most' wiþ white *and* blake
 Milk' and broune brede in which she fond no lake
 Seyned Bacon and somtyme an eye or tweye
 ffor she was as It' were a manere of a deye [leaf 259]
 A gardyne she had enclosed al aboute 4037
 Wiþ stikkes and a drie diche wiþ-oute
 In which she had a cok' þat' hiz't chautilere
 In aþ þe londe of crowing' was his pere 4040

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

His mouþ was myrier þan þe mery orgoñ
 On masse daies þat' in þe churchē gooñ
 Wel sikerer was þe crowyng' in his logge
 þan is a klokke or an abbay orlogge 4044
 By nature he crewe eche ascencion
 Of Equinoxial of þilk' tozn
 ffor whan degrees .xv. were descended.
 þat' knewe he þat' it' myzt' not' bene amended 4048
 His Combe was redder þan þe fyne CuraH
 And bateled as it' were a castel waH
 Ilike azure were his legges and his toone
 His bille was blake and as þe gete it' shone 4052
 His nailles witter þan þe lily floure
 And ylike burnysshed gold was his coloure
 This gentile Cok had in his *gouvernaunce*
 Vij. hennys forto doon his plesaunce 4056
 Which weren his sustres and his *paramours*
 And wonder like to hym as of colours
 Of þe which þe fairest' hwed vnder prote
 Was clepe fair' Damysel *Pertilote* 4060
 Curtais she was discrete and debonaire
 And Companable and bere her self so faire
 Siþens þilk' day þat' she was vij. nyzt' olde
 That' trewly she hap þe hert' in holdē 4064
 Of Chauntelere loukyn in euery lith
 He loued hure so þat' wel was hym þer with
 But' such a Ioie as it' was to here hem singe
 Whan þat' þe brizt' sonne gan to sprynge 4068
 In swete accorde my lief is fare a londe
 ffor þilk' tyme as I haue vnderstonde
 Beestes and briddes coude speke *and* synge
 And so byfelle þat' in þe dawynge 4072
 As Chauntecleer amonges his wyues alle
 Sat' on his perch þat' was in þe halle [leaf 259, back]
 And next' hym sat' þis faire *Pertilote*
 This Chaunteclere gan gronen in his þrote 4076

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

As a man þat is in his dreme drecched sore
 And whan þat Pertilote þus herð hym rore
 She was a-gast and seide hert dere
 What eileþ þou to grone in þis manere 4080
 3e bene a verray sceler fy for shame
 And he answerð and saide þus madame
 I prey þou þat 3e take it not a greef
 By god me mette þat I was in such mescheef 4084
 Rizt now þat 3it myn hert is sore afrizt
 Nowe god [quod] he my sweuen rede arizt
 And kepe my body out of foule prisoun
 Me mette þat I romed vp and down 4088
 With-in our yerde wher as I segñ a beest
 Was lik an hounde and wold haue made arest
 Vpon my body and wold haue had me dede
 His colour was bytwix white and red 4092
 And tipped was his taille and boþ his Eeres
 Wiþ blak vnlike þe remenaunt of his heeres
 His snowte smal with glowinge eyen tweye
 3it for his loke almost for fere I dye . 4096
 This caused me my gronyng doutelees
 A voy quod she fie on þou hertelees
 Allas quod she for by þat god aboue
 Now han 3e lost myn hert and my loue 4100
 I can not loue a coward by my faiþe
 ffor certes what so eny womman seiþe
 We alle desiren 3if it myzt be
 To han husbondes hardy wise and free 4104
 And secre ne noo nygard ne ne fooþ
 To hym þat is a-gast of euery tooþ
 Ne noon avoutour by þat god aboue
 How durst 3e seyn for shame vnto þour loue 4108
 That eny þing myzt make þou a-ferde
 Haue 3e no mannys hert and han a berde
 Allas and conne ye be a-gast of swuenes .
 No þing god woote but vanite in sweuen is [leaf 260] 4112

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Sweuens engendren of replexions
 And oft of fume and of complexions
 Whan humours bene to habundañte in a wizt'
 Certes þis dreme which 3e han had to nyzt' 4116
 Commeþ of þe grete superfluite
 Of 3oure rede Colere parde
 Which causeþ folk to dreme her dremes
 Of Arowes and fires wiþ rede lemes 4120
 Of Rede beestes þat willen hem bite
 Of kontek' and of whelpes grete and lite
 Ri3t as þe humour of Malecolie
 Causeþ [ful] mony a man in sclepe to crye 4124
 ffor fere of beeres and boles blake
 Or ellis blake deuels wil hem take
 Of oþer humoures couþe I telle also
 That worken mony a man in slepe ful woo. 4128
 But I wil passe as listly as I can
 Loo Caton which þat was so wise a man
 Seid he not þus ne do no force of dremes
 Now sire quod she whan we flee fro the bemes. 4132
 ffor goddis loue as takeþ som laxatif
 Vp perile of my saule and of my liff
 I counsaile 3ou þe best I wil not lye
 That boþ of colour and of Malencolie 4136
 3e purge 3ou and for 3e shul not tarie
 þou3e þat in þis toun is non Apotecarie
 I shal my self to herbes techen 3ou
 which shal be 3oure here and 3our prove 4140
 And In þe Gardeyne two herbes shal I fynde
 þe which han of her proprete by kynde
 To purgen 3ou by-neþe and eke aboue
 ffor3etep not þis for goddes awne loue 4144
 3e bene ful Colerike of complexioñ
 Where þe sonne in his assencioñ
 Ne fynde 3ou replete of 3our humours hote
 And if it doo I dar wel lay a grote 4148

þat' 3e shul haue a feuer terciane .	
Or an ague þat' may be 3our bane	[leaf 260, back]
A day or twoo 3e shul haue dygestyues	
Of wormes er 3e take 3oure laxatyues	4152
Of laureal Centaure and of fumytere	
Or ellis of Ellibore þat' groweþ þere	
Of Catapuce and of gatys-buries	
Or Erbe Ive grouyngt' in oure 3eerd þer mery es	4156
Pek hem vp rizt' as þei growe and ete hem Inne	
Be mery husbonde for 3our' fader kynne	
Dredeþ no dreme I can say 3ou no more	
Madame quod he gramercy of 3oure lore	4160
But napelees as touching Danne Catoun	
That' hap' of wisdomes such' grete renoun	
By god men may in olde bokes rede	
Oon of þe grettest' auctour out' of drede	4164
Of mony a man more of auctorite	
Than euer caton was so mot' I the	
That al the reuers seyn of þis sentence	
Han han wel founden by experience	4168
That' dremes bene significaciōns	
As wel of Ioie as tribulaciōns	
That' folk enduren in þis lif present'	
It' nedeþ nat' to make of þis noon argument'	4172
The verrey preef sheweþ it' in dede	
Oon of þe grettest' auctour out of drede	
Saiþ þus þat' whilom two felawes went'	
On Pilgrimage in ful good entent	4176
And happed so þei comen into a toun	
Wher as þere was such' congregacioun	
Of puple and eke of streite herbygage	
þat' þei fandē not' as moche as a cotage	4180
In whiche þei boþ myght' ylogged be	
Wherfore þei mosten of necessite	
As for þat' nyzt' departen of companye	
And eche of hem goþ to his hostelrye	4184

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And toke his logginge as it wolde falle		
That oon of hem was logged in a stalle		
ffer in a 3eerde wiþ oxen of þe plouze		
That oþer man was logged wel ynouze	[leaf 261]	4188
As was his auenture or his fortune		
þat vs gouerneþ al as in commune		
And so by-felle longe er it were day		
This man mette in his bed þer as he lay		4192
How þat his felawe gan on hym calle		
And saide Allas for in an oxes stalle		
This nyzt shal I be murþered þer I lie		
Now helpe me dere broþere er I dye /		4196
In al hast come to me he seide		
This man out of his slepe for fere abreide		
But whan þat he was wakened out of his slepe		
He turneþ hym and toke of þis no kepe		4200
Hym þouzt his dreame was nozt but a vanyte		
Thus twies in his slepinge dremed he		
And at þe .iiij. tyme zit his felawe		
Come as he þouzt I am nowe Isclawe		4204
Biholde my bloody woundes depe and wide		
Arise vp erly in þe morowe tide		
And at the west gate of þe toun quod he		
A cart ful of donge þer shalt þou see		4208
In which his body is hidde ful priuely		
To þilk carte aresten boldely		
My golde caused my murder soþ to sayn		
And tolde hym euery poynt how he was sclayn		4212
Wiþ a ful pitous face pale of hwe		
And trest wel his dreame he fonde ful trwe		
ffor on þe morowe as sone as it was day		
To his felawes Inne he toke þe way		4216
And whan he come to þis oxes stalle		
Aftere his felawe he bygan to calle		
The ostelere answerd hym anoñ		
And saide Sir 3oure felawe is goon		4220

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

As sone as day he went' out' of þe toune
 This man gan falle in grete suspecioum
 Remembryng' hym on his dremes þat' he mette
 And forþ he goþ no lenger wold' he lette 4224
 Vnto þe west' gate of þe toune and foñde
 A donge cart' as he went' to donge þe londe [leaf 261, back]
 That' was araied in þe same wise
 As 3e han herde þe dede man deuyse 4228
 And wiþ an hardy hert' he gan to criē
 Vengeaunce and iustice on þis vilanye
 My felawe murdred is þis same ny3t'
 And in þis carte he lith gapinge vp ri3t' 4232
 [I crye out / on the mynystres quod he
 That sholde the lawe keep in this Cite
 Harrow allas / here lith my felawe sleyn
 What sholde I more / vnto this tale seyn 4236
 The people out sterte / and caste the carte to grounde
 And in the myddis of the donge thei founde] [Addit. MS
 extract ends]
 The dede man þat' murdred was aH newe
 O blisful god þat' art' so Iust' and trewe 4240
 Loo how þat' þou bywreiest' morderere alway
 Murder wil out' þat' see wee day by day
 Morder is so wlatson and so abhomynable
 To god þat' is so Iust' and resonable 4244
 þat' he ne wil not' suffre it hilled be
 Theigh it' abide a 3eer or twoo or þre
 Murder wil out' þis is my conclusioun
 And ri3t' anoon ministres of þe toun 4248
 Haþ hent' þe Carter and [ful] sore hym pyned
 And eke þe Ostilere so fer engyned
 That' þei biknewe her wikkednesse anooñ
 And weren honged by þe nek' bone 4252
 Here may men see þat dremes bene to drede
 And certes in the same boke I rede
 Ri3t' in þe next' chapitre I rede of þis
 I gabbe not' so haue I Ioie or blis 4256

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Two men þat' wolden haue passed þe See
 ffor certeyn cause in to a fer contre
 If þat' þe wynde ne had be contrarie
 That' made hem in a Cite forto tarie 4260
 That' stood ful merye vpon an hauen side
 But' on a daye azeinst' þe euentide
 The wynde gan chaunge and blowe as hym lust'
 Iolif and glad þei wenten vnto rust' 4264
 And Casten hem ful erly forto saile
 But' herken how oo man felle in grete perile
 That' oon of hem in scleping' as he lay
 Hym mette a wonder dreme azeinst' þe day 4268
 Hym þouzt' a man stood be his beddys side
 And hym commaunded þat' he shuld' abide. [leaf 262]
 And saide hym þus if þou to morn wende
 Thowe shalt' be dreynt' my tale is at' an ende 4272
 He woke and tolde his felawe what' he meitt'
 And preide him his viage forto lette
 As for þat' day he preide hym to abide
 His felawe þat' lay by his beddys side 4276
 Gan forto laugh and scorned ful fast'
 No drem quod he may myne hert' agast'
 That' I wil lette forto do my þingges
 I sette not' a strawe by dremyngges 4280
 ffor sweuenes bene but' vanytees *and* Iapes
 Men dreme alway of owles *and* of apes
 And of mony a mase þer-wiþaH
 Men dremen of þinge þat' neuere [shal] 4284
 But' siþen I see þou wit' here abide
 And þus forsclewþen wilfully þi tyde
 God woote it' rewep me and haue good day
 And þus he toke his leue and went' his way 4288
 And er that' he had half his cours assailed
 I not' whi ne what' meschaunce it' ailed
 But' casuely þe shippes botme rent'
 And ship and man vnder þe water went' 4292

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

In sizt of oþer shippes hym beside
 That wip hym sailed att þe same tyde
 And þefore he seide *Pertelote* so dere
 By suche ensamples olde maist þou lere 4296
 That no man shulde be to rechelees
 Of Dremes for I say þe doutelees
 That in mony a dreme ful sore is forto drede
 Lo in þe lif of seint kenelyne I rede 4300
 That was kenulphus sone þe noble kyng
 Of Mertenrike how kenelyne mette a þinge
 A litel er [he] was murde[re]d on a day
 His murdre in his Auysioñ he say 4304
 His norice him expowned eury deff
 His sweuen and bad hym for to kepe hym weff
 ffor treson but he was seuen zere olde
 And þefore litel tale haþ he tolde [leaf 262, back] 4308
 Of eny dreme so holly was his herte
 Be god I had leuer þan my sherte
 That ze had herd his legende as haue I
 Dame *Pertelote* I say zou trewly 4312
 Macrobyus þat writ þe auisioñ
 In affrike of þe worþi Cipriõ
 Affermeþ dremes and seþ þat þer bene
 Warnyng of þingges þat men after sene 4316
 And ferþermore I pray zou lokeþ weff
 The olde testament of Danyeff
 3if he heelde dremes of eny vanyte
 Rede eke of Ioseph and ye shal See 4320
 Wheder dremes be somtyme I say not alle
 Warnyng of þingges þat shul after falle
 Loke eke of Egipte þe kinge danne Pharao
 His bakere and his botelere also 4324
 Wher þei ne felt noon effecte in dremes
 Who so wil seche of sundry rewmes
 May reden of dremes mony a wonder þinge
 Loo Cressus which þat was of lyde þe kyng 4328

Mette he not þat he satte vpon a tre
 Which signified he shuld anhonged be
 Lo here Adromacha Ectors wiff
 That day þat Ector shuld lete his lif 4332
 She dremed on þe same nyzt byforn
 How þat þe lif of Ector shuld be lorn
 3iff þilk day he went into bataile
 She warned hym but it myzt not availe 4336
 He went forto fizten napelees
 But he was slayn of Achilles
 But thilk tale is alto longe to telle
 And eke it is nygh day I may not dwelle 4340
 Shortly I say as for conclusiõ
 That I shal haue of þis avisiõ
 Of aduersitees *and* I say ferþer more
 That I ne wil telle of laxatifs no store 4344
 ffor þei bene venemous I wote rizt weþ
 I hem diffie I loue hem neuere a dele [leaf 263]
NO lat vs speke of merþe and stent al þis
 Madame pertilote so haue I blisse 4348
 Of oo þing god haþ sent me large grace
 ffor whan I se þe bewte of 3oure face
 3e bene so scarlet rede aboute þe eyen
 It makeþ al my drede for to dyen 4352
 ffor also siker as in principio .
 Mulier est hominis confusio
 Madame þe sentence of þis latyn is
 Womman is mannys ioy and his blisse 4356
 ffor whan I fele on nyzt 3our soft side
 Al be it þat I may not on 3ou ride
 ffor þat oure perche is made so narowe alas
 I am so ful of Ioye and solas 4360
 þat I defie boþ sweuen and dreme
 And wiþ þat word I fleegh doune fro þe beme
 ffor it was day and eke his hennes alle
 And wiþ a chukke he gan hem forto calle 4364

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

ffor he had founden a corn lay in þe 3erde	
Real he was no more afferd	
He flepered Pertelot xx ^{ti} tyme	
And drad as oft ^r er it ^r were prime	4368
He lokeþ as it ^r were a grym lyoun	
And on his toes he roomed vp and down	
Hym deyned not ^r to sette his fete on grounde	
Ay chokked he whan he had a corne found	4372
And to hym þan ronne his wyues aȝ	
Thus Royal as a prince in his haȝ	
Leue I þis chauntelere in his pasture	
And aftere wil I telle of his auenture	4376
Whan þe month þe which þe work ^t byganne	
That ^r hiz ^t marche whan god first made man	
Was Complete and passed were also	
Sipens Marche bygan .xxx ^{ti} daies and twoo.	4380
Byfelle þat ^r chauntelere in his pride	
His seuen wyues welken hym byside	
Cast ^r vp his eyen to þe briz ^t sonne	
That ^r in þe signe of Taurus was ronne	[leaf 263, back] 4384
Twenty degrees and oon and somewhat ^r more	
He knew by kynde and by noon oþer lore	
That ^r it ^r was prime he crewe wiþ blisful steuen	
The sonne he saide is clumben vp to heuen	4388
xl. degres and oon and more ywis	
Madame Pertelote my worldes blisse	
Herken how þise blisful briddes singe	
And se þe fresshe floures how þei springe	4392
ful is myn hert ^r of Reuel and of solas	
But ^r sodeynly hym felle a soriful caas	
ffor euer þe latter and of Ioie is sone ygoo	
And comonly ofte tyme it ^r falleþ soo	4396
And if arthour coude faire endite	
He in cronicle myght ^r Saucely write	
As for a souereyn notabilite	
Nowe euery wise man herken me	4400

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

This story is as trewe I vndertake
 As is þe booke of launcelote de lake
 That women holde in ful gret reuerence
 Now wil I turne azein to my sentence 4404
 A Col foxe [ful] of sleiȝt and iniquite
 That in þe groue had wanned ȝeeres þre
 By high ymagynaciō to-fore cast
 þe same nyght þorgh-out þe hegges brast 4408
 Into þe ȝeerd þer chauntelere þe faire
 was wonte and eke his wyues to repaire
 And in a bedde of wortes stille he lay
 Till it was passed vndren of þe day 4412
 Waitynge his tyme on chaunteler to falle
 As gladly done þise homycydes alle
 That in a-waite ligge to murdre men
 O fals murdere rowkyng in þi den 4416
 O newe Scariot o . newe Genyloñ
 ffals dissimylour o greke Symon
 þat brouȝtest troye al vtterly to sorowe
 O chauntelere acursed be þat morowe 4420
 þat þou into [þi] ȝeerd flegħ from þe bemes
 Thow were ful wel ywarned by þi dremes [leaf 264]
 That ilke day was perilous to þe
 But þat . þat god a-fore wote most nedes be 4424
 Aftere þe opynyon of certeyn clerkes
 Wittnesse of hym þat eny clerk es
 That in scole [is] grete altercaciō
 In þis mater and grete disputaciō 4428
 And haþ bene of an C. thousand men /
 But I ne can[not] bult it to þe brenne
 As can þe holy doctour augustyne
 Or boys or þe Bisshop Bradwardyne 4432
 Whedere þat goddys wille a-fore wetyng
 Streyneþ me nedely forto doon a þing
 Nedely clepe I symple necessite
 Or ellis ȝif þe free chois be graunted me 4436

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

To do þat same þing^r or do it nouȝt^r ·
 Thouȝe god forwote it^r er it^r was wrouȝt^r
 Er of his wetyng^r streyneþ neuer a dele
 But by necessite condicionele 4440
 I wil not^r haue to done of such^r matere
 My tale is of a cokke as ȝe shullen here
 That^r toke his counsaile of his wif with sorowe
 To walken in þe ȝerde vpon þe morowe 4444
 That^r he had mette þe dreme þat^r I ȝou tolde
 Womn[an]es counsaile is ful ofte colde
 Womn[an]es counsaile brouȝt^r vs first^r to woo
 And made Adam from paradys to goo . 4448
 Ther he was ful mery an wel at ese
 But for I note whom I myȝt displese
 If I counsaile of wommen wold blame
 Passe ouere for I seide it^r in my game 4452
 Rede awters wher þei trete of such^r matere
 And what^r þei seyne of wommen here
 Thise bene þe cokkes wordes and not myne
 I can no harme of no womman devyne 4456
 ffaire in þe sonde to bathi hur merely
 lith pertelote and al hure susters bye
 Aȝeinst^r þe sonne and chauntelere so fre
 Songe meryer þan þe meermaiden in þe See [leaf 264, back]
 ffor phisialogus saiþ witterly 4461
 How þat^r þei synge wel and merely
 And so byfelle as he cast^r his ye
 Amonges þe wortes vppon a botterflie 4464
 He was war of this fox þat^r lay ful lowe
 No þinge ne lust^r hym þan for to crowe
 But^r cries anon cok^r cok^r and vp he sterte
 As a man þat^r was affraied in his herte 4468
 ffor naturelly a beest^r desireþ to flee
 ffro his contrarie if he may it See
 þouȝe he neuer had seye it^r erst w^{it}h his ye
 This chauntelere whan he hym gan aspie 4472

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

He wold haue fledde but þat þe fox anoñ	
Saide gentile sir' allas what hast þou doñ	
Bene 3e affraied of me þat am 3oure frende	
Certes sir' þan ben 3e vnhende	4476
If I to 3ou wil harme or vilanye	
I am not' come 3our' counsaile to aspie	
But' trewly þe cause of my comynge	
was oonly to harken how þat 3e singe	4480
ffor trewly 3e han as mery a steuen	
As aungel hap þat' is in heuen	
Ther-with 3e han in musike more felinge	
þan had boys or eny þat' can synge	4484
My lorde 3our' fadere god his saule blisse	
And eke 3oure modere and hur' gentilnesse	
Han in myn hous bene to 3ou grete ese	
And Certes sir' ri3t' fain wold' I 3ou please	4488
But' for men speken of syngynge I wil seye	
So mot' I brouke myn eien tweye	
Sauf 3e I ne herd' neuere man so synge	
As did 3oure fader in þe mornynge	4492
Certes it' was of hert' al þat' he songe	
And forto make his vois þe more stronge	
He wold so peyn hym þat wiþ both his yen	
He most' wynke so loude he did erien	4496
And stonden on his typtoon þerwiþal	
And strecche forþ his nek' longe <i>and</i> smaht	[leaf 265]
And eke he was of such discreciõ	
That' þer nas no man in no regioñ	4500
That' him in songe or wisdom my3t' passe	
I haue wel red daun Burnel þer as	
Amonge his vers þer was a cok'	
[That] ffor a preestes sone 3aue hym a knok'	4504
Vpon his legge whiles he was 3onge <i>and</i> nyce	
He made hym forto lese his benefice	
But' certeyn þer nys noon comparisoñ	
Bytwix þe wisdom and discreciõ	4508

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- Of 3oure fadere and of his subtilite
 Now syngēþ sir' for seint' charite
 Lat' see conne 3e 3oure fadere countrefete
 This Chauntelere his wenges gan to bete 4512
 As man þat' coude nat' his tresoñ aspie
 So was he rauessed wip his flaterye
 Allas 3e lordes mony a fals flatour
 Is in 3our court' and mony a losengour' 4516
 That' plesen 3ou more by my feip
 That' he þat' soþfastnesse vnto 3o^u seip .
 Redeþ Ecclesiastre of flaterye
 Beþ ware 3e lordes of her trecherye 4520
 This Chaunteclere stood high vpon his toos
 Strecchinge his nek and held his eien cloos
 And gan to crowe loude for þe nones
 And daun Russel stert' vp al at' ones 4524
 And by þe Gargaige hent' Chaunteclere
 And on his bak toward' the wood hym bere
 ffor 3it' was ther no man hym swed
 O Destany þat' maist' not' bene eschewed' 4528
 Allas þat' chaunteclere fel fro þe bemes
 Allas his wif ne rou3t' not' of dremes
 And on a friday felle all þis meschāunce
 O Venus þat' art' goddes of plesaunce 4532
 Siþens þat' þi seruauante was þis chaunteclere
 And in þi seruise did al his powere
 More for delit' þan þe world' to multiplie
 Whi woldest' þou suffre on þi day to dye [leaf 265, back]
 O Gaufrede dere maistere souereyñ 4537
 þat' whan þe worþi kinge Richard' was sclayñ
 Wip shot' compleyndest' his deþ so sore
 Whi ne had I nowe þi sentence and þi lore 4540
 þe ffriday forto chide as did 3e
 ffor on a friday shortely sclayne was he
 þan wolde I shewe howe þat' I coude playne
 ffor chaunteclere and for his peyne 4544

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Certus suchi crye ne lamentaciõ
 was of ladies made whan þat' Ilyon
 Was wonne. and pirrus with his streizt' swerd
 Whan he hent' king' Prian by þe beerd' 4548
 And sclayn hym as seide Enneidos
 As maden all þe hennes in þe cloos
 Whan þei had seie of chaunteclere þe sizt'
 But' souereyn dame pertelote shrizt' 4552
 wel lodder þan did Hasdrubaldes wif
 whan þat' her husbonde had lost' his lif
 And þat' þe romaynes had brent' Cartage
 She was so ful of torment' and of Rage 4556
 That' wilfully into þe fire she stert'
 And brent' her self wiþ a stedfast' hert'
 O wooful hennys rizt' so criden 3e
 As whan þat' Nero brent' þe Cite 4560
 Of Rome criden þe Cenatours wyues
 ffor þat' her husbondes shulden lese her lyues
 wiþ-uten Gilt' [þis] Nero hap hem sclayn
 Now wil I turne to my tale a3ein 4564
 This sely widowe and hure dou3ters two
 Herden þe hennys crien and make woo
 And out' atte door sterten þei anoon
 And segh þe fox toward' þe groue goon 4568
 And bare on his bak þe Cok away
 They criden out' and harawe and welaway
 A ha þe fox and after' hym þei ran
 And eke wiþ staues mony an oþer man 4572
 Ran CoH our dogge. talbot and Garlonde
 And Malkyn wiþ her dystaf in hure honde [leaf 266]
 Ran cove and calf and eke the verrey hogges
 Sore afferd' for berking' of dogges 4576
 And shetinge of men and wommen eke
 þei ronne so þeire hertes þei þou3t' to breke
 þei 3elden as feendes doñ in helle
 The dogges criden as men wold' hem quelle 4580

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Out' of the hyues come þe swarme of bees
 The gees for fere flowen in þe trees
 So hidous was the noise .O benedicite
 Certes he Iak' strawe and his mayne 4584
 Ne made neuer showtes half so shrille
 whan þat' þei wolde eny flemmyng kille
 As þat' ilk' day was made vpon þe fox
 Of bras þei brouzt' bemes and of box 4588
 Of horn and boon in which þei pouped
 And þerwipal þei schrieded and showted .
 It semed as þat' heuene shulde falle
 Now good I prey þou harkenep alle 4592
 Lo how fortune turnep soðeynly
 The hope and eke pride of her envie
 This cok/ þat' lay vpon the fox bak'
 In al his drede vnto þe fox spak' 4596
 And saide Sire if I were as þe
 3it' shuld I say as wis god helpe me
 Turne azeine þe proude cherles alle
 A verrey pestilence vpon þou falle 4600
 Nowe am I come vnto þis wodys side
 Maugre þoure hede þe cok shal here abide
 I wol hym ete in feip and þat' anoñ
 The fox answerde in faip it' shal be doñ 4604
 And [as] he spak' þat worde al soðeynly
 This Cok' brak from his mouþ delyuerly
 And high vpon a tree he flegñ anoñ
 And whan þe fox segñ þat' he was goñ 4608
 Allas quod he O chauntelere allas
 I haue quod he done to þou trespas
 In as moch as I made þou aferd'
 Whan I þou hent' and brouzt' out' of þe zerde [leaf 266, back]
 But' sire I did it' not' in no wicked entent' 4613
 Commeþ doune and I shal telle þou what' I ment'
 I shal saie soþ god helpe me soo
 Nay þan quod he I schrewe vs boþ twoo 4616

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And first I schrewe my self boþ blood and bones
 3if þou bigile me ofter þan ones
 Thow shalt no more wiþ þi flaterie
 Do me swynk' and wink' wiþ myn ye 4620
 ffor he þat' wynket' whan he shuld see
 As wisly god lat' hym neuer þee
 Nay quod þe fox god 3eue hym meschaunce
 That' is so vndiscrete of gouernaunce 4624
 That' Iangeleþ whan he shuld haue pees
 Loo such is forto be rechelees
 And necligent' and trusteþ on flaterie
 But' 3e þat' holden þis foly 4628
 As of a Cok' of a fox and of an henne
 Takeþ þe Moralite good men
 ffor seint' poule seiþ al þat' writen is
 To our doctrine it' is writen ywis / 4632
 Takeþ þe fruyte and lat' þe chaf be stille
 Nowe good god if it' be þi wille
 As seiþ my lorde so make vs all good men
 And bringe vs al to his blisse Amen. 4636

Thus endep þe preestes tale

GROUP H. FRAGMENT IX.

§ 1. THE MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

And þus [on leaf 236, back]

bygynnes þe manciples tale .

WEte 3e not' where stont' a litel tounē ¶ **The prologe/**
Which þat' is cleped bob vp and doune
Vnder þe blee in Caunterbery waye
Ther gan our hooste to Iape and playe 4
And saide Sirres donne is in þe myre
Is þer no man for preiere ne for hyre
That' wil awake our felawe behinde
A theef myzt' hym robbe and bynde 8
Se howe he napped for goddys bones .
Awaite he wil falle from his hors at' ones
This is a coke of london wip meschaunce
Do hym come forþ he knoweþ his penaunce [leaf 267] 12
ffor he shal telle a tale be my fay
Al þou3e it' be nat' worth a botel of hay
Awake þou coke god 3eue þe Sorowe
What' aileþ þe to slepe so by þe morowe; 16
Hast' þou had fleen to nyzt' or þou art' dronke
Or hast' þou al nyzt' wip som quene yswonke
So þat' þou maist' not' holde vp þine hede
This Coke þat' was [ful] pale and no þing' rede 20
Saide to oure hooste so god me blesse
As þer is holden on me such' heuynesse
That I not' wheder me were leuer sclepe
Than þe best' Galon wyne in chepe 24

wel quod þe manciple it wil done ese	25
To þe Sir Coke and to no wizt mysplese	
whiche þat riden in þis company	
þat soo our hoost wil of his curtesy	28
I wil as nowe excuse þe of þi tale	
ffor in good fay þi visage is rizt pale	
þine eyen dasen as me þenkeþ	
And wel I woot þi breth̄ sore stynkeþ	32
That sheweþ þou nart not wel disposed .	
Of me certaine þou shalt not bene glosed .	
See howe he goleth þis dronken wizt	
As þowe he wolde swoune anoñ rizt	36
Hold cloos þi mouþe man by þi fader kyn	
The deuel of helle sette his foote þerIn .	
Thy cursed breth̄ wil affecte vs alle	
ffly stynkinge hogge foule mot þe byfalle	40
Now takeþ hede sirs of þis lusty man	
Now swete sir wil ye Iust at þe fan	
Therto me þenkeþ 3e be wel yshape	
¶ I trowe 3e han dronken wyne grape	44
And þat is whan men pley with a strawe	
And wiþ þis speche þe coke wex al wrawe	
[And on the Maunciple . gan to nodde fast	[MS Reg. 17 D 15,
ffor lak of speche . and downe the hors hym cast	leaf 285]
Where as he lay til that men hym vptoke	48
This was a faire cheuache . of a cooke	
Allas that he nad . hold hym bi his ladiH	
And or that he ageyn . were in his sadiH]	52
Ther was grete schovuyng to and froo	
To lift hym up and mykel care and woo	
So vnweldy was þis appalled goost	
And to þe manciple þan speke our hoost	[leaf 267, back]
By cause drink hap Dominacioñ	56
Vppon þis man by my sauacioñ	
I trowe he wolde lewdely telle his tale	
ffor, were it wyne or ellis moyst ale	60

That he haþ dronken he spekeþ <i>in</i> his nose	61
And galpeþ fast and eke he haþ þe pose	
He haþ also to doo more þan ynogh	
To kepe hym and his capel out of þ ^e sclouȝh	64
And if he falle fro his capel eft sone	
Than shal we alle haue ynogh to done	
In liftinge vp of his heuy corps	
Telle on þi tale of hym make I no force	68
But nowe Maunciple <i>in</i> feiþ þou art to nyce	
Thus openly to repreue hym of his vice	
Anoþer day he wil peraventure	
Recleyme þe and bringe þe to lure	72
I mene he speke wold of smale þingges	
As forto pynchen at þi rekenyngges	
That were not honest ȝif it come to preef	
Nowe <i>quod</i> the maunciple þat were a gret mescheef	76
So myȝt he bringe me in þe snare	
ȝit had I leuer paien for þe mare	
Which he rit vpon þan he shuld <i>with</i> me strive	
I wil not wrep hym as mot I þriue	80
what þat I spak I saide it <i>in</i> my bourde	
And wote ȝe what I haue here <i>in</i> a gourde	
A drauȝt of wyne ȝe of a ripe grape	
And riȝt anoon ȝe shul se a good Iape	84
This Coke shal drynk þerof ȝif þat I may	
Vp peyne of deþ he wil nat say me nay	
And certeynly to tellen as it was	
Of þis vessel þe Coke dronk fast alas	88
What nedeþ hit he dronk ynouȝe to-forn	
And whan he had poped <i>in</i> his horn	
To þe Manciple he toke þe gourde ageyn	
And of þat drinke þe Coke was wonder feyn	92
And þonked hym in such wise as he coude	
Than gan oure hoost to laughen wondere loude	[leaf 268]
And saide I see wel it is necessarie	
Where þat we goon good drink wip vs to carie	96

GROUP H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK. **Petworth MS.**

ffor þat' wil turne rancour and dissese	97
To pees and loue and mony a wronge to sese	
O Bachus blessed be þi name	
That' so can turne earnest' into game	100
Worship and þonk' be vnto þe	
ffor of þis matere 3e gete no more of me	
Telle on þou manciple I þe pray	
Wel sir' quod he now herkenep what' I say	104

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe Manciple

¶ The Tale .:|.

And here bygynneþ þe manciple his tale [on leaf 268]

WHan Phebus dwelt' here in þis erþe adoun 105
 As olde bokes maken menciozn
 He was þe most' lusty bachilere
 Of al þis world and eke þe best' archere 108
 He sclough Phiton þe serpent' as he lay
 Scleping' azeinst' þe sonne vpon a day
 And mony a noþer worþi noble dede
 He wiþ his bowe wrouzt' as men may rede 112
 Pleien he coude on euery mynstralcie
 And syngen þat' it' was a melodye
 To harken of his cleere voys þe soun
 Certes þe kynge of Thebes Amphioun 116
 That' wiþ hys syngging' walled þat' cite
 Coude neuere synge half so wel as he
 Therto he was þe semeliest' man
 That' is or was siþ þe world' bygan. 120
 What' nedep' it' is fetures to discrive
 ffor in þis world' was noon so faire alyue
 He was þer-with fulfilled of gentilnesse
 Of honure and of parfit' worþinesse 124
 This Phebus þat' was flour' of bachelerie
 As wel in fredom as in Chiualrie
 ffor disport' and in signe eke of victorie
 Of Pheton so as telleþ vs þe storie 128
 was wont' to beren in his honde a bowe
 Now haþ þis Phebus in his hows a crowe [leaf 268]
 Which in a Cage he fostred mony a day
 And tauzt' it' to speke as men doon a Iaye 132

GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

White was þis crowe as is a white swan	133
And countrefeted þe speche of euery man	
He cowde whan he shuld ^t telle a tale	
Ther-wiþ in al þis londe þer nys no nyȝtyngale	136
That ^t cowde by an hundred thousan dele	
Synge so mery and eke so wel	
Now had þis phebus in his hous a wif	
Which þat ^t he loued more þan his owne lif ^t	140
And nyght ^t and day did euer diligence	
Her for to plese and done reuerence	
Sauf oonly ȝif I þe soþ shal sayn	
Ialous he was and wold haue kept ^t hure fayn	144
ffor hym were loþe Iaped forto be	
And so euery man wold ^t in such ⁿ degre	
But ^t al for nauȝt ^t for it ^t availeþ noȝt ^t	
A good wif þat ^t is clene of werk <i>and</i> þoȝt ^t	148
Shuld not be kepte in noon awaite certeyn	
And trewly þe labour ^t is <i>in</i> veyn	
To kepe a schrewe for it ^t wil not ^t be	
This hold I for a verrey nycete	152
To spille labour forto kepe wyues	
Thus writen olde clerkes in her lyues	
But ^t nowe to <i>purpos</i> as I first ^t bygan	
This worþi phebus dooþ al þat ^t he can/	156
To plesen hure wenyng ^t by such ⁿ plesaunce	
And for his manhode and his <i>gouernaunce</i>	
That ^t no man shuld haue put ^t hym from hir ^t <i>grace</i>	
But ^t god it ^t wote þer may no man embrace	160
As to destroie a þinge which þat ^t nature	
Haþ naturelly sette <i>in</i> a creature	
Take eny bridde and put ^t it ^t in a cage	
And doo al þine entent ^t and þi corage	164
To fostere it ^t tenderly wiþ mete <i>and</i> drink ^t	
Of alle deyntise þat ^t þou canst ^t by-þenk ^t	
And kepe it ^t also clenly as he may	
Al þouȝe his Cage of gold be neuer so gay	[leaf 269] 168

3it' hap þis brid by twenty þousand fold'	169
Leuer in a forest' þat' is wilde and cold'	
Goon ete wormes and suche wrecchednesse	
ffor euer þis bridde wol doon his bysynes	172
To escape out' of his cage if he may	
His liberte þe bridde desireþ ay	
Lat' take a cat' and fostre hym wel with mylk'	
And tendere flesshe and make his couche of silk'	176
And lat' hym seen a mous goo by þe waþf	
And anoon he wayueth mylk' flessch and aþf	
And euery deynte þat' is in þe hous	
Suche appetit' hap he to ete a mous	180
Lo here hap lust' his domynaciõn	
And appetit' flemeþ discreciõn	
As þe wolf hap also a vileyns kynde	
The lewdest' wolf þat' she may fynde	184
Or leest' of reputaciõn þat' wil she take	
In tyme whan hur lust' to haue a make	
Alle þise ensamples speke I. by þise men	
That' bene vntrewe and no þing' by wommen	188
ffor men han euer a likerous appetit'	
On lower þing' to performe her delite	
Than on her wyues bene þei neuere so faire	
Ne neuere so trewe ne so debonaire	192
fflesshe is so newefongel wiþ meschaunce	
That' we ne konne no þinge han plesaunce	
That' sowneþ in vertue eny while	
This Phebus which þat' þouzt' vpon no gile	196
Deceyued was for al his Iolite	
ffor vnder hym anoper had she	
A man of litel reputaciõn	
Not' worþ to phebus in comparisiõn	200
The more harme is it' happeþ oft' soo	
Of whoch þer commeth mochel harme and woo	
And so byfelle whan phebus was absent'	
His wif anoon hap for her lemman sent'	204

Here lemman certes þis is a knauyssh speche	205
fforzeueþ it ^t me and þat ^t I 3ou biseche	[leaf 269, back]
The wise Plato seiþ as 3e may ¹ rede	[¹ first here rede]
þ ^e Word ^t mot ^t nedes accorde wijþ þe dede	208
3if men shal telle <i>prop</i> rely a þinge	
The worde mot ^t Cosyn be to þe workinge	
I am a boistous man ri3t ^t þus say I	
Ther nys no difference trewly	212
Bitwix a wif þat ^t is of hie degre	
3if of her body dishonest ^t she be	
And a poor wenche oþer þan þis	
3if it ^t so be þei wirk boþ amys	216
But ^t þat ^t þe gentile is in state aboue	
She shal be cleped his lady as <i>in</i> loue	
And for þat ^t oþer is a poor womman	
She shal be cleped his wench <i>and</i> his lemman .	220
And god it ^t woote myn owne der broþer	
Men sayn þat ^t oon lith as lowe as doþ þat ^t oþer	
Ri3t ^t so bitwix a titles tyraunt ^t	
And an houlaw ² and a þeef erraunt ^t	[² or honlaw] 224
The same I say þer nys no difference	
To Alisaunder was tolde þat ^t sentence	
That ^t for þe tyraunt ^t is of gretere my3t ^t	
By force of mayne for sclen down ri3t ^t	228
And brennen hous and home and make al playn	
Lo þerfore is cleped a Capitayn	
And for þe outlaw haþ but ^t smal mayne	
And may not doon so grete an harme as he	232
Ne bringe a contre to so grete meschief ^t	
Men clepen hym an outlay or a þeef ^t	
But ^t for I am a man not ^t text ^t wel	
I wil not ^t telle of Titus neuer a dele	236
I wil go to my tale as I byganne	
Whan phebus [wif] had sent ^t for her lemman	
Anoon þei wrou3ten al her lust ^t volage	
This white crowe þat ^t henge ay in þe cage	240

- Bihelde her werk^t and saide neuer a word^t 241
 And whan þat^t home was come Phebus þe lord^t
 þis crowe songe Cokkow . cokkow . Cukkowe
 What^t brid quod phebus what^t songe singest^t thowe [leaf 270]
 Ne were þou wonte so merely to synge
 That^t to myn hert^t it^t was a reioysinge
 To here þi vois allas what^t songe is þis
 By god quod he I synge nat^t a mys, 248
 Phebus quod he for al þi worþinesse
 ffor al þi bewte and þi gentilnesse
 ffor al þi songe and al þi mynstralcye
 ffor al þi waytinge blered is þine ye 252
 Wiþ oon of litel reputaciōn
 Nouzt^t worþ to þe as in comparisōn
 The mountaunce of a gnatte so mote I thryue
 ffor on þi bed þi wiff^t I segħ hym swyve 256
 What^t wil 3e more þe craue anon hym tolde
 By sad tokens and by wordes bolde
 How þat^t his wif^t had doon her leccherie
 Hym to grete shame and to gret^t vilenye 260
 And tolde hym oft^t he segħ it^t wiþ his eyen
 This Phebus gan awaiward^t forto wryen ./
 Hym þouzt^t his sorowful hert^t brast^t atwoo
 His bowe he bent^t and sette þer-Inne a floe 264
 And in his Ire haþ he his wif^t sclayn
 This is þeffecte þer nys no more to sayn
 ffor sorowe of which he brak^t his mynstralcie
 Boþ harpe and lute . gitern . and sawtrie 268
 And eke he brak^t his harowes *and* his bowe
 And after þat^t þus speke he to þe crowe
 Traitour quod he wiþ tunge of scorpion
 Thou hast/ me brouzt^t to my *confusio*n 272
 Allas þat^t I was wrouzt^t why ner I dede
 O dere wiff o . gemme of lustihede
 þat^t were to me so sad and eke so trewe
 Now liest^t þou dede wiþ face pale of hwe 276

fful giltles þat durst' I swere ywis	277
O Rakel hounde to doon so foule amys	
O trouble witte .o. yre rechelees	
That' vnavised smytet' giltlees	280
O wan-trest' ful of fals suspeciōn	
Wher was þi witt' and þi discreciōn	[leaf 270, back]
O euery man be war of rechelesnesse	
Ne trow no þinge wiþ-out' strong' witesse	284
Smyte not' to sone er þow wit' why	
And be avised wel and soberly	
Er 3e doon eny executiōn	
Vppon 3oure Ire for suspeciōn	288
Allas an Mf. folk' han rakel yre	
ffully fordoon or brouzt' hem in þe myre	
Allas for sorowe I wil my self sele	
And to þe Crawe o' fals þeef saide he	292
I wil þe qwite anoon þi fals tale	
Thow songe whilom like a nyztyngale	
Now shalt' þou fals þeef þi songe forgone	
Eke þi white fetheres euerechone	296
Ne neuer in al þi lif shalt' þou speke	
Thus shal men on a traitour ben ywreke	
Thowe and þine ospringe euer shul be blake	
Ne neuer swete noys shul 3e make	300
But' euer crie azeinst' tempest' and reyne	
In tokenynge þat' þorgh þe my wif is scleyn	
And to þe crowe he stert' and þat' anone	
And pulled his white feþeres euerechone	304
And made hym blak' and raft hym al his songe	
And eke his speche and out' atte dore hym sclonge	
Vnto þe deuel to whom I hym bitake	
And for þis caus bene al[le] crows blake	308
Lordyngges by þis ensample I 3ou preie	
¶ Beþ war and takeþ kepe what' þat' 3e seie	
Ne telleþ neuer no man 3oure liff'	
How þat'anoþer man hap dizt' þi wiff	312

He wil 3ou hate mortelly certayn	313
Dann salomon as wise clerkes sayn	
Techeþ a man to kepe his tunge wel	
But as I seide I am not text wel	316
But napelees þus tauzt me my dame	
My sone þenk on þe crowe a goddys name	
My sone kepe wel þi tunge and kepe þi frende	
A wicked tunge is wors þan a feende	[leaf 271] 320
My sone from a feende men may hem blisse	
My sone god of hise endelees goodnesse	
Walled a tunge wiþ teeþ and lippes eke	
ffor man shuld hym avise what he speke	324
My sone ful oft for to mochel speche	
Hap mony a man be spilt as clerkes teche	
But for litel speche avisely	
Is no man shent to speke generally	328
My sone þi tunge shuldest þou restreyñ	
Att al tyme but whan þou dost þi peyn	
To speke of god in honure and preiere	
The furst vertue sone 3if þou wilt lere	332
Is to restreyne and kepe wel þi tonge	
Thus lernen children whan þei bene 3onge	
My sone of moche speking euel avised	
Ther lasse speking had ynow suffised	336
Comeþ moche harme þus was me told and tauzt	
In mochel speche synne wantep nauzt	
Woost þou wherof a Rakel tunge serueþ	
Rizt as a swerd forkutteþ and for-kerueth	340
An arme a twoo my dere sone rizt soo	
A tonge kitteþ frendship al a twoo	
A Iangelere is to god abhomynable	
Rede Salomon so wise and honorable	344
Rede Daudid and his Psalmes. rede Senek	
My sone speke not but with þi hede þou bekt	
Dissimule as þou were deaf if þat þou here	
A Iangelere speke of parilous matere	348

þe filemyng ^t seiþ and lerne it ^t 3if þe list	349
That ^t litel Iangelinge causeþ mochl ryst	
My sone 3if þou no wikked word hast ^t seide	
The ther not ^t drede forto be bywreiede	352
But ^t he þat ^t haþ myssaide I dar wel sayñ	
He may by no way clepe his word ^t agayñ	
þing ^t þat ^t is saide . is saide <i>and</i> forþ it ^t goþ	
þou3e hym repent ^t or be he neuer so looþ	356
He is his þral to whom þat ^t he haþ saide	
A taile of which he is now euel a-payde	[leaf 271, back]
My sone be war and be not ^t autour newe	
Of tydingges whedere þei be fals or trewe	360
Where so þou come amonges hie or lowe	
Kepe wel þi tunge and þenk ^t vpon þe crowe	362
¶ þus endeþ þe prologe of þe manciple .	

GROUP I. FRAGMENT X.

§ 1. THE BLANK-PARSON LINK.

[*This is really a link between some unwritten Tale and the Parson's. It has been made into the Manciple-Parson Link (or Yeoman-Parson by the Christ-Church MS) by Chaucer's copiers, though not meant for it.*]

PETWORTH MS.

And here bygygneþ þe prologe of þe persone [on U^f 271, bk]

BY þat' þe manciple had his tale ended 1
þe sonne fro þe south is descended.
So lowe þat' he was nauzt' to my sizt'
Degrees *nyne and twenti*¹ as of hight' [¹ MS xxix] 4
Ten of þe klok it' was so as I gesse
ffor xj foote or litel more or lesse
My shadowe was at þilke tyme as þer
Of suche fete as my lengthe parted were 8
In sex foote equal of *proporcioñ*
þer-wiþ þe moones exaltacioñ
I mene libra alway gan ascende
As we were entringe at' a throppes ende 12
ffor wiþ our hoost' as he was wont' to gye
As in þis caas our Ioly companye
Saide in þis wise lordyngs euerechoñ
Now lakkeþ vs no tale more þat' oon 16
ffulfilled is my sentence *and* my degre
Who wil nowe telle a tale lat' see
Almost' fulfilled is myn ordynaunce
I prei to god so zeue hym rizt' good chaunce 20
That' telleþ þis tale to vs lustely
Sir' preest' quod he art' þou a vikarie
Or art' thou a persone sei þe soþ by þi feye
Be what' þou be ne breke nat' our pleye 24

GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. **Petworth MS.**

ffor euery man sauþ þou haþ told his tale	25
Vnboele and schewe what is in þi male	
ffor trewly me þenkeþ by þi chere	
Thow shuldest knet vp wel a grete matere	28
Telle vs a fable anoon for Cokkes bonys	
This person answerd al at onys	
þow getest fable noon ytold for me	
ffor Poule þat writeþ vnto Timothe	[leaf 272] 32
Repreuen hem þat waiven soþfastnesse	
And tellen fables and such wrechednesse	
Whi shuld I shewen draf out of my fest	
Whan I may shewe whete if þat me lest	36
ffor which I say if þat þe lust to here	
Moralite and vertuouus matere	
And þan þat 3e wil 3eue me audience	
I wil ful fayne at cristes reuerence	40
Doon 3ou plesaunce leeful as I can	
But trusteþ wel I am a soþeren man	
I can not gest. rum ram. ruf by letter	
Ne god woote Ryme hold I but lite better	44
And þerfore if 3ou lust I nyl nat glose	
I wil 3ou telle a mery tale in prose	
To knytte vp al þis feest and make an ende	
And Ihesu for his grace wit me sende	48
To schew 3ou þe way in þis viage	
Of pilk parfite glorious pilgrimage	
That hight Ierusalem celestiaH	
And if 3e vouchesauf anoñ 3e shaH	52
Bygynne vpon my tale for which I prey	
Telle 3our avis I can no better seye	
But napelees þis meditaciõ	
I putt aye vnder correccion	56
Of clerkes for I am not textweH	
I take but þe sentence trusteþ weH	
Therefore I make protestaciõ	
That I wil stonde to correcciõ	60

GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. **Petworth MS.**

Vpon þis woord we han assented sone	61
ffor as it' semed it' was forto done	
To enden in som vertuouſ sentence	
And forto 3eue hym space <i>and</i> audience	64
And bad our hoost' he shulde to hym seie	
þat' alle we to telle his taile hym preye	
Our' hoost' had þe wordes for vs alle	
Sir' preest' quod he now faire mot' 3ou byfalle	68
Say what' 3ou lust' and we shullen gladly here	
And wiþ þat' word' he saide in þis manere	[leaf 272, back]
Telleþ quod he 3oure meditacioun	
But' hastep 3ou þe sonne wil a-down	72
Beep fructuous and þat' in litel space	
And to do wel god sende 3ou his grace.	74
¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe persons tale	

THE PARSON'S TALE.

A TREATISE ON PENITENCE, IN 3 PARTS :

- Part I. On Penitence, and its 1st requisite **Contrition** (A) (p. 593—612).
 Part II. On its 2nd requisite, **Confession** (B) (p. 612—679).
 Part III. On its 3rd requisite, **Satisfaction** (C) (p. 679—684), with the Writer's Leave-taking and Retractations (p. 684-85).

PART I. (p. 593—612).

ON PENITENCE, AND ITS 1ST REQUISITE, CONTRITION.

Proem on Jeremiah vi. 16. The Tale is to be on *Penitence* as a full noble way to lead folk to Christ, and is to treat of

- i. 'what is Penitence' (p. 594).
 - ii. 'whennes it is cleped Penitence'. [*not in the Tale.*]
 - iii. 'in how many maneres been the acciouns or werkynge of Penitence' (p. 594-5).
 - iv. 'how many speses ther been of Penitence' (p. 595).
 - v. 'whiche thynges apertenen and bihouen to Penitence' (p. 595—682; nearly all Parts I and III, and all Part II).
 - vi. 'whiche thynges destourben Penitence' (at end of Part III, p. 682) (p. 593).
- i. **Penitence** defined, by *a.* St Ambrose; *b.* 'som doctour'; *c.* the writer. Its requisites: 1. bewailing of sins; 2. purpose to have shrift, to do satisfaction, never to sin again, to continue in good works (p. 594).

[ii. *not given.*]

- iii. The 3 actions of Penitence: 1. Baptism after sin; 2. not to do deadly sin after baptism; 3. not thus to do venial sin (p. 594-95).
- iv. The 3 speses or kinds of Penitence: 1. Solemn (to be put out of church, or do open penance); 2. Common (to go naked on pilgrimage); 3. Private (p. 595).
- v. The 3 necessities or requisites for Penitence (p. 596—682):
 - A. **Contrition** of heart (p. 596—612).
 - B. **Confession** of mouth (Part II, p. 612—679).
 - C. **Satisfaction** (Part III, p. 679—682).

Penitence avails against 3 things, by which we wrath Christ (p. 595).

- A. **Contrition** is the root of Penitence, whose stem bears branches and leaves of Confession, and fruit of Satisfaction.

Contrition also bears a seed of grace, whose heat draws men to God. (Simile of the child and his nurse's milk.)

Penance is the tree of life (p. 596).

Four Points to be known about Contrition:

1. What it is; 2. the causes that move a man to it; 3. how to be contrite; 4. what it avails the soul (p. 597).

2. The 6 Causes that should move a man to Contrition:

a. Remembrance of Sins (p. 597-8).

b. Whoso does sin is the Thrall of Sin (p. 598-99).

c. Dread of the Day of Doom and the Pains of Hell (p. 599—604). These described: the Doom (p. 599-600); Job's 'lond of mysese and of derknesse' (p. 600-1); the 3 shames in hell against (1) 'Honours, (2) delices, and (3) riches' (p. 611); poverty in 4 things: no treasure, food, clothing, or friends (p. 602); and no delights of the 5 senses. The pain shall be eternal (p. 603). Hell is orderless (p. 603-4). The 7 causes why the damnd have lost all hope (p. 604).

d. Remembrance of the good works we've left undone, and the loss of the good works done while we were in sin (p. 604-6).

Deadly sin wipes out all good works formerly done (p. 605); and no good works can be done in deadly sin (p. 605-6). The new French song, *J'ai tout perdu mon temps* (also quoted in Chaucer's late poem of *Fortune*).

- e. Remembrance of Christ's suffering for our sins (p. 606). In man's sin, every ordinance is turnd up-so-down (p. 607). For this disorder Christ sufferd (p. 608).
- f. The hope of 3 things: 1. Forgiveness of Sins, 2. the Gift of Grace to do well, 3. the Glory of Heaven (p. 609).
- 3. How to be contrite. Contrition must be universal and total: for sins of thought, for desires against God's law, for wicked words as well as wicked deeds (p. 610). Contrition must be angwishous and continual (p. 609-11).
- 4. How Contrition helps the soul. It sometimes delivers a man from sin; destroys the prison of hell; cleanses the soul; changes the son of Wrath to the son of Grace (p. 611-12).

PART II (*no. v. continued*).B. CONFESSION (THE 2ND REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)
(p. 612-679).

- B. Confession. § 1. (l. 317) 'what is confession' (p. 612).
- § 2. 'wheither it oghte nedes be doon or noon' (p. 672-9).
- § 3. 'whiche thynges been couenable to verry Confession' (p. 674-79).

CONFESSION, § 1.

- 1. 'Confession is verry shewyng of synnes to the preest' (l. 318) (p. 612). We must understand too
 - a. (l. 321) 'whennes that synnes spryngen' (p. 612-15).
 - b. 'how they encreessen' (p. 615-16; 672-74).
 - c. 'whiche they been' (p. 616-672).
- 1.a. Sin sprang from the fall of Adam (p. 612). The legend of Adam and Eve told (p. 613). From Adam we took Original Sin, and were born sons of eternal damnation; but Baptism rescues us; though we keep liability to temptation, or Concupiscence (p. 613-14).
Concupiscence, or the nourishing and occasion of sin. St Paul and St Jerome's temptations (p. 614-15).
- 1.b. How Sin grows in a man. 1. by Concupiscence; 2. Subjection to the Devil; 3. Hesitation; 4. Doing, the Sin becoming Actual (p. 615-16).
- 1.c. Sin is *α*. venial, *β*. deadly (or mortal).
 - a. 1. Venial Sin defined. It skips into Deadly Sin. (Simile of the drops of water into a vessel's hold drowning the ship;) (p. 616).
 - β. 1. Deadly Sin defined (p. 617).
 - a. 2. Of divers small venial sins, hardly thought sins (p. 617-18); eating, drinking, talking, too much; using your wife too much; not visiting the sick (p. 617); talking vanities at church, &c. (p. 618). Cure of venial sins by love to Christ, prayer, confession, good works, receiving the Sacrament, holy-water, &c. (p. 618).
 - 1.c. β. 2. *The Seven Deadly Sins*. The Chieftains, head and spring, of all other Sins (p. 619).
 - i. Pride (p. 619-26), and its Remedy (p. 626-8).
 - ii. Envy (p. 628-30), and its Remedy (p. 630-1).
 - iii. Ire or Anger (p. 631-42), and its Remedy (p. 642-5).
 - iv. Accidie or Sloth (Discontent, Ennui) (p. 645-49), and its Remedy (p. 650-1).
 - v. Avarice or Covetousness (p. 651-7), and its Remedy (p. 657-8).
 - vi. Gluttony (p. 658-9), and its Remedy (p. 660).
 - vii. Lechery (p. 660-8), and its Remedy (p. 668-72).
- i. PRIDE (p. 619-626). Its 16 (and more) Twigs. 1. Disobedience, 2. Boasting, 3. Hypocrisy, 4. Despite, 5. Arrogance (p. 619), 6. Impudence, 7. Swelling of Heart (rejoicing in harm done), 8. Insolence, 9. Elation, 10. Impatience, 11. Contumacy, 12.
(FOR PETWORTH 607 a)

Presumption, 13. Irreverence, 14. Pertinacity, 15. Vain-glory, 16. Jangling (chattering).

A private kind of pride (the Host's Wife's and Wife of Bath's¹), wanting to go to offering first, &c. (p. 620).

Two kinds of Pride, *a.* 'within man's heart', *b.* without; *b.* being the sign of *a.*, 'as the gaye leafsel atte Taverne is sign of the wyn that is in the Celer'² (p. 620-21), *b.* outside pride.

a. in dear clothing, 1. superfluity of it: its cost, furring, chisel-holes, dragging in the dung, waste of material (p. 621), unfitness for giving to the poor: 2. scantness of it: showing men's privy members, and buttocks (like a she-ape's rump), and the former as half-flayd, in parti-colourd hose³. The 'outrageous array of Women' (p. 623).

β. in horses (p. 623), and vicious grooms to tend 'em; plate-harness, &c.

γ. in household: keeping too many retainers or servants, who oppress the poor (p. 624).

δ. in table: not asking the poor to feasts; having burning and ornamented dishes⁴; too costly cups, &c., and too choice minstrelsy (p. 624).

What Pride sins are deadly, and what venial (p. 624).

The Sources of Pride (p. 624): goods of Nature, Fortune, Grace (p. 624). The Folly of Pride in any of these goods of Nature: 'we ben alle of o fader and of o mooder, and . . . of o nature'⁵.

The general signs of *Gentleness*. (The flies call'd 'bees', and their stingless king) (p. 625); 3 gifts of Grace; 3 of Fortune. The brittleness of popular praise⁶ (p. 626).

The Remedy against Pride.

Humility or Meekness, and its 3 kinds: in 1. heart, 2. mouth, 3. works. 4 kinds of each of these (p. 626-27).

ii. ENVY (p. 627-30): defined by the Philosopher and St Augustine. It springs from Malice (p. 627).

Malice; 2 kinds of: 1. hardness of heart, or recklessness; 2. opposing truth (p. 627).

The 2 kinds of Envy (p. 628): 1. sorrow at other men's prosperity; 2. joy at other men's harm: whence comes

Backbiting; 5 kinds (p. 628): 1. praise with a *but* at the end; 2. turning well-meant things upside down to ill ones; 3. lessening a neighbour's goodness; 4. putting one man above another; 5. glad listening to scandal (p. 628).

Grudging or murmuring (p. 628): 1. against God (p. 629); 2. Murmuring from avarice, 3. from pride, 4. from envy; 5. among Servants, who say 'the Devil's *Paternoster*'. 6. Murmuring from ire or hate: thence, *a.* Bitterness of Heart, *b.* Discord, *c.* Scorning; *d.* Accusing (p. 629); *e.* Malignity (p. 630).

The Remedy against Envy (p. 630-31).

Love of God and one's neighbour. How a man shall love his neighbour. How an enemy is included in the name 'neighbour' (p. 630). 3 Remedies of Love, against 3 deeds of Hate (p. 631). Love is the medicine that casts out the venom of Envy from man's heart (p. 631).

iii. IRE OR ANGER (p. 631-42), and its 2 kinds: *a.* good Ire or Wrath (p. 632); *b.* wicked Ire, and its 2 kinds: sudden ire, and ire of malice aforethought (p. 632-33).

Three Shrews that forge in the Devil's furnace: Pride, Envy, and Contumely (p. 633).

¹ Melibe-Monk Link, B. § 11; and General Prologue, A.

² Chaucer's father no doubt had a sign outside his wine-shop or tavern in Thames Street, London.

³ The outspoken and somewhat coarse abuse of the new fashions in dress is a great change from Chaucer's admirable Third-Period chaff of the moral short-comings of the monks and friars, &c., in the Prologue and middle Tales. If this is not change of man, it's change of mood.

⁴ Chaucer must have seen plenty of these when he was page, valet, and squire.

⁵ Compare Chaucer's *Gentleness*, &c. ⁶ Compare Clerk's Tale, Part VI, st. 135.

Wrath takes away a man's wit and spiritual life (p. 634).

Fruits of Wrath: 1. Hate. 2. War and wrong. 3. Manslaughter, *a.* spiritual; *b.* bodily (p. 634).

a. The 3 kinds of spiritual Manslaughter (3, calld 6 in MSS. p. 634): 1. by Hate. 2. by Backbiting. 3. Giving wicked Counsel, by Fraud (p. 634).

b. bodily Manslaughter: slaying with your tongue, giving orders or counsel to slay a man (p. 634).

Manslaughter in deed: its 4 (that is, 7) kinds (p. 635): 1. by law: a Justice condemning a man to death; 2. justifiable homicide, in defence of one's own life; 3. by misadventure: shooting an arrow, &c.; 4. a woman overlying her child; 5. a man making a woman barren by drinks, &c., killing the fœtus within her, shedding his seed in the wrong place; a woman killing the child in her womb; 6. a woman killing her child (after birth) for shame; 7. a man by lechery or blows killing a fœtus.

(Sixteen) other sins coming from Ire or Anger.

1. blaming or despising God, as hazarders do (Cp. *Pardoner's Tale*) (p. 635); and those who treat of the Sacrament of the altar irreverently (p. 636).

2. Attry anger: making angry false excuses for sin.

3. Swearing, which dismembers Christ (p. 636).

a. Of lawful Swearing, before a Judge: its 3 conditions, and its motives; *b.* God's name and Christ's, not to be taken in vain (p. 637); *c.* swearing for gentility or manliness (p. 638); *d.* swearing suddenly; *e.* of Adjuration and Conjuraton by enchanters and necromancers; *f.* of Divination by Dreams, &c.; *g.* of Charms for Wounds and Maladies (p. 638).

4. Lying (p. 638), and its 6 kinds.

5. Flattering. How Flatterers are the Devil's Nurses, his Enchanters and Chaplains (p. 639).

6. Cursing that comes of irous heart: Malison.

7. Chiding and Reproach (p. 640); (specially a chiding wife¹) (p. 640-41).

8. Scorning (p. 641).

9. Giving wicked Counsel (p. 641).

10. Sowing and making Discord (p. 642).

11. Double tongue (p. 642).

12. Betraying of Counsel (p. 642).

13. Menace.

14. Idle words.

15. Jangling (chattering) (p. 642).

16. Japing (joking) (p. 642-43).

The Remedy against Anger (p. 643-5). Debonairtee and Patience (p. 643). Four kinds of grievances, and their remedies: 1. wicked words, 2. loss of goods, 3. harm of body, 4. outrageous labour (p. 644).

Incentives to Patience. Story of the Philosopher and Child (p. 644-45). Obedience comes from Patience (p. 645).

iv. ACCIDIE, or SLOTH (Discontent, Ennui) (p. 645-49), is an enemy to the 3 states of man,—1. innocence (p. 645), 2. prayer (p. 646), 3. grace;—and to one's livelihood. Its 12 bad consequences (p. 646): 1. Sloth (and its remedy); 2. Dread to begin good works (p. 646); 3. Wanhope, or Despair (and its Remedy) (p. 647); 4. Somnolence (p. 648), and 5. Negligence, or 6. Recklessness, and the Remedy for each; 7. Idleness; 8. *Tarditas*, or tarrying before turning to God (p. 649); 9. Lachesse, or giving up a good work begun; 10. Coldness; 11. Undevotion; 12. Worldly sorrow (p. 649).

The Remedy against Accidie (p. 650-51): Fortitude or Strength, and its 5 kinds. 1. Magnanimity² or great Courage; 2. Faith or Hope; 3. Assurance; 4. Magnificence; 5. Constancy (p. 651).

¹ Does Chancer here refer to his former wife?

² Miswritten 'Magnificence' in Ellesmere and Lansdowne MSS.

- v. **AVARICE** (p. 651-57). The difference between Avarice and Covetousness (p. 651); and between an Idolater and an avaricious man (p. 652). Of Covetousness, and lords' extortion from their bondmen: "humble folk been Cristes freendes" (p. 652-53). The Duty of lords to their thralls or churls. Of those that pillage Holy Church (p. 653-54); lords who plunder the poor are like wolves (p. 654). Of Deceit between Merchant and Merchant (p. 654). Of honest bodily Merchandise (the surplus of one country may be sent to help another) (p. 654). Of spiritual Merchandise, or Simony, and its 2 kinds (p. 655),—thieves that steal Christ's souls get livings (p. 655-56);—Hasardry or Games of Chance (p. 656). Other outcomes of Avarice (p. 656): 1. Lying, 2. Theft (bodily and spiritual) (p. 656-57), 3. False Witness, 4. False Oaths (p. 657).

The Remedy against Avarice (p. 657): Mercy and Pity, and reasonable Liberality (p. 658). Of foolish largess (p. 658).

- vi. **GLUTTONY** (p. 658-59), and its 5 kinds (p. 659): 1. Drunkenness, or the burial of man's reason; 2. a troubled spirit; 3. bad way of eating; 4. distemperd bodily humours; 5. forgetfulness. Or, as St Gregory says, 1. eating too soon; 2. eating too delicate food; 3. taking too much; 4. troubling too much about cooking food; 5. eating greedily: these are the 5 fingers of the devil's hand (p. 659).

The Remedy against Gluttony (p. 660): Abstinence, and its fellows. Temperance, Shame, Content with plain food, Moderation, Sobriety, Sparing (p. 660).

- vii. **LECHERY** (p. 660). Its punishment in the Old Testament (p. 660). Adultery, and the desire of it (p. 661-62).

The 5 fingers of the Devil's other hand (p. 662); 1. foolish looking; 2. villainous touching; 3. foul words; 4. kissing (old dotards, and dry dogs at a rose-tree (p. 662); and how a man should love his wife); 5. the stinking deed of lechery (p. 663). Its kinds: 1. Fornication. Taking a maid's maidenhead, or 100th fruit (p. 663). 2. Adultery, defined. 3. Harms following from it: *a.* breaking of faith; *b.* theft (of the wife's body from her husband (Joseph and Potiphar's wife), and of her soul from Christ); *c.* breaking God's commandment, and defouling Christ (p. 664). Of Harlots and Bawds (p. 665). Adultery is set between Theft and Manslaughter. More kinds of Adultery: 1. by Men bound by Religious Vows, &c.; 2. those in Holy Orders (p. 665). Lecherous Priests are like a free Bull in a town, and they eat raw flesh of folk's wives and daughters (p. 666); 3. by man and wife copulating for pleasure only (p. 667); 4. copulation with kinsfolk, spiritual (or godchildren) or fleshly (blood relations). 5. the abominable unmentionable sin; 6. Pollution, of 3 kinds: 1. too rank humours; 2. weakness (p. 667); 3. evil thoughts (p. 668).

The Remedy for Lechery (p. 668): I. Chastity and Continence.

1. in Marriage. (The true effect of Marriage. One husband to have one wife (p. 668). How a man should behave to his wife (p. 669). How the wife should be subject to her husband (p. 669), and be moderate in behaviour, discreet in words, &c. (p. 669-70). The 3 causes for which man and wife may copulate (p. 670): *a.* begetting of children; *b.* to pay the mutual debt of their bodies; *c.* to avoid lechery (p. 670). The 4th cause, pleasure, is deadly sin (p. 670-71).)
2. In Widowhood; 3. Virginity (p. 671).

II. Special avoidance of causes of lechery: *a.* eating and drinking; long sleeping; *b.* the person who'd tempt you (p. 671-72). (I wish I could tell you the Ten Commandments; but it's too high doctrine (p. 672).) [End of *Confession*, § 1, *c.*]

Sin is in heart, mouth, deed, by the 5 Wits (p. 672).

- § 1. *b.* (see p. 615-16.) The 7 Circumstances that encrease or aggravate sins (p. 672). 1. the person who sins (male or female, &c.); 2. the kind of sin (fornication or homicide); 3. the place it was committed in (as in a church, by a priest) (p. 673); 4. for what motive; 5. the number of times it was committed; 6. by what temptation; 7. how it was committed; and all other circumstances (p. 674).

CONFESSION, § 2, § 3 (p. 674-79).

Profitable Confession, and its 4 (= 3) Conditions (p. 674):

1. sorrowful bitterness of heart (p. 674); its 5 signs: *a.* shamefastness (like the Publican's) (p. 675); *b.* humility; *c.* fulness of tears (p. 675); *d.* no hesitation (like the Magdalen) for shame; *e.* obedience to receive penance laid on you (p. 675).
 2. speedy Confession (p. 676); its 4 Conditions: *f.* that it be well thought over; *g.* the greatness and number of sins must be understood; *h.* the sinner must be contrite, and *i.* avoid occasions of sins.
 3. Shrift must be made to one man, not more (p. 676).
- True Shrift, and its 10 Conditions* (p. 677): 1. that it be of free will; 2. that it be lawful (both sinner and priest, Popish); 3. that it be not despairing of Christ's mercy; 4. that a man accuse himself only, and not another; 5. that it be not lying (accusing oneself of sins never committed) (p. 678); that it be by one's own mouth; and not by letter; 7. that the sin be not painted with fair words; 8. that the shrift be to a discreet priest; 9. that the shrift be not made for vain-glory, but for fear of Christ; 10. that the shrift be not made suddenly, for a joke (p. 678). You may be shripen more than once for the same sin; and should be houseld once a year (p. 679).

PART III (*no. v. continued, and no. vi.*).

SATISFACTION (THE 3RD REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)
(p. 679—684).

In *a.* Alms. *β.* bodily punishment.

- a. Alms and its three kinds* (p. 679): 1. Contrition of heart. 2. Pity for one's neighbour's faults. 3. Giving good counsel to other's souls and bodies (food, visits in prison, burial). These Alms should be done privily, if possible (p. 680).
- β. Bodily Punishment (Penance), of 4 kinds*: 1. Prayers (chiefly of the Paternoster, whose expounding I leave to Masters of Theology) (p. 680). 2. Watching, and its 3 kinds: forbearing, *a.* meat and drink, *b.* worldly jollity, and *c.* deadly sin (p. 681). 3. Fasting, and its 4 kinds: Liberality to poor folk; spiritual gladness of heart; not grudging at fasting; reasonable eating. 4. Virtuous teachings, or Discipline: *a.* by word, writing, or example; *b.* by wearing hairshirts., &c., next your skin, scourging yourself, taking evils and injuries patiently (p. 682). [End of no. v. in Part i; p. 593.]

- vi. The 4 Things that disturb Penance [no. vi, or last §, of p. 593 at foot] (p. 682). 1. Dread, and its remedy. 2. Shame, and its remedy. 3. Hope: *a.* of long life, and *b.* consequent overconfidence in Christ's mercy (p. 683). 4. Wanhope, or Despair of Mercy; its 3 kinds: *x.* from great and long continued sin; *y.* from falls-back into sin; *z.* from not being able to persevere in goodness (p. 683).

The fruit of Penance (p. 683-4).

EPILOGUE.

The Author's Leave-taking, and Lament over, and Withdrawal of, his Sinful Books, &c. (p. 684-85).

[*Petworth MS, on leaf 272, back.*]

[*There are no breaks in the MS. Tyrwhitt's are kept here to prevent slight differences in the texts throwing the Six-Text out of gear.*]

And here bygynneþ þe person his tale.

¶ *Capitulum*
xxiiij^m.

Ieremie vj^{to}. ¶ State super vias & videte & interrogate de Semitis / antiquis que sit/ via bona & ambulate in ea & inuenietis refrigerium animabus vestris :

[75]

Wre swete lord^d god of heuene þat^t no man wil perisshe but^t wil þat^t we commen aȝt to the knowlecch of hym and to þe blisful lif þat^t is perdurable [76] ammossheþ vs by þe prophet^t Ieremye þat^t seiþ in þis wise

[77] ¶ Stondeþ vp-on þe wayes and seeþ and askep of olde Patthes þat^t is to sayne of olde sentences which is þe good way [78] and walkeþ in þat^t way and 3e shul here refresshyng^t for 3oure saules. &c [79] ¶ Mony bene þe waies espiritual þat^t leden folk^t to oure lord^d Ihesu crist^t and to þe regne of^t glorie.

[80] Of which way þer is a ful / noble waye and a ful couenable which may not faile to man / ne to womman þat^t þourgh synne haþ mysgoon from þe rizt^t

¶ *Nota de penitencia.*

way of Ierusalem Celestial^t [81] ¶ And þis way is cleped Penytence of which men shuld^d gladly harken and enquere wiþ al his herte [82] to wete what^t is Pen-
aunce. and whi it^t is cleped penitence / and in how mony maners bene þe accions of worchyng^e of penytence. [83] and howe mony spices þer bene of penytences. and whiche þingges appertenen and byhouen to penytence. [and] which þingges distrouben penytence

¶ *Ambrosius*

[84] ¶ Seynt Ambrose seip. That penitence is þe laynyngt of man for þe gilt þat he haþ done. ¹What is penytence¹ and no more to doon eny þinge for which hym ouzt to playne. [85] And somme doctour seip. Penytence is þe waymentyngt of man þat soroweþ for his synne. *and* pyneþ hym self for he haþ mysdone. [86] Penytence wiþ certeyn circumstaunces is verray repentaunce of man þat halt hym self in sorowe and oþer payn for his giltyes. [87] And for he shal be verrey penytent. he shal first bywailen þe synnes þat he haþ done and stedfastly proposed in his hert to haue shrift of mouþ and to doon satisfaccion [88] and neuere to doon þinge for whiche ²hym ouzte more to be-wayle or to compleyn and to contynue in good werkes or ellis his repentaunce may not auaille. [89] ffor as seip *ysidere* ¶ he is a Iaper and a gabber and no verrey repentaunt þat eftsome doon þinge for whiche hym ouzt to repent [90] wepinge and nouzt fortostint to do synne may nouzt auaille [91] ¶ But napeles men shullen hope þat at euery time þat man / falleþ be it neuer so oft þat he may arise þorgh penytence. if he haue grace // But certeynly it is grete dout.

¶ *Isidore.*¶ *gregorius.*

[92] ffor as seip seint *gregorie*. Vnneþes ariseþ he out of his synne þat is chargeþ wiþ þe charge of euel vsage. [93] annt þerfore repentaunt folk þat stint forto synne and forlete synne. er þat synne forlete hem holy churche holt hem siker of her sauacion [94] ¶ And he þat synneþ and verrely repentþ hym in his last [day]. holy church zit hopeþ his saluacion by þe grete mercy of our lord Ihesu *crist* for his repentaunce. but take þe siker way certeyn :

[95] And now siþens I haue declared þou what þinge is penitence ¶ Now shul 3e vnderstond þat þer bene iij. actions of penytence [96] ¶ The first is þat a man be baptist after þat he haþ synned [97] ¶ Seynt Austyn seip But he be penitent for his olde synful lif he may no bygynne þe newe

¶ *tres accione[s]*
penitencie
1^a. accio.

clene lif. [98] ffor certes if he be paptised wip-out
 penitence of his olde gilt. he resecyueþ þe mark of
 bapteme. but not þe grace ne þe remyssion of his
 synnes til he haue repentaunce verray [99] ¶ Anoper ^{2a. accio.}
 defaute is þis. þat men doon dedly synne after þat
 þei han resecyued bapteme [100] ¶ The iij. defaute ^{3a. accio./}
 is þat men falle in venyal synnes after her bapteme
 fro day to day. [101] þerof seiþ seynt Austyne. ¶ *Augustinus*
 þat penitence of good and humble folk. is þe
 penitence of euery day

[102] ¶ The spices of penaunce bene þre. þat oon ¶ *þe spices of*
 of hem is solempne Another is comune. and the *penaunce*
 iij. is priue. [103] Eche penaunce þat is so-
 lempne is in two maners. as is to be put out of holy
 church in lent for sclaughtere of children and such
 maner þingges [104] ¶ Another is whan man ¶ *penitencia*
 hap synned openly of whiche synne þe fame is openly *communis*
 spoken in þe contre. and þan holy church by Iugge-
 ment distreyneþ hym forto doo penaunce open. [105]
 Somme penaunce is þer is þat prestes enioynen men. comonly
 in certeyn caas as forto goon *perauenture* naked in
 pilgrimage. or bare þe feet [106] ¶ Priuey penaunce is ¶ *Do secreta*
 þilk þat men doon al day for priuey synnes of which *penitencia*
 we shryuen vs *prively* and receyuen *privé* penaunce

[107] ¶ Now shalt þou vnderstonde what by[ho]ueþ
 and is necessarie to verrey *parfite* penytence and þise
 stonden on þre þingges. [108] *Contricion* of hert. con-
 fession of mouþ. And satisfaciōn [109] ¶ ffor which
 seiþ Iohn Grisostom ¶ *Penytence* distreyneþ man ¶ *Grisostomus*
 to accept benignely euery peyne þat is enioyned
 hym wip *contricion* of hert and shrift of mouþ. wip satis-
 faccion and worching of al manere humilite. [110]
 And þis is fruytful penytence azeinst iij. þingges in whiche
 we wreþen our lord Ihesu *cris*t. [111] þis is to / sayn
 be delite in þenkinge. by rechelesnesse in spekinge.
 by wikked synful worchinge. [112] and azeinst þise

¶ Hou penance
may be likned to
a tree

wikked giltes is penyence. þat may be likned vnto a tre
[113] The rote of þis tree is contricion þat hideþ
hym in þe herte of him þat is verrey repentaunt. riȝt as
þe rote of a tree hideþ hym in þe erþe. [114] ¶ Of þe
roote of contricion spryngēþ a stalk þat bereþ branches
and leeuēs of confession. and fruyt of satisfioun [115]
¶ ffor which Crist seiþ in þe gospeþ ¶ Doþ digne fruyte of
penyence. for by þis fruyte may men knowe þis
tre. and not by þe rote þat is in þe hert
of man. ne by þe branches ne by þe leeuēs of confession

¶ Textus.

¶ Of þe seed of
contricion.

[116] ¶ And þerfore our lord Ihesu crist seiþ þus By
þe fruyte of hem shul ȝe knowe hem [117] ¶ Of þis
roote springeth a sede of grace. þe which sede is
modere of sikernesse. þus þis sede is eger and hote.

[118] The grace of þis / sede springeþ of god þorowe þe re-
membraunce of þe day of dome. and on þe peynes of
helle [119] ¶ Of þis matere seiþ salomon. þat in þe
degre of god man forleteþ his synne [120] The hete
of this seede is þe loue of god / and þe desiring of þe
Ioie perdurable. [121] þis hete draweþ · þe hert of
man to god and doþ him hate his synne. [122] ffor
soþly þer nys no þinge þat sauoureþ so wel to a childe
as þe mylk of his norice. ne no þing is to hym more abhom-
inable þat þilk mylk what it is medled wiþ
oþer mete. [123] Riȝt so þe synful man þat loueþ
his synne. hym semeþ þat it is to hym most swete of
eny þinge. [124] But fro þat tyme þat he loueth sadly
our lord Ihesu crist and desireth þe lif perdurable. ther
nys to hym [no þing] more abhominable. [125] ffor
soþ. þe lawe of god is þe loue of god. ffor which

¶ De propheta./

Dauid þe prophet seiþ. I haue loued þi lawe and hated
wikkednesse ¶ he [þat] loueth god kepeþ his lawe and his
worde. [126] This reson seiþ þe prophete Danyel in spirit
vppon a vision of Nabugodonosor whan he coun-
sailled hym to doo penance. [127] Penance is þe tree
of lif to hem / þat it receyuen. And he þat holdeþ hym

¶ Daniel./

in verrey penytence is blessed aftere þe sentence of ¶ Salomon.
Salomon

[128] In þis penitence or contriciōn man shal vnderstonde .iiij. þingges. þat' is to seyn what' is contriciōn and whiche bene þe causes þat' meuen a man to contriciōn and howe he shuld be contrite. and what' contriciōn availed to þe soule. [129] Than is it' þus. þat' contriciōn is þe verrey sorowe þat' a man receyueþ in his hert' for his synnes with sad purpoos to schryuen hym and to do penaunce and neuere more to do synne. [130] And þis sorowe shal be in þis manere as seith seint Bernard' ¶ It' shal be greuou and hevie and ful ¶ Bernardus sharp and poynant' in hert'. [131] ffirst' for a man haþ a-gilt' his lorde and his creature. and more sharpe and poynant' for he hat' agilt' his fadere celestiaH. [132] And 3it' more sharpe and poynant' ffor he haþ wreþed and agult' hym þat' bou3t' hym. þat' with his precious blood haþe delyuered vs fro the boondes of synne and fro þe cruelte of þe deueH. and fro þe paynes of helle. [133] ¶ The causes þat' ou3ten to meuen a man to con- ¶ Sex mouimenta ad contricionem. triciōn beñ .vj. ¶ ffurst' a man shal remembre him of his synnes. [134] but loke þat' þilk remembraunce be to him no delite by no way. but' gret' shame and sorowe for his gilt'. ffor Iob seiþ. Synful men doñ ¶ Iob. / werkes worþi of confession. [135] And þerfore seiþ Ezechie. I wil remembre me al þe 3eeres of my lif. ¶ Ezechiel. my bitternesse of myn hert' [136] ¶ And god seiþ in þe apocalips ¶ Remembre 3ou from whennes þat' 3e be ¶ Apocalypsis. / falle. ffor byforn þat' tyme þat' 3e synned 3e were þe children of god. and lymmes of þe reigne of god. [137] But for 3oure synne 3e bene woxe þraH and foule. and membres of þe feende. hate of aungels sclauder of holy church. and foode of þe fals serpent' perpetuele matere of the fuyre of heH [138] and þat' more foule and abhominable for 3e trespasen so often tyme as doþ þe hounde þat' turneþ to eten his vomyte. [139] And 3it'

bene 3e foulere for 3oure longe contynuyng^t in synne and 3oure synful usage. for which 3e bene roten in 3our synne as a beest^t in his dunge. [140] ¶ Suche maner of pouȝtes maken a man haue shame for his synne and no delite. As / god saiþ by þe prophete Ezechiele [141] ¶ 3e shul remembre 3ou of 3oure waies^t and þei shul displese 3ou soþely ¶ Synnes beñ þe waies þat lede folk to hell

[142] ¶ The ij. cause þat ouȝt to / ¹make a man to haue disdeyne of synne is þis. That as seiþ seint

Peter ¶ Who so doth synne : is þral to synne and synne putteþ a man in gret^t þraldome. [143] And þerfore seith þe prophete Ezechiel ¶ I went soryful in

disdeyn of my silf. Certes ¶ wel auȝt^t a man haue disdeyn of synne and wiþ-drawe / hym from þat

þraldom and vilanye. [144] And lo what seiþ Senec^t ¶ In þis matere he seiþ þus ¶ Thouȝe I wist^t þat neiþer god ne man ne shuld^t neuere knowen it. 3it wolde I haue desdeyne forto / do synne. [145] And the

same Senec^t seiþ ¶ I am born to gretter þingges þan to be þraht to my body. [.

no gap in the MS.] [146] Δ [fouler] þral may no man ne womman make of his body þan 3eue is body to synne [147] Δ [1] were it^t the foulest^t cheerle or womman þat lyueþ and leest^t of valewe. 3it is he

chaunged and most foule and more in seruitute. [148] euer^t fro þe hyer degre þat man falleþ^t : þe more is he þraht and more vnto god and to þe world vile and abhomy- nable. [149] O / 3ood god wel auȝt^t men haue desdeyn of synne. siþen þat þorgh^t synne. þer he was free nowe is he maked boonde. [150] & / þerfore seiþ seint

Austyn. ¶ If þou haue desdeyn of þi seruau^tnt if he a-gilt^t or synne. haue þou þan disdeyn þat þou þi silf shuldest^t do synne. [151] Take reward^t of þine valewe þat þou / ne be to foule to þi self. [152] Allas wel ouȝten þei þan to haue desdeyne to be

seruauntes and þralles to synne and sore bene ashamed
of hem self. [153] þat god of his endeles goodnesse
hap sett hem in hie astaaf and 3euen hem witt. strength
of body. helpe. bewte. and prosperite. [154] and
bouzt hem fro þe deep with his hert blood. þat
þei so vnkyndely azeinst gentelnesse aquiten hym so
vilenistly to sclowghter of her owne soules. [155] ¶ O
good god. 3e wommen þat bene of so grete bewte.
remembreþ 3ou of þe prouerbe of Salamon ¶ He ¶ Salomon.
[156] likneþ a fair womman þat is a foole of her body.
ylik to a ryng of gold þat is wreþed in þe Groyne of a sowe.
[157] ffor rizt as a sowe ¶ wroteþ in euery ordure. So
wroteþ she her bewte in stynkinge ordure of synne

[158] ¶ The iij cause þat ouzt to meuen a / man
to contricioñ and drede of þe day of dome. and of þe /
horrible peynes of helle. [159] ffor as seint Ierom seiþ ¶ Ieromias : /
¶ Att euery tyme þat me remembreþ of þe day of dome I
quake [160] ffor whan I ete or drinke or doo what so I
doo / euer me semeþ þat þe trompe sowneþ in myn ere.
[161] Riseth vp 1 þat bene dede and commeþ to þe
Iuggement. [162] O Good god mochel. oweþ a man to
drede such Iuggement þer as we shulne bene alle
as seiþ seint Poule by-forne the strete of our lord Ihesu ¶ Paulus
crist [163] wher as he shal make a general con-
gregacioñ. Wher as no man had be absent. [164] for
certes þer ne veileþ noñ assoyn ne excusacioñ
[165] and not only þat our defautes shullen / be
Iugged but eke þat all our werkes shul openly
be knowe [166] And as seint Bernard seiþ. There ne ¶ Bernardus
shal no pledyng availe ne no seleizt we shul 3euen
reknynge of euery ydel word [167] Ther shul we haue
a Iugge þat may not be deceyued. ne corrupte and whi
for certes aloure þouztes ben diskeuered as to hym.
ne for preiere ne for mede he wil not bene corrupte.
[168] And þerfore seiþ Salomon. þe wreþe of god ¶ Salomon
wil not be corrupte / And þerfor seiþ Salomon ¶ þe / wreche ¶ Idem.

of god ne wil not spare no w³t for preier ne for zift. And per^rfore at þe day of dome þer nys no hope to escape. [169] Wherefore Anselme seiþ ¶ fful grete Angwiss^h shullen þe synful folk haue at þat tyme [170] Ther shal be þe sterne and þe wroþe Iuge sitte aboue and vnder hym þe horrible pitte of helle open to distroye hym þat most byknowe his synne. which synnes openly bene shewed byforn god and biforne euery creature. [171] And on þe left side moo deuels / than hert may þenk forto harie and to drowe þe synful soules / to þe pyne of helle. [172] And wiþ-in þe hertes of folk shal be þe bitynge conscience and wiþ-out forþ shal be þe world al brennyng. [173] whidere shal þan þe wrecched synful soule flee / to hide hym. Certes he may not hide hym. he most come forþ and schewe hym. [174] ffor certes as seiþ seint Ierom ¶ The erþe shal cast hym out of hym. and þe see also and the Eiere. þat shal be ful / of pondere clappes / and liztynge [175] Now sobly who so wil remembre hym of þise þingges I gesse þat his þingges shal not turne hym into delite. but to grete sorowe for drede of the payne of helle. [176] And þerfore seiþ Iob. ¶ Suffre lord þat I may a while biwaile and wepe or I goo and wepe wiþ-out retournynge to þe derk londe keuered wiþ þe derknesse of deþe [177] to þe londe of myssese and of derknesse. where as is shadowe of deþ. wher as þer nys noon oper ordynance. but grisly drete þat euere shul last [178] ¶ Loo here may 3e seen þat Iob preied of respite a while to bywepe and waile his trespas. ffor sobly oo / day of respite is bettere þan al þe tresoure of þis world [179] And ¹for as moche as a man may acquite hym self to forn god by penitence in þis world and nouzt by tresour þerfor shuld he prei to god to 3eue hym respite a while to bywepen and bywaillen his trespas [180] ffor certes al þe sorowe þat a man myzt make fro þe bygynnyng

¶ *Ieronimus*¶ *Iob.*

of þe world^l nys but a litel þing^t at þe regard^l of þe sorowe
of helle [181] ¶ The cause why þat^t Iob clepeþ helle
þe londe of derknesse. [182] Vnderstondeþ þat^t he
clepeþ it^t londe or erþe. for it^t is stable and nouere shal
faile. derknesse. for he þat^t is in helle haþ defaute of
lizt materia^l [183] ffor certes þe derk^t lizt^t þat^t shal
come out^t of þe fire þat^t euere shal brenne shal turne
hym al to peyne þat^t is in helle. ffor it^t sheweþ hym to þe
horrible deuels þat^t hym tormenten [184] keuered wiþ
þe derknesse of^t deþe [.
. [185]
no gap in the MS.] bene þe synnes þat^t þe wrecched / man
haþ doñ which þat^t distourben hym to se þe face
of god. rizt^t as a derk cloude bytwix vs and þe
sonne. [186] londe of myssese by cause þat^t þer bene
.iiij. manere of defautes azeinst^t þre þingges þat^t folk
of þis world^l han in þis present^t lif. þat^t is to say
honours. delices. and Richesse. [187] Azeinst^t honour
han þei in helle shame and confusioñ. [188] ffor wel 3e
woote þat^t men clepen honour^t þe reuerence þat^t men
doon to man. But^t in helle nys noon honour^t ne reuerence.
ffor certes no more reuerence shal be do to a
kinge þan to a knaue [189] ¶ ffor which god seith by
þe prophetys wordes Ieremye. ¶ Thilk folk þat^t me despisen ¶ *Textus Ieremie*
shullen bene despised. [190] ¶ Honour^t is eke cleped gret lord^l
Ther shal no wizt / seruen oper. but^t of harme and
torment^t ¶ Honore is eke cleped grete dignite and high-
nesse. But^t in helle shul þei bene al for-troden of deuels.
[191] as god seiþ The horrible deuels shal goon and
come vpon þe hedes of dampned folk^t And þis
is for as moche as þe hier þat^t þei were in þis present^t
lif. þe more shullen þei bene abated and defouled in
helle. [192] ¶ Azeinst^t þe richesse of þis world^l. shullen
þei haue myssese and pouerte. and þis pouert^t shal be
.iiij. þingges [193] in defaute of tresour. of which

¶ *David propheta*

David þe prophete seiþ ¶ The riche folk þat embraceden and oneden in al her hert to tresoure of þis world^þ shullen seclepe in þe secleringe of deþ. As no þinge shul þei fynden in her hondes of al her tresour' [194] ¶ And more ouer þe dissese of helle shal bene in þe defaute of mete and drynk'. [195] ¶ ffor god seiþ þus by moyses ¶ Thei shullen be wasted *with* 'hunger' and þe briddes of helle shal deuoure hem *with* bitter deþ and þe galle of þe dragon [.

no gap in the MS.] her morseþ. [196] And ferþer ouer her myssese shal bene in defaute of cloþinge ffor þei shullen be naked in body as of cloþing' sauf þe fuyr' in which þei brenne and oþer filþes. [197] and naked shul þei bene of saule. of al manere vertues which þat is þe cloþinge of saule. Wher bene þan þe gay Roobes and þe soft shetes and þe smal / shertes [198]

¶ *Isayas.*

¶ loo what seiþ god to hem by þe prophete Ysay ¶ That vndere hem shullen be strawed motthes. and her couertours / shul be of wormes of helle [199] ¶ And ferþer ouere her dissese shal / bene in defaute of frendes. ffor he nys not poor þat hap good / frendes. but þer nys no frende. [200] ffor neiþer god ne creature / shal be frende to hem. and euery of hem shal haten oþere wiþ dedly hate. [201] The sones of þe doughtren shullen rebellen azeinst þe fadere and modere and kynrede azeinst kynrede and chiden and despisen euerech of hem oþer boþ day and nyzt As god seiþ by þe prophet Michias [202] ¶ And þe louyng' children. þat whilom loued so fleshly euerech oþer. wolden euerech of hem eten oþer if þei myzt. [203] ffor howe shuld þei loue hem to-gydere in þe peynes of helle. whan þei hated eche of hem oþer in þe prosperite of þis lif. [204] ffor trust wel her fleshly loue was dedly hate

¶ *Machias.*

as seiþ þe prophete dauid ¶ who so þat loueþ wickednesse he hateþ his saule. [205] and who þat hateþ his owne soule. certes he may loue noon oþer wizt

¶ *Dauid.*

as seiþ þe prophete dauid ¶ who so þat loueþ wickednesse he hateþ his saule. [205] and who þat hateþ his owne soule. certes he may loue noon oþer wizt

in no manere. [206] and þerfor in helle is no frendship. But euer þe moo fleshly kynredes þat bene in helle. þe more cursyngt þe more chyd-inge. and þe more dedly hate þer is amonges hem [207] ¶ And forþermor þer shal be defaute of al maner delyces. ffor why þe delices ben þe appetites of þe .v. wittes. as. sizt. heryngt. smellynge. sauer- yngt and towchyngt. [208] But in helle her sizt shal be ful of derkenesse and of smoke and ful of teeres. and her heryngt ful of waymentyngt and of gnaistyngt of teep as seith Ihesus / crist [209] ¶ her nose- ¶ *Ihesu* þrelles shullen be ful stynkyngt stynks ¶ And as seiþ Isay þe prophete. Her saueryngt shal be ful of bitter ¶ *Isayas.* galle. [210] and touchyngt of her body ykeuered wiþ fuyr þat neuere shal be quenched. and wiþ wormes þat never shul dye ¶ As god seiþ / by þe mouþ of ¶ *Ihesus.* / ysay. [211] ¶ And for as mocht as þei shullen not wene þat þei may dyen for peyne. and by her deþ flee fro peyne. ¹þat may þei vnderstonde by þe worde of Iob. ¶ *Iob.* þat seiþ. There as is þe shadowe of deþe [212] ¶ Certes a shadowe haþ þe liknesse of a þinge of which it is shadowe. But shadowe nys not þe same þinge of which it is shadowe. [213] Rizt so fareþ þe peyne of helle. it is like deþ for þe angwisshe horrible. and why for it peyneþ hem euere as þoo men shulden dye anoñ But certes þei shullen not dye. [214] ffor as seiþ seynt Gregore. ¶ To wrecched Catyfe shal be deþe wiþ-out ¶ *Gregorius.* / deþe. ande ende wiþ-uten ende. and defaute wiþ-out failyngt. [215] for her deþe shal alway lyve. and her eende shal euermor bygynne and her defaute shal not faile. [216] And þerfore seiþ seint Iohn þe ¶ *Iohannes* euangeliste They shullen folowe deþ and þei shul ¶ *Eua* not fynden hym. And þei / desiren to deye. and deþe shul flee fro hem / [217] And eke Iob seith That in helle ¶ *Iob.* / is noon order ne rewele [218] And al be it soo þat god haþ created al þingt in rizt ordre and no þingt wiþ-

out^t ordere. but^t alle þingges ben ordred and nombred. 3it^t napelees þei þat bene dampned bene no þinge in order ne holden / noon order'. [219] for þe erþe ne shal bere hem no fruyte. [220] ffor as þe / prophete *¶ dauid propheta.* dauid seiþ ¶ God shal destroy þe froyte of þe erþe as fro / hem. ne watere shal 3eue hem no moystere. ne þe eyre no refresshyng. ne þe fuyre no li3t^t. [221] ffor as seiþ *¶ Basilius.* seynt^t Basile. þe brennyngges of þe fuyre of þis worlde shal god 3euen to hem in helle þat^t bene dampned. [222] But^t þe li3t^t and þe clernesse shal be 3euen in to heuene to his children. / Ri3t as þe good man 3eueþ flesshe to his children. and bonys to his houndes [223] for þei shullen have noon hope to escape seiþ *¶ Iob.* Iob. At^t þe last^t þat^t ther shal horroure and grisly drede dwelle. wiþ-uten ende [224] ¶ Horroure is alway drede of harme þat^t is to come and þis drede shal euer dwelle in þe hertes of hem þat^t bene dampned. and þerfore han þei lorn aH her hope. for vij. causes. [225] ffirst for god þat^t is her Iuge shal be wiþ-oute mercy to hem. ne þei may not^t plese hym. ne noon of his halowes. ne þei may 3eue no þinge for her raunsom. [226] ne þei han no voys to speke to hym. ne þei may nat^t flee fro peyne ne þei han no goodnesse in hem þat^t þei may schewe to delyuere hem fro peyne *¶ Salomon.* [227] ¶ And þerfore seiþ Salomon ¶ The wikked man dyep^t : and whan he is dede he shal haue no hope to / eskape fro peyne. [228] who so shame wolde wel vnderstonde and bythenk^t hym wel on þise peynes and þat^t he haþ deserued þe same peynes / for his synne. Certes he shulð haue more talent^t to sike and to wepe þan for syngen and to pley. [229] ffor as seiþ Salomon. Who so þat^t had þe science forto knowe þe peynes þat^t bene establissed and ordeyned / for synne he wold make *¶ Augustinus.* sorowe. [230] Thilk^t science as seiþ seint^t Austyn Maketh a man to weymenten in his hert^t

[231] ¶ The iiij. poynte þat^t aught^t make a man

haue contritiōn is þe soryful remembraunce of þe
 good þat' he haþ lost' to doon here in erþe. and
 eke þe good / þat' he haþ lorne [232] ¶ Soþly þe good
 werkes þat' he haþ lost' eiþer þei bene þe good
 werkes þat' he haþ wrouzt' er he felle into dedly synne
 Or ellys þe good werkes þat' he wrouzt' þe while he lay
 in synne [233] ¶ Soþly þe good werkes þat' he did
 byforne þat' he fille in synne ben aH mortefied and astonyed
 and dulleð by þe oft synnyng [234] That' oþer
 good werkes þat' he wrouzt' þe whiles he lay in
 synne þei bene vtterly dede as to þe lif perdurable in
 heuene. [235] Than / þilk good werkes þat' bene
 mortefied by oft' synnyng which good werkes he did þe
 whiles he was in charite ne mowen neuere / quicken azein
 with-uten verrey penytence. [236] And þerfore seiþ god
 by þe mouþe of Ezechiele þat' is þe riȝtful man. Re- ¶ **Ezechiele**
 tourne azein from his riȝtwisnesse and to worcþ wikked-
 nes shal he lyue. [237] nay. ffor aH þe good werkes
 þat' he haþ wrouzt' ne shul neuere be in remembraunce
 for he shal deye in his synne. [238] ¶ And vpon þilk
 chapitere seiþ seint' Gregorie thus. than we shuld' vnder- ¶ **Gregorius**
 stonde þis principaly. [239] þat' whan we doon dedly ^{super Eze-}
 synne. it' is for noȝt' þan to reherce or drawe into ^{chielem}
 memorie þe good werkes þat' we han wrouzt' biforñ.
 [240] ffor certys in þe wirking' of dedly synne
 þer nys no trest' to no good werk' þat' we han doon to-forne /
 þat' is to sayn as forto haue þer-by þe lif per-
 durable in heuene [241] [.

 *no gap in the MS.*] Whan we
 han contricioñ. [242] But' soþly þe good werkes þat'
 men / doon whiles þat' þei bene in dedly synne. for as moçh
 as þei weren doon in dedly synne þei mowe neuer quycken
 azein [243] ffor certes þing' þat' neuere haþ lif : neuere
 may quycked. And napelees al be it' þat' þei ne
 auaile nouȝte to han þe lif perdurable ȝit' auailen

þei to abreggen of þe peyne of helle or ellis to geten
 temporeH richesse. [244] Or ellis þat^t god wil
 rather enlumyne and / lighten þe hert^t of þe synful
 man to han repentaunce. [245] and eke þei availen
 forto vsen a man to do goode werk^t þat^t þe fende /
 haue þe lasse power of his soule [246] ¶ And þus þe
 curtaise Lord Ihesu crist^t ne wil þat^t no good werk^t
 be lost^t. ffor in somewhat^t it^t shal availe. [247] But^t for as
 moche as þe good werkes ¹þat^t men doon whan þei
 bene in þis lif^t bene al mortefied by synne folowinge.
 And eke siþens al þe good werkes þat^t men done
 þe whiles þei bene in dedly synne bene vtterly dede
 as forto haue þe lif *perdurable* [248] ¶ wel may þat^t man
 þat^t no good werk ne / doop · syngyn þilk newe songe.
 Iay tout *perdue* moñ temps et moñ labour [249] ffor
 certes synne byreueþ a man goodnes and nature
 and eke þe goodnes of grace [250] ¶ ffor soþ
 þe grace of þe holy goost^t fareþ as fuyre þat^t may not^t
 be ydeH. ffor fire failleþ / anoon as it^t forleseþ his worch-
 inge [. *no gap*
in the MS.] [251] þan leseþ þe synful man þe goodnes
 of glorie þat^t oonly is bihiȝt^t to good men þat^t labouren
 and worken [252] wel may he be sory þen that^t
 oweþ al his lif to god as longe as he lyueþ haþ lyued and
 eke as longe as he shal bene þat^t no goodnes ne haþ
 to pay wiþ his dette to god. to whom he oweþ al his
 lif. [253] ffor trust^t wel he shal ȝeue acountes as seip
 seint^t Bernard^t of alle þe goodes þat^t han bene ȝeuen hym.
 in þis present^t lif and how he haþ hem dispended.
 [254] not^t so moch þat^t þer shal not^t perisshe an heer
 of his hede. ne a moment^t of an / houre ne shal not perisshe
 of þis tyme þat^t he ne shal ȝeue of it^t a rekenynge

¶ Bernardus

[255] ¶ The .v. þinge þat^t ouȝt^t to meue a man to
 contricion is remembraunce of þe passion of our Lord
 Ihesu crist^t suffred^t for oure synnes [256] ffor as seip
 seynt^t Bernard^t whiles þat^t I lyue ¶ I shal haue remem-

¶ Bernardus

braunce of þe travailes þat our lord Ihesu crist suffred in preching [257] in werynesse in travailynge. his temptacions whan he fasted. his longe waking whan he preied. his teeres whan þat he wepte for pite of good puple. [258] þe woo and þe shame and þe filþe þat men seiden to hym oft foule spitting þat men / spitten on his face / and þe buffettes þat men zauen hym of þe // foule mouþes and of þe re-
preeus þat men to hym seiden. [259] Of þe nailles wiþ þe which he was nailed to þe cros. and of aȝ þe remenaunte of his passioñ þat he suffred for my synnes. / *and* no þinge for his gilt. [260] And ze shul vnder-
stond þat in mannys synne is euery maner order of ordynaunce turned vp so doun. [261] ffor it is soþ þat god and resoñ and sensualite and þe / body of man bene so ordeyned þat euerech of þise iiij. þingges shuld haue lordship of þat oþer. [262] As þus. god shuld haue lordship ouer resoñ. and reson ouer sensualite. and sensualite ouer þe / body of man. [263] And soþly whan man synneþ al þis ordere of ordynaunce is turned vp so doune [264] ¶ And þerfore þan for as moch¹ as þe reson of man wil not be subiette ne obeysaunt to god þat is his lord by riȝt þerfore leseþ it þe lordship þat it shuld haue in sensualite and eke ouer þe body of man. [265] And whi for sensualite rebelleþ þan aȝeinst resoñ. And by þat way leseth resoun his lordship ouer sensualite and ouere þe bodye. [266] ffor riȝt as reson is rebelle to god. riȝt so is boþ Sensualite rebeH to reson and þe body also. [267] ¶ And certes this ordynaunce and þis rebellioñ. oure lord Ihesu crist abouȝt vppon his precious body ful dere and herkeneþ in which wyse. [268] ffor as moche þan is resoñ rebelle to god. þerfore is man worþi to haue sorowe and to be dede [269] ¶ This suffred our lord Ihesu for man aftere þat he had be bytraied of his disciple and destreynd and

bounde so þat þe blood brast out at euery naile of his
 ¶ **Augustinus.** hondes as seiþ seint Austyn [270] ¶ And ferþermore
 for as moche as reson of man wil not daunte Sensu-
 alite whan it may. therfore is man worþi to haue shame.
 and þis / suffred our lorde Ihesu crist for man whan þei
 spitten in his visage [271] ¶ And ferþer ouerē for as
 mochē þan as the catif body of man is rebelle
 boþ to reson and to sensualite. þerfore is it worþi þe
 deēþ [272] ¶ And þis suffred our lord Ihesu crist for man
 vpon þe crosse wher as þer was no parte of his body
 free with-oute grete peyne and bitter passioñ [273]
 and al þis suffred Ihesu crist þat neuer forfeited
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] To mochel am I peyned for þe
 same þingges þat I neuer deserued and to mochel defoiled
 for frendship þat man bene worþi for to haue [274] And þer-
 fore may þe synful man wel saye as seiþ seint Bernard
 ¶ **Bernardus** Acursed be þe bitterness. [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] [275] ffor certes
 aftere þe dyuers discordaunces of oure wikkednes
 was þe passion of Ihesu crist yordeyned in dyuers þingges
 [276] as þus. Certys synful man saule [is] bytraied
 of the deuel by coueityse of temperele prosperite and
 scorned by disceite whan he cheseþ fleshly delites and
 3it is he tormented by impaciencie of aduersite. and by-spette
 by seruage of subieccioñ in synne / and at þe last it is
 slayn fynally. [277] ffor ¶ þis disordinaunce of synful man
 was Ihesus crist first bytraied and aftere þat was he bounde
 that come forto vnbynde vs of synne and of peyne [278]
 ¶ Than was he byscorned þat only shuld be
 honoured. in alle þingges of al þingges. [279]
 Than was his visage þat auzt be desired to be seyn
 of al mankynd¹ In which visage aungels desiren to
 loken vileynsly byspitte. [280] Than was he scourged
 þat no þing gilt And fynaly þan was he /
 crucified and slayn [281] Than was he accomplished þe

wordes of Ysay / He was wounded for ¶ ysaias !/.
 our mysdedys and defouled by oure vilanyes. [282]
 ¶ Now sibens þat Ihesu crist toke vppon hym self þe
 peyne of al oure wikkednesse ¶ Michel ouzt synful
 men by-wepe and by-waile þat for his synnes goddis sone
 of heuene shuld al þis peyne endure [283] ¶ The sixt
 þinge þat auzt meue man to contricioñ is þe hope
 of iij. þingges. þat is to say forzeuenes of synne
 and þe zift of grace wel forto doo. And þe / glorie of
 heuene wiþ þe which god shal guerdon man for his
 good dedys. [284] and for as moche as Ihesu crist
 zeueth vs þise ziftes of his larges and of his souereyn
 bounte. þerfor is he cleped / Ihesus Nazarenus rex
 iudeorum. [285] Ihesus is forto seyn Saueour or sa-
 uacioñ on whoom men shullen hope to haue forzeuenesse of
 synnes which þat is proprely sauacioñ of synnes
 [286] ¶ And þerfore seide þe aungel to Ioseph. þow ¶ *qualiter an-*
 clepest his name Ihesus þat shal saue his puple from her *gelus locutus est*
 synnes [287] And here-of seiþ Seint Petrer ¶ Ther nys *Iosepho./*
 noon oþer name vnder heuene þat is zeue to eny man
 by which a man may be saued. but oonly Ihesus [288]
 Nazarenus is as moche for to seyn as florsshinge in
 which a man shal hope þat he þat zeueth hym remissioñ
 of synnes shal zeue also hym grace wel to doo for
 in þe floure is hope of fruyte in tyme comynge and in
 forzeuenesse of synnes hope of grace wel to doo. [289] I
 was at þe door of þine hert seith Ihesus and cleped forto
 entre. He þat opneþ to me shal haue forzeuenesse of
 synne [290] I wil entre into hym by my grace and
 soupe wiþ hym by þe good werkes þat he shal doñ
 which werkes bene þe foode of god. and he shal soupe
 wiþ me by þe grete Ioie þat shal be zeue to hym [291]
 Thus shal man hope. þat for his werkes of penaunce
 god shuld zeue hym his regne as he bihotþ hym in the
 gospel

[292] ¶ Now shal man vnderstonde in which

manere shal be þis contricioñ I say þat it shal bene vniversale and total This is to saie. a man shal be verrey repentaunt for al his synnes þat he hap doon in delite of his þouȝt. ffor delite is ful perilous [293] ffor þer bene twoo / manere of consentyngges that oon of hem is cleping consentynge of affection whan a man is meued to do synne and deliteþ hym longe forto þenk on þat synne [294] he hap reson aperceyued / ¹wel þat it is synne aȝeinst þe lawe of god [.]

.
 *no gap in the MS.*] al þouȝe his reson ne consent not to doon þe synne in dede. [295] ¶ Ȝit seyn somme doctours þat suche delite þat dwelleth longe it is ful perilous al be it neuere so lite [296] And also a man shuld sorowe namely for al þat euere he hap desired aȝeinst þe lawe of god wiþ parfite consentynge of his resoñ. ffor þerof is no ¶ doute þat it is dedly synne in þe consentinge [297] [.]

.
 *no gap in the MS.*] and into dede. [298] Wherefore I say þat mony men. ne repenten hem neuer of such þouȝtes and delices ne neuere shryuen hem of it. but only of þe dede. of grete synnes outward. [299] wherefore I say þat such wicked delites and wicked þouȝtes bene subtile bygylers of hem þat shullen be dampned [300] ¶ More ouere man ouȝt to sorowen for his wicked wordes and for his wicked dedys ffor certes þe repentaunce of a syngulere synne and noȝt repent of al her oþer synnes. or ellis repente hym of al his oþer synnes and not of syngulere synne may not availe. [301] ffor certes god almyȝty is al good. and þefore he forȝeueþ aȝ or ellis riȝt nouȝt [302]

¶ *Augustinus.* and hereof seiþ seynt Austyne ¶ I wote certeynly [303] þat god is enemye to euery synner ¶ and how þan he þat obserueþ oon synne. shal he haue forȝeuenesse of þe

remenaunt^t of his oþer synnes. Nay [304] ¶ And forþer ouere / contricion shulde be woundes soryful and anguissþous and þerfore ȝeueþ hym god pleynty his mercye. And / þerfore whan my soule was angwisshous wiþ-in me I had remembraunce of god þat^t my preiere myght^t come to hym. [305] ¶ fferþer ouer contricion most^t be continueþ. and þat^t men han stedfast^t purpoos to shryue hym and forto amende hym of his lif. [306] ffor soþly þe whiles contricion lasteþ man may haue hope of forȝeuenes. And of þis commeþ hate of synne. þat^t destroieþ synne boþ in hym self^t and eke in oþer folk at^t his power^t. [307] ffor whiche seiþ *dauid* / ¶ ȝe þat^t louen / god haten wikkednes. ffor ¶ *Dauid.* / tresteþ wel to loue god is forto to loue þat^t he loueþ. and hate þat^t he hateþ

nota

[308] ¶ The last^t þing^t þat^t men shal vnderstonck in contricion is þis. wherof availeþ contricion ¶ I say þat^t somtyme contricion delyuereþ man fro synne. [309] of which þat^t *dauid* seiþ. I say (*quod dauid*) ¶ *Dauid.* / þat^t is do say ¶ I purpose me fermely to shryve me. And þou lord relesedest^t my synne. [310] And riȝt^t so as *contricion* ¹availeth^t not^t wiþ-outen sad purpoos of shrift^t [. *no gap in the MS.*] or Satisfaction wiþ-out^t contricion. [311] And more: ¶ Contricion destroieþ þe prison of helle and maketh it^t waike and febleþ þe strengthes of þe deuels and restoreþ þe ȝift^t of þe holy goost^t and of aȝt vertues [312] and enterly clenseþ þe saule of synne and delyuereþ þe soule from þe peyne of helle and fro þe company of deuels and fro þe seruage of synne. and restoreþ [it] to aȝt goodys espiritueþ into þe company [and] comunyoñ of holy churche. [313] And ferþer ouer it^t makeþ hym þat^t whilom was þe sone of yre þe sone of grace. And aȝt thise þingges he proueþ by holy writt. [314] and þerfore he þat^t wil sette his entent^t to / þise þingges he is

wis. ffor soþ he shuld not þan in al his liff
 haue corage to synne But þan his body and al his hert
 to þe seruise of Ihesu crist and þerof done him
 homage. [315] ffor certes our swete lord Ihesu crist
 haþ spared vs so / deuourly in our folies þat 3it he ne
 had pite of mannys / soule a sory songe myȝt we alle
 syngē. ¶ **Explicit prima pars penitencie. Incipit**
secunda / pars eiusdem.

¶ 2. pars peni-
 tencie

[316]

¶ **T**He seconde parte of penitence is confession
 þat is signe of contricioñ [317] ¶ Now shul 3e
 vnderstonde what is confession. and whedere
 it ouȝt nedes to be or noon. and which
 þingges bene conable to verrey confession

[318] ¶ ffirst shalt þou vnderstonde þat confession is
 verrey shewing of synnes to þe preest [319] þis is to
 sey verrey. ffor he mot confessen hym of al þe
 condicions þat bylongen to his synne as ferforþ as he
 can. [320] al mote be seide and no þing excused ne
 hid ne forwrapped. and nouȝt auante him of his good
 werkes. [321] ¶ And forþer ouer. It is necessary to vnder-
 stonde whennes þat synne springeþ and how þei
 encresen. And which þer bene

[322] in spryngyngē of synnes. as seiþ seint poule
 in þis wise. / ¶ That riȝt as by a man. synne entred first
 into þe ¶ worlde. and þorghē þat synne deide. Riȝt so
 þilk deēp entreþ into al men þat synden. [323]
 And þis man was // Adam by whom þat synne entred into
 þis world whan he brak þe comaundement of god.
 [324] and þerfore he þat first was so myghty þat he
 shuld not haue deyde. bycame suche oon þat he most
 nedys dye whedere he ¶ wolde or noon. and al his progeny
 þat is in þis world þat in þilk manere synne dyen. [325] Loke
 þat in þe astate of Innocentys ¶ whan A[dam] and Eue

naked weren in paradise. and no þing^t shame ne hadden of her nakednesse. [326] How þat^t serpent^t þat^t was most^t wily of aȝ^t oþer beestes þat^t god haþ^t maked seide to þe womman ¶ Comaunded god to zou^t 3e shuld^t not^t eten of euery tree in paradys [327] ¶ The womman answerd of þe fruyte quod she of þe trees in paradise we feden vs. But^t soplely of þe froyte of þe tree þat^t is in þe myddel of paradys god for-bede vs forto ete ne not^t touche it^t. lest^t parauenture we shuld dyen [328] ¶ The serpent^t saide to þe womman. nay. nay. 3e shullen deye of dethe. ffor soþ^t god woote þat^t what^t day þat^t 3e eten þerof. 3our^t eien shullen open. and 3e shullen ben as goddys knowynge good [and] harme [329] ¶ The womman seie þat^t þe tree was good to fedynge and faire to þe eyen and delitable to þe sizt^t she toke of þe fruyte of þe tree and ete of hit^t. / and 3af it^t to her husbonde and he eete. and anoon þe eyen of hem boþ^t opned / [330] and whan þat^t þei knewe þat^t þei were naked þe[i] sewed of fige leeuies in manere of breche to hiden her membres [331] ¶ Here may 3e see þat^t dedly synne haþ^t furst^t suggestion of þe feende as scheweþ here by the naddere. And afterward^t þe delit^t of þe flessĥ as scheweþ here by Eua. And after þat^t þe consenting^t of þe reson as scheweþ by. adam [332] ¶ ffor trust^t wel þo3e so were þat^t þe fende tempted oon þat^t is to saie þe flessĥ. And / þe flessĥ had delite in þe bewte and þe froyte deffended 3it^t certes til þat^t reson þat^t is to sayn Adam consented. to þe etinge of þe fruyte þat^t stood hi3e in astate of Innocence. [333] þilk Adam toke. þilk synne of Originall. ffor of hem fleshly descended. bene we aȝ^t and engendred. of vile and corrupte matere. [334] And whan þe soule is putt^t in our body. rizt^t anoon is contracte origynal synne. and þat^t was eerst^t but^t only peyne of concupiscens^t is afterward^t boþ^t peyne and synne. [335] And þefore be we aȝ^t yborn sones of

wreth and of dampnaciōn perdurable if it nere baptisme þat we receyuen which bynymeþ vs þe Culpe. But forsoþ þe peyne dwelleþ wiþ vs as þe ¹temptacion which peyne hiȝt concupissens. [336] And þis concupissance whan it is wrongfully disposed or ordeyned in man it makeþ hym to coueite coueitise of flessþ flesshly synne by siȝt of his eyen as to erþly þingges and eke coueitise of hynes of pride of hert

[337] ¶ Now as to speke of þe furst Coueitise þat is concupissance After þe lawe of *our* membres þat weren lawfully maked and by rightful Iuggement of god. [338] I say for as moche as man is not obeysaunt to god þat is his lord þerfo is his fleissþ to hym disobeysaunt þorghē concupiscens [.

[339]
 *no gap in the MS.*] it is impossible but if he be

tempred. sountyme in his flessþ and anoyed to synne [340] And þis þing may not faille as longe as þat he lyueþ. it may wel wexe feble and faile. by vertue of bapteme and by þe grace of god. þourghe penitence. [341] but fully shal it neuere quenche þat he ne shal somtyme be neued in hym self. but he were all refreyned by siknes or by malefice of sorcerie or cold drinkes

¶ Paulus !/

[342] ffor what seiþ seint Poule. þe flessþ coueiten aȝeint þe ¶ spirit. and þe sprit aȝeinst þe flessþ þei bene so contrarie and so striuen þat a man may not allway as he wolde [343] ¶ The same seint paulē aftere his grete penaunce in water and in lond in water by nyght. and in day by grete perile and in grete peyne in londe and enfamyne and thrust in colde and cloþes. & onys scorned almost to þe deþe. [344] ȝit seid he allas I catiff man. who shal deliuere me from þe prison

¶ Ierominus

of my catif body [345] And seint Ierom whan he longe tym had wōnned in deserte where as he had no company. but beestes. wher as he had

no mete but herbes . and watere to his drinkt . ne no bed /
 but þe naked erþe . for whiche his flessĥ was blak as an /
 Ethiopen for hete and neighe destroyed for colde [346]
 zit seide he . þe brennyng of lecherie boiled in al
 his body . [347] Wherfore I woote wel sikerly þat þei
 bene desceyued þat saien þat þei ne bene not tempted in
 her body . [348] Witnesse of seynt Iame þe apostel . ¶ **Iacobus :**
 þat seiþ þat euery witz is tempted in his owne con-
 cupiscence . þat is to say þat euerich of vs haþ matere
 and occasion to be tempted of þe norsshinge of synne
 þat is in his body . [349] And þerfor seiþ seint Iohn ¶ **Iohannes**
 þe Euauangelist ¶ **Euaungelista .** ¶ zif þat we seyne þat we be wiþ-uten
 synne we disceyuen our self . and troupe is not in vs .

[350] Now shullen zee vnderstonde in what manere
 þat synne wexep and encresep in man . The furst
 þing is þilk norshyng of synne of which I spak
 byform þilk concupiscens [351] and after
 þat commep þe subieccioñ of the deuel . þis is to saye
 the deueles bely þi which he blowep in man þe fire
 of concupiscence . [352] ¶ And after þat a man by-
 þenkep hym whedere he wil doo or noon þilk þinge
 to which he is tempted [353] and þan if þat a
 man wiþstonde and waye Off þe furst entisinge of his
 flessĥ and of þe feende þan is it no synne And if it
 so be þat he do not soo þan felep he anōn a flaumbe
 of delite [354] and þan it is good to be ware and to kepe
 hym wel . Or ellis he wil falle anon into consentyng of
 synne and þan wil he do it if he mowe haue tyme
 and space . [355] And / of þis matere seiþ Moyses by ¶ **Moyses :**
 þe deuel in þis manere . The fende seiþ I wil
 chace and pursue þe man by wicked suggestions
 and I wil hent hym by mouyng or stiringe of
 synne And I wil departe my prise or my prey by de-
 liberacioun . and my lust shal be accomplished by delite
 ¶ I wil drawe my swerde in consentyng . [356] ffor certes
 rizt as a sweerde departep a þinge in two peces Rizt

so consenting^t departeþ god fro man and than
 wil I seele hym wiþ myn honde in dethe / of synne. þus
 seiþ þe feende [357] ffor certes þan is a man al
 dede in saule and þus is synne conplised by tempt-
 acion by delite and by consentinge and þan is
 synne cleped ¹aūuiel // [ū for et or ce]

[358] ffor soþe synne is in two maners / eiper
 it^t is venial synne or dedly synne. ¶ Soþly whan man loueþ
 eny creature more þan Ihesu crist^t our creature þan
 is it^t dedly synne And venial synne it is if man loue
 Ihesu crist^t lasse þan hym ouzte. [359] for soþ þe
 dede of þis venial synne is ful perilous. ffor it^t amenuseþ
 þe loue þat^t man shuld haue to god more and more
 [360] And þerfor if a man charge more hym self wiþ mony
 such^h venyal synnes. certes but^t if it^t so be þat^t he som-
 tyme discharge hym of hem by shrift^t þei may ful
 lizthly amenuse in hym al þe loue þat^t he haþ to Ihesu
 crist^t [361] and þis scipped venial into dedly
 synne. ffor certes þe more þat^t a man chargeþ his saule
 wiþ venial synnes. þe more is he enclnyed to falle in
 dedly synne [362] And þerfor lat^t vs nat^t be negligent^t to
 discharge vs of venyal synnes. ffor þe prouerbe seiþ
 þat^t mony smale makeþ a grete. [363] And harken
 þis ensample A grete wawe of the See *commeþ* somtyme
 wiþ so grete a violence þat^t it^t drenceþ þe shippe
 and þe same harme doon somtyme þe smale dropes
 of water þat^t entreþ þorgh^h a litel creues into þe
 thorrok and into þe botme of þe shipp. if men be so
 necligent^t þat^t men ne ²discharge hem not^t by tyme
 [364] And þerfore al þouze þere be difference bytwixe
 þise twoo causes of drenching^t. algates þe ship is
 dreint^t [365] ¶ Ri3t so fareþ it^t somtyme of dedly
 synne and of annoyous / venyal synnes whan þei
 multiplie in a man so gretly þat^t þilk worldly þingges
 þat^t he loueþ þorgh^h which^h he synneþ venyally is
 as grete in his hert^t as þe loue of god or more [366]

And þerfor þe loue of euery þinge þat' is not' bysette in god ne doon princpaly for goddes sake al þof a man loue it' lasse þan god. 3it' is it' venyal synne. [367] And dedly synne whan þe loue of eny þinge. weieþ in þe hert' of a man as moche as þe loue of god. or more [368] more dedly synne as seiþ seint' Austyn. ¶ *Augustinus* is whan man turneþ his hert' fro god which þat' is verrey souereyne bounte þat' may nat' chaunge. and 3eueþ his hert' to a þinge þat' may change and flitte. [369] and certes þat' is every þinge sauf god only of heuene. ffor soþ is 3if þat' a man 3if his loue þe which þat' he oweþ al to god wiþ al his hert' vnto a creature. certes as moche of loue as he 3eueþ to whiche creature so moche [he] byreueþ fro god [370] and þerfore dooþ he synne. ffor he þat' is dettour to god ne 3eldeþ not' al his dette to god þat' is to sayn al þe loue of his hert

[371] ¶ Now siþens a man vnderstondeþ generally which is venyal synne. þan is it conable to tellen of special synnes which þat' mony a man *paraenture* ne demeþ hem not' synnes ne schryuen hem nat' of þe same þingges and 3it' napelees þei bene synnes [372] and soþly as clerkes writen þis is to say þat' euery tyme þat' a man eteþ or drinkeþ more þan suffiseth to þe sustinaunce of his body in certeyn he doþ synne [373] ¶ And eke whan he spekeþ more þan it nedeth. it' is synne. eke whan he harkeneþ not' mekely þe complaynt' of þe poore. [374] eke whan he is in hele of body and wil not' fast' whan oþere men fast' withouen cause resonable. Eke whan he selepeþ more þan nedeth or whan he *commeth* by þilk' encheson late to churchē or to oþere workys of charite. [375] Eke whan he vseþ his wiff wiþ-ouen souereyne desire of engendrure to honure of god. Or for þe entent' to 3elde to his wiff þe dette of his body. [376] Eke whan he wil not' visite þe seke or þe prisoners when he maye.

Eke if he loue wiff or child^t or eny worldely
 þing^t more þan reson requireþ. Eke if he flaterre or
 blaundiss^h more þan hym ouz^t for eny necessite./
 [377] ¶ Eke if he amenuse or wiþdrawe þe almesse of
 þe poor./ ¹¶ Eke if he apparailleþ his mete more
 deliciously þan nede is. or ete it^t to hastely by licourous-
 nesse [378] ¶ Eke if he tale vanytees at^t þe churchre or
 at^t goddes *seruise*. or þat^t he be a talker of ydel wordys
 of foly or of vilanye. for he shal zeelde accountes of
 it^t at þe day of dome [379] ¶ Eke whan he bihotep
 or assureþ to done þingges þat^t he may not *perfourme*
 ¶ Eke whan þat^t by liȝtnesse of foly [he] mysseieþ
 or scorneþ his neighbour [380] ¶ Eke whan he haþ eny
 wikked suspeiōn of þinge *þer* he ne wote of it^t no soþ-
 fastnesse [381] ¶ Thise / þinges and moo wiþ-out^t nombre
 ¶ *Augustinus*. bene synnes as seiþ seynt^t Austyne

[382] ¶ Now shul men vnderstonde þat^t al be it^t soo
 þat^t noon / erþely man may eschwe aȝ venial synnes. ȝit^t
 may he refreyn hym by þe brennyng^t loue þat^t he
 haþ to our lord^t Ihesu crist^t *and* by preiers and confessioun
 and oþer good werkes so þat^t it^t shal but^t litel greue.
 ¶ *Idem*./ [383] ffor as seiþ seynt^t Austyne. If a man loue god
 in such manere þat^t al þat^t euere he dooþ is in þe
 loue of god / or for þe loue of god verreyly. for he
 brenneþ in þe loue of god. [384] ¶ loke howe moche þat^t
 a drope of watere þat^t falleþ in aournays ful of fuyre
 annoyep or greueþ so moche annoyep a venyal
 synne vnto a man þat^t is *parfit* in þe loue of Ihesu
 crist^t [385] ¶ Men may also refreyne venyal synne
 by þe receyuynge of þe precious body of
 Ihesu crist^t [386] By receyuynge eke of holy watere.
 by almes dede. by general confessiōn of confiteor
 at^t þe mas. at^t complyne. and by blessing^t of
 bisshoppys and of preestes and by other good werkes.

¶ *Sequitur de septem peccatis mortalibus . scilicet
de Superbia . et eorum dependencijs .
circumstancijs & spectantibus . /.*

[387] ¶ Now is it' bihouely þinge to tellen which bene
dedly synnes þat' is to say Caytifnesse
of synnes al þei renne in cooles. but' in
dyuers manere ¶ Now bene þei cleped Caytif'
for as moche as þei bene cheef. and spryngen of aȝ
oþer synnes [388] Of þe roote of þise vij. synnes.
pride is þe general rote of al harmes. ffor of
þis roote springen certeyn braunches. as Ire. Envie.
Accidie. or sclothewȝ. Auarice. or couetise to comon
vnderstondinge. Gloteny. and lechery. [389] And
euerich of þise chief' synnes haþ his braunches and his
twigges. as shal be declared in her chapters folowyng.

[De superbia.]

[390] And þouȝe so be þat' no man can / telle vtterly
þe nombre of þe twigges and of þe harmes þat' cometh of
pride. ȝit' wil I shewe a party of hem as ȝe shul
vnderstonde. [391] Ther is **Inobeliencie** **Auauntinge**.
Ypocresie. **Despite**. **arro'gance**. **Imprudence**. **Swellinge**
of hert'. **Insolence**. **Elacion**. **Pertinacie**. **veynglorie** :
Inpacience ¶ **strif**. **Contumacie**. **presumcion**. **irreuer-**
ence ¶ and mony anoþer' twigge þat' I can not' declare [392]
¶ Inobedient' is he þat' disobeieþ for despite to þe coman-
ment' of god and to his souereyns and to his goostly
fadere [393] ¶ **Auaunt'our** is he þat' boosteþ of þe harme
or of þe bounte þat' he haþ doon [394] ¶ **Ipocresie** is
hee þat' hideþ hym to shewe hym such' as he is. and
scheweþ hym suche as he is not' [395] ¶ **Dispitous**
is he þat' haþ disdeyne of his neighbours þat' is to
sayn of his euen / cristen or haþ despite to doo þat'
hym ouȝt' to doo [396] ¶ **Arrogance** is he þat' þenkeþ
þat' he haþ þilk' bountes in hym that he haþ not'. or

weneþ þat he shuld haue hem of his desertes. or ellis þat he demeþ þat he be. þat he nys nouzt [397] ¶ Impudent is he þat for his pride haþ no shame for his synne [398] ¶ Swelling of herte is he. whan a man reioyseþ hym of harme þat he haþ doñ [399] ¶ Insolent is he. þat despiseþ in his Iuggement al oþer folk as to regarde of his valewe and of his connyng. and of his spekinge. and / of his beryng [400] ¶ Elacion is whan þat he ne may neiþer suffre to haue maistrie ne felawe [401] ¶ Impacient is he þat wil not bene ytauzt ne vndernome of his vices and by strif werreieþ / trouþe wittingly and defendeþ his folye [402] ¶ Contymax is he þat þorghē his indignaciō is azeinst euerich autorite or power of hem þat bene his souereyns [403] ¶ Presumpciō is he. whan a man takeþ an emprise þat hym ouzt not to doo. or ellis he may it nouzt doo and þat is called Surquidrie ¶ Irreuerence is whan men done nat honore þer as hem ouzt to doon. and waiten to be reuerensd [404] ¶ Pertynacy is. whan a man defendeþ his foly. and trusteþ to moche to his owne witte. [405] ¶ Veynglorie is forto haue pompe and delite in temporel heuynesse and glorie hem in worldly estates [406] ¶ Iangelyng is whan a man spekeþ to moche toform folke and clappeþ as a mylle. and takeþ no kepe what he saþ.

[407] and 3it is þer a priuey spice of pride þat waiteþ first to be halowed or he wil be salved al be he lasse worþi þan þat oþere is *parauenture* and eke he waiteþ or desireþ to sitte or to goo aboute hym in þe way or kys paxe or bene ensensed or goon / to offringe byform his neighbour [408] and such [.

 *no gap in the MS.*] a proude desire to be magnyfiēd / and honoured to form þe puple.

[409] ¶ Nowe beñ þere twoo maners of pride. þat oon of hem is wiþ-in þe herte ¹of man and þat

oper is wiþ-out [410] ¶ Of which soþly þe for
 seide þingges and moo þan I haue seide appertenaunte to
 pride þat is in þe herte of man. And þerto oper spices
 of pride bene wiþ-outen [411] But napelees oon
 of þise spices of pride is signe of þat oper/ Riȝt
 as / þe gay leeueseH att tauerns is signe of þe wyne
 þat is in þe salere. [412] As þis is in mony þingges
 as in speche and in countenaunces. And in outrageous araye of
 cloþinge / [413] for certes of þis nad he no synne ¶ *Nota de super-*
 in cloþinge. Crist wold not so sone haue noted and spoke of þe *bia vestimento-*
 cloþinge of þilk riche men in þe gospeH [414] ¶ And *rum.*
 as seiþ seynt Gregore. þat precious cloþing is cou-
 pable for þe derþe of hit. and for his soþnesse and
 for his straungenesse. and for his disgisenesse and for þe super-
 fluite. or for þe inordinate scantnesse [. . . . [415]

 *no gap in the MS.]*

[416] as to þe furst synne þat is in superfluyte of
 cloþinge which þat makeþ it so dere to harme of þe
 puple [417] þat only þe cost of enbrawdyng.
 þe degyse endentyng or barringe. owdyng palyng.
 or bendinge. and semblable waast of cloþinge
 in vanyte [418] But þer is also costlewe furringe in
 her gownes / so moch pownsenyng of Chisels to maken
 holes. so mochel daggyng of sheres [419] forþwith
 the Superfluyte in length of þe forseide gownes tral-
 yng in þe dunge and in þe myre on hors and eke on
 foote as wel of man as of womman þat al þilk
 trailyng is verrely as in effecte waasted. consumed. thred-
 bare and roten wiþ dunge raþer þan it is zeuen to
 þe poor to grete damage of þe forseid poor folk
 [420] and þat in sondrie wise This is to seyn. þe
 more þat cloþ is waasted þe more mote it cost to
 þe puple for þe scarcenesse [421] ¶ And ferþerouere
 if it so be þat þei wolde zeue suche pounsoned and

dagged cloþing^t to þe poor folk^t. it^t is not^t conuenient^t
 to were for her estate ne suffisaunt^t to bete her necessite
 to kepe hem from þe desperaunce of þe firmament
 [422] ¶ On þat oper side to speke of þat
 disordynat^t scanternesse of cloþinge as bene thise Cutted
 scloppes or hanselynes þat^t þorgh^t her schortnesse ne
 keuere not^t þe shameful membres of man to wikked
 entent^t [423] Alas somme of hem shewen þe Shappe and þe bote
 of þe horrible swollen membres þat^t semeþ
 like to þe malady of hirnia in the wrapping^t of her hosen.
 [424] and eke þe buttockes of hem þat^t faren as it^t were
 þe hynder part^t of asshe ape in þe ful of þe mone.
 [425] And more ouer the wrecched swollen membres
 þat^t þei / shewe þorgh^t disgisinge in departinge of
 her hosen white and ¹rede semeþ þat^t half hyre shame-
 ful prive membres weren flayne [426] and so be þat^t
 þei departen her hosen in opere colours as is white
 and blak^t or white and blewe or blak^t and rede and so /
 forþ. [427] þan ne semeþ it^t as by variaunce of coloure
 þat^t half^t þe party of his privey membres bene corrupte
 by þe fuyr of seynt^t Antonye or by cancre or by oper
 such meschaunces [428] ¶ 3it^t of þe hyndere parte of her
 buttockes it^t is ful horrible forto see. for certes in þat^t
 party of her body þer as þei purgen her stynkinge
 ordure [429] þat^t foule party shewe þei proudly to þe puple
 in despite of honeste. which honeste þat^t
 Ihesu crist^t and his frendes obserued to shewe in his
 lif [430] ¶ Now as to outragious aray of wommen
 god woote þouze þe visage of hem semen
 ful chaaste and debonaire. 3it^t notefyen þei in her aray of
 a-tyre likerousnesse and pride [431] ¶ I say not^t þat^t
 honeste in cloþinge of man and womman is vncon-
 able. but^t certes þe superfluite or þe disordynate scantite
 of cloþinge is reproveable [432] ¶ Also þe synne of
 anornament^t or apparaile in þingges þat^t appertenen
 to ridynge. as into mony delicate horses þat^t bene holden

for delite. þat þei bene so faire. fatte and costlewe. [433] and also mony a vicious knaue Meyntened by cause [of hem] and in to curious harnays and in sadels. In cropours in peytrellis and brideH keuered wiþ precious cloþe and riche barres and plates of golde and of siluere. [434] ffor which god seiþ by Sakarye þe ¶ *Zacharia propheta* prophete ¶ I wil confounde þe riders of suche horses [435] ¶ This folk^t taken litel rewarde of þe rydinge of goddes sone of heuene and of his harnays whan he rode vpon an asse and had noon oþer harnayes but cloþes of his poor disciples. ne w[e] ne rede not þat euere he rode on oþer beest^t // [436] I speke þus of þe synne of superfluyte and not for þe resonable honeste whan reson it requireþ. [437] And ferþer / ouer certes pride is gretly notefied in holdinge of grete mayne whan þei bene of litel profit^t or of rizt^t of no profite [438] And namely whan þat Mayne is felenous and damagous to þe puple by hardynesse of hie lordship or by wey of office. [439] ffor certus such lordes foylen þan her lordshipes to þe deuel of helle whan þei sustene þe wikkednesse of her mayne [440] ¶ Or ellis whan þise folk^t of lowe degree. as þilk þat halden ostelers. sustene þe þeft^t for her ostilers and þat^t is in mony ¹maners of disceytes. [441] Thilk^t manere of folk^t bene þe flies þat folowen þe honye Or ellis þe houndes þat folowen þe Careyñ which forseide folk stranglen spirituelly her lordshipes. [442] ffor which þus seiþ *Dauid* þe prophet ¶ Wikked ¶ *Dauid propheta.* deþ mote come on þilk lordshipes and [god] zeue þat þei mote descende a doune into helle. ffor in her houses bene iniquitees and shrewdenesses and not god of heuene. [443] And certes but if þei done amendent^t Rizt^t so as god ʒaf his blessinge to Pharao by þe seruise of Iacob. & to Laban by the seruise of Ioseph. Rizt^t so god wil zeue his malison to suche lordshippes as to sustene þe wikkednesse of her seruauentes [. . .]

. . . *no gap in the MS.*] [444] ¶ Pride of þe table appereþ eke ful oft. for certes / riche men bene cleped to feestes and poor folk' ben putte away and rebuked [445] in excesse of dyuers metes and drynkes and namely suche manere of bake metes [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] and of semblabled waast so þat' it' is / abusion forto þenk' [446] and eke in grete preciousnesse of vesseH *and* curiosite of Mynstralcie by þe which a man is stired þe more to delices of luxurie [447] If so be þat' he sette his hert lesse vpon *our* lord Ihesu crist' certeyn it' is a synne And certeynly þe delites / myzt' bene so grete in þe caas þat' men myzt' liztly falle by hem into dedly synne [448] ¶ The Espices þat' sourden of pride. soþly whan þei sourden of malice ymagyned and avised and forn cast'. or ellis of vsage bene dedly synnes. it' is no doute. [449] And whan þei sourden by freelte vn-avised sodeynly and sodeynly wiþdrawe aȝein. aH bene þei greuous synnes I. gesse þat' þei be not dedly [450] ¶ Nowe myght' men aske wherof þat' pride soureþ and springeþ. And I say somtyme it' springeþ of þe goodes of nature and somtyme of þe goodes of fortune. and somtyme of þe goodes of grace. [451] Certes þe goodes of nature stonden in þe goodes of body or goodes of soule [452] Certes þe goodes of body bene hele of body strengþ delyuernesse. beute. gentrie. ffraunchises [453] ¶ Goodes of nature of þe saule bene good wiþ sharpe vnderstondinge sotile engin ¶ vertu material. good memorie [454] ¶ Goodes of fortune ben riches hye degrees of lordshipes. preisynge of þe puple [455] ¶ Goodes of grace bene sciences. power to suffre spiritueH *trauaille* benygnitees vertuous contemplaciõ. wiþstondyng' of temptaciõ and semblable þingges [456] of which forseide goodes certes it' is a ful grete foly a man to priden hym in eny of hem alle. [457]

Now as forto speke of goodes of nature. god wote þat somtyme ¹we han hem in nature as moche to *our* damage as to our' profit' [458] As forto speke of helpe of body: certys it' passeþ ful liztly. and eke it' is ful oft encheson of þe siknesse of þe saule for god wote þe flessħ is a ful grete enymye to þe soule And þerfore þe more þat' a body is hool þe more be we in perile to falle [459] ¶ Eke forto pride hym in his strenght' of body it' is an hie foly for certes þe flessħ coueiteþ azeinst' þe spirit And ay þe more stronge þat' þe flessħ is: þe sorier may þe saule be [460] ¶ And oueral þis strenght' of body and worldly hardnesse causeþ ful often many men to perile and meschaunce [461] ¶ Eke forto pride hym of his gentrie is ful grete foly. ffor often tyme þe gentry of þe body. bygynneþ þe gentry of the saule And eke we bene al of oon fadere and al of oo modere. and al we be of oo nature roten and corrupte boþ riche and poor [462] ¶ fforsoþ a manere gentrie is to preise þat' apparailleþ mannys corage wiþ vertues of moralitees and makeþ hym cristes child' [463] ¶ ffor trestþ wel þat' ouer what' man þat' synne haþ maistrie he is verrey cherle to synne.

[464] ¶ Nowe bene þere general þingges of gentilnesses. as schewyng' of vices or ribawdry and *seruage* of synne. in worde. in werk. in *contenaunce* [465] & vsyng' vertu. Curtesie. and clenness and to be liberal þat' is to sayn / large by mesure. ffor þilk þat' passen mesure is foly and synne [466] ¶ A noþer is to remembre hym of bounte þat' he of oþere folk' haþ receyued. [467] Anopere is to be benigne of his sogette. wherfore as seiþ Senek. Ther is no þinge more ¶ *Seneca* conable to a man of hie estate þan debonairte [468] ¶ And þerfore þise flies þat' men / clepen bees whan þei maken her kyngþe þei chesen oon þat' haþ no prikke wherwiþ he may styngþe [469]

¶ Anoper is a man to haue a noble hert^t and a diligent to atteyn to hie vertuouſ þingges [470* *see after 474 and Hengwrt and Petworth MSS.*

.
 *no gap in the MS.*]

[471] ¶ Certes also who þat^t prideþ hym in þe goodes of fortune he is a ful grete fool. ffor somtyme is a man a ful grete lord^d by þe morowe! þat^t is a wrecche and a caytif er it^t be nyght^t [472] And somtyme þe [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]

delites of a man ben

cause of þe greuouſ malady þorgh^h which he dyeth [473] Certes þe commendaciōn of þe puple is somtyme ful fals and ful/ brutile forto trest^t. This day þei

preise to morowe þei blame. [474] God woote desire to haue commendaciōn eke of puple haþ caused deþe to

mony a bisy man [*470] Now certys

a man ¹to pride hym in goodes of grace is eke an outrageouſ foly for þilk^k 3iftes of grace þat^t shuld

haue turned hym to goodnesse and to medecyne. turneþ

¶ *gregorius*

hym to venym and to confusiōn as seith seynt Gregor.

[475] ¶ Now syþens þat^t so is þat^t 3e han vnderstonden what is pride. and which bene þe spices of

it^t and whennys pride sourdeþ and springeþ

[*The Remedy against Pride.*]

¶ *Remedium*

contra

¶ *Superbiam*

[476] Now shal 3e vnderstonde which is þe remedy azeinst pride. and þat^t is humilite or

mekenesse [477] þat^t is a vertue þorgh^h which a man

haþ verrey ¶ knowlecch^h of hym self and holdeþ of hym self no pris ne deynte as in regarde of his desertes

consideryng^t euer his freelte [478] ¶ Now bene þer thre maners of humilite. as humilite in hert^t annoþer

in mouþ / and þe iij. is in werkes

[479] ¶ The humilite of herte is in iiij. maners. þat^t

oon is whan a man boldeþ hymself as nouzt^t worþ

by-fore god in heuene. Anoper is whan he despiseþ

noon oþer man [480] ¶ The iij. is whan he rekketh nouȝt þoze / men holde hym nouȝt worþ ¶ The iiij. is whan he nys not sory of his humiliaciōn [481] ¶ Also þe humilite of mouþ is in 4 þingges In attemprure speche and in humblesse of speche. And whan he byknoweþ wiþ his owne mouþ þat he is such as hym þenkeþ þat he is in his hert. Anoþer is whan he preiseþ þe bounte of anoþer man and noþeng þerof amenuseþ [482] humilite ¶ Eke in werk is in 4. maners. The first is whan he putteþ oþer men to-forn hym. The secounde is to chese þe lowest place oueraH The iij. is gladly to assent to good counsaile [483] ¶ The 4. is gladly to stonde to þe award of his souereyn or of hym þat is hier in degre Certeyn þis is a grete werk of humilite.

¶ **De Peccato. Inuidie.**¶ *De inuidia!*

[484]
Aftere pride wil I speke of þe foule synne of envie which þat is as by þe word of þe philisophre sorow of oþere mannys prosperite And aftere þe word of seynt Austyne. it is sorowe of oþer mennes wele and Ioie of oþer mennys harme [485] ¶ This foule synne is platly azeinst þe holy goost. al be it so þat euery synne be azeinst þe holy goost. ȝit for as moche as bounte apperteneþ proprely to þe holy goost. and envie commeþ proprely of malice þefore is proprely azenist þe bounte of þe holy goost [486] ¶ Now haþ malice ij. spices. þat is to sayn hardnes of herte. And wikkednesse or ellis þe flessch of a man is so blynde þat he ¹considereth not þat he is in synne [. *no gap in the MS.*] which is þe hardnesse of þe deueH [487] ¶ That oþere spice of envie is whan þat a man / werreþ trouþe whan þat he wote þat it is trouþe. And eke whan þat he werreieþ þe grace of þat god haþ ȝeue to his

neighbour. and al þis is by envie [488] Certes þan is envie þe worst synne þat is. ffor sobly al oþer synnes bene somtyme azein oo special vertue [489] But certes envie is azeinst alle vertues and of alle goodnesses for it is sory of alle bountes of neighbour. and in þis manere it is dyuers from alle maner synnes. [490] ffor wel vnneþes is þer eny synne þat it ne haþ somme delite in hym self sauf only envie þat euer haþ in [hym]self anguyssh and sorowe [491] ¶ The spices of envie bene þise. þer is furst sorowe of oþer mennys goodnesse and of her prosperite [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] is kyndely matere of Ioye. þan is enuye a synne azeinst kinde. [492] ¶ The seconnde spice of envie is Ioie of oþer mennys harme. [.] . . . *no gap in the MS.* [493] Of þis seconnde spice commep bakbitynge [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] or detraccioñ and þat haþ ij. spices as thus: ¶ Somme man preiseþ his neighbour by a wikked entent. [494] for he makeþ alway a wikked knotte at the last ende. alwey he makeþ a but at þe last ende. þat is digne and more blame than worþe is al the plesinge [495] ¶ The seconnde spice is þat if a man be good and doþ and saiþ a þinge to good entent þe bakbiter wil turne al þe goodnesse vp so down to his schrewde entent [496] ¶ The iij. is to amenuse þe bounte of his neighbour [497] ¶ þe .4. spice of bakbityng is þis. þat if men speke goodnesse of a man wil þe bakbiter sayn parfay such a man zit is bette þan he in dispreysinge of hym that men preise [498] ¶ The .v. spice is forto consent gladly harken þe harme þat men speken of oþer folk. þis synne is ful grete and ay encreseþ after þe wikked entent of þe bakbiter [499] ¶ aftere bakbitynge commep grucchyng or murmuraunce and somtyme it springeþ of inpacience azeinst god and somtyme azeinst man

[500] Azeinst^t god it^t is whan a man gruccheth azeinst þe peyn of helle or azeinst^t pouert^t or losse of cateff or azeinst reyne or tempest^t or ellis gruccheþ þat^t shrewes han prosperite. or ellis good men han aduersite. [501] and alle these þingges shuld men suffre patiently. for þei comen by the riztful Iuggement^t and ordinaunce of god [502] ¶ Somtyme ¹commeþ grucchinge of auarice as Iudas grucched azeinst þe Mawdelene whan she ennoynted þe hede of oure lorde Ihesu crist^t wiþ her precious oynement^t [503] This maner of murmur^t is such as whan men grucchen of goodnesse and þat^t men selue done er þat^t oþer folk doon of her owne Cateff [504] ¶ Somtyme commeþ murmur of pride / as whan symon þe phiryse grucched azeinst Maudeleyn. whan she approched to Ihesu crist^t and wepte at^t his fete for her synnes. [505] And somtyme it^t sourdeþ to envie whan man diskeuereþ a mannys harme þat^t was pryvey or bereþ hym / on honde þinge þat^t is fals [506] ¶ Murmur^t eke is oft^t amonges seruauantes þat^t grucchen whan her souereynes bidden / hem to doon leeful þingges. [507] and for as moche as þei dure not^t openly say nay. ne wiþsaye the comaundementz of her souereyn. 3it^t wil þei saye harme and grucche and murmure priuely for verrey despite. [508] which wordes men clepe þe deuels Pater noster. Thouze so be þat^t þe deuels had neuere Pater noster. but^t þat^t folk^t zeuen it^t such a name. [509] Somtyme it^t commeþ of Ire or of prive hate þat^t norssheth rancour^t in hert^t as afterward I shal declare. [510] þan commeþ eke bitternesse of hert^t þorgh^t which bitternesse euery good dede of his neiþbour^t semeþ to hym bitter^t and vnsauery [511] Than commeþ discord þat^t vnbyndeþ al maner of frendship Than commeþ scornynge of [.
. no gap in the MS.] his neiþbour^t al doo he neuer so wel [512] ¶ Than commeþ accusinge as whan a man sekeþ occasion^t to annoyen his

neighbour' which þat' is like þe craft of þe deuel
 þat' waiteþ boþ nyȝt' and day to accusen vs alle
 [513] ¶ Than commeth malignite þorgh which a man
 annoyeth his neighbour' prively if he may [514] And if he
 noȝt' ne may algate his wikked wille ne shal not' wante.
 as forto brenne his hous prively. or enpoysen or scleen /
 his beestes and semblable pingges

¶ *Remedium contra Inuidiam* [from the margin]

[515] ¶ Now wil I speke of þe remedie azeinst' þis foule
 synne of Envie ¶ first' is þe loue of god
 principal and louyng' of hym self and of his neighbour'. ffor
 sobly þat' oon ne may not' be wipouten þat'
 oþer [516] And trust' wel þat' in þe name of þi
 neighbour' þou shalt' vnderstonde þe name of þi
 broþer ffor certes al we han oo fader fleshly. and oo
 Modere ¹that' is to say Adam and Eve and eke oo fadere
 spirituel þat' is to say god of heuene [517] Thine
 neȝboure art' þou holden forto louen And willen hym al
 goodnesse and þefore seiþ god loue þine neigbour' as
 þine self þat' is to say to saluacioñ boþ of lif and of
 saule [518] And more ouer þou shalt' loue hym in
 word' and benigne amonesynge and chastisyng
 and conforte hym in his anoyes and prey for hym wip
 al þine hert [519] ¶ And in/ dede þou shalt' loue hym
 in such' wise þat' þou shalt' done to hym in charite
 as þow woldest' men did to þine owne persone.
 [520] & þefore þow shalt' not' done hym no damage
 ne wikked worde ne harme in his body ne in his catel
 ne in his saule by entising' of wikked ensample. [521]
 þow shalt' not' desiren his wif ne noon / of his pingges
 ¶ Vnderstonde eke þat' in þe name of þi neigboure his com-
 prehended his enemye. [522] Certes a man shal loue his
 enemye for þe comaundmentz of god And sobely þi
 frende shalt' þou loue in god. [523] I say þine
 Enemye shalt' þou loue for goddis sake by his comaunde-

ment^t. ffor if it^t were reson þat^t man shuld hate his enemye. forsop god wold^t not^t receyue vs to his loue þat^t bene his enemyes [524] azeinst^t iij manere of wrongges þat^t his enemye doþ to hym he shal do þre þingges as þus. [525] Azeinst hate and rancour of hert^t he shal loue hym in hert^t. Azeinst^t chidyng and wikked wordes. he shal prey for his enemye. Azeinst^t þe wikked dede of his enemye he shal doon hym bounte [526] ffor crist^t seip. Loueþ 3oure enemyes and preieþ for hem þat^t spekeþ 3ou harme And eke for hem þat^t 3ou chasen and purswen and doth^t bounte to hem þat^t yow haten ¶ Loo þus comaundeþ vs our lord Ihesu crist^t to doo to oure enemyes. [527] ffor sople nature dryueþ vs to loue our frendes. And parfay oure enemyes han more nede to loue þan our frendes. and þei þat^t more nede haue certes to hem shal men doo goodnes. [528] and certes in þilk^t dede haue [we] remembraunce of þe loue of Ihesu crist^t þat^t deyed for his enemyes. [529] And in as moche as þilk^t loue is þe more greuous to perfourme so moche is more grete þe merite And þerfore the louyng^t of our enemye haþ confounded þe venyme of þe deueH. [530] ffor ri3t^t as þe deuel is discomfited by humilite ri3t^t so is he wounded to the deep by þe loue of oure enemye [531] Certes þan is loue þe medecyne þat^t chaseth out þe ve^lnym of Envie fro mannys herte [532] The spices of þis pas shullen be more largely declared in her chapters folowinge

¶ **De Ira:** / [*from the margin*]

[533]

Aftere Envie wil I declare þe synne of Ire ffor sople who þat^t haþ Enuye vpon his neizbour^t anon comonly he wil fynde hym matere of wreth^t in worde or in dede azeinst^t hym to whom he haþ envie [534] And as wel commeþ Ire of pride

as of enuye. ffor soþly he þat is proude or envious
is listly wrooþ

[535] This synne of Ire aftere þe descriuyng of
¶ *Augustinus* seint Austyne is wikked wiþ to bene auenged. by
worde or by dede || [536] Ire aftere þis Philisophre is
þe veruent blood of man yquykked in his hert þorgh
which he wil / harme to hym þat he hateþ. [537] ffor
certes þe hert of man. by eschawfyng and moovinge of
his blood waxeþ so trouble þat he is out of all
Iugement of resoun [538] ¶ But 3e shullen / vnderstonde
þat Ire is in two maners þat oon of hem is good and
þat oþer is wikked [539] The good is by
Ialousie of goodnesse þorgh þe which a man is wroþe
wiþ wikkednesse [. *no gap in the MS.*] And þer-
¶ *sapiens.* for seith þe wise man þat Ire is bette þan play [540]
This Ire is *with* debonairete and it is wrooþ wiþ-
outen bitterness not wroþ azeinst þe man but
wrooþ wiþ þe mysdede of þe man. As seiþ þe
prophete david **Irascimini & nolite peccare** [541] ¶ Now
vnderstonde þat wikked Ire is in two maners
þat is to seyn sodeyn Ire or hastif Ire wiþ-outen
avisement and consentynge of his resoñ [542] þe menyng
and þe sens of þis is þat þe resoñ of a man ne con-
sent not to þilk sodeyn Ire and þan is it venial
[543] An oþer Ire is ful wikked þat *commeþ* of
vilany of herte avised and cast bfore wiþ wikked wiþ
to do vengeaunce and þerto his reson consenteþ. and
so soþly þis is dedly synne [544] ¶ This Ire is so dis-
plesaunt to god þat it troubleþ his hous and chaseþ þe
holy goost out of manne saule [.
.
.
no gap in the MS.] [545] and putte in hym þe lik-
nes of þe deueñ and bynymmeþ þe man fro god þat
is his riþtful lorde [546] This Ire is a ful grete
plesaunce to þe deueñ. for it is þe deuels forneys
þat is eschauffed wiþ þe fuyre of helle. [547] ffor certes

as fuyre is more myzty to distroye erply þingges þan another element Ri3t^t so Ire is myzty to distroye aȝt spirituel þingges. [548] Loke howe þat fire of smale gledys that bene almost dede vnder asshen wollen quyk^lke azein whan þei bene touched wip bremstone Ri3t^t soo Ire wil euermore quikke azein whan it is touched by pride þat is kered in manyns hert. [549] ffor certes fire may not come out of no þinge but if it were first in þe same þing^t naturelly as fire is drawen out of þe flyntes wip steele [550] And ri3t^t so as pride is often matere of Ire Right^t so is rancoure norssher and keper of þe [551] Ther is a maner of tree as seiþ seint Isodre þat whan men ¶ Isodre maken fire of þilk tree and keuereþ þe cooles of it with asshen sobly þe fuyre of it wil last last al a zere or more [552] ¶ And ri3t^t so fareþ it of rancour whan he is onys conceyued in þe hertis of somme men. Certeyne it wil last perauenture from oon / Ester day til anoþer day or more [553] But Certes þilk man is ful ferre from þe mercy of god al þilk while

[554] ¶ In þis forsaide deuels fornays þer foorgen. thre shrewes Pride þat aȝt bloweþ and encreseþ þe fire by pride and wikkeð wordes. [555] Than stant Envie and holdeþ þe hote yren vpon þe hertes of man wip a peire of longe tongges of longe Rancour [556] and þan stant þe synne of contynnyng or strif and þeest and batereþ and forgeþ by vileyns reprouyngges [557] ¶ Certes þis cursed synne annoyeth boþe þe man hym self and eke to his neighbour. ffor sobly al ¶ most al þe harme þat eny man doþe to his neighboure commeþ of wrath. [558] ffor certes outrageous wraþe doþ aȝt þat euer the deuel hym comaundeþ for he ne spareþ neiþer crist^t ne his swete modere [559] And in his outrageous angre & Ire allas allas ful mony one at þat tyme feleþ in his / herte ful wikkedly

boþ of crist^t and of aH his halowes. [560] Is
 not^t þis a cursed vice [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] his debonaire
 wif espritueH þat^t shulde kepen his saule [561]
 Certes it^t bygynneþ eke goddys dieu lordship and
 þat^t is mannys saule and þe loue of his neighbours
 It^t striveþ eke alday azeinst^t þe troupe. It^t reueþ hym þe
 quiete of his hert^t and subuertep his saule

[562] ¶ Of Ire *commen* þise stynkinge engendrures.
 ffirst^t hate þat^t is olde wreþe discord^t þorgh^t which
 a man forsakeþ his olde frende þat^t he haþ loued ful
 longe. [563] and þan *commen* werre and eury
 manere of wronge þat man doth^t to his neighbour in
 body or in cateH [564] ¶ Of þis cursed. ¹synne of Ire
commen eke mannys slaughtere And vnderstondeþ wel þat^t
 homicide þat^t is mannys sclauztere is in dyuers wise Some
 manere of Omycide is esprituel and somme is bodely. [565]
 Spirituel mannesslaughter is in vj. þingges ffirst^t by
 hate as seiþ seint^t Iohn. That^t he þat^t hateþ his broþer
 is an homicide. [566] [Homicide] Is eke by bakbytinge. of
 whiche bakbiters seiþ salomon. þat^t þei han. two
 swerdes with which þei scleen her neighbours. ffor
 sople as wikked is to bynyme his good name as
 his liff [567] ¶ Omycide is eke in zeuyng of wikked
 counsaile by fraude as forto zeue / counsaile to array
 wikkedly custumes and taliages [568] Of which seiþ
 Salomon ¶ lyoun rorynge. bere hungry bene like to
 cruel lordshippes in wipholding^t or a-breggyng of þe
 Shepe or þe hire of þe wages of [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] þe almesse of poor folk^t
 [569] ffor which þe wise man seiþ ffedeþ hym þat^t
 almost dieþ for hunger. for sople but^t þou fede hym
 þou sleest^t hym. and alle þise bene dedly synnes [570]
 Bodyly mansclaunter is whan þou sleest^t hym wiþ þi
 tunge in oþere manere as whan þou comaundest^t to
 sclene a man or ellis zeuest^t hym counsaile to scleen a

¶ Iohannes.

¶ Salomon

¶ Idem

man. [571] Manslaughtere in dede is in foure maners
 That oon is by lawe Riȝt as a Iustice dampneþ
 hym þat is copable to þe deep But lat þe Iustise
 be ware þat he do it riȝtfully. and þat he do it not
 for delit to spille bloode. but for riȝtwis-
 nesse. [572] Anopere homycide is doon for
 necessite as whan a man scleeþ anoper in his defendaunt
 and þat he may noon oper wise eskape for his
 owne deþe. [573] But certeynly if he may eskape wiþ-
 out slaughtere of his aduersary and scleeþe hym
 he doþ synne and he shal bere penaunce as for dedly
 synne [574] ¶ Eke if a man by caas or auenture shete
 an arowe or cast a stone wiþ whiche he scleeþ a man
 it is homycide [575] ¶ Eke if a womman by necligence
 ouerleip her childe in scleepinge it is homycide. and
 dedly synne. [576] Eke whan a man distourbeþ con-
 cepcion of a childe or makeþ a womman barayn
 by drynkinge of venemous herbes þorgh which she may
 not conceyue or scleeþ a childe by drynkes or
 ellis putteþ in certeyn material þingges in her secre
 places to sle þe child [577] or ellis doþ vnkinde
 synne by which man or womman shedeþ his nature
 in manere or in place þer as a childe may not be con-
 ceuyed or ellis if a womman haþ conceuyed and hurte
 he[r] self and scleeþ her childe ȝit is it homycide
 [578] ¶ What say we eke of wommen þat Mordren
 her children for drede or worldly shame certes an
 horrible homicide [579] Homicyde is eke if a mon ap-
 procheþ to a womman by desire of leccherie þorgh which þe
 childe is pershed or ellis smyteþ a womman witingly
 þorgh which she leseþ her childe aȝ þise bene homy-
 cides and horrible dedly synnes / [580] ȝit cometh þerof
 Ire and mony moo synnes as wel in worde as in þouȝt and
 in dede as he þat aretteþ vpon god or blameþ god
 of þinge of which he is hym self guilty or dispiseþ
 god and aȝ his halowes as done þise cursed hasardours

in dyuers cuntrees. [581] þis cursed synne doon þei whan þei felen in her hert^t ful wikkedly of god and his halowes [582] ¶ Also whan þei treten vnreuerently þe sacrament^t of þe autere Thilk^t synnes is so grete þat^t vnneþes may it^t be relese^d but^t þat^t mercy of god passeþ his werkes it^t is so grete and he so benigne. [583] Than *commeþ* of Ire attr^y Angre whan a man [is] sharpely amonased. in his shrift to forlete synne [584] þan wil he be angry and answe^re hokerly and angerly or defende and excuse his synne by vnstedfastnesshe of his fless^h or ellis he did it^t forto holde company with wise felawes. or ellis he seiþ þe fende entised / hym [585] or ellis he did it^t for his zouþe. or ellis *complexioñ* is so corragious that^t he may not^t forbere. or ellis it^t is his destanye as he seiþ vnto a certeyn age. or ellis he seiþ hit^t *commeþ* hym of gentilnesse of his owncestres and semblable þingges [586] ¶ Alle þise manere folkes so wrappen hem in her synnes þat^t þei ne wol not^t delyuere hem self. Soply no wiþ^t þat^t excusel hym wilfully of his / synne may not^t be delyuered of her synne til þat^t he mekely byknoweþ his synne [587] ¶ Aftere þat^t *commeþ* sweringe þat^t is expresse azeinst^t þe comaundement^t of god. and þis bifalleþ oft of anger and of Ire [588] God seiþ þou shalt not^t take þe name of þi lorde god in veyn nor in ydeñ ¶ Also our lorde Ihesu crist^t seiþ by þe word^t of seynt^t Mathewe [. *no gap in the MS.*] [589] Ne wil 3e not^t swere in al manere. Neiper by heuene for it^t is goddes trone. ne by þe erþe for it^t is þe benche of his fete ¹ne by Ierusalem for it^t is þe cite of a grete kyng^e Ne by þine hede. for þou maist^t not^t make an heer white ne blak^t. [590] But^t seiþ by 3our^t 3ee 3ee. and nay nay and what^t þat^t is more it^t is eueñ þus seith crist^t [591] ¶ ffor cristes sake ne swereþ not^t so synfully in dismembringe of crist^t by soule

¶ *Textus*¶ *Mathews*

herte bonys and body for certes it̄ semeþ þat̄ 3e þenk þat̄ þe cursed Iwes ne dismenbred / hym nouȝt̄ ynouȝe þe precious persone of crist̄ But̄ 3e dismembren hym more [592] And if so be þat̄ þe lawe compelle 3ou to / swere þan rewleþ 3ou after þe lawe of god in 3oure swerynḡ as seiþ Ieremye 4^{to}. capitulo.

[. no gap in the MS.] Thou shalt̄ kepe thre condicions. Thou shalt̄ swere in troupe

in doom and in riȝtwisnesse [593] This is to sayn þou shalt̄ swere sooþ. for euery lesinge is aȝeinst̄ crist̄ ffor crist̄ is verrey troupe And þenk wel þis þat̄ euery grete swerer not̄ compelled lawfully to swere þe wounde shal not̄ departe fro his hous þe whiles he vseth such̄ vnlieful sweringe [594] ¶ Thow shalt̄ swere eke in doom whan þow arte constrayned by þi domes man to witnessse þe troupe [595] ¶ Eke þou shalt̄ not̄ swere for envie ne for fauour' ne for mede but for riȝtwisnesse for declarynge to worship of god and in helping of þine euen-cristen [596] And þerfore euery man þat̄ takeþ goddis name in ydel or falsely swereþ wiþ his mouþ or ellis takeþ on hym þe name of crist̄ to be called a cristen man and lyueþ aȝeinst̄ cristes lyuynḡ and his techinge alle þei taken goddes name in ydeþ [597] ¶ Loke eke what̄ seiþ seint̄ Petere

Actus 4^o. Non est̄ aliud nomen sub celo. Ther nys noñ oþer name seiþ seint̄ Peter vnder heuene yȝeuen to men in which̄ þei mote be saued þat̄ is to seyn but̄ in þe name of Ihesu crist̄ [598] ¶ Take kepe eke how þat̄ þe precious name of Ihesu crist̄ as seiþ seynt̄ paule Ad philipenses 2^o In nomine Ihesu &cetera. That̄ in þe name of Ihesu euery knee of heuenly creatures or erply or of helle shuld bowen for it̄ is so hize and so worshipfull̄ that̄ þe cursed fende in helle shuld tremblee to heren it̄ nempned [599] than semeþ it̄ þat̄ men þat̄ sweren / so horribly by his

¶ Ieremie quarto capitulo
 ¶ Turabis in veritate in iudicio et iustitia [same side-note and quotation in the Sompnour's Tale. MS. leaf 219, back]

¶ Petrus: /
 ¶ Ad philipenses

blessed name þat þei dispisen it more boldely
þan did þe cursed Iwes. or ellis þe deuel þat
trembleþ whan he hereþ his name

[600] ¶ Now certes siþens þat swerynge but it be
doo al lawfully is holy defended me The wors is
forswering falsly. and 3it nedelees.

[601] What say we eke of hem þat deliten hem
in swerynge and holden it a gentrye or a manly dede to
swere grete oþes And what of hem þat of verrey
vsage ne cessen not to swere grete oþes al þe cause
not worþ oon strawe Certes þis is horrible synne [602]
swering sodeynly wiþ-out avisement is eke a
synne [603] ¶ But lat vs nowe goo to þilk horrible and cursed /
swerynge of adiuracioñ and coniuracioñ as doñ þise fals en-
chauntours or nigromanciens in basyns ful of water or
in a bri3t swerde. in a sercle or in a fuyre or in a shulder
bone of a shepe [604] I can not seyn but þat þei
doon cursedly and ¶ dampnably a3einst crist and al þe
feip of holy church.

[605] What say we of hem þat byleuen on
dyuynales as by fli3t or by noys of briddes or of beestes or of
sorte by Egrymaunye. by dremes. by chirking
of doores by gnewyng of rattye or crakinge of howses
and such maner wrecchednesse [606] Certes al þis
thyng is defended by god and by holy churche for //
whiç þei bene acursed to þei come to amendement
þat on such filþe setten her byleue [607] ¶ Charmes
for woundes and maladies of men or of beestes if þei
taken eny effecte it bene peraventure þat god suffreþ
it for folk shuld 3eue þe more faiþe and reuerence to
his name

[608] ¶ Now wil I speke of lesyngges whiç gener-
ally is fals signyfiaunt or woord in entent to deceyuen
his euen cristen [609] ¶ Some lesing is of whiç
þer commep noon auauntage to no wi3t and somme lesyng
turnep to þe ease eiþer profit of a man and to

damage of a noþer man [610] A noþere lesing is for to saue his liff or his cateH. An oþer lesyng cometh of delit^t forto lye In which delite þei willen / forge a longe tale and peynte it wip aH circumstannces. wher alle þe grounde of þe tale is fals [611] ¶ Some lesyng cometh for he wil sustene his word^t and some lesing^t cometh of recchelessnesse with-outen avisement^t and Semblable þingges

[612] ¶ Lat^t vs nowe touche þe vice of flaterie which ne cometh not gladly but for drede or for coueityse. [613] flaterie is generally wrongfuH presyng. flaterers bene þe deuel norrees þat norsheþ his chyldren wip mylk of losengry. [614] ffor soþ seiþ Salomon: ¶ Salomon. þat flaterie is wors þan detracciōn. ffor. somtyme detracciōn makeþ an haunteyn man be þe more humble. ffor he dredeþ detracciōn But certes flaterye makeþ a man to vn^hhaunten his hert^t and his countenance [615] ¶ flaterers bene þe deuels Enchaunters for þei make a man to wene of hym self be like þat he nys not like [616] Thei bene like Iudas þat bytraied [. *no gap in the MS.*] a man to selle hym to his enemye þat is to þe deueH [617] ¶ flaterers bene þe deuels Chapileyns þat synggen euer Placebo [618] I rekken flaterye in þe vices of Ire. ffor oft tyme if a man be wrooþ wip a-noþere þan wil he flater some wizt^t to susteyne hym in his quereH

[619] Speke we now of such cursyng^t as cometh out of yrous herte ¶ Malisouñ may be seide generally Eury maner power of harme such cursyng^t byreueþ man fro þe regne of god. as seiþ seynt^t paule [620] And oft ¶ Paulus. / tyme such cursing^t wrongfully retourneth azein to hym þat curseþ as a brid retourneþ azein to his owne nest^t [621] And ouer al þing^t men ouzt^t eschewe to curse her children and zeue to þe deueH her engendrure as ferforþ as in hem is ¶ Certes it is a grete perile and grete synne.

[622] Lat^t vs þan speke of chidyng^e and reproche
 which bene grete woundes in mannys hert^t ffor
 þei vnsewen þe semes of ffrendship in mannys hert^t.
 [623] ffor certes vnneþes may a man pleyntly ben
 accorded wiþ hym þat^t haþ hym openly revelyed and
 reproued and disclaundred þis is a ful grisly synne
 ¶ And crist^t seip in þe gospeH [624] ¶ And take kepe nowe
 þat^t he þat^t reproueþ his neighbour eþere he reproueþ
 hym by som harme of peyne þat^t he haþ on his body.
 as meseH croked harlot^t or by some synne þat^t he doþ
 [625] ¶ Now if he reproue hym by harme of peyn
 þan turneþ þe prophete to Ihesu Crist^t. ffor peyne is
 sent^t by þe riȝtwis sonde of god and by his suffraunce
 be it^t meselrye or maym or maladie [626] and if he
 reproue hym vncharitably of synne as þou hullour þou
 dronklewe harlot^t and so forþ þat^t apperteneþ þat^t
 to þe roiouyng^t of þe deueH þat^t euer haþ ioye
 þat^t men doñ synne [627] ¶ And certes chyding^t may
 not^t come but^t of vileyns hertes. ffor after þe
 habundaunce of þe hert^t spekeþ þe mouþ ful oft^t
 [628] And ȝe shullen vnderstonde þat^t loke by eny way
 whan eny man shal chastise a noþer þat^t he be ware
 fro chydyng^t or reprouyng^e ffor trewly but^t he be
 ware he may ful listly quykken þe fyre of angre and of
 wretth which þat^t he shuld^t quenche. and perauenture
 scleeþ ¹him þat^t he myȝt^t chastise wiþ benyg-
 nyte [629] ¶ ffor as seip Salomon ¶ The amyable tunge is
 þe tree of lif þat^t is to saye of lif spirituel. and
 a disselaue tunge scleeþ þe spirit^t of hym þat^t
 reproueþ and eke of hym þat^t is reproued [630] ¶ Loo
 ¶ Augustinus./ what^t saip seint^t Austyn ¶ Ther nys no þinge ylike þe
 ¶ Paulus./ deuels child^t as he þat^t oft^t chideþ ¶ Seynt Poule seip
 eke ¶ I þe Seruaunte of god by-houeþ not^t to chide. [631] and
 howe þat^t chydyng^t is a vileyns þinge bytwix al
 manere folk. ȝit^t is it^t certes most^t vnconnable
 by-twix a man and his wiff. for þer nys neuer rest^t

¶ And þerfor seiþ Salomon ¶ An hous þat is vnkeuered ¶ Salomon.
 in reyn and dropping^t and a chidyng^t wiff bene ylike
 [632] a man þat is in a dropping hous in mony
 places. they hee eschewe þe dropping^t in oon place
 it droppeþ on hym in a noþer place ¶ So fareþ it be
 a chiding wiff. but she chide hym in oo place she
 wol chide hym in anoþer [633] And þerfore better is ¶ *Idem.*
 a morsel of brede with Ioye þan an hous ful of
 delices wiþ chidyng^t seiþ Salomon [634] ¶ And
 poule seiþ O þe wommen be þe subiectys to þoure ¶ *Paulus.*
 husbondes as byhoueþ in god. And þe men loueþ þoure
 wyues. Ad colonisenses .3^o.

[635] ¶ Afterward speke we of scornynge which is a
 wikked synne And namely whan he scorneþ a man for
 his good werkes. [636] for certes suche scorners
 faren like þe foule tode þat may not endure to
 smett þe swete sauour of þe vyne what it
 florsshēþ [637] ¶ Thise scorners bene partyng^t felawes
 wiþ þe deueñ. for þei han Ioie whan þe deuel
 wynneþ and sorowe whan he leseþ [638] ¶ They bene
 aduersaries to Ihesu crist for þei haten þat he loueþ
 þat is to say sauacioñ of saule

[639] ¶ Speke we nowe of wikked counsaile. ffor he þat
 wikked counsaile zeueth is a traitour. ffor he disceyueþ
 hym þat trusteþ in hym Vt Achitofel de Absolonem
 ¶ But napeles 3it is it wikked counsaile ffirst azeinst hym
 self [640] for as seiþ þe wise man Euery fals
 lyuyng^t hap his propre in hym self þat he þat
 wiþ any anoþer man he annoyeþ furst hym self.
 [641] And men shullen vnderstonde þat man shal not
 take his counsaile of fals folk ne of to angry folk or
 greuous folk ne of folk þat louen specialy to moche her owne
 profite ne to moch worldly folk namely in counsailling^t
 of saules

[642] ¶ Now commeþ þe synne of hem þat
 maken discorde amonges / folk which is a synne þat

crisť hateþ vtterly and no wonder is. ffor he deyed
 forto make concorde. [643] And more shame done þei to
 crisť ʿþan did þei þatʿ hym crucified ffor god
 loueþ better þatʿ frendship be amonges folkʿ ʿþan
 he did his owne body þe which he ʒaf for vnitees.
 therefore bene þei likned to þe deuel þatʿ euer is
 aboutʿ to make discordʿ

[644] ¶ Now commeþ þe synne of double tunge. such
 as speken faire to-fore folk and wikkedly behynde or
 ellis þei / maken semblauntʿ as þouze þei speken of
 good entencioñ or ellis in game and pley and ʒitʿ þei
 speke of wikked entent

[645] ¶ Now commeþ bywreyingʿ of counsaile þorgh
 which a man is defamed vnneþes may he restore þe
 damage

[646] ¶ Now commeþ manace þatʿ is an open foly ffor
 he þatʿ open manaceþ he treteþ more þan he may
 performe ful often tyme

[647] ¶ Now commeþ ydel wordes þatʿ is wiþ-uten
 profite of hym þatʿ spekeþ þe wordes. and eke of hym
 þatʿ harkenep þoo wordes // or ellis ydel wordes. ben /
 þoo þatʿ bene nedeles or wiþ-uten ententʿ of naturel
 profite. [648] and al be itʿ þatʿ ydel wordes be som-
 tyme venial synne ʒitʿ shuldʿ men doute hem. for we
 shullen ʒeue rekenyngʿ of hem to-fore god

[649] ¶ Now commeþ Iangelynge þatʿ may notʿ come wiþ-
 oute synne. And as seiþ Salomon ¶ Itʿ is signe of a-pertʿ
 foly [650] and þerfor a philisophre seide whan
 a man asked hym how men shulde plese þe puple.
 And he answerdʿ to mony good werkes and speke fewe
 Iangelynggs

[651] ¶ After þis commeþ þe synne of Iapes. þatʿ
 bene deuels apes. for þei maken folk to lauze atʿ
 her Iaprie as folkes doon atʿ þe gaudes of an ape.
 Suche Iapes defendep seintʿ Poule [652] ¶ Loke how
 þatʿ vertuous wordes and hooly conforten hem

þat' travaillen in þe seruise of criste Riȝt' so conforten
þe vileyns words and knakkes of Iapers hem þat'
trauailen in þe servise of þe deueH [653] ¶ These bene
þe synnes / þat' comen of þe tunge þat' comen of Ire
and of other synnes

[*Remedies against Ire.*]

[654] ¶ The remedye aȝeinst' Ire is a vertue þat' men
clepen mansuetude þat' is debonairete and
eke a nother vertue þat' men clepe pacience [.
no gap in the MS.]

[655] ¶ Debonairte wiȝdroweþ and refreyneþ
þe styryngges and þe meuyngs of mannys corage in his
hert' and such' manere þat' þei ne skippe not' out' by
anger ne by Ire [656] suffraunce suffreþ swetly al
þe annoyaunces and þe wrongges þat' men doon to a man
outward' [657] ¶ Seint' Ierom seiþ þus of debonaire ¶ **Ieronimus**
þat' hit' dooþ noon harme to no wiȝt' ne seiþ for noon
harme þat' men hym done ne sayn He ne eschaungeþ nouȝt'
aȝeinst' his resoñ. [658] This vertue som /¹somtyme commeþ
of nature ¶ ffor as seiþ þe philisophre. A man is a quyk
þinge by nature. debonaire and treteable by goodnes
But' whan debonaire is enfourmed by grace. it
is þe more worþ

[659] ¶ Pacience þat' is anoþer remedye aȝeinst' Ire
is a vertue þat' suffreþ swetely euery mannys goodnesse
and is not' worþ for non harme þat' is doon to hym
[660] ¶ The philisofre seiþ þat' pacience is þilk
vertue þat' suffreþ debonairely aH þe outrages of
aduersite and euery wikked worde. [661] This vertue
makeþ a man like to god. and makeþ hym his
owne dere childe as seiþ crist'. This vertu discomfiteþ
þine enemye And þefore seiþ þe wise man If þou
wilt venquyssh þine / ennemye. lerne to suffre [662] And
þou shalt' vnderstonde þat' a / man suffreth four maner

of greuauce in outward þingges. azeinst which foure he mote haue iiij. maners of paciencis ./

[663] ¶ The furst greuauce is of wikked wordes. þilk greuauce suffreþ Ihesu crist wip-uten grucchinge ful patiently whan þe Iwes despised hym and reproueden hym ful oft [664] Suffre þou þefore patiently. ffor þe wise man eke seiþ ¶ If þou stryue wip a fool þoughe þe fool be wroþ. or þouze he lauze algate þou shalt haue no rest. [665] That oþer greuauce outward is forto haue damage of þi cateH ¶ Ther azeinst suffred crist ful patiently whan he was dispoilled of al þat he had in this liff and þat nas but his cloþes [666] ¶ The iiij. greuauce is a man to haue harme in his bodye. and þat suffred crist ful patiently in aH his passiõ [667] ¶ The iiij. greuauce is in an outrageous labour in werkes. wherfore I say þat folk þat maken her seruantes to travaille to greuously or out of tyme as in holy days. soþly þei doon grete synne. [668] Here azeinst suffred crist ful patiently and taught vs patience whan he bare vpon / his blessed shulder þe crois vpon which he shuld suffre dispitous deep. [669] Here may men lerne to be pacient. ffor soþly not oonly cristen men bene pacient for þe loue of Ihesu crist and for guerdõ of þe blisse of heuene and of þe blisful liff þat is perdurable But certes þe olde paynmys þat neuere were cristen com-menden & vseden þe vertue of pacience

¶ Philosophus

[670] A philisophre vpon a tyme þat wold haue beten his disciple for his grete trespace. for which he was gretly ameued and brouzt a zeerd to scoure þe childe [671] and whan þe childe segþ þe zeerde he seide to his maister what wil ze doo. I wil bete þe quod his maistere. for þine correctioun. [672] ffor soþ quod þe childe ze ouzt first correcte zoure self þat hap lost zoure pacience for þe gilt of a childe. [673] ffor soþ quod þe maister al wepinge þu

saicst þe soop. Haue þou þe 3erde my dere sone and correcte me for myn Inpacience [674] ¶ Of pacience commeth obedience þorgh which a man is obedien to crist and into alle hem to which he ouzt be obedient in crist [675] and vnderstonde wel þat obedience is parfite whan men doon gladly and hastely wip good hert entierly al þat he shuld do. [676] Obedience / generally is to *perfourme* þe doctrine of god and of his souereins to whiche hym ouzte to bene obeysaunt in al ri3twisnesse

¶ *De peccato accidie* [*from margin*]

[677]

Aftere þe synnes of Envie I wil speke of þe synne of Accidie. ffor Envie blyndeþ þe hert of a man. And Ire troubleth a man. and accidy makeþ hym hevye þou3tful and wrowe [678] ¶ Envie and Ire maken bitternesse in hert which bitternesse is / modere of accide and bynymeþ hym þe loue of al goodnes þat is acyde þe angwissþ of a trouble hert and seynt Austyne seiþ it is anoye of goodnesse and anoy of harme. [679] / Certes þis is a dampnable synne for it dooþ wronge to Ihesu crist in as moch as he nymeþ þe seruice þat men ouzt to doo Ihesu crist wip al diligence as seiþ salomon / ¶ *Salomon.* / [680] But accide dooþ noon suche diligence He doþ al þing wip anoy and wrawnesse slaknesse and escusaciõn and wip dulnesse and vnlust ¶ ffor which þe booke seiþ. Accursed be he þat doþ þe seruise of god negligently [681] Than is accidy ennye to euery estate of man for certes þe estate of man is in þre maners. [682] eiper It is þe estate of Innocence as was þe estate of Adam byforn þat he felle in to synne in which estate he was halden to wirche as in heryng and in adouryng of god [683] ¶ Anoþer estate is þe estate of synful men in which estate men ben halden

to labour in preyng^t to god for amendement^t of her
 [.] *no gap in the MS.*
 synnes [684] ¶ Anoper estate is þe estate of grace in
 whic^h estate he is halden to do werkes of penitence and
 certes to a^{ll} þise þingges is accidye / enemye and con-
 trary for he loueþ no bysynes at^t a^{ll} [685] ¶ Now
 certes þis foule synne accidye is eke a ful gret^t enemye
 to þe lifflode of þe body for it^t haþ no purvyaunce
¹aʒeinst^t temporel necessite ffor it^t is for-
 slewþe and for-scluggeþ and distroieþ al good temporels by
 rechelesnesse

[686] The iiij. þinge is þat^t accidie is like hem
 þat^t bene in þe peyne of helle by cause of her scloupe
 and of her heynesse. for þei þat^t bene dampned bene
 so bounde þat^t þei ne may wel do ne wel
 þenk^t. [687] Of accidy commep first^t þat^t a man is
 anoied and encombred to doon eny goodnesse and
 makeþ þat^t god haþ abhomynacioⁿ of such
 accidye as seith seynt^t Iohn

¶ *sanctus*
Iohannes.

[688] ¶ Now commep sleuthⁿ þat^t wil not suffre noon
 hardnesse ne no penaunce ffor soþ scloupe is so
 tendere and so delicate as seiþ Salomon þat^t he wil not
 suffre noon hardnesse ne penaunce and þefore he
 sheendeþ a^{ll} þat^t he dooþ [689] aʒeinst^t his roten
 herted synne of accidie and scloupe shulde men
 exercise by hem self to done good werkes and manly
 and vertuousli cacchen corage wel to done þenk-
 yng^t þat^t our lorde Ihesu crist^t quiteþ euery good
 dede be it^t neuere so lite./ [690] Vsage of labour is a
 grete þing^t for it^t makeþ as seiþ Seynt^t Bernard^t þe
 laborers to haue stronge armes and harde Synewes and
 sclouthe makeþ hem feble and tendere [691] Than commeth
 drede forto bygynne to wirkes ffor
 certes he þat^t is enclyned / to synne hym þenkþ it^t
 is so grete an emprise forto vndertake to do werkes
 of goodnesse [692] [.]

¶ *Salomon*

¶ *Bernardus*

.

 . . . *no gap in the MS.*] as seiþ Seint^t gregorie.

[693] ¶ Now commep wanhope þat^t is despeire of þe mercy of god þat^t commep somtyme of to moehⁿ outrageous sorowe and somtyme of moche drede ymagynunge þat^t he haþ do so moehⁿ synne þat^t it^t wil not^t auaille hym þouþe he wolde repent^t hym and forsakesynne and doon good [694] þorþe whichⁿ dispeire or drede he boundeneþ his hert^t to euery maner synne as seiþ seint^t Austyne [695] ¶ Whichⁿ dampnable synne if þat^t ¶ *Augustinus* it^t contynue vnto his ende. it^t is cleped synnyng^t in þe holy goost^t [696] This orible synne is so perilous þat^t he þat^t is despeired þer nys no felonye ne no synne þat^t he douteþ for to doo as shewed wel by Iudas [697] Certes þen abouen aþ synnes is þis synne most^t displeasunt^t to crist^t and most^t aduersarie to crist^t. [698] Soþly he þat^t dispeireþ he is like þe coward^e championⁿ recreaunt^t and seiþ creaunt^t wiþouten nede Allas / alas / nedeles is he recreaunt^t ¹and seiþ creaunt^t ^[1—¹ repeated in MS.] and nedeles / despeired [699] ffor certes þe mercy of god is euer redy to þe penyentent. it^t is abouen aþ his werkis [700] ¶ Allas can a man not^t ²vmbyþenke hym of þe gospel of Luke xv°. Where as crist seiþ þat^t as wel shal ¶ *Luce xxv°.* þer be ioye in heuene vpon a synful / man þat^t doþ penyentence þan vppon 90. 19. Ryzful men þat^t [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] neden to penyentence [701] ¶ Loke forþer in þe gospels þe Ioye and / þe feestes of þe good man þat^t had lost^t his / sone. Whan his sone wiþ repentaunce was retourned to his fadere. [702] Can / þei not^t remembre hem eke þat^t as seiþ seint^t luca xxiii°. Hou þat^t þe þeef þat^t was honged ¶ *Luce xxiiij°* besides Ihesu cristes side ¶ Lord remembre on me whan þou comest into þi regne. [703] fforsoþⁿ seide crist^t to day shalt^t þou be wiþ me in paradys [704] Certes þer nys noon so horrible synne of

man þat it ne may in his lif be destroyed by penytence þorgh vertue of þe passiozn and of þe deep of crist [705] ¶ Allas what nedep man þan to be despeired sipens his mercy so redy is to aske and haue [706] ¶ þan / commep sompnolence þat is seluggy selumbringe which makeþ a man be hevie and dulle in body and in saule and þis synne commep of scoupe [707] And certys þe tyme þat by way of resoñ men shuld not slepe þat is by þe morowe but if þer were cause resonable [708] ¶ ffor soply in þe morowe tyde is most conable a man to say his preiers and forto þenken on god. and to honouren god and to zeuen almesse to þe poor þat first comen in þe name of criste [709] ¶ Lo what seip Salomon. who so wil by þe morowe awake to seke me. he shal fynde [710] ¶ Than commeth necligence or rechelesnesse þat rekketh of no þinge and how þat ignoraunce is modere of al harme ¶ Certes necligence is þe norice. [711] necligence ne dop no force whan he shal done eny þinge whedere he do it wel or badly

¶ Salomon .

[712] ¶ Of þe remedie of þise two synnes as seip þe wise / man þat he þat dredep god spareþ not to done þat hym ouzt to done [713] and he þat louep god. he wil do diligence to plesse. god by his werkes and abounden hym self wip al his myzt wel forto doon. [714] þan commep ydelnes þat is þe zate of al harmes. An ydel man is like to a place þat hap no walles þe deueH may entre on euery side or shete at hym at discouerte by temptacioñ on euery side [715] This ydelnesse is þe thurrok of al wikked and vyleyns þouztes. and of alle Iangelingges trowfuls and al ordure [716] ¶ Certes þe heuene is yzeue to hem þat wil labour. and nouzt to ydel folk' ¶ Eke dauid¹ seip þat þei ne be not in þe labour of men. ne þei shul not be whipped wip men þat is to say in purgatorie

¶ sapiens

¶ dauid

[717] ¶ Certes þan semep it. þei shul be tormented wip þe deuel in helle but if þei done penitence

[718] ¶ Than commep þe synne þat men clepen tarditas as was a man is so lattred and so taryng' er he wil turne to god. and certes þat is a grete foly. he / is like hym þat falleþ in þe diche and wil not arise. [719] And / þis vice commep of fals hope. þat he þenkeþ he shal lyue longe. but þat hope failleth ful oft'

[720] Than commeth lacchesse þat is he þat whan he bygynnep eny good werk. anoon / he wil forlete it and stynt. as done þei þat han eny wiȝt to gouerne and ne taken of hym no more kepe anoon as þei / fynden eny contrary or eny anoye [721] ¶ These ben þe newe shipardes þat laten her shepe wetyngly go rennen to þe / wolf þat is in þe breres or doon no force of her owne gouernaunce [722] ¶ Of þis commep pouerte and distruction boþ of spirituel and of temporel þingges. Than commeth a manere of coldnesse þat freseþ aȝ þe hert' of a man

[723] ¶ Than commeth vndeuocon þorghē which a man is so blent. And as seiþ seint Bernard^{us} haþ such langour in ¶ **Bernardus** soule þat he may neiþere rede ne syngē in holy church ne þenk on deuocion ne travaille wip his hondes in no good werk þat it ne is / to hym vnsauery and al appalled [724] þan wexeþ he sore and / sclowe and slumbry and sone wil be wroop and sone is / enclyned to hate and to Envie [725] ¶ Than commep þe synne of worldly sorowe. which þat is cleped tristicia þat scleeþ a ¶ **Tristicia** / man. as seiþ seint Paule [726] ffor certes such sorowe wirkeþ to þe deef of þe saule and of þe body ¶ Also for þerof commeth þat a man is annoyed of his owne liff [727] Wherefore such sorowe shortep ful often þe lyf // of a man er þat his tyme comen is by way of kinde

[*The Remedy against Accidie.*]

[728] ¶ Azeinst þis horrible Synne of Accide and þe
 braunches of þe same Ther is a vertue þat' is called
 ¶ fortitudo. / fortitudo or strenght þat' is an affeccioñ þorgh
 which a man despiseþ al noyous þinge [729] ¶ This
 vertue is so myȝty and so vigorous' þat' it' dar wiþstonde
 myȝtely and wrastel azeinst' þe Sawtes of þe deuēth
 and wisly kepen hym self fro periles þat' bene wikked
 [730] for it' enchaunseþ and enforseþ þe soule ¹riȝt' as
 accidy abateþ it' and makeþ it' feble. ffor þis fortitudo
 may endure by longe suffraunce þe trauailes þat' bene
 conable

[731] ¶ This vertue haþ mony spyces ¶ The
 furst' is cleped magnanimitas. þat' is to / saye grete corage.
 ffor soþly þer byhoueþ grete corage azeinst' Accidye lest'
 þat' it' swelowe þe soul by þe synne of sorowe. or
 destroy it' by wanhope. [732] This vertu makeþ
 folk vndertake harde þingges. and greuous þingges
 by her owne wille wisely and resonably [733] And for
 as moçh as the deuel fighteþ azeinst' man. more by
 queynteyse & by sleight' þan by strenght' þerfore a man
 shal withstonde hym by witte and by resoñ and by dis-
 crecioñ [734] ¶ Then ben / þer þe vertues of feiþ and
 hope in god and in his seyntes to atcheuen and accomplise
 þe good werkes in which he purposeþ feermely
 to contynue [735] ¶ Than commeþ suerte or sikernesse
 and þat' is whan a man ne douteþ no trauaile in tyme
 commynge of þe good werk' þat' a man / haþ bygonne
 [736] ¶ Than commeþ Magnificence. and þat' is to sayn whan
 a man doþ and perfourmeþ grete werkes of goodnesse
 þat' he haþ bygonne. and þat' is þe ende whi þat' men shuld
 doo good werkes. ffor in þe accompling' of good
 werkes lith þe grete guerdoun [737] ¶ Than is þer
 constaunce þat' is stablenesse of corage and þis shulde
 be in hert' by stedfast' feiþ and in mouþe and in

berynge and in chere and in dede [738] ¶ Eke þer bene moo / special þingges and remedies azeinst Accidie in dyuers werkes and in consideracions of þe pyne of helle and of þe Ioye of heuene and in þe trust of þe grace of þe holy goost þat wil zeuen hym myzt to perfourmen his entent

¶ De auaricia .

[739]

Aftere Accidie wil I speke of avarice and of ¶ De Auaricia coueytise of which synne seiþ seint Poule ¶ Paulus þat þe Roote of all synne is coueitise ¶ And Thimothei 2^o Capitulo. [740] ffor trewly. whan þat þe hert of ¶ Timothei *secundo*. a man is confounded in it self and trouble and þat þe saule haþ lost þe comferte of god þan sekeþ he an ydel solace of worldly þingges

[741] ¶ Auarice aftere þe scripcion of seynt Austyne ¶ Augustinus is a likerousnesse in herte to haue erþely þingges.

[742] Som ¹oper folk seyn þat auarice is forto purchase mony erþely þingges and no þinge zeue to hem þat han nede. [743] And vnderstonde þow wel þat auarice nys not oonly in land ne cateH but somtyme in science and in glorie and in euery manere of outrageous þingges is auarice and coueitise [744] And þe difference ytwix Auarice and coueitise is þis Coueitise is forto coueite suche þingges as þow hast not And auarice is forto wiþholde and kepe suche þingges as þow hast wiþ-out riȝtful nede [745] Soþly þis Auarice is a synne þat is ful dampnable for al holy writte curseþ it and spekeþ azeinst it ffor it doþ wronge to Ihesu crist [746] for it byreueþ hym þe loue þat men to hym owen and turneþ it bakward azeinst all resoñ [747] and makeþ þat þe auaricious man haþ more hope in his catel þan in Ihesu crist And
[.
. no gap in the MS.] [748] þerfore seiþ

¶ *Ephesianos*
5^o *capitulo*

seyñ Paule *Ephesianos* .5^o. That^t auerous man / haþ more hope in his þraldome of ydolatrie

[749] ¶ What^t difference is ytwix an ydolastre and an auarous man but^t þat^t an ydolastre and an auarous man ne haþ but^t a mawmet^t or twoo^t; and þe auaricious man haþ monye ffor certes euey floreyñ in his Coffre is his mawmet^t [750] And certes þe synne of Maumetrie is þat^t god in þe ten / comaundmentes as bereþ wnesse in *Exodi capitulo* .xx^o. [751] Thou / shalt^t haue no fals goddes byform me. Ne þou shalt make to þe no grauen þinge. Thus as is an Auaricious man [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] ¶ And ydolastre [752] þorgh his synne of Auarice and of coueitise commen þise hard^t lordshippes þorgh^t which^t men ben strayned by taliages. custumes and cariages more þan / her duete or reson is ¶ And ellis take þei of her bonde men amercementz which myghten more resonably be cleped extorcions þan amercymentz. [753] Of which^t amercymentes and raunsonynge of boond men some lordes Stuardes seyñ þat^t it^t is rihtful^t for as moche as a cherle haþ no temporell þinge. þat^t it^t ne is his lordes as þei sayne. [754] But^t certes þise lordshippes doon wronge þat^t byreuen her bonde folk^t þingges þat^t þei neuere ne 3af hem. / *Augustinus de Civitate libro* ix^o. [755] ¶ Soop is þat^t þe condicioñ of þraldome and þe furst^t cause of þraldome is for synne. *G[e]nesis* v^{to}.

¶ *Augustinus de*
civitate. libro.
ix^o¶ *Genesis* .5^{to} /

[756] Thus may 3e seen þat^t þe gilt^t deserueth thraldom ¹But^t not^t nature [757] Wherfor þise lordes ne shuld not^t moche glorifie hem in her lordship siþens þat^t by naturell condicions þei bene [not] lordes ouer her þralles. but for þat^t þraldom come furst^t by desert^t of synne. [758] And ferþer ouer þer as þe lawe seiþ þat^t temporell goodes of bonde folk bene þe goodes of her lordshippes 3e þat^t is forto vnderstonde þe goodes of þe Emperour to defende hem in her riht^t but^t not^t to robbe hem ne to reue hem. [759] ¶ And þerfore

¶ *Seneca*

seip Senec'. Thy prudence shuld lyue benignely wip
þine þraht. [760] Thilk' þat' þou clepest' þine þraht
bene goddys puple. ffor humble folk bene cristes frendes
þei bene contubernial wip þe lord'

[761] ¶ Thenk' eke þat' suche sede as churles ¶
springen: of suche seed springgen lordes. as wel may
þe cherle be saued as þe lorde. [762] þe same deþ þat'
takeþ þe cherle. þe same deþ takeþ þe lorde. wherfore I
rede do riht' so wip þi cherle as þou woldest'
þi lorde did wip þe if þou were in his plite
[763] Euery synful man is a cherle to synne ¶ I rede
þe Certes þat' þou lorde worche in suche wise þat'
þi cherles raþer loue þe than drede þe [764]
¶ I woote wel þer is degree aboue degre as resoñ
is and skiht is þat' men / done her devoyre þer as it' is dwe
But' certes extorcions and despites of þoure vnderlyngges is
dampnable.

[765] And forther ouer vnderstonde weht þat'
conquerours or tyrauntz maken ful often þralles of
hem þat' bene born of as Royal blood as bene þei þat'
hem conqueren. [766] This name of thraldome was
neuere knowe erst' til þat' Noe seid þat' his sone ¶ **De Noe**
Canaan shuld be þraht to his breþeren for his synne.
[767] ¶ What say we þan of hem þat' pillen and done
extorcions to holy church ¶ Certes þe swerd' þat'
me zeuen furst' to a knyght' whan he is newe dubbed
signifieþ þat' he shuld defende holy church and
nouzt' robbe it' and who so doop is a traitour'
to crist'. [768] as seip seynt' Austyne ¶ They bene ¶ **Augustinus**
deuels wolves þat' stranglen þe shepe of Ihesu
criste and bene wors þan wolves. [769] ffor soþly
whan þe wolf haþ ful his wombe. He stynteth to
strangle shepe. But' soþly þe pylours and distroy-
ours of good of holy church ne doon not' so for þei ne
stynte neuere to pillen. [770] Nowas I haue seide so siþensso
is ¹þat' synne was furst' cause of thraldome Than it' is

þus þat þilk tyme þat al þis world was in synne
 þan was al þis worlde in þradome and in subiection./
 [771] But certes siþen þe tyme of grace cam god
 ordeyned þat some folk shuld be more highe in estate
 and hie degree. and some folk more lowe and þat
 eueryche shulde be serued in his estaat/ and in degre.
 [772] And þerfore in some contrey þer þei bene
 þralles whan þei / han turned hem to þe feiþ þei maken
 her þralles free out of þradome And þerfor certes
 þe lorde oweþ to his man þat þe man oweþ to
 his lorde [773] ¶ þe pope clepeþ hym self seruauante
 of Seruauantes of god. But for as moche as þe state of
 holy church ne myȝt not han bee ne þe comon
 profite ne myȝt han be kept ne pees and rest in
 erþe but if god had ordeyned þat som men han
 hier degre and somme men lowere [774] ¶ þerfor was
 souereynte ordeyned to kepe and mayntene and de-
 fende her vnderlyngges or her subiectes in resoñ as fer-
 forþe as it liþe in her power and not to distroye hem
 ne as ferforþ confounde. [775] wherfore I say þat þilk lordes
 þat bene þilk wolfes þat deuouren þe possessions or
 þe catel of poor folk wrongfully wip-outen mercy or
 mesure [776] þer shullen reseuyue by þe same mesure
 þat þei han mesured to poor folk þe mercy of Ihesu
 crist but it be amended [777] ¶ Now commeþ despitte
 bytwix Marchaunt and marchaunt. And þou shalt vnder-
 stonde þat Marchaundise is in mony maners. þat oon
 is bodyly & þat oþer is goostly. þat oon is
 leefful and þat oþer is dishonest and vnlieful
 [778] ¶ of þilk bodily marchaundyse þat is leefful and
 honest is þis þat þer as god hath ordeyned þat a
 regne or a contre is sufficient him self þan is it
 honest and liefful þat of þe habundaunce of þis cuntre
 þat men helpe anoþer cuntre þat is more nedye
 [779] and þerfore þei mote be Marchauntz to
 bringe from þat oon cuntre to þat oþer her march-

aundise../ [780] ¶ That' oþere marchaundise þat' men
 haunte wiþ fraude trecherye and disceyte wiþ
 lesyngges and fals oþes is cursed and dampnable.
 [781] ¶ Espirituel Marchaundise ¹is proprely Symonye
 þat' is ententif desire to by þenk' espirituel that' is
 þing' þat' apperteyneþ to þe sentuary of god and to
 cure of þe soule. [782] This desire if so be þat' a
 man do hys diligence to perfourme it' al be it' þat' his
 desire ne take noon effecte 3it' is it' to hym a dedly
 synne and if he be ordred he is aregulere [783] ¶ Certes
 Symony is cleped of Symon magus þat' wolde haue
 bouzt' þe temporel CateH./ þe 3ift' þat' god had 3euen /
 by þe holy goost' to seint' Peter and to þe apostels./
 [784] And þerfore vnderstondeþ þat' boþ he þat'
 selleþ and he þat' byeth þingges espirituel bene
 cleped Symonyals be it' catel be it' procurynge
 or by fleshly preier of his frendes or of spirituel
 frendes [785] [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 Soþly if þei prey for hym þat' is not' able ne worþi. it'
 is Symonye. If he take þe benefice and if he be worþi and
 able he nys noon. [786] ¶ That' oþer maner is if a man
 or a womman preyþ for folk to auaunsen hem / only for
 wikked fleshly affectioñ þat' þei han vnto þe persones
 and þat' is in foule Symonye. [787] But' certes in seruice
 for which men 3euen þingges espirituels vnto her
 seruautes It' most' be vnderstonde þat' þe seruise
 most' be honest' and ellis not'. and eke þat' hit be
 wiþ out' barganyng and þat' þe persone be able.
 [788] ffor as seiþ seint' Damascie ¶ Alle þe synnes of þe ¶ *Damascius*
 world' at' þe regarde of this synne bene as a þinge of nouzt'.
 ffor it' is þe grettest' synne þat' may be aftere ²þe synne ^{[2-3 repeated in}
 of lucifer² and of antecrist' [789] for by pis synne god ^{MS.]}
 forleseþ þe churche and þe soule þat' he bouzt' wiþ,
 his precious blood by hem þat' 3euen chirches to hem
 þat' bene not' digne. [790] ffor þei putten in þeues þat'

stelen þe soules of Ihesu crist and distroyeþ his patry-
 moyne [791] by suche vndigne preestes and curates
 han men þe lasse reuerence of þe sacramentes of
 holy churche. And suche 3euers of churches putten out
 þe children of crist. and putten in þe churche þe
 deuels owne sone. [792] þei sellen þe soules
 þe lombes shulden kepen to þe wolf þat strangleþ
 hem and þefore shul þei neuere haue parte
 of þe pasture of lambes þat is þe blisse of
 heuene. [793] ¶ Now commeþ hasardy with his a¹pur-
 tynaunces as tables and Rafuls of which commeþ disceite
 fals oþes chidyngges and aH ravanys blasphemynge
 and reneyng of god and hate of his neghbours waast
 of good in spendyng of tyme and somtyme mannys
 sclaughter [794] Certes hasardours ne may not be
 wiþ-out grete synne þe whiles þei haunte þat craft [795]
 Of Auarice commeþ eke lesingges. þeefþ and fals witnessse.
 and fals oþes and 3e shal vnderstonde þat þise bene grete synnes
 and expresse azeinst þe comaundementz of god as I haue
 said [796] ¶ fals witnessse is in worde and eke in dede
 In worde as forto byreue þine nei3bours good name
 by þi fals witnessinge or byreue hym his CateH or his
 heritage by þi fals witnessinge. whan þou for Ire or
 for mede or for envie berest fals witnessse or accusest
 hym. or excusest hym by þi fals witnessse. or ellis ex-
 cusest þine self falsly. [797] ware 3ou questmongers and
 notaries. Certes for fals witnessyng was Susanna in
 grete sorowe & peyn and mony anoþer moo [798] ¶ The
 synne of þeft is eke expres azeinst goddes heest and þat in
 two maners corporeH and spiritueH [799] [CorporeH]
 as for to take þine neighbours cateH azeinst his wille.
 be it by force or by sleight by it by mette or by mesure.
 [800] By stelynge eke of fals enditementz vpon hym and
 in borowing of þine neighbours CateH in entent neuer
 to pay. And semplable þingges [801] es-
 spiritueH þeft is sacrilege þat is to seyn hurt-

Of Hasardy

¶ De falso testi-
monio

¶ De furto

yunge of holy þingges or of þingges sacred to crist in two maners by resoñ of þe holy place as churches or chirchē hawes. [802] for euery vyleyns synne þat men doon in suche places may be cleped Sacrilege or euery violence in þe semblable places./ ¶ Also þei þat wiþdrawen falsly þe riȝtes þat longen to holy churchē. [803] And pleyfully and generally sacrilege is to ȝeue holy þinge fro holy place. or vnholy þinge out of holy place. or holy þing out of vnholy place

[*The Remedy against Avarice.*]

[804] ¶ Now shul ȝe vnderstonde þat þe releuyng of ¶ *Reuelacio*
 Auarice is misericordē and pite largely taken./ *Auaricie*
 ¶ And men myȝten axen why þat misericorde and pite is releuyng of auarice [805] ¶ Certes þe Auarous
 1man scheweth no pite ne misericordē to þe nedeful man ffor he deliteþ hym in þre kepingges of his tresoure and not in þe reskowinge ne releuyng of his euen-cristen and þerfore speke I first of misericorde [806] þan is misericorde as seiþ þe philosophre ¶ *Philosophus*
 ¶ A vertue by whiche þe corage of a man is stired by þe myssese of hym þat is myssesed [807] vpon which misericord foloweth pite in *perfourmyng* of charitable werkes of misericordē. [808] And certes þise meuen man to þe misericordē of Ihesu crist þat hym self for our gilt suffred deeth for misericordē and forȝaue vs our original synnes [809] and þer-by releued vs fro þe peyne of helle and amenuseþ þe peynes of purgatorie by penytence. and ȝeueþ grace wel to doo. and at þe last þe Ioie of heuene [810] The spices of misericorde bene as forto lene. and forto ȝeue / and forto [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] relees. and for to haue pite in hert and compassioñ of þe meschief of his

euencristen. and eke. chastise þer as nede is
 [811] ¶ Anoper maner' remedy azeinst' Auarice is
 resonable largesse. But' soþly here byhoueth þe con-
 sideracioñ of þe grace of Ihesu crist and of his
 temporeH goodes and eke of þe goodes *perdurables*
 þat' crist' 3aue vs. [812] and eke to haue remembrance of
 þe deep þat' he shal haue he noot' not' whan.
 and eke þat' he shal forgoon aH þat' he haþe
 [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] dispended in good

[813] ¶ But' for as moche as some folk bene vnmesur-
 able men ouȝten eschewe fool largesse þat' men
 clepen waast' [814] Certes he þat' is fool large ne
 3eueþ not' his cateH. but he leseþ his cateH. Soþly
 what' þinge þat' he 3eueþ for veyn glorie as to
 Mynstralles and to folk forto byreuen his renoun in þe
 world' he haþ do / [synne and non] almesse.
 [815] ce[r]tes he leseþ foule his good þat' he ne sekeþ
 no þinge of his good but' synne.
 [816] he is like to an hors þat' sekeþ raþer to drink'
 drovy or troubyly watere þan of þe
 elere welle [817] And for as moche as þei 3eue þere
 as þei shuld' not 3eue to hem apperteyneþ þilk
 malysoñ þat' criste shal 3euen at' þe day of dome to
 hem þat' shul be dampned. /

De Gula /

[818]

¶ Gula ./.

Aftere Auarice *commeþ* gloteny which is expresse eke
 azeinst' þe comaundement' of god ¶ Gloteny is
 vnmesurable appetit' to ete or to drink' or ellis
 to doon ynogh to þe vnmesurable and discorde
 coueityse to ete and to drynk' [819] ¶ This synne cor-
 rumpeþ al þis world' as is wel shewde in ¹in þe synne of
 ¶ Paulus Adam and of Eua ¶ Loo eke what' seiþ seynt' Paule of
 gloteny [820] ¶ Mony seiþ seiñt' Paule gooñ of which

¶ Paulus

I haue oft seide to 3ou. and nowe I seie it wepyng
 þat þei bene Enemyes of þe crois of crist of
 which þe ende is deef and of which her woombe is
 her god and her glorye in confusion of hem þat so
 saueren erþely þingges [821] he þat is vsant to
 þis synne of gloteny he ne may no synne wipstonde.
 he / mote bene in seruage of all vices. for it is þe deuels
 hoorde þer [he] hideþ him and restþ [822] ¶ This
 synne haþ mony spices ¶ The furst is drcnknes
 þat is þe horrible sepulcre of mannys resoñ And þer-
 fore whan þat a man is dronken. he haþ lost his resoñ and
 þis is dedly synne [823] ¶ But certes whan a
 man is nat wonte to straunge drynk and perauenture ne
 knoweþ not þe strength of þe drynk or haþ feblesse
 in his hede or haþ travailled þorgh which he drinkeþ
 þe moore al be he sodeynly cau3te wip drink it is no
 dedly synne. but venial [824] ¶ The secounde spice of
 Gloteny is þat þe spirit of a man wexeþ al trouble.
 for dronknesse byreueþ hym þe discreciõ of his witte
 [825] ¶ The þred spice of gloteny is whan a man
 deuoureþ his mete and haþ no ri3t-ful maner of etyng
 [826] ¶ The fourte is whan þorgh þe grete habund-
 aunce of his mete þe humours of his body bene dis-
 tempred [827] ¶ The v. is forzetelnesse by to mochel
 drynkyng. for which somtyme a man forzetþ by þe
 morowe what he did at Eue or on þe ny3t byfor

[828] ¶ In oþer manere bene distincte of vices & spices of
 gloteny aftere seint Gregorie ¶ The furst is forto ete by- ¶ *Gregorius.*
 fore tyme. The secounde whan a man geteþ hym
 to delicate mete [829] ¶ The iij. is whan
 men taken to moche ouere mesure ¶ The 4 is
 curiosite wip grete entent to maken and apparailen
 his mete ¶ The .v. is forto eten to gredely [830] These
 bene the .v. fyngers of þe / deuets honde. by which
 he draweþ folk to synne

[*The Remedy against Gluttony.*]

¶ *Remedium.* [831] ¶ Azeinst' gloteny is the remedy abstinence of his body as seiþ Galien. but þat' holdē I not' meritorie if he do it' only for þe help of his body ¶ Seynt' ¶ *Augustinus.* austyne wil þat' abstinence be doon for vertue & wiþ pacience [832] ¶ Abstinence he seiþ is litel worþ. but' if a / man haue good wille þerto / and but' if it be enforced by pacience and by charite and þat' men doon it' for goddys / sake and in hope to haue þe blisse of heuene

[833] ¶ The felowes of abstinence. bene attemper-
 aunce þat' haldeþ þe mene in alle þingges ¶ Eke
 shame þat' escheweþ aH dishoneste. Suffisaunce þat'
 sekeþ no riche metes ne drinks ne dooþ noo force of noon /
 outrageous apparaillynge of mete [834] Measure also
 þat' restreyneþ by resoñ þe delaue appetite of etynge.
 Sobrenesse also þat' restreyneþ þe outrage of drynk.
 [835] Sparyng' also þat' restreyneþ þe delicate eese to
 sitte longe atte mete and softly // wherfore some folk'
 stonden of her owne wille and to eten at' þe lasse leisere

¶ *De luxuria Sequitur.* /

[836]

¶ *Luxuria*

Aftere Gloteny commeth lecherye. ffor þise
 two synnes ben so nygh Cosyns þat' often tyme
 þei wil not' departe. / [837] God woote þis
 synne is ful displeaunt' þing' to god. ffor he / seiþ hym
 self. do no lecherye. And þerfore he putteþ grete peynes
 azeinst' þis synne. As in þe olde lawe. [838] ¶ If wom-
 man þral were taken in þis synne. she shuld be
 beten wiþ staues to þe dethe And if she were a gentile
 womman she shulde be sclayn with stones And if she
 were a bishoppes douzter' she shuld be brent' by
 goddis comandment' [839] ¶ fferþermore by þe
 synne of lecherye: god draynt' al þe world' at' þe

diluve. And after þat' he brent' .v. Citees wiþ
lizt' and sonke hem into helle

[840] ¶ Nowe lat' vs speke þan of þilk' stynkinge
synne of lechery. þat' men clepen aduoutrie of wedded
folk þat' is to say if þat' oon of hem be wedded
or ellis boop [841] ¶ Seint' Ioħn seiþ þat' þe aduoutrers ¶ *Sanctus*
schullen be in helle in a stynk' brennyng' of fuyre and *Iohannes.*
of bremstoon. In fuyre for lechery. In bremstone for þe
stynke of her ordure [842] ¶ Certes þe brekinge of
þis sacrament' is an horrible þinge. it' was made of
god hym self in Paradise and confermed by Ihesu crist' as
wittnesseþ seint' Mathewe in þe gospeH ¶ A man shal lete
fadere and modere and take hym to his wiff and þei
shul be twoo in oo flessħ [843] ¶ This sacrament' bytoken-
eþ þe knyttyng' to-gidere of crist' and of holy churche.
[844] and nat' oonly þat' god forbad aduoutrie in bedde.
but' eke he comaunded þat' þou shuldest' not' coveyte þine
neighbours wiff [845] ¶ In þis heest' seiþ seint'
Austyne is for-boden al manere coueitise to doon
lecherie ¶ Loo what' seiþ seint' Mathewe þe .v. chapitle / in þe ¶ *Augustinus*
gospeH. þat' who so seeþ a womman to coueitise of his lust. he ¶ *Matheus*
haþ doon lechery wiþ her in his hert [846] ¶ Here may 3e
see þat' not' oonly þe dede of this synne is forbode:
but' eke þe desire to doon þat' synne [847] ¶ This cursed
synne annoyep greuously hem þat' it' haunten and first'
to her saule for he obligep it' to synne and to peyne of
þe deep / þat' is perdurable. [848] vnto þe body annoyep
it' greuously also for it' driep hym and waasteþ hym / and
[. . . *no gap in MS.*] of his blood he makeþ sacrifice to þe
feende of helle. hit' waasteþ eke his cateH and his substannce.
[849] & certes if it' be a foule þing' a man to waast'
his cateH on wommen. 3it' is it' a foulere þinge whan þat'
for such' ordure wommen dispenden vpon men her cateH
and her substannce [850] ¶ This synne as seiþ the prophete ¶ *Propheta.*
byreueþ man and womman her good fame and al her
honore and it' is ful plesaunt to þe deuel. for þerby

wynneth he þe most partie of þis world
 [851] And riȝt as a marchante deliteþ hym most
 in chaffare þat he haþ most auantage of Riȝt.
 so deliteþ þe feende in þis ordure

[852] this is þat oþer hand of þe deuel wiþ .v.
 fynGRES to cacche þe puple to his vilanye [853] ¶ The
 first fynger is þe foolissh lokinge of the foolyssh man
 or the folissh womman þat sleepe riȝt as þe basilicok
 sleepe folk by þe venyme of his / sight. for þe Coueityse
 of þe eyen foloweþ þe couetise of þe herte [854] ¶ That
 oþer fynger is þe vileyns touchynge in wicked
 maner And þefore seiþ Salomoñ. þat who so
 toucheþ and handleþ a womman. he fareþ like hym
 þat handleþ þe scorpion þat stynges and sodeynly
 sleepe þourgh his enuenemynges. As who so toucheþ
 warme picch. he shent his fynGRES [855] ¶ The iij is
 foolissh wordes þat fareþ lich fire þat brenneþ. þat riȝt anoon
 brenneþ þe herte. [856] ¶ The iiij. is þe
 kysynge. And soþly he were a grete fool þat wolde
 kysse þe mouþ of a brennyng ouen or of a forneys.
 [857] And / more fooles bene þei þat kissen in vileynye
 for þat mouþ is þe mouþe of helle. And namely þise
 olde dotardes holours ȝit wil þei kisse þouze
 þei may not do. and smatere hem [858] ¶ Certes þei
 bene like to houndes. ffor an hounde whan he commeþ by
 þe Rosere or by oþer bewtees þouze he may not
 pisse. ȝit wil he heuene vp his legges and make coun-
 tenaunce to pisse. [859] And for þat mony man weneth
 þat he may noȝt synne for no likerousnesse þat he doþ
 with his wiff Certes þat opynyōn is fals ¶ God woote a
 man / may sele hym self wiþ his owne knyff. And maken
 hym drunke wiþ his owne tunge [860] Certes
 be it wif or childe or eny worldly þing þat he
 loueth tofore god it is his mameut and he is his ydolastre
 [861] ¶ A man shuld loue his wiff by discreciōn
 patiently and temperally And þan is she as it

were his suster' [862] ¶ The .v. ¹fynger' of þe deuels honde is þe stynkyngede dede of lecherie [863] Certes þe .v. fyngers of gloteny þe fende putte in þe wombe of a man. and wiþ þise .v. fyngers of lecherie he gripeþ hym by þe Raynes forto þrowe hym into þe fornais of helle. [864] þer as þei / shul han þe fuyr' and þe wormes þat' euere shul lasten. and wepyng' and waillyng'. sharp hunger' and þrest'. Grislynese of deuels þat' shullen alto treden hem wiþ-uten respite and wiþ-uten eende [865] ¶ Of lechery as I seide sourden dyuers spices As fornicacion þat' is bytwix man and womman þat' bene not' maried. and þis is dedly synne and azeinst' nature. [866] for al þat' is enemye and destruction to nature is azeinst' nature. [867] Parfay þe reson of a man telleth hym eke wel þat' it' is dedly synne for as moeh̄ as god forbode lechery. And saint Paule zeueþ hym þe regne þat' is due to no wiȝt ¶ But' to hem þat' doon dedly synne [868] ¶ A noþer synne of lechery is forto byreuen a maide of her maidenhode. ffor certes he þat' so dooþ he caccheth a mayde out' of þe hiest' degree þat' is in þis present' liff [869] and byreueþ hure pilk' pr[e]cious fruyte þat' þe boke clepeþ þe hundred' fruyte I ne can not' say it' in noon oþer way in engliss̄h. but' in latyne it' hight' Centesimus fructus [870] Certes he þat' so doþ is cause of mony damages and vilenyes moo þan eny man can rekne Riȝt' as he somtyme is cause of aȝ Damages þat' beestes doon in þe feelde þat' brekeþ þe hegge or þe closure þorowe which̄ he distroieþ þat' may not' be restored. [871] ffor certes no more may maidenhode be restored. þan an harme smyte fro þe body may retourne azein to waxe. [872] She may haue mercy þis wote I well if she doo penitence. but' neuer shal it' be þat' she nas corrupte. [873] And al be it' so þat' I haue spoken somewhat' of aduoutrie. it' is good to shewen moo periles þat' longen to aduoutrie forto eschewe þe foule

synne of [874] aduoutrie ¶ Auoutry in latyne is forto seyne
 approchinge of an oþer mannys bed. þooꝛgh which þoo þat
 whilom were oo flessħ. abounden her body to oþer persones
 [875] ¶ Of þis synne as seiþ þe wise man commep
 mony harmes ¶ ffirst brekinge of þei feiþ. And certes
 feiþ is keye of cristendome [876] And whan þat
 feiþ is broke and lorne. soþly cristendome stant.
 [veyne] And wiþ-out' fruyte [877] þis synne is eke a
 þeef./ ¶ ffor þeest' generalli to speke is forto Reue a wizt' his
 þing' azeinst' his wille. [878] Certes þis is þe foulest' þeft'
 that may be. whan 'a womman stelep her body from
 her husbond' and zeueþ it' to her holour to defoule
 her' and stelep her soule from crist' & zeueþ it' to
 þe deuel. [879] This is a foule[r] þeft' þan forto stele or breke
 þe chalice from þe autere. ffor þise aduoutrers
 breken þe temple of god spirituelly and stelen þe vessell
 of grace þat' is þe body and þe saule. ffor which crist'
 ¶ Paulus. shal destroien hem as seiþ seynt' Paule. [880] ¶ Soply
 of þis þeft' douted gretly Ioseph whan þat' his lordys
 wif preide hym of vilanye whan he saide ¶ lo my lorde
 howe my lady haþ take to me vnder my ward' al þat' he
 haþ in þis world'. ne no þing' of his ouzt' of
 my pouer' but' oonly ze þat' bene his wiff [881] and
 howe shuld' I þan doon þis wikkednesse & synne so
 horribli azeinst god. god it' forbede.
 Allas al to litel is suche troupe now yfounde [882] ¶ The
 iij. harme is the filþe þorowe þe which þei breken
 þe comaundemen of god and defoulen þe autere of
 her matrimoyne þat' is crist' [883] ffor certes in so moche
 as þe sacrament' of mariage is so noble and so digne. So
 moche it' is þe gretter synne forto breke it'. ffor god
 made mariage in paradys in þe estate of Innocence to
 multiplie mankynde to þe seruice of god. [884] and
 þefore is þe brekinge þerof greuous. Of which
 breking' commen fals heires often tyme þat' wrongfulli
 occupien folkes heritage and þefore wil crist' putte

hem out^t of þe regne of heuene þat^t is heritage to good folk [885] ¶ Of þis breking^t *commeþ* eke oft^t tymes þat^t folk vnware wedden or synnen with her owne kynrede. and namely þilk^t harlottes þat^t haunten bordels ¶ Of these fool wommen þat^t mowen be likned to a comune gonge wher as men purge her ordure [886] ¶ What^t say we eke of putours þat^t lyuen by þe horrible synne of Putrie and constreynen wommen 3e somtyme his owne wiff or his childe as doon þise bawdes to 3eelden hem a certeyn rent^t of her bodily putrie Certes þise bene cursed synnes [887] ¶ Vnderstondeþ eke þat^t aduoutrie is sette gladly in the x. comaundementz bytwix þeft^t and manys slaughter. for it^t is þe grettest^t þeft^t þat^t may be. ffor it^t is þeft^t of body and soule [888] and it^t is like homycide ffor it^t kerueþ a twoo and brekeþ a twoo hem þat^t furst^t were ymaked oo flessþ. and þerfor by þe olde lawe þei ¹shuld be slayn [889] But^t napelees by þe lawe of Ihesu crist^t þat^t is þe lawe of pite whan he saide to þe womman þat^t was / founde in aduoutrie and shuld^t haue bene slayn wip stones aftere þe wille of þe Iwes as was her lawe ¶ Go quod ihesu crist and haue no more wille to do synne or wil no more to do synne [890] Sonly vengeance of aduoutrie is a-warded to þe peyne of helle but^t it^t be destroubled by penaunce [891] ¶ 3it^t bene þere moo spices of þis cursed synne. as whan þat^t oon of hem is religious or ellis boop. or of folk þat^t bene entred into ordere as subdeken or deken or preest^t or hospitalers. and euer þe hier þat^t he is in ordere þe gretter is þe synne [892] The þingges þat^t gretly aggreggen. his synne is þe breking^t of his avowe of chaastite whan he receyueþ order^t. [893] And ferþer ouer. soop is þat^t holy order^t is cheef of all þe tresour of god. And his especial syngne and marke of^t chaastite to shewe þat^t þei bene Ioyned to chastite which þat^t is þe moost^t precious lif þat^t is. [894] And eke þise ordred folk^t bene specially tytled to god. and of þe

special mayne of god. ffor which whan þei doon dedly synne þei bene þe special traitours of god and of his puple. ffor þei lyuen of þe puple to prey for þe puple. And while þer bene such traitours her preiers availen not to þe puple. [895] ¶ Preestes bene as aungels as by þe dignite of hir mysterye ¶ But forsoþ seynt poule seiþ. þat sathanas transformeþ hym into an aungeþ of lizt. [896] Sople þe preest þat haunteþ synne he may be likned vnto þe aungel of derknesse. transformed in þe aungel of lizt ¶ He semeþ aungel of lizt. but forsoþ he is aungel of derknesse [897] ¶ Suche preestes bene þe sones of Belye. as scheweþ in þe boke of kyngges þat þei weren þe sones of Belial þat is þe deueþ [898] Belial is to say wiþ-out Iuge. and so faren þei. hem þenke þei bene free and han no Iuge no more þan haþ a free boole þat takeþ which kowe þat him litok in þe toune. [899] So faren þei by wemmen. ffor rizt [as] a fre bulle is ynouze for al a toune Rizt so is a / wikked preest corrupte ynough for al a parissþ or aþt a cuntree [900] This preestes as seiþ þe boke ne kon nott þe mysterye of preesthode to þe puple. ne god ne knoweþ hem nouzt They ne holden hem nouzt a-paide as seiþ þe boke of soden flessþ þat was to hem offred but þei toke by force þe flesshe þat is rawe [901] Certes rizt so þise schrewes ne holdene hem not a-paide of rosted flessþ and soden flessþ wiþ þe which þe pupeþ fedden hem in grete reuerence. But þei wil haue rawe flessþ as folkes wyues and her doughtren [902] ¶ And certes wommen þat consenten to her harlotrie done grete wronge to crist and to holy churche and to alhalowes and to aþt saules ffor þei byreuen al þese hym þat shulde worshipen crist and holy church and prey for cristen saules [903] And þefore han suche preestes and her lemmans eke þat consenten to her leccherie þe malisoþ of þe/ courte cristen to þei come to amendement

¶ Paulus.

[904] ¶ The iij spice of aduoutrie is somtyme by-twene a man and his wiff. & þat' is whan þei taken no reward' in her assemblynge but' only to her fleshly delite as seip' seint' Ierom. [905] and ne rekken of noþinge but' ¶ *Ieronomus* þat' þei bene assembled by cause þat' þei bene ymaried. al is good ynouze as þenkeþ to hem [906] But' in suche folk hap' þe deuel pouer as seide þe aungel Raphael ¶ *Angelus Raphael* to/ Thobie. ffor in her assemblynge þei putten Ihesu crist' out' of her hertes and zeue hem self to aȝ ordure [907] ¶ þe iiij spice is þe assemblynge of hem þat' bene of her kynrede. or of hem þat' bene of oon affinite or ellis wiþ hem wiþ þe which her faders or her kynrede han deled wiþ in þe synne of lecherie This synne makeþ hem liche houndes þat' taken no kepe of kynrede [908] and certes Parentela is in two maners oþer / goostly or fleshly. Goostely as forto delen wiþ her gossipes [909] ffor riȝt' so as [.] *no gap in the MS.*] is his godfader his fadere esprituel ffor which a womman may in no lasse synne assemble wiþ her Gossipe þan wiþ her owne fleshly broþere [910] ¶ The v. spice is þilk' abhominable synne of which þat' no man vnneþes ouȝt' to/ speke ne write // Napelees it' is openly rehersed in holy writt' [911] [.] *no gap in the MS.*] speke of horrible synne Certes holy writt' may not' be defouled no more þan þe sonne þat' shyneþ on a myxen./ [912] ¶ Anoper synne apperteneþ to lecherie þat' commeþ in sclepinge and þis synne commeþ oft' to hem þat' bene maydens and eke to hem þat' bene corrupte And þis synne men clepen pollucioȝ þat' commeþ in iiij. maners [913] Somtyme of a langwishing' ¹of body for þe humours bene to rank' and habundaȝt' in þe body of man. somtyme for þe infirmite for þe feblesse of þe vertue retentif' as phisik makeþ mencioȝ. somtyme for sorfete of mete and drinke [914] and somtyme for

vileyne þouȝtes þat bene enclosed in mannes mynde
whan he gooþ to slepe which may not bene wiþ-outhe
synne fro whiche þei may not kepe hem wisely or ellis
may men synne ful greuouſly

¶ *Remedium contra luxuriam*

[915] ¶ Now commeþ þe remedy aȝeinſt lecherie and þat
is generali chaastite and contynence at re-
freyneþ al þe diſordeyne meuyngges þat comen
of fleſhly talentes [916] And euere þe gretter merite
ſhal he haue þat moſt reſtreyneþ þe wikked encha-
winge of ordure of þis synne and this is in two
maners / þat is to ſayn. chaastite of mariage and chaſtite
of widowhede [917] ¶ Now ſhalt þou here þat
matrimoyne is leeful aſſemblyng of man and
woman þat reſceyuen by þe vertue of þe ſacrament þe
boond þorgh which þei may not bene departed in all hir
liff þat is to ſay. þe whiles þei lyuen boþ.
[918] this is as / seiþ þe book a ful grete ſacrament.
god made it as I haue ſaide in paradys and wold hym-
ſelf be born in maryage. [919] and for [to] halowe mariage
he was at a weddinge. Where as he turned water into
wyne which was þe fuſt myracle þat he wrouȝt in
erþe byforne his diſciples. [920] Trewe effecte of
mariage clenſeþ fornicaciõ & replenyſſheþ holy
church in good lynage. ffor as þe ende of mariage
as it chaungeþ dedly synne into venial ytwix
hem þat bene wedded / and makeþ þe hertys allon
of hem þat bene ywedded as wel as the bodies
[921] þis is verrey mariage þat is eſtabliſhed by
god er þat synne bygan. whan naturel lawe was in his
riȝt poynt in paradys. And it was ordeyned þat oo man
ſhuld haue but oo womman and oo womman but oo man
as seiþ ſeynt Auſtine by mony reſons

¶ *Augustinus*

[922] ffuſt for þat mariage is figured bitwix man. and

holy churche. And anoþer is. for þe man is hede of þe womman. Algate by ordynaunce it shulde be doo soo. [923] ffor if a womman haue moo men þan oon. þan shuld she haue moo hedes þan oon. and þat were and horrible þinge byfore god./ ¹And eke oon womman ne myzt not plesse to mony men at ones And also þe ne shuld be neuer pees no rest amonges hem for euereche wold aske his owne þinge [924] And ferþermore no man shulde knowe his owne engendrure ne who shuld haue his heritage and þe woman shuld þe lasse be byloued fro þe tyme þat she were commytte to mony men

[925] ¶ Nowe commeth how þat a man shuld bere hym wiþ hys wiff. and/ namely in two þingges þat is to say in suffranne and in reuerence and þat shewed first crist whan he made furst womman [926] ffor he ne made her nouzt of þe hede of Adam. for / she shulde not haue to grete lordship. [927] ffor þer as þe womman haþ þe maistrie she makeþ to mochel disaraye þer neden noon ensamples of þis. The experience of þis auzt suffise [928] ¶ Also certes god ne made not womman of þe foote of Adam for she shuld not be holden to lowe for she can not pacyently suffre But god made womman of the ribbe of Adam for womman shulde be felawe vnto man [929] ¶ Man shulde bere hym to his wiff in feip. in troupe an in loue. as seiþ seint paule that a man shal loue his wiff as crist loued ¶ **Paulus.** / holy chirch þat loued it so wel þat he dyed for it. So shal a man for his wiff if it were nede

[930] ¶ Now how þat a womman shuld be subiecte to her husbond þat telleþ seint Peter / [. . . *no gap* ¶ **Petrus** *in the MS.*] [931] and eke as seiþe þe decree. A womman as longe as she is a wiff she ne haþ noon auctorite to swere ne bere witnessse wiþ-out leue of her husbonde þat is her lord it shuld be so by resoñ. [932] she shulde eke serue hym in all

honeste and bene attempre. of her aray I woot weH
 þat þei shulden setten her entent to pleser her hus-
 bondes but not by her queyntise of aray. / [933] Seynt
 Ierom seiþ. þat wyves þat bene apparaild in silk and
 in purple ne mowe not cloþen hem in Ihesu
 crist [. *no gap in the MS.*]

¶ *Ieronimus*¶ *gregorius.*

[934] ¶ Seynt Gregor seiþ eke þat no wizt sekeþ
 precious aray but oonly for veynglorie to bene
 honoured þe more toforþ þe puple [935] ¶ It is a
 foly a womman to haue a grete aray outward and
 her self be foule inward [936] ¶ A wiff shuld eke be
 mesurable in lokinge and in berynge and / in laughinge
 and discrete in aH her wordes and dedys [937] and /
 abouen alle worldly þingges. She shulde loue her husbonde
 wiþ al her herte and to hym by trewe of her body
 [938] ¹So shuld an husbonde eke by trewe to his wif.
 ffor siþens þat al þe body is þe husbondes. soo shuld
 her hertes bene oon Or ellis þer is bytwix hem twoo as in
 þat no parfite mariage [939] ¶ Than shal a man vnder-
 stond þat for iij. þingges a man and his wiff
 mowen assemblen ¶ The furst is for engen-
 drure of children to serue god. ffor certes þat is
 þe cause fynaH of matrimoynye [940] ¶ Anoper is to
 zeelde eueriche of hem to oþer þe dette of her body.
 ffor neiþer of hem haþ power of her owne bodye
 ¶ The iij. is forto eschewe lecherye and vilenye
 ¶ The iiij. forsoþ is dedly synne. / [941] As to þe
 furst it is meritorie þe seconnde also for as saiþe þe
 decree. þat chaseþ merite of chaastite þat zeldeþ to
 her husbonde þe dette of her body. 3e þou3e it be
 azeinst her lykinge and þe lust of her herte [942] ¶ The
 iij. manere of venial synne. And trewly scarcely may
 eny of þise be wiþ-uten venial synne for þe
 corrupcion and for þe delite [943] ¶ The iiij.
 manere is forto vnderstonde if þei assemble oonly for
 amerous loue. and for noon of þe forsaide causes but

forto accomplise þilk brennyng^t delite þei reĉh
 neuere hou often · soþly it^t is a dedly synne . And 3it^t wiþ
 sorowe some folk wil peynen hem more to doo þan
 her appetit^t suffiseþ

[944] ¶ The secounde maner of chastite is to be
 a clene wydowe and to eschewe þe enbrasing^t of man
 and to desire þe enbrasing^t of Ihesu crist^t. [945] These
 bene þoo þat^t han beñ wyues and han forgoon her hus-
 bondes And eke wommen þat^t han / doon lecherye and bene
 releued by penaunce [946] And certes if þat^t a wiff
 couþe kepe her al chaast^t by licence of her husbonde so
 þat^t she ner noon occasiõ þat^t he a-gilt^t it^t
 were to hir^t a grete merite [947] These maner
 of wommen þat^t obseruen chaastitee most^t be clene in herte
 as wel as in body and in þou3t^t and mesurable in cloþinge
 and in contynauce ¶ Abstynent^t in etyngge and
 drynkyngge in spekinge and in dede and þan is she þe
 vesseH of þe boyst^t of þe blessed Mawdeleyne þat^t
 fulfillþ holy church^t ful of good odure [948] ¶ The iij.
 maner of chaastite is virgynyte . And it byhoueþ þat^t she
 be holy in hert^t and clene of body þan is she
 spouse to Ihesu crist^t and she is þe lif of aungels .
 [949] She is þe preysyng^t of þis world^t And she is as
 þise marters in regalite ¹she haþ in hure þat^t tunge may
 not^t telle [950] Virgynite bare our lorde
 Ihesu crist^t and virgyne was hymself

[951] ¶ Another remedy azeinst^t lecherye is specialy
 to wiþdrawe such þingges as zeuen occasiõ to þilk
 vilanye as ease and etyngge *and* drinkinge . ffor certes whan
 þe potte boyleþ strongly þe best^t remedy is to wiþ-
 drawe þe fuyre [952] ¶ Scleping^t longe in grete quiete
 is eke a grete norice to lecherie

[953] ¶ Another remedye azeinst^t lecherie is þat^t a
 womman or a man eschewe companye of hem by
 which he douteþ to be tempted . for al be it^t soo þat^t þe
 dede be wiþ-stonde 3it^t is þere grete temptaciõ

[954] ¶ Sonly a white waſt al-þouze it̄ ne brenne not̄ fully by stikkyng of a CandeH zit̄ is þe walle blak̄ of þe leyte [955] ful oft tyme I rede þat̄ no man trest̄ in his owne perfeccioñ But̄ he be strengre þan Sampson. Holyer þan david. wiser þan ¶ Salomon

[956] ¶ Now after þat̄ I haue declared 3ou as I can of þe vij. dedly synnes and some of her braunches and her remedies. sonly if I coupe I wold telle 3owe þe ten Comaundementz. [957] but̄ so hi3e a doctrine I lete to devynes. Napeles I hope to god þei bene touched in þis tretys euerech̄ of hem alle

¶ De confessione :

¶ Confessioun

[958] **N**OW for as moche as þe secounde part of penitence stant̄ in confession of mouþ as I byganne in þe [first] chapitere I seye Seint̄ Austyn seip̄. [959] Synne is euery word̄ and euery dede and al þat̄ men coueiten azeinst̄ þe lawe of Ihesu crist̄. And þis is forto synne. in herte in mouþ and in dede be þi .v. wittes þat̄ bene sizt̄ herinḡ smellynge taastinḡ or sauouringe and felynge [960] ¶ Now is it̄ good to vnderstonde þe circumstances þat̄ aggreggen mochel euery synne. / [961] ¶ Thow shalt̄ considere what̄ þou art̄ þat̄ dost̄ þe synne. whedere þou be male or female. 3onḡ or olde. gentile or þraH̄ ffre or seruaunte. hool or seke. wedded or syngel̄. Ordred or vnordred. wise or fool. clerk̄ or Seculere. [962] If she be of þi kynrede bodily or goostly or noon. If eny of þi kynrede haue synned wij̄ hure or noon. and mony moo/ þingges

¶ Augustinus

[963] ¶ That̄ other circumstaunce is this. Whedere it̄ be doon in fornicacioñ or noon. or in aduoutrie. or in incest̄. or noon maiden / or noon in maner of homicede or noon horrible grete synne or smale. and how longe þou ¹ hast̄ contynued in synne [964] ¶ The iij. circumstaunce is þe place where þou hast̄ doon synne whedere in oþer

mennys house or in þine owne . in feeld^ð or in church^h .
 or in chireh^h hawe In church^h dedicate or noon
 [965] For if þe church^h were halowed and man or womman
 spillen her kynde in wiþ þat^t place by-twene way of synne or by
 wikked temptacioñ þe church^h were enterdited til it^t
 were reconciled by þe bisshope [966] and þe preest^t shuld
 be enterdited þat^t did such a vilany þe teerme of al his liff . he
 shuld^ð no more synge masse . and if he did he shuld^ð
 do dedly synne at^t euery tyme þat^t he songe masse
 [967] ¶ The 4 . circumstanee is by whiche mediat-
 ours as by massagers or for enticement^t or for
 consentement^t to bere company wiþ felawship for
 mony a wrecch^h forto bere companye willen goo to þe
 deuel of helle . [968] ffor þei þat^t eggen or con-
 senten to þe synne bene partniers of þe synne and
 of þe dampnacioñ of þe synnere

[969] ¶ The .v . is of how mony tymes
 þat^t he haþ synned and /it^t be in his mynde . and howe oft^t
 þat^t he haþ falle . [970] ffor he þat^t oft^t falleþ in synne
 he despiseþ þe mercy of god *and* encreaseþ his synne
 and is vnkynde to god and he wexeþ þe more feble
 to wiþstonde synne . and synneþ þe more listlier
 [971] and þe latter ariseþ . and is þe more eschewe for
 to schryuen hym and namely to hym þat^t haþ bene his con-
 fessoure . [972] ffor which þat^t folk^t whan þei falle azein
 in her old^ð folies . ouzt^t þei forleten her confessours
 al vtterly or ellis þei departen her shrift^t in dyuers
 place But^t sobly such departed shrift deserueþ no
 mercy of god of his synnes . [973] ¶ The sext^t circum-
 stanee is þis why þat^t a man synneþ as by whiche temptacioñ
 And if hym self procure þilk temptacioñ or by ex-
 cityng^t of oþer folk^t . or if þou synne with a womman by
 force or by hure owne assent^t [974] /Or if þe womman
 Maugre her hede haþ bene enforced or noon . þis
 shal she telle for coueityse or for pouert^t . And
 if it^t were her procuryng^e or noon and such manere

harnays. [975] ¶ The .7. circumstaunce is in what manere he haþ doon his synne. or noon or / how þat he haþ suffred. howe folk han done to her. [976] Of þe same shal men telle pleyntly aH circumstannces and whedere he haþ synned wiþ comune bordeH wommen or noon [977] 'or do his synne in holy tymes or non. In fastyng tymes or non. or be longe from his shrift. or after his latter schrift [978] haþ perauenture broken his penaunce enioyned. by whos helpe and whoos counsaile by sorcery or craft aH þise þingges mosten be tolde. [979] After þat þei bene grete or smale engreggen þe conscience of man ¶ And eke þe preest þat is þi Iuge may þe better be auysed of his Iuggement in 3euynge of þi penaunce and þat is after þi contricioñ. [980] ffor vnderstondeþ wel þat aftere tyme þat a man hath defouled his bapteme by synne if he wil come to sauacioñ. ther nys noon oþer way but by penitence and schrift and by satisfaccioñ / [981] and namely by þe two if þer be a confessour to which he may schryve hym. And þe iij. if he haue lif to perfourme it

[982] Than shal man loke and considere if he wil make a trewe and a profitable confessioñ. Ther most be 4. condicioñs [983] ¶ ffirst it most be in sorowful bitternes of herte as seide þe kyng EzechieH to god ¶ I wil remembre aH þe 3eeres of my lif in bitternesse of myn herte [984] ¶ This condycioñ of bitternesse haþ .v. signes. The furst is þat confession most be shamefast not forto keueren ne to hiden his synne but for he haþ agilt his god and defoiled / his soule [985] And here of seiþ seynt Austyne ¶ The herte travailleþ for shame of his synne. And for he hath grete shamfastnesse he is digne to haue grete mercie [986] which was þe confession of þe publycane þat wold not heue vp his yen to heuene for he had offended god in heuene. ffor which shamefastnesse he had anoon þe mercy of god [987] ¶ And therefore seiþ

¶ *Augustinus*

¶ *Idem.*

seint' Austyne. þat' such̄ shamefast' folk bene next' forȝeuenes and remission̄ [988] ¶ That' oþer signe is humylite of confessiōn / of which̄ seiþ seint' Petre ¶ **Petrus** ¶ Vnbleþ ȝou vnder þe myȝt' of god þe hand of god is myȝty in confessiōn for þer-by god forȝeueþ þe synnes. ffor he allon haþ þe power / [989] and þis humilite shal be in hert' and in sygne outward' ¶ ffor riȝt' as he haþ humilite to god in his herte Riȝt' so shulde he humble his body outward' to þe preest' þat' sitte in goddes place [990] for which̄ in no manere siþes þat' crist' is souereyne and / ¹þe preest' mene and mediatour' by twix crist' and þe synner'. and þe synner is þe last' by way of resoñ [991] þan shuld' not' þe synner sitte as high as his confessoure but' knele toforn hym or at his fete but' if malady distroubed it'. ffor he shal not' take kepe who sitte þer but' in whos place þat' he sitteþ. [992] A man þat' haþ trespassed to a lorde and commeþ for to askemercy and maken his accorde and sette hym downea-noon by þe lorde men wolden holde hym outrageous and not worþi so sone forto haue remission̄ ne mercy. [993] ¶ The iij. signe is þat' þi shrift' shul be ful of teeres if man may wepe or if man may not' wepe wiþ his bodely eyen. / lat' hym wepe in his herte. [994] ffor suche was þe confessiōn of seynt' petre ffor aftere þat' he had forsake Ihesu crist' he went' out' and wepte ful bitterly [995] ¶ The iiij. signe is þat' he ne lette not' for his / shame to shewen his confessiōn. [996] Such̄ was þe confessiōn of þe maudeleyn þat' sche ne spared for no shame of hem þat' weren at þe ffeest' forto go to our lorde Ihesu crist' and byknowe to hym her synne [997] ¶ The .v. signe is þat' a man & a womman be obeysaunte to receyue þe penaunce þat' is hym enioyned. ffor certes Ihesu crist' for þe giltes of oon man was obedient' to his deþe

[998] ¶ The secounde condiciōn of verrey confessiōn ¶ **2^a condicio.** is þat' it' be hastely doñ. ffor certes if a man had a dedly wounde: euer þe lenger þat' he tarieþ to warisshe

him self þe more wold^t it^t corrupte and hast^t hym to his deþe and eke þe wounde wold be þe wors forto hele [999] ¶ And riȝt^t so fareþ synne þat^t longe tyme is in a man vnschewed [1000] ¶ Certes a man ouȝt^t hastely to shewe his synne. for mony causes as for drede of deþe þat^t commeþ often soðeynly and is in no certeyn what^t tyme it^t shal be ne in what^t place. And eke þe strecchyng^t of oo synne draweþ in anoþer [1001] ¶ And eke þe lenger þat^t he tarieth^t: þe ferþer is he from crist^t. And if he abide vnto his last^t day scarcely may he shryve hym or amende hym of his synnes ne repenten hym for þe greuous maladye of his deth̄. [1002] & for as moche as he haþ not^t in his lif herkened Ihesu Crist^t whan he haþ spoken vnto hym. he shal crien to our lord^t Ihesu crist^t at his last^t day. and scarcely wil he harken hym [1003] ¶ Vnder-stonde þat^t þis condicioñ moste haue four^t þingges ¹thi schrift^t most be purueide byforn and avised for wikked hast^t dooþ no profite and þat^t a man konne shryue hym of his synnes be it^t of pride eiþer of Envie and so forþ wiþ þe spices and circumstaunces / [1004] and þat^t he haue comprehended / in his mynde þe nombre and þe gretnesse of his synnes and / how longe þat^t he haþ layne in synne [1005] and eke þat^t he be contrite of his synnes and in stedfast^t purpoos by þe [grace of god] neuere eft^t to falle aȝein in synne and eke þat^t he drede and countrewaite hym self þat^t he flee þe occasions of synne to which̄ he is enclyned [1006] ¶ Also þat^t þow shalt^t schryve þe of alle þi synnes to oo man and nouȝt^t parcell^t mele to oon man and parsel mele to a noþer man þat^t is to vnderstonde in entent^t to parten þi confессиō as for shame or for drede. ffor it^t nys but^t stronglyng^t of þe soule [1007] ffor certes Ihesu crist^t is al good in hym is noon inperfeccioñ and perfore euere he forȝeueþ alle parfitly or ellis neuere a dele [1008] ¶ I say not^t if þowe be sygned to þe penytauncere for certeyn synne þat^t þou art^t bounden to shewe hem all þe remenaunt^t of þi synnes of which̄

þowe hast be shryuen of þi curate but it like þe of þine humilite This is no departing of shrift [1009] ne I ne say not þer as I speke of dyuisiōn of confessiōn þat if þou haue licence. forto shryue þe to a discrete and honest preest and where þe likeþ / and by þe licence eke of þe curate þat þowe ne maiste wel shryue þe of alle þi synnes [1010] but lat no blot be behynde. lat no synne be vntoldt as fer as þou hast remembrance [1011] And whan þou shalt bene shryuen of þi Curate telle hym eke of alle þe synnes þat þou hast done siphens þou were lastt yshriuen as þis is þe wikked entent of dyuisiōn of shrift

[1012] ¶ Also þe verrey shrift askeþ certeyn condicions. ffurst þat þou shryue þe by þi free wille not constreynd ne for shame of folk ne for maladie or such þingges ffor it is reson þat he þat trespaseþ by his ffree wille / [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] confesse his trespas. [1013] noon oþer man shal telle his synne but he hym self ne he shal not nay or denye his synne ne wraþe him azeinst þe preest for his amonysynge to lete synne [1014] ¶ The seconnde condicioñ is þat þine shrift be lawfuþ. þat is to say þou þat shryuest þe and eke þe preest þat hereþ þi confessiōn bene verrely ¹in þe feiþ of holy church [1015] and þat a man be not despeired. of þe mercy of Ihesu Crist And Caym or Iudas [1016] And eke a [man] mote accuse hym of his owne trespas and nouzt an oþer but he shal blame & witen hym self of his owne malice of his synne and noon oþer. [1017] But napeles if an oþer man be enchesōn or entiser of his synnes Or þat if þe state of a persone be such thorgh which his synne is a-gregged or ellis þat he may not pleyntly shryuen hym. but he telle þe persone þe which he haþ synned wiþe. þan may he telle it [1018] so þat his entent ne be not to bakbite þe persone but oonly to declaren his confessiōn.

[1019] ¶ Thowe þe shalt not eke make no lesing in þine confessiō for humilite parauenture to say þat þou hast doon synnes of which þou were neuere gyilty [1020] ¶ ffor seint Austyn seiþ if þow be cause of humilite makest lesing of þi self þough þowe ne were nouȝt in synne aforn: ȝit art þowe þan in synne þorgh þi lesynges. [1021] Thow most eke shewe þi synne by þi propre mouþe but þou be wexe dombe and not by no letter ffor þou þat hast done synne þou shalt haue þe same confessiō [1022] ¶ Thow shalt not eke peynt þi confessiō be faire and subtile wordes to keuere more þi synne ffor þan bygilest þou þi self & nouȝt þe preest. Thow most tel it platly be it neuere so foule ne so horrible [1023] ¶ Thow shalt eke shryue þe to a preest þat is discrete to counsaile þee. and eke þou shalt not shryue þe for veynglorie ne for ypocrecy ne for no cause but only for þe doute of Ihesu crist and þe helpe of þi soule. [1024] Thow shalt not eke renne to þe preest al sodeynly to telle hym liztly þi synne as who so telleþ a lape or a tale but avisely and wiþ grete deuociō [1025] & generally shryve þe oft if þou often falle oft arise by confessiō [1026] And if þow shryue þe ofter þan onys of synne which þou hast be shryuen it is þe more merite as seiþ seint Austyne. Thow shalt haue þe more lightly relesinge and grace of god boþe of synne and of peyne. [1027] And certes onys a ȝere at þe leest way it is lawful forto bene howseled. ffor sobly onys [a ȝere] al þingges renouellen

De satisfaccione.

[1028]
Now haue I tolde of verrey confessiō þat is þe Secoude part of penytence

[1029] ¶ The iij. parte of penyence is Satisfaccioñ and ¶ Satisfaccio
 þat' stant' generalli in almesse and in
 bodily peyne. [1030] Nowe bene þere þre
 manere of Almesse. Contricioñ of hert' wher a man
 offreþ hym self to god. Anoper is to haue pite of
 þe defaute of his neighbours. þe ¹³ is in
 3euyngt of good counsaile and confort' goostly and bodily where
 men han nede and namely in sustynaunce of mannys foode.
 [1031] And take kepe þat' a man hap nede of þise
 þingges generalli he hap nede of foode of
 cloþinge and harborowe. he hap / nede of charitable
 counsaillinge and visitynge of prisoñ and / maladie and
 sepulture of his dede body. [1032] And if þow maist' not
 visite þe nedeful wiþ þi persone. visite hym with þi
 massage & / þi ziftes [1033] ¶ These bene þe generall
 almesses or werkes of charite of hem þat' han temporell
 richesces or discrecion of consaillingt' Of þise werkes
 shalt' þou here at' þe day of dome

[1034] ¶ These almesses shuldest' þou doon of þine owne
 propre þingges and hastely and / prively if þou maist'
 [1035] But' napeles if þow maist' not' doon it' prively
 þou shalt' not' forbere almesse þouze men it' See.
 So þat' it' be not' ydo for þonke of þe worlde. but' oonly
 forto haue þe þonke of oure / lorde Ihesu crist' [1036] ¶ ffor
 as witesseþ seint' Mathewe .v°. A. Cite may not' be hid ¶ Matthei .v°.
 þat' is sette on a mounteyn. ne men lighten not a lanterne and
 putte it' vnder a busshe. but' men sette it' on a candel-
 stik to lighten þe men in þe hous. [1037] Riht'
 so shal 3oure liht' lihten toform men þat' þei mowe
 seen 3oure good werkes and glorifien 3our fadere þat' is in
 heuene

[1038] ¶ Now as to speken of bodily peyne. It' stont' in
 preiers. in wakingges and in fastingges and in vertuous

techingges of orisons [1039] ¶ 3e shul vnderstonde þat' orisons or preiers is / forto seyn a pitous wille of hert' þat' redresseþ in god and expresseþ it' by worde outward' to remooue harmlees. and to han þinges espirituel and durable. and somtyme temporel þingges of which orisons certes þe orison of þe pater *noster* hap Ihesu crist' enclosed most' þingges [1040] ¶ Certes it is priuileged of .3. þingges. in his dignite ffor which it is more digne þan eny oþer preiere for þat' ihesu crist' hym self made it'. [1041] and it' is short' for it shuld' be conned more liztly and forto wiþholde it' þe more esely in herte and helpen hym self þe ofter wiþ þe orison [1042] and for a man shuld' be þe lasse wery to sey it' / and for a man ne may not' excusen hym to lerne it' it' is so short' and so esy. and for it' comprehendeth in it' self alle good preiers [1043] ¶ The exposicioñ of þis holy preier þat' is so excellent' and digne I bytake to þise maisters of theologie sauf þus moche wil I seyne. þat' whan þou preiest' þat' god / forþeue þe þi giltes as þou forþeuest' hem þat' a-gilten þe be ful wel ware þat' þow ne be not' out' of charite [1044] This holy ¹orison amenuseþ eke venyal synne and þerfore it' aperteneth specialy to penitence.

[1045] This preiere most' be trewly saide in verrey feiþ and þat' men prey to god ordynatly & discretely and deuoutly. Alway a man shal putt' his witt to be subiecte to þe wille of god [1046] This orison most' eke be saide wiþ gret' humblesse and ful pure honesty and not' to annoyance of eny man or womman. It' most' nedes be contynued wiþ þe werkes of charite [1047] it' auailleþ eke azeinst' þe vices of þe saule. ffor as seiþ seynt' Ierom ¶ By fastyng' ben saued þe vices of flessch and by preiers þe vices of þe saule

¶ *Ieronimus*

[1048] ¶ Aftere þis þou shalt' vnderstonde þat' bodily peyne stant' in wakinge. ffor Ihesu crist' seiþ. wakeþ and preieþ þat' 3e ne entre in wikked

¶ *Ihc /*

temptaciōns [1049] ¶ 3e shul vnderstonde þat fastyng stont in .3. thyngges. In forberyng of bodily mete and drink and in forberyng of worldly Iolitees. and in forberyng of dedly synne. This is to say þat a man shal kepe hym / from dedly synne *wit* al his myzt.

[1050] And þow shalt vnderstonde eke þat god ordayned fastyngges And to fastyng apperteneth four þingges. [1051] largenesse to poor folk. Gladnes of hert espiritueH nouzt to be angred nor anoyed ne to gruch for he fasteth and also resonable houre forto ete by mesure. þat is to say þat a man shuld not eten in vntyme. ne sitte þe lenger at his table for he fasteþ.

[1052] Than shalt þou vnderstonde þat bodily peyne stant. in disciplyne or techyng. by word or by // writyng or by ensample Also in weryng of heires. eiper of stamyne eiper of haberion on her naked flessH for cristes sake and such manere penaunces [1053] ¶ But ware þe wel þat such manere penaunces ne make not þine hert bitter or angry. anoyed of hym self. ffor better is to cast away þine heire. þan forto cast away þe swetnesse of our lord Ihesu Crist [1054] And þefore seiþ seint Poule ¶ *Paulus.* Cloþe 3ou as þei þat beH chosen of god in hert of mysericord. debonairte. suffrañce and such maner of cloþinge of whiche Ihesu crist is more apaide þan of heire or of hawberkes.

[1055] Then is disciplyne eke in knokkyng of þi brest. in scourgyng wiþ 3eedes. in knelyng in tribulacions [1056] in suffryng paciently wrongges þat bene doon to hym. and eke in pacient suffraunce of maladies or lesyngges. of worldly CateH of wiff or childe or oþer ¹frendes

[1057] Than shalt þow vnderstonde which þingges distrowben penaunce as þis is in þre maners. þat is drede. Shame. and hope. And whan hope þat is desperacioH. [1058] And forto speken / furst of drede for whiche he

weneþ þat he may suffre no penaunce [1059] þer
 azeinst is remedye fforto þenk þat bodily penaunce. is
 but short and liteH at þe regarde of þe peyne of helle. þat
 is cruel and so longe þat it lasteþ wiþ-ouen ende.

[1060] ¶ Now azeinst þe shame þat a man haþ to
 shryuen hym [.
 *no gap in*
the MS.] [1061] azeinst þe shame shuld a man þenk þat
 by þe way of resoñ þat he þat haþ not bene ashamed. to
 doo foule þingges Certes hym ouzt not be ashamed to
 doo fair þingges and good þingges and þat is confessions. [1062]
 A man shuld þenk þat god seeþ and woote al his
 þouztes and his werkes to hym may no þinge be
 hidde ne keuered [1063] ¶ Men shuld eke remembre
 hem of þe shame þat is to come at þe day of dome to
 hem þat bene nouzt penytent and lif in present
 liff. [1064] ffor alle þe creatures in heuene in erþe and in helle
 shuln seen / apertly al þat þei hyden in þis world.

[1065] ¶ Now forto speke of þe hope of hem þat
 bene so negligent and sclowe to shryuen hem it stant in
 two maners. [1066] That oon is þat he hopeþ to lyve
 longe and forto purchase mochel Richesse for his delite
 and þan he wil shryuen hym as he seiþ
 he may as hym semeþ tymely ynowe come to shrift
 [1067] ¶ Anoper is of þe Surquidrye þat he haþ in cristes
 mercy. [1068] And azeinst þe first he shal þenk
 that our liff is in no sikernesse And eke þat alle þe
 richesse of þe world bene in aduenture and passinge as a
 shadowe on a walle [1069] ¶ And as seiþ seynt *gregorie*
 That it apperteneþ to þe grete riȝtwisnesse of god þat
 neuer shal þe peyn stynt of hem þat neuer
 nolde wiþdrawe hem from synne her þonkes. but
 euer contynued þer Inne. ¶ ffor þilk perpetual wille to done
 synne shullen þei haue perpetual peyne.

[1070] ¶ Whan-hope is in two maners ¶ þe first whan-
 hope is in þe mercy of Crist ¶ That oper is þat þei

¶ *Gregorius .i.*

Or Wanhope, or
 Despair

þenk þat þei ne myȝt not longe perseuere in goodnesse [1071] ¶ The furst wanhope commeþ of þat he demep þat he hath synned so gretly so ofte and so longe liggyng in synne þat he shal not be saued [1072] ¶ Certes azeinst þat cursed wanhope he shuld þenk þat þe passiõ of Ihesu crist is more ¹stronge forto vnbynde þan synne is forto bynde [1073] ¶ And azeinst þe seconnd wanhope he shal þenk þat as often as he falleþ he shal arise by penytence. And þouze he neuer so long haue lyen in synne þe mercy of crist is alway redy to receyuen hym to mercy [1074] azeinst þe wanhope þat he demep þat he shuld not longe perseuere in goodnesse ¶ he shal þenk þat þe feblenese of the deucl may no þing doon but men willen suffre hym [1075] And eke he shal haue strength and þe helpe of god and of al holy churche and of þe protection of aungels if him lust

[1076] ¶ Than shullen men vnderstonde what is þe ^{¶ Verba saluatoris} fruyte of penaunce as aftere þe wordes of Ihesu Crist it is þe endeles blisse of heuene [1077] þer Ioie haþ no contrariouste of woo ne greuaunce þer alle harmes ben passed of þis present liff wher as is þe sikernesse fro þe peyn of helle þer as þe blisful company þat reioysen hem euermoo euery of oþers Ioie [1078] þer as þe body of man þat whilom was foule and derk is more cleer þan þe sonne Ther as whilom þe body was seke and frele and feble and morteþ is vnmorteþ and so stronge and so hool þat þer may no þinge enpeire it. [1079] wher as neiþer is hunger þrest. ne cold but euery soule repleynshed wiþ þe sizt of þe parfit knowynge of god [1080] This blisful regne may man purchase by pouert^t espritueþ and þe glorie by lownesse. þe plente of Ioy by hunger and þrest. and þe rest by travaille and þe liff by deep and mortificaciõ of synne.

To pilk^t liff he vs bringe þat^t bouzt^t vs wip^t his pre-
cious blood ./ Amen ./

¶ **Explicit fabula Rectoris ./**

Here takeþ þe maker of þis booke his leue !/

[1081]
Nowe prey I to hem alle þat^t harken þis litel tretise.
Or rede þat^t 3if þer be eny þing^t in it^t þat^t likeþ
hem þat^t þerof þei þonk our lord Ihesu
crist^t of whom procedeþ al witte and al goodnes.
[1082] And 3if þer be eny þing^t þat^t displese hem ./ I
prey hem also þat^t þei arette it^t to þe defaute of myne
vnkonnyng and not^t to my wille þat^t wold^t ful fayn haue
seide better 3if þat^t I had hadde connyng. [1083] ffor our
boke seiþ ¶ **AH** þat^t is writen is writen for our
doctrine & þat^t is myñ entent^t [1084] ¹Wherfore I
biseche 3ou mekely for þe mercy of god þat^t 3e prei for
me þat^t crist^t haue mercy on me and for3eue me my
geltys [1085] and namely of my translaciõs and endit-
ingges of worldly vanytes þe which I reuoke in my re-
traccions [1086] As is þe boke of Troiles. The book
also of fame. The boke of the xxv. ladies ./ The
boke of þe duchesse. The boke of seynt^t valentyne
day of þe parlement^t of briddes. The tales of Canter-
bury þilk þat^t sownen into synne [1087] The book
of þe lyõn and mony oþer bokes 3if þei were in my
remembraunce. and mony a songe. And mony a lecherous
lay þat^t Crist^t for his gret^t mercy for3eue me þe synne.
[1088] ¶ But^t of þe translacioñ of Boys de *consolacione*
and oþer bokes of legendys of seyntes and omelies
and moralite & deuocioñ [1089] of þat^t I þonke our
lord Ihesu crist^t and his blessed/ modere and alle þe
seyntes of heuene [1090] bysechyng^t hem þat^t þei from
hens forþ vnto my lyues ende sende me *grace* to
bywaile my giltes and to stody to þe sauacioñ of my
soule. and graunt^t me grace of verrey penaunce. con-

fession and satisfaccioñ to doon in þis present' liff
 [1091] þorghē þe benigne grace of hym þat' is kyngt' of
 kyngges and preest' of alle preestes þat' bouzt' vs
 wiþ þe precious blode of his hert' [1092] So þat' I may
 bene oon of hem at' þe day of dome þat' shal be saued. /
 Qui cum patre & spiritu sancto vivis & regnas deus &cetera.

Here endep þe boke of þe talys of Canter-
 bury compiled by Geffray Chawcer on whoos
 soule Ihesu crist' haue mercy. || AmeN ||

[*Square painting of the arms of Henry Percy, 4th Earl of Northumberland, K.G., quartering Poynings, Fitz Payn and Bryan. H on the right, P on the left of the shield, in a Garter with the legend 'hony . soit . qui . mal . y . pence.'* A lion, unicorn, &c, in the 4 corners.]

APPENDIX (to Group B, p. 591).

[*Christ Church MS. 152.*] [on leaf 173, back,
sign. k 2, back]

¶ Sire Nonnes preest oure hoost seyde a none
y-blessed be thy breth & euery stoon
This was a mery tale of Chaunteclere
But be my trouthe if *thou* were seculere
Thow woldeste bene a tredefoul a right
ffor if thow haue corage as *thou* haste myght
The were nede of hennes as I wene
Ye moo than .vij. tymes seventene
See whiche braunnes hath *this* gentel preeste
So grete a nekke & so large a breeste
He loketh as a Sparhauke with his yen
Hym nedeth nat his colour for to dyen [leaf 174, sign. k 3]
with Brasile ne with Greyne of Portyngale /
Now sire faire falle yow for youre tale
And aftir he with full mery chere
Saide vnto a nother as ye shulle here

**Here is ended the Nonnes prestes tale
And folowith the prologe of the Maunciples tale**

DRAWINGS OF THE 23 TELLERS

OF THE

24 CANTERBURY TALES,

COPIED FROM THE ELLESMERE MS,

AND CUT ON WOOD,

BY

Mr W. H. Hooper.

In this first issue, 1871, only 14 of the Cuts are given. The other 10 will follow in 1872. When the print of each MS is bound, the cut of each Teller of a Tale can be put at the beginning of his Tale, as in the Ellesmere MS, or by his description in the General Prologue, to contrast the artist's hand with the poet's; or, all the cuts can be put together before or after the Prologue, or at the end of the volume (as not part of the MS), according to the fancy of each Member.



THE MILLERE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 38, back.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS

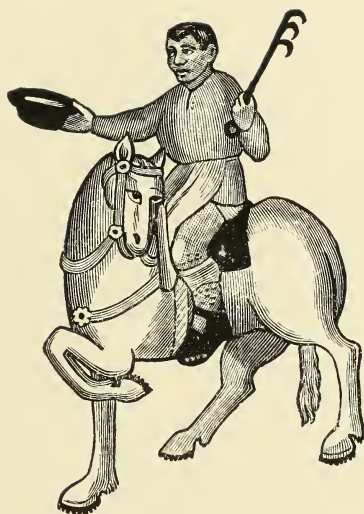


THE KNYGHT.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 14.

(The brand on the horse's hip—M, ? for *Miles*—
is in ink, and probably by a later hand.)

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE COOK.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 51.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE REVE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 46.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE WYF OF BATHE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 76.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE MAN OF LAWE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 54, back.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS



THE FRERE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 80, back.



THE SOMONOUR.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 85, back.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE CLERK OF OXFORD.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 92.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE SHIPMAN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 147, back.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE PRIORESSE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 152, back.

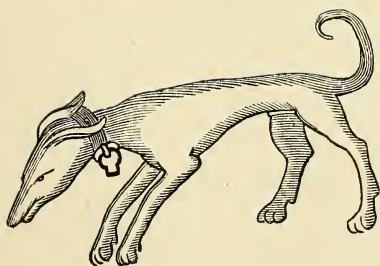
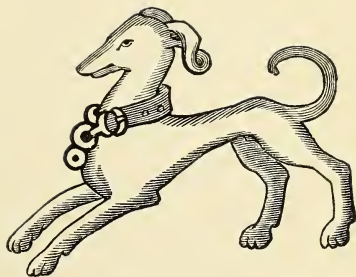
LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS



CHAUCER.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 157, back.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS



THE MONK.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 173.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS



THE NONNES PREEST.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 183.

LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY of ILLINOIS

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS-URBANA



3 0112 118417408